

PC 2109

.L7

1834

Copy 1

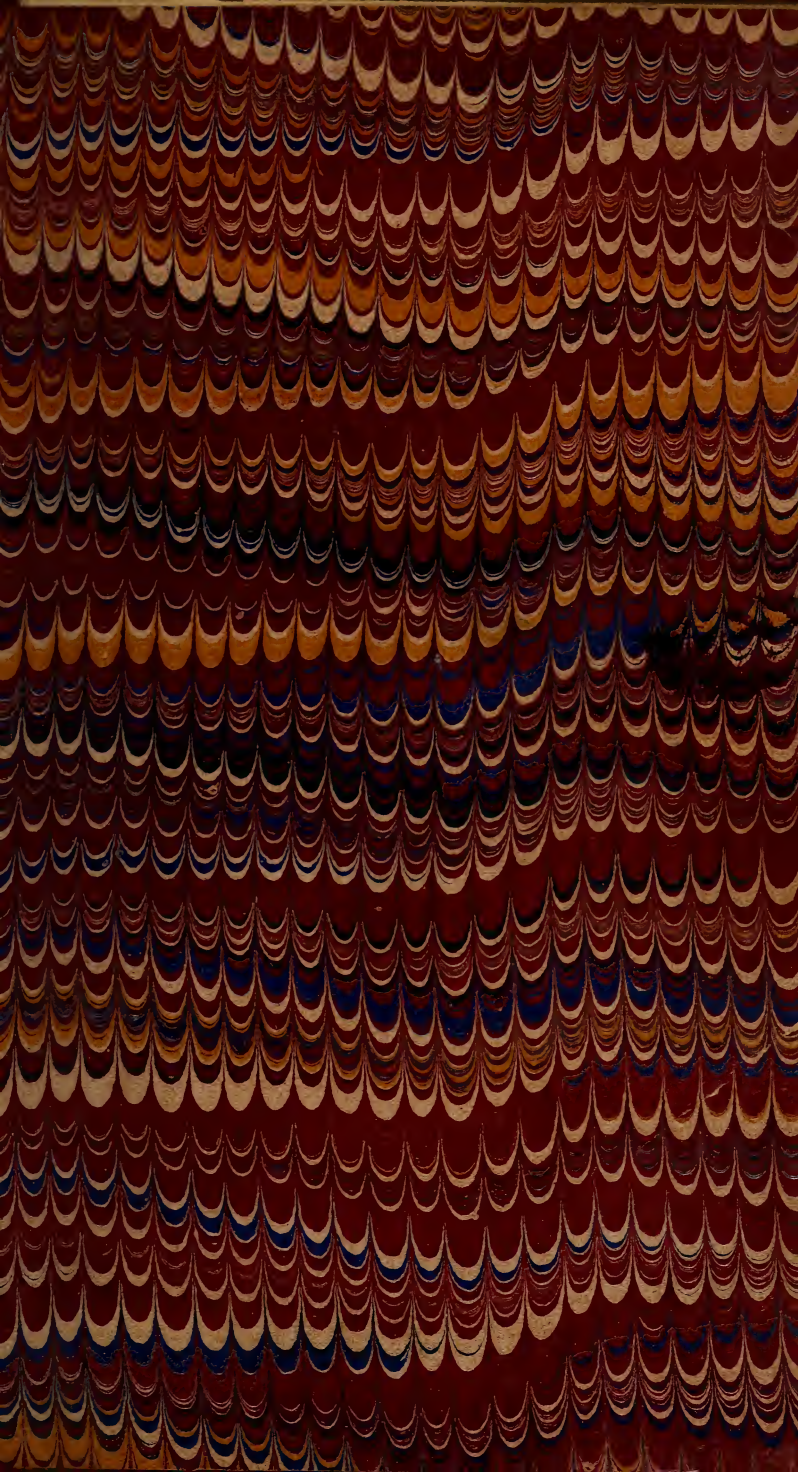
Library of Congress.

Chap. PG 2109

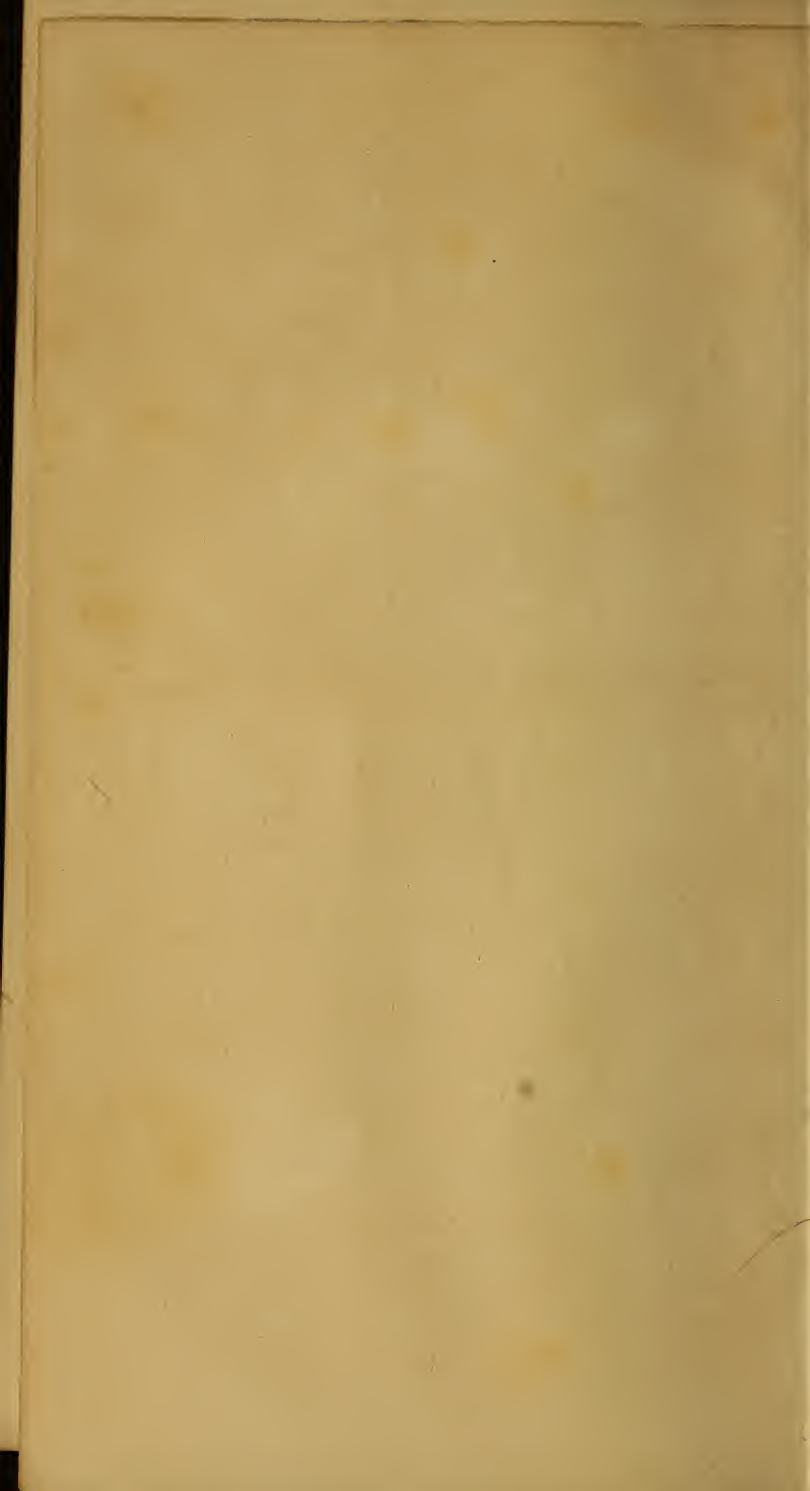
Shelf L. 7

Copyright No. 1834

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.







THE FOLLOWING WORKS,

BY A. BOLMAR,

May be had from any of the principal Booksellers in the United States.

1st. A COLLECTION OF ONE HUNDRED FABLES, with two Keys, one for the literal and free translation, and the other for the pronounciation of the French text.

2d. LES AVENTURES DE TELEMAQUE, with a key for the literal and free translation of the first eight books, and intended as a sequel to the Fables.

3d. A COLLECTION OF COLLOQUIAL PHRASES, on every topic necessary to maintain conversation ; arranged under different heads ; with numerous remarks on the peculiar pronounciation and use of various words. The whole so disposed as considerably to facilitate the acquisition of a correct pronounciation of the French.

4th. A COMPLETE TREATISE ON THE GENDERS OF FRENCH NOUNS ; in a small pamphlet of 14 pages. This little work, which is the most complete of the kind, is the fruit of great labour, and will prove of immense service to every learner.

5th. All the FRENCH VERBS, both REGULAR and IRREGULAR, in a small volume.

The verbs *être* to be, *avoir* to have, *parler* to speak, *finir* to finish, *recevoir* to receive, *vendre* to sell, *se lever* to rise, *se bien porter* to be well, *s'en aller* to go away, are there all conjugated through—affirmatively—negatively—interrogatively—and negatively and interrogatively—an arrangement which will greatly facilitate the scholar in his learning the French verbs, and which will save the master the trouble of explaining over and over again what may be much more easily learned from books, thus leaving him more time to give his pupil, during the lesson, that instruction which cannot be found in books, but which must be learned from a master.

6th. THE INSTITUTE OF MORALITY, for the instruction of youth, with numerous Scriptural references, by questions and answers. Translated by ELI K. PRICE and A. BOLMAR.

A KEY to the exercises of this Grammar will shortly be published.

That Key will be so arranged as to suit equally well this present edition of Levizac's, or the edition sold previous to the publishing of this one.

A
THEORETICAL AND PRACTICAL
GRAMMAR

OF THE
FRENCH LANGUAGE;

IN WHICH

THE PRESENT USAGE IS DISPLAYED AGREEABLY TO THE DECISIONS OF
THE FRENCH ACADEMY. BY M. DE LEVIZAC.

WITH

NUMEROUS CORRECTIONS AND IMPROVEMENTS,

AND WITH THE ADDITION OF

39
A COMPLETE TREATISE

ON THE

GENDERS OF FRENCH NOUNS,

AS ALSO WITH THE ADDITION OF

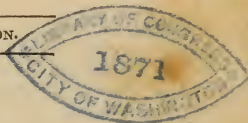
ALL THE FRENCH VERBS,

BOTH REGULAR AND IRREGULAR, CONJUGATED AFFIRMATIVELY—NEGATIVELY
—INTERROGATIVELY—AND NEGATIVELY AND INTERROGATIVELY.

BY A. BOLMAR,

PRINCIPAL OF THE WEST CHESTER ACADEMY, AND AUTHOR OF SEVERAL WORKS TO
FACILITATE THE ACQUIREMENT OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

STEREOTYPED BY L. JOHNSON.



Philadelphia:

E. L. CAREY & A. HART.

SOLD BY GRIGG & ELLIOTT, HOGAN & THOMPSON, DESILVER & THOMAS, AND
J. LAVAL, *Philadelphia*.—C. DE BEHR, BERARD & MONDON, AND R. LOCKWOOD,
New York.—ALLEN & TICKNOR, AND HILLIARD, GRAY & CO., *Boston*.—CAREY,
HART & CO., *Baltimore*.—P. THOMPSON, *Washington*.—R. J. SMITH, *Richmond*.
—C. HALL, AND E. P. NASH, *Norfolk, Va.*—W. H. BERRETT, *Charleston*.—W.
MCKEAN, D. C. HOTCHKISS & CO., AND G. BRUSLE, *New Orleans*.—A. FLASH,
Cincinnati.

PC 2109
.L7
1834

ENTERED according to the act of the Congress of the United States,
A. D. 1834, by ANTHONY BOLMAR, in the office of the Clerk of the
Eastern District of Pennsylvania.

1865

No. 7. 97 10
 Recd. C. S. 9. 26, 1925

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Names of the French Letters.....	1
Observation on the French Letters	1
Sounds of the French Letters.....	2
Table of the Simple Sounds of Vowels.....	7
Table of Diphthongs.....	8
Observation on the Pronunciation of <i>a</i> in <i>mare</i> and <i>è</i> in <i>mère</i>	10
Pronunciation and Accentuation.....	11
Introduction to the Exercises	12
Elision or Apostrophe, &c.	14
Words alike in both Languages.....	16
English Words which become French by changing their Termination.....	17

PART I.

OF WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR NATURE AND INFLECTIONS.

CHAPTER I.

Of the Substantive or Noun	18
Of Genders.....	19
List of Nouns ending with <i>eur</i> for the masculine, and <i>eure</i> for the feminine	32
List of Nouns ending with <i>eur</i> for the masculine, and <i>rice</i> for the feminine	36
List of Nouns ending with <i>eur</i> for the masculine, and which form their feminine variously.....	38
Of Numbers	39
Formation of the plural of French Substantives or Nouns.....	39
Formation of the plural of Compound Nouns	41

CHAPTER II.

Of the Definite Article.....	41
Elision of the Article	42
Contraction of the Article.....	43
Cases in which Contraction does not take place.....	43
General Rule of the Article.....	44
Of the Article in a Partitive Sense	45

CHAPTER III.

Of the Adjective	46
Of the Formation of the Feminine of French Adjectives.....	46
Of the Formation of the plural of the French Adjectives.....	51
Of the Degrees of Signification of French Adjectives	54

	PAGE
Of the Positive	54
Of the Comparative of Superiority	54
Of the Comparative of Inferiority	54
Of the Comparative of Equality	55
Observations on <i>Meilleur, Moindre, and Pire</i>	55
Of the Superlative	56
Of the Superlative Absolute	56
Of the Superlative Relative	56
Agreement of the Adjective with the Substantive	57
When the Adjective relates to two Substantives Singular of the same Gender	57
When the Adjective relates to two Substantives Singular of different Genders	58
Nouns and Adjectives of Number	58
Observations on several Numerical Adjectives	60

CHAPTER IV.

Of the Pronouns	61
Of the Personal Pronouns	61
Pronouns of the 1st Person	61
Pronouns of the 2d Person	62
Pronouns of the 3d Person	63
Reflected and Reciprocal Pronouns	64
Of the Relative Pronoun <i>EN</i>	65
Of the Relative Pronoun <i>Y</i>	66
Of Possessive Pronouns	66
Pronominal Adjectives relating to <i>one</i> Person expressed	67
Pronominal Adjectives relating to <i>many</i> Persons expressed	67
Pronominal Adjectives relating to <i>one</i> Person understood	68
Pronominal Adjectives relating to <i>many</i> Persons understood	68
Of the Relative Pronouns	69
Of Pronouns Absolute	69
Of Demonstrative Pronouns	70
Of Indefinite Pronouns	71
Of Indefinite Pronouns of the 1st Class	71
Of Indefinite Pronouns of the 2d Class	72
Of Indefinite Pronouns of the 3d Class	73
Of Indefinite Pronouns of the 4th Class	73

CHAPTER V.

Of the Verbs	74
--------------------	----

☞ See at the end of the Verbs for a Table of the Contents of the part containing the Verbs.

Exercises on <i>Avoir</i> to have Affirmatively	74
Exercises on <i>Avoir</i> to have Negatively	77
Exercises on <i>Avoir</i> to have Interrogatively	79
Exercises on <i>Avoir</i> to have Interrogatively and Negatively	79
Exercises on <i>Etre</i> to be	80
Exercises on the 1st Conjugation in <i>ER</i>	83
Exercises on the 2d Conjugation in <i>IR</i>	87
Exercises on the 3d Conjugation in <i>OIR</i>	89
Exercises on the 4th Conjugation in <i>RE</i>	91

CONTENTS.

v

	PAGE
Of the Pronominal Verbs	94
Of the Passive Verbs	97
Of the Neuter Verbs.....	98
Of the Impersonal or Unipersonal Verbs	98
Of the Verb <i>FALLOIR</i>	99
Of the Verb <i>AVOIR</i>	99
Exercises on the Irregular Verbs of the 1st Conjugation.....	100
Exercises on the Irregular Verbs of the 2d Conjugation.....	100
Exercises of the Irregular Verbs of the 3d Conjugation.....	103
Exercises on the Irregular Verbs of the 4th Conjugation.....	105

CHAPTER VI.

Of the Prepositions.....	110
Of the Prepositions denoting Place.....	110
Of the Prepositions denoting Order.....	111
Of the Prepositions denoting Union	111
Of the Prepositions denoting Opposition	112
Of the Prepositions denoting Derivation	112
Of the Prepositions denoting the End	112
Of the Preposition denoting the Cause and Means	113
Of the Preposition <i>à</i>	113
Of the Preposition <i>de</i>	114
Of the Preposition <i>en</i>	114

CHAPTER VII.

Of the Adverbs	115
----------------------	-----

CHAPTER VIII.

Of the Conjunctions.....	119
--------------------------	-----

CHAPTER IX.

Of Interjections	122
------------------------	-----

PART II.

SYNTAX,

OR WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR CONSTRUCTION.

CHAPTER I.

Of the Substantive	123
Of Compound Nouns.....	123

CHAPTER II.

Of the Article.....	124
A Comparative Table on the use of the Article.....	125
On Measure and Weight.....	127

CHAPTER III.

	PAGE
Of the Adjectives	128
Difference of Construction between the English and French Languages	129
Regimen of the Adjectives	130
Promiscuous Exercises	130

CHAPTER IV.

Of the Pronouns	131
Of the Personal Pronouns	131
Of the Place of Personal Pronouns	131
Of Personal Pronouns used as Subject	131
Of Personal Pronouns used as Regimen	133
Of the Relative Pronouns	135
Of Pronouns Absolute	138
Of Demonstrative Pronouns	140
Of Indefinite Pronouns	141
Of Indefinite Pronouns 1st Class	141
Of Indefinite Pronouns 2d Class	144
Of Indefinite Pronouns 3d Class	145
Of Indefinite Pronouns 4th Class	149
A General Exercise on the Pronouns	151

CHAPTER V.

Of the Verb	153
Agreement of the Verb with the Subject	153
Of the Regimen of Verbs	154
Of the Nature and Use of Moods and Tenses	157
Of the Indicative	157
Of the Conditional	160
Of the Imperative	160
Of the Subjunctive	161
Of the Infinitive	162
Of the Participle	162
Of the Participle present	162
Of the Participle past	163
Agreement of the Participle past with its Subject	163
Agreement of the Participle past with its Regimen	165

CHAPTER VI.

Of the Adverbs	168
Situation of the Adverbs	168

CHAPTER VII.

Of the Conjunction	170
Of the Conjunction <i>que</i>	170
Government of Conjunctions	171
Conjunctions that are followed by an Infinitive	171
Conjunctions that are followed by the Indicative	172
Conjunctions that are followed by the Subjunctive	173
Promiscuous Exercises on the nine Parts of Speech	173

PART III.

IDIOMS, OR WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR PARTICULAR RULES ...	PAGE 177
---	-------------

CHAPTER I.

Of the Substantive	177
--------------------------	-----

CHAPTER II.

Of the Article.....	179
Cases in which the Article is to be used.....	179
Cases in which the Article is not used.....	183

CHAPTER III.

Of the Adjectives.....	187
Of the Adjective with the Article	187
The Place of the Adjectives.....	189
Regimen of the Adjectives	191
Adjectives of Number.....	192

CHAPTER IV.

Of the Pronouns	194
Of the Personal Pronouns	194
Office of Personal Pronouns.....	194
On the Pronoun <i>soi</i>	198
Cases in which the Pronouns <i>ELLE, ELLES, EUX, LUI, LEUR</i> , may apply to things.....	199
Difficulty respecting the Pronoun <i>LE</i> explained	201
Repetition of the Personal Pronouns	203
Relation of the Pronouns of the 3d person to a Noun as expressed before.....	205
Possessive Pronouns.....	206
Explanation of some difficulties attendant on the Use of the Pos- sessive Pronouns.....	206
Relative Pronouns	210
Of <i>QUI</i>	210
Of <i>QUE</i>	212
Of <i>LEQUEL</i> and <i>DONT</i>	213
Of <i>QUOI</i>	214
Of <i>OU</i>	214
Absolute Pronouns.....	215
Demonstrative Pronouns	216

CHAPTER V.

Pronouns Indefinite.....	220
Of <i>ON</i>	220
Of <i>QUICONQUE</i>	220
Of <i>CHACUN</i>	220
Of <i>PERSONNE</i>	221
Of <i>L'UN ET L'AUTRE</i>	222

	PAGE
Of NI L'UN NI L'AUTRE.....	222
Of TOUT and RIEN.....	222
Of QUELQUE—QUE and QUEL QUE.....	223

CHAPTER VI.

Of the Verb.....	225
Agreement of the Verb with the Subject.....	225
Of the Collective Partitive.....	226
Place of the Subject with regard to the Verb.....	227
Government of the Verbs.....	230
On the use Proper or Accidental of Moods and Tenses.....	232
Of the Indicative.....	232
Of the Conditional.....	238
Remark on the use of the Conditional and Future.....	239
Of the Subjunctive.....	240
Relations between the Tenses of the Indicative.....	242
Relations between the Tenses of the Subjunctive and the Indicative.....	244
Further Observations upon the Conditional and Subjunctive.....	247
Relations between the Tenses of the different Moods.....	248
Relations of the Indicative.....	248
Relations to the Conditional and of the Conditional.....	249
Relations of the Present and Future Absolute, &c.....	249
Principal Relations with the Subjunctive.....	250
Of the Infinitive.....	251

CHAPTER VII.

Of Prepositions.....	253
Of the Use of the Article with Prepositions.....	254
Repetition of the Prepositions.....	255
Of the Government of Prepositions.....	256

CHAPTER VIII.

Of the Adverbs.....	257
Of the Negative <i>ne</i>	257
Of the Place of the Negatives.....	257
Of the Use of <i>pas</i> and <i>point</i>	257
When <i>may</i> both <i>pas</i> and <i>point</i> be omitted.....	258
When <i>ought</i> both <i>pas</i> and <i>point</i> to be omitted.....	259
Of <i>plus</i> and <i>davantage</i>	262

CHAPTER IX.

Of Grammatical Construction.....	263
Of Inversion.....	267
Of the Ellipsis.....	268
Of the Pleonasm.....	268
Of the Sympsis.....	269

CHAPTER X.

Of Grammatical Discordances.....	269
Of Amphibologies.....	270
Of Gallicisms.....	271

CONTENTS.

IX

	PAGE
FREE EXERCISES	275
PHRASES	283
Examples of Phrases on the principal Difficulties of the French Language	283
On the Collective Partitive	283
On some Verbs which cannot be conjugated with <i>Avoir</i> to have... ..	283
On Words of Quantity.....	283
On the Personal Pronouns	284
On <i>soi, lui, soi-même</i> , and <i>lui-même</i>	284
On the Relative Pronouns.....	284
On the Demonstrative Pronouns	285
On the verb <i>Avoir</i> to have employed Impersonally	286
Promiscuous Phrases	287
Phrases in which the Article is used	288
Phrases in which the Article is omitted	289
Phrases on the Pronoun <i>LE</i>	290
Phrases on the Participle Past	291
Phrases on the Relations of Moods and Tenses.....	291
Phrases on the Negative <i>NE</i>	292
Phrases on some Delicacies of the French Language	294

EXPLANATION

Of the Abbreviations and Signs used in this Grammar.

- h. when the letter *h* at the beginning of a word is followed by a (*.*) *period*, it shows that *h* is mute in that word.
- m. after or in the place of a French word, shows the word to be *masculine*.
- f. after or in the place of a French word, shows the word to be *feminine*.
- pl. under an English word or after a French one, shows that that French word is to be put in the *plural*, though the corresponding English word is in the singular.
- art. put before a French word indicates that the definite article must be put before that word, though there is no article before the corresponding English word.
- * an asterisk (*) under an English word, means that that word is not to be expressed in French.

When under an English word there is neither a French word or an *, it means that the French of that word has already been given in some previous exercise, or is to be Frenchified according to the directions given page 16th and 17th.

The Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, &c. placed before French words, show the order in which they must be placed in writing down the French exercises. If the Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, &c. are placed before English words, they show the order in which the corresponding French words must be placed in writing down the French exercises.

When several English words are put between a parenthesis (*)*, they are all expressed by the French word or words placed under them.

The letters A. B. C. D., &c. placed under an English verb, shows the tense in which the French corresponding verb must be put.

GRAMMAR

OF THE

FRENCH LANGUAGE.

1. French Grammar is the art that teaches how to speak and write the French Language with propriety.

2. The French alphabet consists of twenty-five letters :

3. *Of the Names of French Letters.*

a, b, c, d, e, f, g[†], h, i, j[†], k, l, m, n, o, p, q[†],
*ah, bay, say, day, a, eff,*zhay, ash, e,*zhee, kah, el, em, en, o, pay, ku,*
 r, s, t, u[†], v, x, y, z.
air, ess, tay, u, vay, eeks, ee-greck, zed.

† 4. The names of letters thus marked, † cannot be given with precision, and must be learned from a teacher.

5. Letters are either vowels or consonants.

6. A vowel is a letter that forms a perfect sound when uttered by itself.

7. There are in French six vowels : a, e, i, o, u, y.

8. The letter *y* is by some considered as a consonant, but as it has the sound of *i* and often of two *i*'s, it is preferable to call it a vowel.

9. A consonant is a letter that forms but an imperfect sound when uttered by itself.

10. There are 19 consonants, b, c, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, q, r, s, t, v, x, z.

11. The letter *w* which is named in French *double vay*, does not belong to the French alphabet, it is never met with in French books, except in foreign words.

12. *Of the Sounds of the French Letters.*

The *sound* of a letter, or of a combination of letters, must not be confounded with the *name* of the letter or letters ; for instance in English, the letter *a*, which is named *ay*, has several *sounds*, as heard in *fate, far, fat, fall, what* ; the name of *d*, in English, is *dee*, and its *sound*, that heard at the beginning and at the end of the word *dead* when pronounced. The letters *sh*, are

* *Zh* in the name of *g* and *j* are pronounced like *z*, *glazier*.

named, in English, *ess*, and *aitch*, and their *sound*, when together, is that heard in *she*, pronounced *sh-e*. The same might be said of other letters, and combinations of letters.

13. *Of the Sounds of the French Simple Vowels.*

a, sounds like-*a* in *at*, *fat*, *mat*, *rat*, *marry*, *flat*.
 â, sounds like-*a* in *arm*, *barn*, *far*, *dart*, *part*, *mark*.
 e sounds like-*u* in *tub*, *burn*, *gust*, *lurk*, *rust*, *dusk*.
 é, sounds like-*a* in *ale*, *bale*, *cave*, *dale*, *fate*, *game*.
 è, sounds like-*a* in *mare*, *fare*, or *ai* in *air*, *pair*, *fair*.^{*}
 ê, sounds like-*e* in *there*, *where*.†
 i, sounds like-*i* in *idiom*, *dip*, *kit*, *big*, *tin*, *pin*.
 î, sounds like-*ee* in *eel*, *bee*, *deer*, *keel*, *reed*, *peer*.
 o, sounds like-*o* in *opera*, *not*, *crop*, *frog*, *prop*, *trot*.
 ô, sounds like-*o* in *over*, *more*, *no*, *bone*, *rope*, *note*.
 u†, sounds neither like *u* as heard in *tube*, nor *u* as heard in *bull*.

14. It has nearly the sound of *w* in the word *twenty*, in which this letter is not pronounced so full as in other words. In order to pronounce *u*, let the pupil pronounce the English letter *e*; then, without changing the position of his organs, let him close his lips a little more than for the *e*, and articulate the sound of the French *u*.

û†, has the same sound as the above, only a little longer.
 y, sounds like *i*, in *idiom*, *dip*, *bit*, *big*.
 y, sometimes sounds like two *i*'s.
 y, sometimes has the sound of *y* in *yard*, *year*, and may then be considered as a consonant.

15. *Of the Sounds of the French Compound Vowels.*

eu, sounds like *u* in *muff*, *cuff*, *puff*.
 eû†, has the same sound as the above, only much longer.
 eur, that is *eu* followed by *r* sounds exactly like *ur* in *blur*, *fur*.
 ou, sounds like *oo* in *too*, or *u* in *bull*, *full*, *pull*.
 ou†, sounds like *oo* in *fool*, *moon*, *cool*, *mood*.

16. *Of the Sounds of the French Nasal Vowels.*

an†, sounds nearly like *an* in *rang*, *sang*, *sprang*, *hang*.
 in†, sounds nearly like *en* in *strength*, *strengthen*, *length*.
 on†, sounds nearly like *on* in *wrong*, *long*.
 un†, sounds nearly like *un* in *clung*, *hung*, *rung*, *sung*.

17. *Of the Compound Sounds, of oi, ôi.*

oit, sounds nearly like *o* in *opera* and *a* in *at*, put together;
 as *boiter*, *to limp*—pronounce *boa té*.

* See page 10.

† When *there* and *where* are pronounced with great emphasis.

oit, sounds nearly like *o* in *opera* and *a* in *arm*, put together; as *boîte*, a *box*—pronounce *boat*, or like *wa* in *water*.

† 18. All these sounds, and particularly those marked †, will be better learned from a master than from any direction; however, an intelligent person may, from the above directions, learn enough of the pronunciation to make himself perfectly understood.

19. *Of the Sounds of the French Consonants.*

b, sounds like *b* in *bad*, *rub*, *bed*, *mob*.

c, before a consonant sounds like *k* in *key*, *kite*.

c, before *a*, *o*, or *u*, sounds, like *k* in *key*, *kite*.

c, before *e*, *i*, sounds like *s* in *sat*, *seat*.

ç, that is *c* with a *cedilla* before *a*, *o*, or *u*, sounds like *s* in *sat*, *seat*.

c, sounds like *g* in *second* and its compounds.

ch, sounds like *sh* in *shad*, *dash*.

ch, sometimes sounds like *k* in *kick*.

d, sounds like *d* in *dead*, *den*, *bad*, *rod*, *did*.

d, sometimes takes the sound of *t* at the end of words, when followed by a word beginning with a vowel, to which it must be joined, if the meaning of the sentence requires it.

f, sounds like *f* in *fit*, *fan*, *if*, *calf*, *for*.

f, sometimes takes the sound of *v*, at the end of words, when followed by a word beginning with a vowel, to which it must be joined, if the meaning of the sentence requires it.

g, before a consonant sounds like *g* in *gag*.

g, before *a*, *o*, or *u*, sounds like *g* in *gag*.

g, sometimes takes the sound of *k* in *kick*, when followed by a word beginning with a vowel, to which it must be joined. *u*, after *g* is very seldom pronounced.

g, before *e* or *i*, sounds like *j*. (See that sound.)

gn, sounds like *ni* in *union*, *pinion*, *minion*, *onion*.

20. Pay great attention to the pronunciation of this combination of letters, for it is difficult; and hence it is not uncommon, even in France, to hear *magnifique*, &c. pronounced as if spelt *ma-ni-fique*. The same sound in the Italian language is represented by the same letters *gn*, and in the Spanish by *n*. There are a few words in the French language, in which *gn* are sounded as *g* and *n*, as in *magnétique*, pronounced *mag-né-tique*.

h, there are two kinds of *h*, one silent, the other aspirated.

21. But in either case it has no sound; (such is also the case with the Italian and Spanish language.) By aspiration is not meant, in French, as in English, *a forcible breathing*, as heard in *high*, *horse*, *house*, &c. The best proof of this, is the difficulty which every Frenchman has to pronounce the English aspirated *h*, even after a number of years' practice. Besides

my own observation, as a native of France, I can here mention L'Abbé d'Olivet, whose opinion and writings are for us, what Walker's are for an Englishman. He says, in speaking of the aspiration of the Greek and German languages, the French language, which always aims at softness and euphony, attributes no other effect to the aspiration of the *h*, than that of communicating to the vowel, following the said aspirated *h*, the property of a consonant; that is, to prevent the *elision* of the final vowel of the preceding word. For instance, *le héros*, in which the *h* is called aspirated, is pronounced *le-é-rô*, and not *lé-rô*, as would be the case with *l'héritier*, in which the *h* is called mute, and which is pronounced *lé-ri-tié*, and not *le-é-ri-tié*. The aspirated *h*, prevents, also, the final consonant of the word that precedes it, from being connected with the vowel which follows it; for instance *plus haut*, in which *h* is called aspirated, is pronounced *plu ô* and not *plu zô*; while *plus honorable*, in which *h* is mute, is pronounced *plu-zo-no-rable* and not *plu-o-no-rable*. Again, *des auteurs* some authors—is pronounced *dè-zô-teur*, and *des hauteurs* some heights—is pronounced *dè-ô-teur*; the only difference in the pronunciation of the above two expressions, merely consists in joining the *s* of *des* to *auteurs* authors—whereas it must not be done to *hauteurs* heights. From my acquaintance with the English pronunciation, I am confident that if Boyer, Chambaud, &c., from whom all others have copied this error, without taking the trouble of ascertaining the fact, had been well acquainted with the nature of the English aspirated *h*, they would never have assimilated the French to it.

j, sounds like *s* in *pleasure*, or like *z* in *glazier*, *azure*.

22. The sound of which letter is represented by Walker by *zh*.

k, sounds like *k* in *kick*, *keel*, *weak*, *kid*, *cloak*.

l, sounds like *l* in *lad*, *coal*, *lot*, *pupil*, *lump*, *soul*.

il or *ill*†, sounds like *lli* in *William*, *billiard*, *collier*.

23. With regard to the pronunciation of the *l* or *ll*, *mouillées*, it is proper to mention that they are differently pronounced by different persons; thus the words *soleil*, *fille*, *travail*, *tailleur*, &c. instead of being pronounced as directed above, are pronounced as if written thus: *so-lè-ye*, *fi-ye*, *tra-va-ye*, *ta-yeur*, giving to the *y* the sound it has in the word *year*.

24. This last pronunciation being the easier of the two, has been adopted by so many people in France, that it is no longer considered as a fault, except by grammarians. However I recommend the former, not only on account of its correctness, but also on account of its being a sound very common to the Spanish, the Italian, and the Portuguese languages; in which languages this sound does not admit of any variation. It is represented in the Spanish by *ll*, in the Italian by *gli*, and in the Portuguese by *lh*.

25. When in a word *l* or *ll* preceded by *i*, are *liquides*, or *mouillées*, I have, in the figured pronunciation of the verbs, and of the fables, represented this sound by *ill*, standing by itself; and this with a view of forcing the attention of the pupil. It will be seen also, that in those words in which the *i* that precedes the *l*, or *ll*, is pronounced; I have repeated it, as in *fille*, *fi-ill*, *billet*, *bi-ill-è*, in which the *i* is distinctly heard, before the utterance of the *ll*, *mouillées*; which is not the case in *travail*, *tra-va-ill*; *tailleur*, *ta-ill-eur*; *soleil*, *so-lè-ill*; *sommeiller*, *so-mè-ill-é*.

m, sounds like *m* in *man*, *men*, *stem*, *minim*, *slim*.

am, em, im, om, um, ym, are pronounced like
an, en, in, on, un, in, which see.

n, sounds at the beginning of syllables like *n* in *nap*, *nip*, *note*.
n, preceded by the vowels *a*, *i*, *o*, *u*, form the four nasal sounds,
an, *in*, *on*, *un*, mentioned under article 16th, which see.
n, at the end of a word, although preceded by a vowel, sometimes has the sound of *n* in *pan*, *pen*, *pin*, *ton*, *sun*.

26. When it is to be pronounced so, it is indicated by a capital *N*, which refers to the word *amen*, in the key to the figured pronunciation of the verbs of this Grammar, and in that of the Fables.

n, final—When a word ends with an *n*, and is followed by a word beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute to which it must be joined, the *n* final is doubled; that is, another *n* is added in the pronunciation; and that added *n* is joined to, and pronounced with the next word, for instance:

ancien ami, bien heureux, are pronounced as if spelt,
ancien nami, *bien neureu*.

27. However it is a pretty general custom with regard to the four following words: *bon*, *mon*, *ton*, *son*, not to double the final *n*, but to pronounce the final *n* of each of these words, with the following words, beginning with a vowel, or an *h* mute, for instance:

bon ami, *mon ami*, *ton ami*, *son ami*, must be pronounced as
bo.nami, *mo.nami*, *to.nami*, *so.nami*. [if spelt,

28. I must also here observe, that *un* when followed by a word beginning with a vowel, or a silent *h*, is pronounced in two ways. Thus for instance, the masculine nouns, *un esclave*, *un exemple*, *un ami*, will be pronounced by some, *u-nesclave*, *u-nexemple*, *u-nami*, as they would pronounce the feminine nouns, *une esclave*, *une exemple*, *une amie*; by others, *un esclave*, *un exemple*, *un ami*, will be pronounced as if written, *unnesclave*, *unexemple*, *unami*, and *une esclave*, *une exemple*, *une amie*, *u-nesclave*, *u-nexemple*, *u-namie*.

29. By the latter way of pronouncing *un*, the speaker, besides preserving the proper nasal sound of *un*, does away with the ambiguity about the gender, to which the former way of pronouncing gives rise. I have adopted the latter in the figured pronunciation; not because it is the most used, but because it is considered the most correct way of the two.

p, sounds like *p*, in *pap*, *pet*, *step*, *pip*, *pop*.

q, sounds like *k*, in *kick*, *kid*, *keel*, *koran*.

30. *U* after *q* is very seldom pronounced.

r, sounds like *r* in *roar*, *rat*, *rap*, *red*, *rid*, *rod*, *rub*.

31. The French *r*, must always have the jarring sound. The jarring sound of the initial or rough *r*, is formed, says Walker, by jarring, or vibrating the tip of the tongue against the roof of the mouth, near the fore teeth

s, sounds like *s* in *sassafras*, *atlas*, *seldom*, *silk*, *sole*.

s, between two vowels, or at the end of a word, followed by a word beginning with a vowel, or an *h* mute, to which it must be joined, has generally the sound of *z*, as heard in *zeal*, *zone*, or *s* in *rose*.

sh, sounds like *sh* in *shad*, *dash*, *shed*, *fresh*, *ship*, *fish*, *shop*, *clash*, *shun*, *blush*.

t, sounds like *t* in *tart*, *tell*, *jet*, *top*, *spot*.

t, in the middle of a word, has sometimes the sound of *s*, as in *sat*, *seat*, for instance, in *patience*, *caution*, &c.

th, sounds like *t* in *tap*, *top*.

t, at the end of a word, is generally joined and sounded with the next word, beginning with a vowel or *h* mute.

v, sounds like *v* in *rat*, *vent*, *vil*, *votive*, *vulgar*.

x, has five sounds	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} k \\ k-s \\ g-z \\ s \\ z \end{array} \right\}$	as in the French words	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{excellence} \\ \text{axiome} \\ \text{exemple} \\ \text{soixante} \\ \text{sixième} \end{array} \right\}$	èk-sé-lans.
				ak-si-om.*
				èg-zan-ple
				soi-sant.
				si-zi-èm.

32. * In the words in which *x* is pronounced like *k-s*; *s* must not be pronounced like *sh*, as it is in the English word *axiom*, pronounced *ak-shum*, but like *s* in *sister*.

z, sounds like *z* in *zeal*, *zest*, *zone*, and *s* in *rose*.

w, is generally pronounced like *v* in *very*.

w, is in a few words pronounced as it is in the English, in *work*, *word*.

33. I should have mentioned that new names have been given to the letters of the French alphabet, which, though far preferable to the old ones, are as yet not generally taught.

a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, j, k, l, m, n, o,
a, be, ke, de, a, fet, ge, he, e†, je, ke, le, me, ne, o,*

p, q, r, s, t, u, v, x, y, z.
pe, ke, re, se, te, u, ve, kse, e grec, ze.

* The *e* after each consonant has the sound of *u* in *tub*, and is pronounced but feebly.

† *g* here has the sound it has in *gag*, *gig*, &c.

‡ *j* sounds like *z* in *glazier*.

34. Table of the Simple sounds of Vowels; showing at one view the different combinations, by which these simple sounds are represented in different words.*

sounds	examples	sounds like	represented by	examples	
a	ami	a, in at	{ e	femme	woman
â	âne	a, in arm	{ ea	il gagea	he betted
e	te	u, in tub	{ a	bas	stocking
é	écrit	a, in ale	{ eâ	rougeâtre	reddish
			{ ai	nous faisons	we do
			{ eai	aigu	sharp
			{ ée	geai	jay
			{ æ	année	year
			{ æsophage	œsophagus	
è†	mère†	a, in mare†	{ ai	aide	aid
			{ aie	baie	bay
			{ ei	baleine	whale
			{ eai	monnaie	money
ê‡	être‡	e, in there‡	{ aî	ainé	eldest
	idole	i, in idiom	{ i	imiter	to imitate
î	gîte	ee, in eel	{ ie	folie	folly
o	opéra	o, in opera	{ au	aurore	aurora
			{ eo	flageolet	flageolet
ô	ôter	o, in over	{ au	auteur	author
			{ eau	marteau	hammer
			{ eo	geole	goal
u	mur	none	{ eu	gageure	wager
			{ eue	eue	had
			{ ue	laitue	lettuce
û	mûr	none	{ û	flûte	flute
eu	jeune	u, in muff	{ æu	œuf	egg
eû	jeûne	none	{ æu	nœud	knot
			{ eue	queue	tail
ou	tout	oo, in too	{ ou	tout	all
ôû	voûte	oo, in fool	{ aoû	août	august
			{ oue	roue	wheel
			{ am	ample	ample
an	ancre	an, in sang	{ aon	paon	peacock
			{ ean	affligeant	afflicting
			{ em	membre	member
			{ en	entendre	to hear
			{ aim	essaim	swarm
			{ ain	crainte	fear
in	ingrat	en, in length	{ ein	peinture	picture
			{ im	impoli	impolite
			{ ym	symbole	symbol
			{ yn	syntaxe	syntax
on	onde	on, in long	{ aon	taon	ox-fly
			{ eon	pigeon	pigeon
			{ om	ombre	shade
un§	un§	un§, in sung	{ eun	à jeun	fasting
			{ um	parfum	perfume

* See page 10.

† See page 10.

‡ See note page 2.

§ See page 5, Art. 28.

Table of Diphthongs.

35. A diphthong is a coalition of two sounds, which are distinctly heard by a simple emission of the voice. The diphthongs of the French language will all be found in the following table, opposite to the simple sounds of which they are composed.

36. In the figured pronunciation of the Fables, and of the Verbs, the two sounds forming a diphthong have been separated, with a view of causing the pupil to pronounce distinctly the two sounds. The master must not allow the pupil to pause between the two vowels, but pronounce them as closely as possible.

diphthongs	simple sounds	examples.	
ia	i-a	fiacre	<i>hackney coach</i>
ia	i-â	galimatias	<i>nonsense</i>
iai	i-é	je défiai	<i>I challenged</i>
ié		amitié	<i>friendship</i>
ie		riez	<i>laugh</i>
iai	i-è	je purifiais	<i>I purified</i>
ie		bière	<i>beer</i>
ie		ciel	<i>heaven</i>
io	i-o	violon	<i>violin</i>
iau	i-ô	miauler	<i>to mew</i>
iu	i-û	reliure	<i>binding</i>
ieu	i-eu	relieur	<i>book binder</i>
ieu	i-eû	mieux	<i>better</i>
ieue		lieue	<i>league</i>
iou	i-ou	chiourme	<i>the crew of a galley</i>
ian	i-an	viande	<i>meat</i>
ien		audience	<i>audience</i>
ien	i-in	chrétien	<i>christian</i>
ion	i-on	passion	<i>passion</i>
oi	o-a	boîte	<i>maturity of wine</i>
oi	o-â	boîte	<i>box</i>
oie		foie	<i>liver</i>
oe	o-è	moelle	<i>marrow</i>
eo		nageoire	<i>fin</i>
oi	ou-è	voisin	<i>neighbour</i>
oin	ou-in	besoin	<i>want</i>
oua	ou-a	rouage	<i>wheel-work</i>
ouâ	ou-â	nous nouâmes	<i>we tied</i>
oue	ou-eu	boueur	<i>dust man</i>
oué	ou-é	dénouer	<i>to untie</i>
ouée		déjoué	<i>baffled</i>
ouai		trouée	<i>opening</i>
oi	ou-è	je jouai	<i>I played</i>
oue		oiseau	<i>bird</i>
ouai		fouetter	<i>to whip</i>
oui	ou-i	je louais	<i>I praised</i>
ouie		cambouis	<i>coom</i>
oue		l'ouïe	<i>the hearing</i>
oueu	ou-eû	noueux	<i>knotty</i>
ouan	ou-an	louange	<i>praise</i>
ouen		Rouen	<i>Rouen, city of</i>

[France]

diphthongs	simple sounds	examples.	
ouin	ou-in	babouin	<i>baboon</i>
ouon	ou-on	nous jouons	<i>we play</i>
ua	ou-a	lingual	<i>lingual</i>
ua	u-a	nuage	<i>cloud</i>
uâ	u-â	nous tuâmes	<i>we killed</i>
ueu	u-eu	lueur	<i>glimmering</i>
uai	u-é	je remuai	<i>I moved</i>
ue		éternuer	<i>to sneeze</i>
ué		dénué	<i>stript</i>
uéc		nuée	<i>cloud</i>
ue	u-è	menuet	<i>minuet</i>
uai		il suait	<i>he perspired</i>
ui		buisson	<i>bush</i>
uie		pluie	<i>rain</i>
uo	u-ô	impétuosité	<i>impetuosity</i>
ueu	u-eù	majestueux	<i>majestic</i>
uan	u-an	nuance	<i>shade</i>
uen		influence	<i>influence</i>
uin	u-in	juin	<i>June</i>
uon	u-on	nous tuons	<i>we kill</i>

37. A single view of the two tables, here given, will show of what advantage figured pronunciation will be to him, who is desirous of acquiring an accurate pronunciation, whether he has a master or not. If he has a master he will be able to revise his reading lesson, and by this means make great progress; if he is deprived of the assistance of a master, he will be able to obtain a tolerable pronunciation, which would have been impossible for him, without this help.

38. The following table treats of some terminations which differ very materially in pronunciation from the English. English learners, in these terminations, are always inclined to sound *e* before *l* or *r* as they do in their own language; for instance, they will pronounce *acre*, *akur*.

ble	<i>In English these terminations would be nearly pronounced as if spelt</i>	bul	<i>Giving to the u a slight sound of u in fur</i>	ta-ble	<i>In French, these final terminations must be pronounced, leaving out the e and giving to the two consonants the sounds they have at the beginning of the following English words.</i>	bl-aze
bre		bur		sa-bre		br-ace
cle						
for						
kle		kul		mira-cle		kl-ick
cre						
for						
kre		kur		a-cre		cr-ane
dre		dur		pou-dre		dr-ain
fle		ful		buf-fle		fl-ame
fre		fur		cof-fre		fr-ame
gle		gul		an-gle		gl-are
gre		gur		mai-gre		gr-ave
ple		pul		am-ple		pl-ane
pre		pur		pro-pre		pr-aise
tre		tur		an-tre		tr-ain

* In comparing this table of *simple sounds of vowels* with Levizac's, it will be seen that though he gives but seventeen sounds I give twenty.

Since Levizac gives the short and long sounds of *o* and of *eu*, I do not see why he omitted the long sound of *i*, of *u*, and of *ou*.



† Soon after the publication of my book of Fables, at the beginning of which I have drawn an approximative comparison between the French and the English sounds, I saw in a number of the *YANKEE*, then (1829) published in Portland or in Boston, an article which reproved me for having dared to compare the sound of *è* in *mère* with the sound of *a* in *mare*, or which amounts to the same thing, for having dared to make a difference between the sound of *a* in *mare*, *fare*, &c. and the sound of *a* in *ale*, *fate*, &c.

At the time I made that difference I looked for no authority, but I trusted to my ear, which seldom deceives me with regard to the least shades in the sounds of languages. Since the publication of the above mentioned article in the *YANKEE*, I have made some researches, the result of which has proved to me, that if I was wrong, many eminent English and American orthoëpists were so too.

For the information of the writer of said article in the *YANKEE* I shall quote the authors who are in favour of the difference I made, and still make between, the above two sounds.

See J. A. CUMMINGS' Pronouncing Spelling Book, third edition, Boston, 1822; preface, page ix.

See JOHN FRANKLIN JONES' Analytical Spelling Book, second edition, New York, 1824, page 14, line 10th; page 19, the word *rare*; page 60, the word *beware*; page 61, column 4th, the word *affair*, and following.

See E. HAZEN's Speller and Definer, New York, 1830; page 7, the word *fare*; page 189, the words *pair*, *pare*, and *pear*.

See WILLIAM PELHAM's System of Notation, Boston, 1808, page xxiii. the words *mare*, *tare*, and *care*.

See WEBSTER's 4to. Dictionary, Vol. I. Directions for the pronunciation of words, page 2, 17th line from the bottom.

See WEBSTER's 8vo. Dictionary, page iv., 21st line from the bottom. There will be seen not only the opinion of Mr. Webster himself, but that of Mr. J. E. WORCESTER of Cambridge, and of Professor GOODRICH of Yale College, who, we are told by Webster's preface, have had much to do with the editing of his 8vo. dictionary.

In the passage referred to, it will also be seen that PERRY, the English orthoëpist, has made the same difference in his Dictionary, which is, and has been, since its publication, the best authority quoted by well informed people in England.

See J. E. WORCESTER's 12mo. Dictionary, New York, 1830, page iii. Key to the sounds of the marked letters, and also, page xi., 14th line from the bottom.

See HENRY BUTTER's Etymological Spelling Book, London, 1831, a book much esteemed in England.

See WILLIAM RUSSELL's Lessons in Enunciation, Boston, 1830, page 12, 11th line from the top.

Mr. WILLIAM RUSSELL is the editor of the Journal of Education (first series), and taught elocution for many years in Cambridge and Boston.

Punctuation and Accentuation.

39. Besides the marks of punctuation, which are the same both in French and in English—comma , *virgule*—semicolon, ; *point-virgule*—colon : *deux points*—period . *un point*—note of interrogation ? *point d'interrogation*—note of admiration, or exclamation ! *point d'admiration ou d'exclamation*—the parenthesis () *la parenthèse*—the dash — *le trait de séparation*—a quotation “ ” *guillemets* ; there are other marks called accents.

40. The acute accent ' *accent aigu*—is placed over *e* in certain words, and gives it the sound called *fermé* ; as heard in *préfééré, régénéré, &c.*

41. The grave accent ` *accent grave*—is placed over *a, e, u*, in certain words ; and gives to the *e* the sound called *ouvert* ; as heard in *mère, procès, &c.*

42. The grave accent, put over *a, u*, has no influence on their sound : it is used principally to distinguish one part of speech from another ; for instance, to distinguish *à* to, from *a* has—*là* there, from *la* the--*où* where, from *ou* or, &c.

43. The circumflex accent ^ *accent circonflexe*—is placed over *a, e, i, o, u*, in certain words, to give these vowels a long sound ; as in *âge, tête, épître, côte, bûche, &c.*, which were formerly written *aage, teste, épistre, coste, busche, &c.*

44. The cedilla ç *cédille*—is a kind of comma placed under *c*, to give it the sound of *s*, before *a, o, u*, as in *façade, façon, regu, &c.* ; in which words *c* would be *hard*, and pronounced like *k* in *kick*, were it not for the *cedilla*.

45. The diæresis .. *tréma* or *diérèse*—are two dots placed over the vowels *e, i, u*, to indicate that these vowels are not to form a diphthong with the preceding vowel, but are to be pronounced separately ; as in *poëte, naïveté, saül, &c.*

46. The hyphen - *tiret* or *trait d'union*—is used to connect—1st, compound words ; as *belles-lettres, arc-en-ciel, &c.* 2dly, the personal pronouns ; *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles*, to the verb, when used interrogatively : as *parlé-je, parles-tu, &c.* 3dly, the conjunctive pronouns ; *moi, toi, lui, &c.* to the verb, when put after it ; as *parles-moi, dites-lui*. 4thly, and also, to show at the end of a line, that a word has been divided, part of which begins the following line.

47. The apostrophe ' *apostrophe*—is used to show the suppression or elision of a vowel before another vowel, or before an *h* mute ; as—*l'église*, instead of *la église*—*l'homme*, instead of *le homme, &c.*

INTRODUCTION TO THE EXERCISES.

48. THE learner is to render the English definite article

<i>the</i> by	<i>le</i> before a noun masculine	} in the singular.
	<i>la</i> before a noun feminine	
	<i>l'</i> before a noun masculine or feminine beginning with a vowel or <i>h</i> mute	
	<i>les</i> before nouns of either gender in the plural.	

49. The learner is to render the English indefinite article

<i>a</i> or <i>an</i> by	<i>un</i> before a noun masculine singular.
	<i>une</i> before a noun feminine singular.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Le</i> livre	<i>the</i> book	<i>les</i> plantes	<i>the</i> plants
<i>la</i> rue	<i>the</i> street	<i>un</i> homme	<i>a</i> man
<i>l'</i> ame*	<i>the</i> soul	<i>une</i> femme	<i>a</i> woman
<i>l'</i> histoire	<i>the</i> history	<i>un</i> héros	<i>a</i> hero.

EXERCISES.

The wood, <i>bois</i> , m.	the forest, <i>forêt</i> , f.	the houses, <i>maisons</i> ,	the men, <i>hommes</i> ,	the court, <i>cour</i> , f.
the foot, <i>pied</i> , m.	the arms, <i>bras</i> ,	the room, <i>chambre</i> , f.	the garden, <i>jardin</i> , m.	the windows, <i>fenêtres</i> ,
a history, <i>histoire</i> , f.	a novel, <i>roman</i> , m.	a foreigner, <i>étranger</i> , m.	a walk, <i>promenade</i> , f.	a day, <i>jour</i> , m.
a night, <i>nuit</i> , f.	the sun, <i>soleil</i> , m.	the moon, <i>lune</i> , f.	the stars, <i>étoiles</i> ,	a body, <i>corps</i> , m.
a card, <i>carte</i> , f.	a crown, <i>écu</i> , m.			

50. The learner will render the English prepositions *of* and *from* by *de*, } and when followed by the article *the* he will render *to* and *at* by *à* } them thus:

<i>of the</i> by or <i>from the</i> by	<i>du</i> before a noun masculine	} singular beginning with a consonant or <i>h</i> aspirated.
	<i>de la</i> before a noun feminine	
	<i>de l'</i> before any noun beginning with a vowel or <i>h</i> mute.	}
	<i>des</i> before any noun in the plural.	
<i>to the</i> by or <i>at the</i> by	<i>au</i> before a noun masculine	} singular beginning with a consonant or <i>h</i> aspirated.
	<i>à la</i> before a noun feminine	
	<i>à l'</i> before any noun beginning with a vowel or <i>h</i> mute	}
	<i>aux</i> before any noun in the plural:	

51. When the above prepositions *of*, *from*, *to*, and *at*, are followed by *a* or *an*, he will render them thus:

<i>of a</i> or <i>from a</i> by	<i>d'un</i> before a noun masculine.
	<i>d'une</i> before a noun feminine.
<i>to a</i> or <i>at a</i> by	<i>à un</i> before a noun masculine.
	<i>à une</i> before a noun feminine.

* Lévizac in his own grammar writes *dme* contrary to the best authorities. See Grammaire des Grammaires, 7th ed. page 1073.

EXAMPLES.

Du parc	<i>of the park</i>	à l'esprit	<i>to the mind</i>
de la rivière	<i>of the river</i>	aux carrosses	<i>to the coaches</i>
de l'esprit	<i>of the mind</i>	d'un jour	<i>of a day</i>
des carrosses	<i>of the coaches</i>	d'une nuit	<i>of a night</i>
au parc	<i>to the park</i>	à un jour	<i>to a day</i>
à la rivière	<i>to the river</i>	à une nuit	<i>to a night</i>

EXERCISES.

The palace	of the king,	of the queen,	of the man,	to the
<i>palais, m.</i>	<i>roi,</i>	<i>reine,</i>	<i>l'homme,</i>	
king,	to the queen,	to the man,	to the men,	from
a balcony,	from a window,	of a prince,	to a princess,	
<i>balcon, m.</i>	<i>fenêtre, f.</i>	<i>prince,</i>	<i>princesse,</i>	
of the gardens,	of the evening,	to the courtiers,	of a table,	
<i>jardins,</i>	<i>soir, m.</i>	<i>courtisans,</i>	<i>table, f.</i>	
to the master,	to a lady,	of the soul,	of the horse,	to a cat,
<i>maître,</i>	<i>dame,</i>	<i>ame, f.</i>	<i>cheval,</i>	<i>chat, m.</i>
of the houses,	of a carpet.			
<i>maisons,</i>	<i>tapis, m.</i>			

55. The learner will render

	(a)	(b)	(c)
	<i>singular, m.</i>	<i>sing. f.</i>	<i>plur. m., and f.</i>
<i>of or from my</i> by	<i>de mon</i>	<i>de ma</i>	<i>de mes</i>
<i>of or from thy</i> by	<i>de ton</i>	<i>de ta</i>	<i>de tes</i>
<i>of or from his</i> }			
<i>of or from her</i> } by	<i>de son</i>	<i>de sa</i>	<i>de ses</i>
<i>of or from its</i> }			
<i>of or from our</i> by	<i>de notre</i>	<i>de notre</i>	<i>de nos</i>
<i>of or from your</i> by	<i>de votre</i>	<i>de votre</i>	<i>de vos</i>
<i>of or from their</i> by	<i>de leur</i>	<i>de leur</i>	<i>de leurs</i>
<i>to or at my</i> by	<i>à mon</i>	<i>à ma</i>	<i>à mes</i>
<i>to or at thy</i> by	<i>à ton</i>	<i>à ta</i>	<i>à tes</i>
<i>to or at his</i> }			
<i>to or at her</i> } by	<i>à son</i>	<i>à sa</i>	<i>à ses</i>
<i>to or at its</i> }			
<i>to or at our</i> by	<i>à notre</i>	<i>à notre</i>	<i>à nos</i>
<i>to or at your</i> by	<i>à votre</i>	<i>à votre</i>	<i>à vos</i>
<i>to or at their</i> by	<i>à leur</i>	<i>à leur</i>	<i>à leurs.</i>

(a) *Mon, ton, son,* are put before nouns singular m. and before nouns sing. f. when the sing. f. nouns begin with a vowel or an *h* mute.

(b) *Ma, ta, sa,* are put before nouns singular f. beginning with a consonant or an *h* aspirated.

(c) *Mes, tes, ses,* are put before any nouns plural m. or f.

53. The learner will render

<i>of this, of that, from this, from that</i> by <i>de</i>	{	<i>ce</i> before a noun singular m. beginning with a consonant or an <i>h</i> aspirated.
<i>to this, to that, at this, at that, by à</i>		<i>cet</i> before a noun singular m. beginning with a vowel or <i>h</i> mute.
		<i>cette</i> before any noun singular f.

of these, of those, from these, from those, by de ces } before any noun
to these, to those, at these, at those, by à ces } in the plural.

EXAMPLES.

de mon père	<i>of my father</i>	à leur travail	<i>to their work</i>
à ta mère	<i>to thy mother</i>	de cette terrasse	<i>from this terrace</i>
de son frère	<i>of his brother</i>	de ce lieu	<i>of that place</i>
de notre ville	<i>of our town</i>	de cet homme	<i>of this man</i>
à votre maison	<i>to your house</i>	de ces arbres	<i>of these trees</i>

EXERCISES.

Of my clothes, <i>habits,</i>	of thy handkerchief, <i>mouchoir, m.</i>	of his pocket, <i>poche, f.</i>	of your
letters, <i>lettres,</i>	of our treasure, <i>trésor, m.</i>	to their house, <i>maison, f.</i>	of this steeple <i>clocher, m.</i>
that hero, <i>héros,</i>	of this tower, <i>tour, f.</i>	of these models, <i>modèles,</i>	of my sister, <i>sœur,</i>
your relations, <i>parens,</i>	the top <i>sommet m.</i>	of this mountain, <i>montagne, f.</i>	to my friend, <i>ami, m.</i>
pleasures, <i>plaisirs,</i>	of our duties, <i>devoirs,</i>	to their connexions, <i>liaisons,</i>	of his acquaintances, <i>connaissances,</i>
to my neighbours. <i>voisins.</i>			

ELISION.

54. The *Apostrophe* ' marks, we have said, (page 11, art. 47.) the suppression of a vowel before another vowel or an *h* mute.

55. This suppression is called *Elision*. The only vowels that suffer *elision* before another vowel or *h* mute are *a, e, i*.

56. The vowel *i* is only suppressed in the word *si* when it comes before either of the two following words *il*, he or it — *ils*, they, thus : *s'il*, if he or if it, instead of *si il*, if he or if it — *s'ils*, if they, instead of *si ils*, if they.

57. The vowels *a, e*, are suppressed in the following words : when these words are placed before other words beginning with a vowel or *h* mute.

58. Throughout this book, whenever a word begins with an *h* mute, the *h* will be an italic *h* if the French word is in Roman ; if in italics, then a . will be put after the *h*—thus, *h.omme*.

<i>si</i>	if	See article 56, above.			
<i>le</i>	the	before a vowel, or <i>h</i> mute,			<i>l'</i>
<i>le*</i>	him	"	"	"	<i>l'</i>
<i>le*</i>	it	"	"	"	<i>l'</i>
<i>lu</i>	the	"	"	"	<i>l'</i>

<i>la*</i>	her	before a vowel or <i>h</i> mute,	<i>l'</i>
<i>la*</i>	it	" " "	<i>l'</i>
<i>je*</i>	I	" " "	<i>j'</i>
<i>me</i>	me	" " "	<i>m'</i>
<i>te</i>	thee	" " "	<i>t'</i>
<i>se</i>	himself	" " "	<i>s'</i>
<i>se</i>	herself	" " "	<i>s'</i>
<i>se</i>	itsel	" " "	<i>s'</i>
<i>se</i>	themselves	" " "	<i>s'</i>
<i>ce</i>	this	" " "	<i>c'</i>
<i>ce</i>	that	" " "	<i>c'</i>
<i>ce*</i>	it	" " "	<i>c'</i>
<i>de</i>	of	" " "	<i>d'</i>
<i>ne</i>	not	" " "	<i>n'</i>
<i>que</i>	that	" " "	<i>qu'</i>
<i>que</i>	which	" " "	<i>qu'</i>
<i>que</i>	whom	" " "	<i>qu'</i>
<i>parceque</i>	because	" " "	<i>parcequ'</i>
<i>quoique</i>	although	" " "	<i>quoiqu'</i>
<i>puisque</i>	since	" " "	<i>puisqu'</i>
<i>jusque</i>	till	" " "	<i>jusqu'</i>
<i>vû que</i>	since	" " "	<i>vû qu'</i>
<i>dès que</i>	as soon as	" " "	<i>dès qu'</i>
<i>quelque</i>	some	" " "	<i>quelqu'</i>
<i>entre</i>	between	" " "	<i>entre</i>

59. The *e* in *entre*, before *eux*, *elles* and *autre*, may or may not be suppressed; it is indifferent whether we write, *entre eux*, or *entr'eux*—*entre elles*, or *entr'elles*—*entre autres*, or *entr'autres*.

60. *When the words (all pronouns) thus marked * in the above list, are put after the verb of which they are the nominative—or by which they are governed in the objective case—they do not suffer elision, although the word that comes after them begins with a vowel or an *h* mute—thus, *apportez-le ici*, *est-ce à lui*, &c.

EXERCISES.

'The soul, the heroine, the mind, he loves him, she loves her
ame, f. héroïne, f. esprit, m. il ²*aime* ¹*le*, *elle* ²*aime* ¹*la*,
 I love this man, you do not understand me, he esteems thee,
je aime h.omme, vous * *ne* ³*pas* ²*entendez* ¹*me*, *il* ²*estime* ¹*te*,
 he goes away, it was the golden age, do not go there, if
se en va, ce était ²*d'or* ¹*âge*, *¹*ne* ³*pas* ²*allez* ⁴*là*, *si*
 he comes, if they please, what has he said? till night,
vient, ils veulent, que a-t-il dit? *jusque au soir, m.*
 though he says, since he knows, when he saw, between them,
quoique dise, puisque sait, lorsque vit, entre eux,
 somebody is come.
quelque un est venu.

61. In the following French negative modes of speech, which answer to the accompanying English translation, the *caret* ^ points out the place which the French verb must occupy, whenever it is not in the infinitive mood.

<i>Not</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{ne}^{\wedge} \text{pas} \\ \text{ne}^{\wedge} \text{point} \end{array} \right\}$	} as {	je ne suis pas, &c. <i>I am not, &c.</i>	
			nous n'avons point,	} <i>we have not.</i>
<i>never</i>	ne [^] jamais		il ne joue jamais,	<i>he never plays</i>
<i>nothing</i>	ne [^] rien		vous ne dites rien,	} <i>you say nothing.</i>
<i>nobody</i>	ne [^] personne		je ne vois personne,	} <i>I see nobody.</i>
<i>not a jot</i>	ne [^] goutte		je ne vois goutte,	} <i>I do not see, or</i> <i>I see not in the least.</i>
<i>no where</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{ne}^{\wedge} \text{nulle} \\ \text{part} \end{array} \right\}$		je ne vais nulle part,	} <i>I go no where.</i>

62. But in compound tenses, it is the auxiliary verb that parts the negative *ne* from the *pas*, or *point*, &c. that accompanies it, as nous n'avons point parlé, *we have not spoken*; on n'aurait jamais cru, *one could never have believed*.

63. The addition of *pas*, or *point*, to the negative particle *ne*, must not be considered as a second negation; but only as a complimentary part of it. For in such cases, *pas*, *point*, *goutte*, are mere restrictive terms, nearly resembling the English word, *jot*, *bit*, *tittle*, sometimes added to *not*, with this difference, that *pas* and *point* in French have nothing trivial in them.

I do not say, I have not said, I have never seen, I never (tell a
 * *dis, ai dit, vu,*
 falsehood), I do nothing, I have done nothing, is he not arrived?
mens, fais fait est-il arrivé?
 does he not come? I see nothing, has he never seen? he never loses
 * *2il 1vient? vois a-t- vu? perd*
 his time, that (is worth) nothing, I met nobody.
temps, m. cela vaut rencontraï

N. B. The above exercise and direction, article 61, are out of place. Lévizac ought to have remembered that the scholar knows as yet nothing about simple and compound tenses.

64. There are many words which are alike in both languages, and others which differ only in their termination.

65. The expressions, which are perfectly alike, are particularly those that have the following terminations:

-al	as	{ animal, cardinal, fatal, général, local, moral, natal, original, principal, &c.
-ble	—	{ capable, fable, &c. bible, éligible, &c. noble, double, soluble, insoluble, &c.
-ace	—	{ face, grimace, grâce, place, préface, race, surface, trace, &c.
-ance	—	{ chance, complaisance, extravagance, ignorance, lance, tempérance, &c.
ence	—	{ abstinence, conférence, continence, diligence, éloquence, patience, &c.
ice	—	{ artifice, auspices, édifice, justice, injustice, office, orifice, précipice, solstice, &c.

-acle	as	{	miracle, oracle, obstacle, réceptacle, tabernacle, spectacle, &c.
-ade		{	ambuscade, cavalcade, brigade, esplanade sérénade, rétrograde, &c.
-age		{	âge, adage, bandage, cage, cordage, image, page, plumage, rage, &c.
-ege			collège, privilège, sacrilège, siège, sortilège, &c.
-ge		{	vestige, doge, barge, charge, orange, forge, rouge, refuge, déluge, &c.
-ule		{	globule, ridicule, animalcule, corpuscule, formule, module, mule, pustule, valvule, &c.
-ile		{	bile, débile, agile, docile, ductile, facile, fragile, nubile, reptile, versatile, &c.
-ine		{	carabine, fascine, doctrine, héroïne, machine, marine, famine, mine, rapine, &c.
-ion		{	action, fraction, légion, nation, opinion, passion, question, religion, &c.
-ant		{	arrogant, constant, élégant, éléphant, pétulant, piquant, poignant, vigilant, &c.
-ent		{	absent, accident, compliment, argument, content, élément, fréquent, serpent, &c.

66. Many other English words require only the change of termination, in the following manner :

-gy	into	-gie	as	<i>energy</i>	<i>énergie</i>
-ary	—	-aire	—	<i>military</i>	<i>militaire</i>
-ory	—	-oire	—	<i>glory</i>	<i>gloire</i>
-cy	—	-ce	—	<i>clemency</i>	<i>clémence</i>
-ty	—	-té	—	<i>beauty</i>	<i>beauté</i>
-ous	—	-eux	—	<i>dangerous</i>	<i>dangereux</i>
-our	—	-eur	—	<i>favour</i>	<i>faveur</i>
-or	—	-eur	—	<i>error</i>	<i>erreur</i>
-ine	—	-in	—	<i>clandestine</i>	<i>clandestin</i>
-ive	—	-if	—	<i>expressive</i>	<i>expressif</i>
-ry	—	-rie	—	<i>fury</i>	<i>furie</i>
-dy	—	-die	—	<i>perfidy</i>	<i>perfidie</i>

N. B. Adjectives in {
 -eux } make their feminine in {
 -if }
 -in }

EXERCISE.

The beauty of the fable, the horror of vice, the utility of science,
 f. f. h. orreur, m. art. m. f. art. f.
 the atrocity of this action, the violence of his passions the simplicity of
 f. f. f. passions f.
 that machine, an ²audacious ¹conspirator, the absurdity of that opinion,
 f. f. f.
 the military evolutions, an ²industrious ¹nation, an ²important ¹victory,
²militaires ¹évolutions, f. importante f.
 an ²alimentary ¹pension, a ²dangerous ¹animal, a ²figurative ¹expression,
 f. m. f.
 a famous general, his ²constant ¹generosity, he is incapable of attention,
 constante f. est f.

OF GENDERS.

76. GENDER is the distinction of sex, or the difference between *male* and *female*.

77. There are in the French Language but two Genders: the *Masculine*, which belongs to *men* and *animals* of the *male* kind; as, *John, lion, &c.* The *Feminine*, which belongs to *women* or *animals* of the *female* kind; as, *Lucy, lionness, &c.*

78. This distinction has, through imitation, been extended in the French to all those substantives (inanimate objects) that are neither *male* nor *female*; and which, in English, are of the neuter gender. Thus in French—*un livre a book*, is *masculine*—*une table a table*, is *feminine, &c.*

79. The gender of French nouns, which in English are neuter, is commonly ascertained by their terminations.

A great number of writers have endeavoured to give rules; but none have had the patience to go carefully over the "DICTIONNAIRE DE L'ACADÉMIE," to make themselves sure that the rules they were giving embraced a greater number of words, than the list of exceptions to those rules.

They all found it less irksome, after having given the exceptions they could remember, to have recourse to this phrase—"You must except such and such words; *and others that usage will teach.*" By this method it is evident that the scholar cannot know whether the nouns, whose gender he wants to ascertain, come under the rules given, or is one of those words that *usage* is to teach him: in this predicament he must have recourse to a dictionary; and if there is none within his reach, he must expose himself to make a blunder in the gender of some noun, which will sometimes change entirely the meaning of his phrase, and sometimes excite laughter.

The following few pages contain A TREATISE ON THE GENDERS OF FRENCH NOUNS, as short as the subject would admit. The rules are precise, and the list of exceptions complete; so that any person, after having learned the rules and exceptions, can, without the help of any dictionary, which he cannot always carry about him, ascertain at once the gender of any noun contained in the DICTIONNAIRE DE L'ACADÉMIE, and in the supplement to that work.

A. Bolmar's Complete Treatise

MASCULINE,

FROM THEIR SIGNIFICATION.

1. Dieu *God*—homme *man*—all animals of the male kind—lion *lion*, &c.—and all those objects to which we fancifully attribute *masculine qualities*; as—ange *angel*—satire *satyr*—soleil *sun*, &c.

2. The names of TREES; as—chêne *oak*—peuplier *poplar*, &c.

EXCEPTION.

yeuse *holm*.

3. The names of SHRUBS; as—rosier *rose-bush*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

aubépine <i>hawthorn</i> ,		ronce <i>briar</i> ,
bourdaine <i>black alder</i> ,		vigne <i>vine</i> .
épine <i>thorn</i> ,		

4. The names of the SEASONS of the year; printemps *spring*—été *summer*, &c.

automne *autumn*, is of both genders.

5. The names of the DAYS of the week; dimanche *sunday*—lundi *monday*, &c.

6. The names of METALS and MINERALS; as—fer *iron*—mercure *mercury*, &c.

7. The names of COLOURS; as—noir *black*—blanc *white*, &c.

8. The letters of the ALPHABET; as—un *a*—un *b*, &c.

9. Adjectives, numeral adjectives, pronouns, verbs, adverbs, prepositions, conjunctions, and interjections, used substantively; as—le bon *good*—le manger *the eating*—un quart *one fourth*—un dixième *one tenth*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

une moitié *a half*, and all Nos. ending with *aine* as douzaine, quinzaine, &c.

une antique <i>antique</i> ,	}	are fem. <i>statue</i> statue or
une courbe <i>a curve</i> , [<i>dicular</i> ,		médaille medal in the
une perpendiculaire <i>a perpen-</i>		1st, and <i>ligne</i> line in the
une tangente <i>a tangent</i> ,		three last being underst.

on the Genders of French Nouns.

FEMININE,

FROM THEIR SIGNIFICATION.

1. Déesse *goddess*—femme *woman*—all animals of the female kind; lionne *lioness*—and all those objects to which we fancifully attribute *feminine qualities*; as—lune *moon*, &c.
2. The names of VIRTUES; as—modestie *modesty*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

courage *courage*, mérite *merit*.

3. The names of VICES; as—jalousie *jealousy*, &c.
4. The names of HOLY-DAYS; as—Toussaint *all-saint's day*—Pâque *the passover*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

Pâque or Pâques *easter*, is masculine.

Noël *christmas*, is masculine.

N. B. When the diminutive *mi* half, is prefixed to a noun, the noun is then *fem.* as *la mi-carême*. All other diminutives follow the gender of the nouns from which they are derived; thus *une globule* a small globe, is masc.

5. The names of the FOUR PARTS of the world; as—Europe *Europe*—Amérique *America*, &c.

FEMININE,

FROM THEIR TERMINATION.

Nouns with the following terminations are feminine.

1. té] as—santé *health*—bonté *goodness*, &c

EXCEPTIONS.

aparté <i>aside</i> ,	comité <i>committee</i> ,	pâté <i>pie</i> ,
arrêté <i>decree</i> ,	comté <i>county</i> ,	précipité <i>precipitate</i> ,
bénédictité <i>grace</i>	côté <i>side</i> ,	traité <i>treaty or treatise</i> .

at meal.

2. tié] as—amitié *friendship*—moitié *half*, &c.
3. ion] as—nation *nation*—religion *religion*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

bastion <i>bastion</i> ,	camion <i>minikin pin</i> ,	pion <i>pawn</i> ,
bestion <i>beak-head</i> ,	galion <i>galleon</i> ,	scion <i>twig</i> ,
brimborion <i>bauble</i> ,	lampion <i>small lamp</i> ,	talion <i>retaliation</i> .

MASCULINE.

10. Nouns compounded of A VERB and A NOUN are also masculine; as—*cure-dent tooth-pick*—*casse-noisette nut-cracker*—*tourne-broche a jack*, &c. Although *dent*, *noisette*, *broche*, are feminine.

EXCEPTION.

garde-robe wardrobe.

11. The names of the CARDINAL POINTS, and of the WINDS; as—*le sud the south*—*le nord the north*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

<i>bise north-east wind,</i>		<i>tramontane tramontane,</i>
<i>brise light wind,</i>		<i>mousson monsoon,</i>

12. The names of EMPIRES, KINGDOMS, and COUNTRIES; as—*Brésil Brasil*—*Portugal Portugal*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

Those names of Empires, Kingdoms, and Countries, that end with *e* mute, are *feminine*; as—*Russie Russia*—*France France*, &c.

However, *Bengale Bengal*—*Mexique Mexico*—*Péloponèse Peloponnesus*—*Le Caire Cairo*—are *masculine*, although ending with *e* mute.

13. The names of MOUNTAINS; as—*Caucase Caucasus*—*Parnasse Parnassus*—*Vésuve Vesuvius*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

Alpes, Cordillière, | Pyrénées, Vosges.

14. The names of TOWNS, BOROUGHs, and VILLAGES; some are *masculine*, some *feminine*; and as no good rule can be given it is better both for a Frenchman and a foreigner, to avoid mistake, to use after them, the words *ville, bourg, village*—and say, for instance—*Paris est une belle ville Paris is a fine town*, &c. instead of *Paris est beau Paris is fine*.

15. The names of RIVERS, follow their termination, if they end with any other letter except *e* mute, they are *masculine*; as—*le Rhin the Rhine*—*le Nil the Nile*, &c.

Those ending in *e* mute, are *feminine*; as—*la Seine the Seine*—*la Tamise the Thames*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

le Rhône, le Tibre, le Danube, le Cocyte, are *masculine*, though they end with *e* mute

FEMININE.

4. son] as—*chanson song*—*maison house*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

blason <i>heraldry</i> ,	poison <i>poison</i> ,
diapason <i>diapason</i> ,	tison <i>firebrand</i> .
oisson <i>gosling</i>	

N. B. All nouns ending with *sson* or *on*, except those ending with the above terminations (*ion* and *son*) are *masculine*, according to the rule 1st, in the masculine column; *all nouns ending with a consonant are masculine*. For the exceptions, see the table annexed to that article

5. eur] as—*fureur fury*—*douceur mildness*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

bonheur <i>happiness</i> ,	extérieur <i>the outside</i> ,
chœur <i>chorus</i> ,	honneur <i>honour</i> ,
cœur <i>heart</i> ,	intérieur <i>the inside</i> ,
déshonneur <i>dishonour</i> ,	labeur <i>labour</i> .
équateur <i>equator</i> ,	malheur <i>misfortune</i> .

Except also all nouns ending with *eur*, which can only be applied to man; as—*docteur doctor*, &c. And also those nouns ending with *eur*, which have a feminine, as—*masculine*, *acteur actor*—*feminine*, *actrice actress*—*masculine*, *parleur talker*—*feminine*, *parleuse talker*—*masc. pécheur sinner*—*fem. pécheresse sinner*, &c.

6. All nouns ending with *e* mute, are *feminine*, provided they be neither comprised under the rules of *Masculine* nouns, nor in the following list of those *Masculine* nouns ending with *e* mute, which cannot be brought under any particular rule.

LIST of Nouns which cannot be brought under any particular rule, and which are *Masculine*, though ending with *e* mute.

<i>Abaque</i>	Abacus.	aide	<i>assistant</i> .
<i>acousmate</i>	<i>acousma</i> .	aide	<i>support</i> , is fem.
<i>acrostiche</i>	<i>acrostic</i> .	aigle	<i>eagle</i> (bird) or a
<i>acte</i>	<i>act</i> .		<i>great genius</i> .
<i>adminicule</i>	<i>adminicle</i> .	aigle	<i>eagle</i> (a standard,) is
<i>adverbe</i>	<i>adverb</i> .		[fem.

MASCULINE,

16. The names of some ANIMALS, BIRDS, FISH, SHELL-FISH, REPTILES, and INSECTS, in which the *male* is not distinguished from the *female*, and that do not end with *e* mute; as—ours *bear*—vautour *vulture*—saumon *salmon*—homard *lobster*—ver *worm*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

fourmi <i>ant</i> ,		souris <i>mouse</i> ,
perdrix <i>partridge</i> ,		chauve-souris <i>bat</i> .

Those names of animals, birds, fish, shell-fish, reptiles, and insects, in which the *male* is not distinguished from the *female*, and that end with *e* mute, are feminine; as—panthère *panther*—colombe *dove*—truite *trout*—huître *oyster*—vipère *viper*—mouche *fly*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

aigle <i>eagle</i> ,		cygne <i>swan</i> ,
bièvre <i>beaver</i> ,		dromadaire <i>dromedary</i> ,
buffle <i>buffalo</i> ,		lièvre <i>hare</i> ,
capricorne <i>capricorn</i> ,		merle <i>black-bird</i> ,
crabe <i>crab</i> ,		rouge-gorge <i>redbreast</i> .

MASCULINE

FROM THEIR TERMINATION

1. Nouns ending with a consonant; as—fusil *gun*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

amours <i>amours, flame</i> ,	dot <i>dower</i> ,	mort <i>death</i> ,
amours <i>loves, plural</i>	façon <i>making</i> ,	nef <i>nave</i> ,
of amour is masc.	faim <i>hunger</i> ,	noix <i>walnut</i> ,
boisson <i>beverage</i> ,	faux <i>sithe</i> ,	nuit <i>night</i> ,
chair <i>flesh</i> ,	fin <i>end</i> ,	paix <i>peace</i> ,
chaux <i>lime</i> ,	fin main <i>point</i> , is	part <i>share</i> ,
clef <i>key</i> , [<i>feiting</i> ,	fois <i>time</i> . [mas.	plupart <i>most part</i> ,
contrefaçon <i>counter-</i>	forêt <i>forest</i> ,	poix <i>pitch</i> ,
cour <i>yard</i> ,	gent <i>nation, race</i> ,	prémices <i>first fruits</i> ,
croix <i>cross</i> ,	gens <i>people m. & f.</i>	rançon <i>ransom</i> ,
cuiller <i>spoon</i> ,	hart <i>halter</i> ,	soif <i>thirst</i> ,
cuisson <i>baking</i> ,	leçon <i>lesson</i> ,	tour <i>tower</i> ,
délices <i>delights</i> ,	main <i>hand</i> ,	tour <i>trick</i> , is mas.
délice <i>delight, in the</i>	mœurs <i>manners</i> ,	toux <i>cough</i> ,
singular is masc.	mer <i>sea</i> ,	vis <i>screw</i> .
dent <i>tooth</i> ,	moisson <i>harvest</i> ,	voix <i>voice</i> .

LIST of *Masculine* nouns, ending with *e* mute.

alvéole	<i>alveolus.</i>	caustique	<i>caustic.</i>
ambe	{ combination of two numbers at the lottery.	cénotaphe	cenotaph.
<i>amiante</i>		cerne	circle.
<i>amulette</i>	<i>amiantus.</i>	<i>chambranle</i>	jamb.
animalcule	<i>amulet.</i>	chose (quelque)	something.
antidote	<i>animalcule.</i>	chose	thing, is fem.
antipode	<i>antidote.</i>	cimeterre	cimeter.
aphélie	<i>antipodes.</i>	cimetière	church-yard.
apogée	<i>aphelion.</i>	cippe	cippus.
<i>apographe</i>	<i>apogee.</i>	cirque	circus.
apologue	<i>autograph.</i>	<i>cistophore</i>	cistophorus.
aromate	<i>apologue.</i>	<i>cloaque</i>	sink.
astérisque	<i>aromatic.</i>	coche	barge.
<i>astragale</i>	<i>asterisk.</i>	coche	notch, is fem.
athénée	<i>astragal.</i>	code	code
augure	<i>athæneum.</i>	codicille	codicil.
automate	<i>augur.</i>	codille	codil.
axe	<i>automaton.</i>	colisée	colisæum.
baptistère	<i>axis.</i> [baptism.	colloque	colloquy.
<i>basalte</i>	certificate of	collyre	collyrium.
bécarre	basaltes.	collosse	colossus.
<i>béjaune</i>	<i>c-sharp.</i>	colure	colure.
beurre	ninny.	commerce	trade.
<i>branle</i>	butter.	compte	account.
caducée	jogging.	<i>conciliabule</i>	conventicle.
<i>calque</i>	<i>caduceum.</i> [ing.	<i>conclave</i>	conclave.
<i>calville</i>	counter-draw-	cône	cone.
camée	calville.	conte	tale.
<i>campestre</i>	<i>camea.</i>	controle	register.
camphre	<i>campestre.</i>	<i>conventicule</i>	private meeting.
cantique	<i>camphire.</i>	<i>corpuscule</i>	corpuscle.
capitole	<i>canticle.</i>	<i>corymbe</i>	corymbus.
<i>câpre</i>	<i>capitol.</i> [teer.	<i>coryphée</i>	coryphæus.
<i>câpre</i>	a sort of a priva-	cothurne	buskin.
<i>capuce</i>	caper (a pickle)	coude	elbow.
carrosse	capuche [is fem.	courage	courage.
caractère	<i>coach.</i>	crâne	skull.
casque	<i>character.</i>	cratère	crater.
<i>catafalque</i>	<i>helmet.</i>	crêpe	crape.
catalogue	<i>catafalco.</i>	crêpe	a kind of pan
<i>catarrhe</i>	<i>catalogue.</i>	crépuscule	cake, is fem.
	<i>catarrh.</i>	<i>cromorne</i>	twilight.
			krumhorn.

MASCULINE.

From the *Masculine* nouns, that end with a *consonant*—except, also, nouns ending with

ion } which are *feminine*, with very few exceptions ;
 son } see these terminations among the feminine
 eur } terminations.

Nouns ending with the following letters, are *Masculine*

2. a] as—opéra *opera*—sofa *sofa*, &c.

3. é] as—café *coffee*—dé *thimble*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

Nouns ending with

té } are *feminine* ; see *feminine* terminations.
 tié }

4. i] as—parti *party*—pli *fold*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

après-midi <i>after-</i>	loi <i>law</i> ,	merci <i>thank</i> , is masc.
foi <i>faith</i> , [noon.	merci <i>mercy</i> ,	paroi <i>partition</i> .

5. o] as—piano *piano*—numero *number*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

albugo *albugo*, | virago *virago*.

6. u] as—chapeau *hat*—couteau *knife*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

eau <i>water</i> ,	peau <i>skin</i> ,	vertu <i>virtue</i> ,
glu <i>bird-lime</i> ,	tribu <i>tribe</i> ,	

7. ge] as—usage *usage*—cirage *blackening*.

EXCEPTIONS.

alonge <i>eking-piece</i> ,	grange <i>barn</i> ,	orge <i>barley</i> ,
apophyge <i>apophyge</i> ,	horloge <i>clock</i> ,	page <i>page of a book</i> ,
auge <i>trough</i> ,	hypallage <i>hypallage</i> ,	parasange <i>parasang</i> ,
bauge <i>retreat of a</i>	image <i>image</i> ,	phalange <i>phalanx</i> ,
cage <i>cage</i> , [wild boar,	jauge <i>gage</i> ,	plage <i>flat shore</i> ,
énallage <i>enallage</i> ,	litige <i>litigation</i> ,	purge <i>cleansing</i> ,
épitoge <i>Roman coat</i> ,	loge <i>hut, box</i> .	rage <i>rage</i> ,
éponge <i>sponge</i> ,	longe <i>loin</i> ,	rechange <i>re-ex-</i>
fange <i>mire</i> ,	[sire,	serge <i>serge</i> , [change,
frange <i>fringe</i> ,	malerage <i>violent de-</i>	tige <i>stalk</i> ,
forge <i>forge</i> ,	ménage <i>meninges</i> ,	toge <i>Roman gown</i> ,
gorge <i>throat</i> ,	à la nage <i>swimming</i> ,	vendange <i>vintage</i> ,
gouge <i>gouge</i> ,	neige <i>snow</i> ,	vidange <i>clearing</i> .
	orange <i>orange</i> ,	

LIST of *Masculine* nouns, ending with *e* mute.

cube	<i>cube.</i>	génie	<i>genius.</i>
culte	<i>worship.</i>	genre	<i>gender.</i>
décalogue	<i>decalogue.</i>	gîte	<i>abode.</i>
décompte	<i>discount.</i>	glaive	<i>sword.</i>
dédale	<i>labyrinth.</i>	globe	<i>globe.</i>
délire	<i>delirium.</i>	globule	<i>globule.</i>
démérite	<i>demerit.</i>	golfe	<i>gulf.</i>
derrière	<i>back part.</i>	grade	<i>degree.</i>
<i>diacode</i>	<i>dyacodium.</i>	greffe	<i>rolls, graft.</i>
dialecte	<i>dialect.</i>	groupe	<i>group.</i>
dialogue	<i>dialogue.</i>	guide	<i>guide, tutor.</i>
dièse	<i>sharp.</i>	guide is fem.	<i>rein.</i>
diocèse	<i>diocese.</i>	gymnase	<i>gymnasium.</i>
disque	<i>disk.</i>	<i>gynécée</i>	<i>gymnæceum.</i>
<i>distique</i>	<i>distich</i>	<i>gypse</i>	<i>gypsum.</i>
<i>dithyrambe</i>	<i>dithyrambus.</i>	<i>hâle</i>	<i>sun-burning.</i>
dividende	<i>dividend.</i>	hémisphère	<i>hemisphere.</i>
divorce	<i>divorce.</i>	hémistich	<i>hemistich.</i>
domaine	<i>domain.</i>	<i>hère</i>	<i>poor wretch.</i>
doute	<i>doubt.</i>	hiéroglyphe	<i>hieroglyphic.</i>
<i>ellébore</i>	<i>hellebore.</i>	<i>horoscope</i>	<i>horoscope.</i>
élysee	<i>elysium.</i>	hyménée	<i>hymen.</i>
émétique	<i>emetic.</i>	hymne	<i>hymn.</i>
empire	<i>empire.</i>	<i>iambe</i>	<i>iambus.</i>
<i>empirée</i>	<i>empyreum.</i>	incendie	<i>conflagration.</i>
entr'acte	<i>interlude.</i>	<i>indicule</i>	<i>index.</i>
<i>épilogue</i>	<i>epilogue.</i>	insecte	<i>insect.</i>
épisode	<i>episode.</i>	interligne	<i>interline.</i>
équinoxe	<i>equinox.</i>	intermède	<i>interlude.</i>
érysipèle	<i>erysipelas.</i>	intervalle	<i>interval.</i>
escompte	<i>discount</i>	<i>jable</i>	<i>crome.</i>
espace	<i>space.</i>	<i>jade</i>	<i>jade.</i>
<i>euphorbe</i>	<i>euphorbium.</i>	<i>jaspe</i>	<i>jasper.</i>
<i>exergue</i>	<i>exergue.</i>	jeûne	<i>fasting.</i>
<i>exode</i>	<i>exodus.</i>	labyrinthe	<i>labyrinth.</i>
exorde	<i>exordium.</i>	<i>laque</i>	<i>lacco.</i>
faîte	<i>top, summit</i>	<i>laticlave</i>	<i>laticlavium</i>
<i>faune</i>	<i>faun.</i>	<i>leurre</i>	<i>lure.</i>
<i>feurre</i>	<i>kind of a straw.</i>	<i>levitique</i>	<i>leviticus.</i>
<i>filigrane</i>	<i>filigrane.</i>	<i>lexique</i>	<i>lexicon.</i>
fleuve	<i>river.</i>	libelle	<i>libel.</i>
fluide	<i>fluid.</i>	<i>limbe</i>	<i>limb.</i>
foie	<i>liver.</i>	<i>lithophyte</i>	<i>lithopyton.</i>

MASCULINE,

8. me] as—crime *crime*—baume *balm*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

alarme <i>alarm</i> ,	estime <i>esteem</i> ,	pantomime <i>panto-</i>
ame soul, [ness,	ferme <i>farm</i> ,	mime,
amertume <i>bitter</i> .	flamme <i>flame</i> ,	paume <i>tennis, palm</i>
arme <i>arm</i> ,	forme <i>form</i> ,	of the hand,
brume <i>thick fog</i> ,	frime <i>pretence</i> ,	plate-forme <i>plat-</i>
cime <i>top</i> ,	gamme <i>gamut</i> ,	form,
coutume <i>custom</i> ,	gomme <i>gum</i> ,	plume <i>feather</i> ,
crème <i>cream</i> ,	gourme <i>the stran-</i>	quill, and pen.
dime <i>tithe</i> ,	gles.	pomme <i>apple</i> ,
drachme <i>drachm</i> ,	lame <i>blade</i> ,	prime <i>prime</i> ,
écume <i>froth</i> ,	larme <i>tear</i> ,	rame <i>oar, ream</i> ,
enclume <i>anvil</i> ,	légitime <i>share</i> ,	réforme <i>reform</i> ,
énigme <i>enigma</i> ,	lime <i>file</i> ,	rime <i>rhyme</i> ,
épigramme <i>epi-</i>	maxime <i>maxim</i> ,	somme <i>sum</i> ,
gram,	palme <i>victory</i> ,	somme <i>nap, is m</i>
escrime <i>fencing</i> ,	palme <i>a hand's</i>	trame <i>woof, plot</i> ,
estame <i>worsted</i> ,	breadth, is m.	victime <i>victim</i> .

9. ice] as—orifice *opening*—sacrifice *sacrifice*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

avarice <i>avarice</i> ,	immondice <i>rubbish</i> ,	milice <i>militia</i> ,
cicatrice <i>scar</i> ,	injustice <i>injustice</i> ,	notice <i>notice</i> ,
délices <i>delights</i> , is	justice <i>justice</i> ,	office <i>pantry</i> ,
fem. but <i>délice</i>	lice <i>list</i> ,	office <i>office</i> , is m.
<i>delight</i> , is masc.	malice <i>malice</i> ,	police <i>police</i> ,
épice <i>spice</i> ,	matrice <i>mould</i> ,	varice <i>varix</i> ,

10. ile or yle] as—asile *asylum*—style *style*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

argile <i>clay</i> ,	huile <i>oil</i> ,	vigile <i>vigil</i> ,
bile <i>bile</i> ,	île <i>isle</i> ,	voile <i>sail</i> ,
file <i>file</i> ,	tuile <i>tile</i> ,	voile <i>veil</i> , is m.

11. aire] as—dictionnaire *dictionary*—vocabulaire *vocabulary*
—inventaire *inventory*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

affaire <i>business</i> ,	grammaire <i>grammar</i> ,
aire <i>area</i> ,	haire <i>haircloth</i> ,
chaire <i>pulpit</i> ,	paire <i>pair</i> .
circulaire <i>circular</i> ,	

LIST of *Masculine* nouns, ending with *e* mute.

<i>lobe</i>	<i>lobe</i>	<i>omoplate</i>	<i>shoulder-blade.</i>
<i>lobule</i>	<i>lobulus.</i>	<i>opuscule</i>	<i>opuscule.</i>
<i>logogriphe</i>	<i>riddle.</i>	<i>orbe</i>	<i>orb.</i>
<i>luxé</i>	<i>luxury.</i>	<i>organe</i>	<i>organ.</i>
<i>lycée</i>	<i>lyceum.</i>	<i>orgue</i>	<i>organ.</i>
<i>malaise</i>	<i>trouble.</i>	<i>orgues, is fem.</i>	<i>organs.</i>
<i>manche</i>	<i>handle.</i>	<i>ovale</i>	<i>oval.</i>
<i>manche, is fem.</i>	<i>sleeve.</i>	<i>pacte</i>	<i>bargain. [thers.</i>
<i>manipule</i>	<i>maniple.</i>	<i>panache</i>	<i>bunch of fea-</i>
<i>manque</i>	<i>want.</i>	<i>pancrace</i>	<i>pancratium.</i>
<i>masque</i>	<i>mask.</i>	<i>panégryrique</i>	<i>panegyric.</i>
<i>mausolée</i>	<i>mausoleum.</i>	<i>pantographe</i>	<i>pantograph.</i>
<i>mécompte</i>	<i>mis-reckoning.</i>	<i>paradoxe</i>	<i>paradox.</i>
<i>ménisque</i>	<i>meniscus.</i>	<i>paragraphe</i>	<i>paragraph.</i>
<i>mercure</i>	<i>mercury.</i>	<i>parafe</i>	<i>flourish to a sig-</i>
<i>mérite</i>	<i>merit.</i>		<i>nature.</i>
<i>mésaise</i>	<i>trouble.</i>	<i>parallèle</i>	<i>parallel.</i>
<i>Messie</i>	<i>Messiah.</i>	<i>parapluie</i>	<i>umbrella.</i>
<i>météore</i>	<i>meteor.</i>	<i>parère</i>	<i>advice.</i>
<i>microscope</i>	<i>microscope.</i>	<i>parjure</i>	<i>perjury.</i>
<i>ministère</i>	<i>ministry.</i>	<i>parterre</i>	<i>flower - garden,</i>
<i>mode</i>	<i>mood.</i>		<i>or pit (theatre.)</i>
<i>mode, is fem.</i>	<i>fashion.</i>	<i>participe</i>	<i>participle.</i>
<i>modèle</i>	<i>model.</i>	<i>patrimoine</i>	<i>patrimony.</i>
<i>module</i>	<i>module.</i>	<i>pécule</i>	<i>peculium.</i>
<i>môle</i>	<i>pier.</i>	<i>pédicule</i>	<i>pedicle.</i>
<i>monde</i>	<i>world.</i>	<i>peigne</i>	<i>comb.</i>
<i>monocorde</i>	<i>monochord.</i>	<i>pendule</i>	<i>pendulum.</i>
<i>monologue</i>	<i>soliloquy.</i>	<i>pendule, is fem.</i>	<i>clock.</i>
<i>monopode</i>	<i>monopodium.</i>	<i>pène</i>	<i>bolt.</i>
<i>monopole</i>	<i>monopoly.</i>	<i>pentacorde</i>	<i>pentachord.</i>
<i>monastère</i>	<i>monastery.</i>	<i>pentateuque</i>	<i>pentateuch.</i>
<i>monticule</i>	<i>small hill.</i>	<i>périgée</i>	<i>perigeum.</i>
<i>moule</i>	<i>mould.</i>	<i>périnée</i>	<i>perinæum.</i>
<i>multiplicande</i>	<i>multiplicand.</i>	<i>période</i>	<i>pitch, summit.</i>
<i>murmure</i>	<i>murmur.</i>	<i>période, is fem.</i>	<i>period.</i>
<i>musée</i>	<i>musæum.</i>	<i>péritoine</i>	<i>peritoneum.</i>
<i>mystère</i>	<i>mystery.</i>	<i>personne</i>	<i>nobody.</i>
<i>navire</i>	<i>ship.</i>	<i>personne, is f.</i>	<i>person.</i>
<i>négoce</i>	<i>traffic.</i>	<i>pétale</i>	<i>petal.</i>
<i>nimbe</i>	<i>nimbus.</i>	<i>phare</i>	<i>light-house.</i>
<i>obélisque</i>	<i>obelisk.</i>	<i>phénomène</i>	<i>phenomenon</i>
<i>olympé</i>	<i>olympus.</i>	<i>phosphore</i>	<i>phosphorus.</i>

MASCULINE.

12. oire] as—auditoire
- auditory*
- mémoire
- account*
- , &c

EXCEPTIONS.

armoire <i>press</i> , [tub,	écritoire <i>ink-stand</i> ,	nageoire <i>fin</i> ,
baignoire <i>bathing-</i>	gloire <i>glory</i> ,	passoire <i>strainer</i> ,
décrottoire <i>shoe-</i>	histoire <i>history</i> ,	poire <i>pear</i> ,
foire <i>fair</i> , [brush,	mémoire <i>memory</i> ,	victoire <i>victory</i> .

13. cide] as—homicide
- homicide*
- acide
- acid*
- , &c.

14. ste] as—buste
- bust*
- poste
- post*
- , (military station,) &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

améthyste <i>amethyst</i> ,	liste <i>list</i> ,	piste <i>track</i> ,
batiste <i>cambric</i> ,	peste <i>pest</i> ,	poste <i>post</i> , (for let-
		veste <i>vest</i> . [ters,)

15. ble | gle }
-
- cle | ple } as { sable
- sand*
- couple
- a couple*
- (as man and
-
- fle | } wife)—siècle
- century*
- exemple
- example*
- ,
-
- ongle
- nail*
- , &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

aigle <i>eagle</i> (stand-	débâcle <i>breaking</i>	fable <i>fable</i> ,
bible <i>bible</i> , [ard,)	of ice,	règle <i>rule</i> ,
boucle <i>buckle</i> ,	étable <i>stable</i> ,	table <i>table</i> .
couple <i>couple</i> , two,	exemple <i>copy</i> ,	

16. bre | gre }
-
- cre | pre } as { câpre
- a sort of a privateer*
- foudre
- large*
-
- dre | tre } vat—livre
- book*
- pourpre
- purple*
- (stuff)
-
- fre | vre } —monstre
- monster*
- cadre
- frame*
- , &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

acre <i>acre</i> ,	épître <i>epistle</i> ,	mitre <i>mitre</i> ,
algèbre <i>algebra</i> ,	escadre <i>squadron of</i>	montre <i>watch</i> ,
ancre <i>anchor</i> ,	fibre <i>fibres</i> , [ships,	nacre <i>naïre</i> ,
anti-chambre <i>anti-</i>	fenêtre <i>window</i> ,	œuvre <i>works of an</i>
chamber,	fièvre <i>fever</i> ,	offre <i>offer</i> , [author,
balafre <i>scar</i> ,	foudre <i>thunder bolt</i> ,	ombre <i>shade</i> ,
calandre <i>calender</i> ,	gaufre <i>waffer</i> ,	outré <i>leather bottle</i> ,
câpre <i>caper</i> (pickle)	guêtre <i>gaiter</i> ,	poudre <i>powder</i> ,
chambre <i>chamber</i> ,	lettre <i>letter</i> ,	pourpre <i>purple</i> (co-
cendre <i>ashes</i> ,	lèvre <i>lip</i> ,	poutre <i>beam</i> , [lor,)
chartre <i>charter</i> ,	livre <i>pound</i> , [vre,	rencontre <i>meeting</i> ,
dartre <i>tetter</i> ,	manœuvre <i>manœu-</i>	vitre <i>pane of glass</i>
encre <i>ink</i> ,		

LIST of *Masculine* nouns, ending with *e* mute.

planisphère	<i>planisphere.</i>	remise, is fem.	<i>coach-house.</i>
<i>plébiscite</i>	<i>plebiscitum.</i>	<i>repère</i>	mark.
poêle or poile	<i>stove, pall.</i>	reproche	<i>reproach.</i>
poêle, is fem.	<i>frying-pan.</i>	rêve	<i>dream.</i>
pôle	<i>pole.</i>	réverbère	<i>street-lamp.</i>
polygone	<i>polygon.</i>	risque	<i>risk.</i>
<i>polype</i>	<i>polypus.</i>	rôle	<i>part.</i>
<i>polypode</i>	<i>polypodium.</i>	sacerdoce	<i>priesthood.</i>
ponche	<i>punch.</i>	scandale	<i>scandal.</i>
pore	<i>pore.</i>	scrupule	<i>scruple.</i>
porche	<i>porch.</i>	sexe	<i>sex.</i>
porphyre	<i>porphyry.</i>	signe	<i>sign.</i>
portique	<i>portico.</i>	silence	<i>silence.</i>
pouce	<i>thumb, inch.</i>	simulacre	<i>simulacre.</i>
préambule	<i>preamble.</i>	site	<i>site.</i>
précepte	<i>precept.</i>	socque	<i>sock. [count.</i>
<i>prêche</i>	protestant ser-	solde	<i>balance of ac-</i>
prélude	<i>prelude. [mon.</i>	solde, is fem.	<i>soldier's pay.</i>
presbitère	<i>presbytery.</i>	soliloque	<i>soliloquy.</i>
prétexte	<i>pretext.</i>	somme	<i>nap.</i>
principe	<i>principle.</i>	somme	<i>sum, is fem.</i>
prologue	<i>prologue. [ing.</i>	sourire	<i>smile,</i>
<i>prône</i>	sermon, scold-	<i>sphéroïde.</i>	<i>spheroid.</i>
<i>protocole</i>	protocol.	spécifique	<i>specific.</i>
proverbe	<i>proverb.</i>	spondée	<i>spondee.</i>
<i>pylore</i>	pylorus. [<i>gure.</i>	squelette	<i>skeleton.</i>
quadrilatère	<i>quadrilateral fi-</i>	stade	<i>stade.</i>
quadrille	<i>quadrille.</i>	store	blind.
<i>quaterne</i>	combination of	subside	<i>subsidy.</i>
	four numbers	symbole	<i>symbol.</i>
	at the lottery.	<i>synode</i>	<i>synod.</i>
<i>quinconce</i>	quincunx.	<i>tarse</i>	<i>tarsus.</i>
<i>quine</i>	combination of	télégraphe	<i>telegraph.</i>
	five numbers	télescope	<i>telescope.</i>
	at the lottery.	<i>ténare</i>	<i>tænarus.</i>
<i>quinquenove</i>	quinquenove.	téorbe or tuorbe	<i>theorbo.</i>
<i>quinquerce</i>	quinqertium.	terne	combination of
règne	<i>reign.</i>		three numbers
régule	<i>regulus.</i>		at the lottery.
relâche	<i>relaxation.</i>	texte	<i>text.</i>
relâche, is fem.	<i>harbour.</i>	thyse	<i>thyrsus.</i>
remède	<i>remedy.</i>	tintamarre	<i>thundering noise.</i>
remise	<i>hired coach.</i>	tithymale	<i>tithymal</i>

LIST of *Masculine* nouns, ending with *e* mute.

tonnerre	<i>thunder.</i>	ulcère	<i>ulcer.</i>
topique	<i>topic.</i>	vase	<i>vase.</i>
<i>toxique</i>	<i>toxicum.</i>	vase, is fem.	<i>mud.</i>
traité	<i>treaty, treatise.</i>	vaudeville	<i>ballad.</i>
trapèze	<i>trapazium.</i>	véhicule	<i>vehicle.</i>
tribule	<i>calthrop.</i>	verbe	<i>verb.</i>
triomphe	<i>triumph.</i>	vermicelle	<i>vermicelli.</i>
trochée	<i>trochee.</i>	verre	<i>glass.</i>
<i>trochisque</i>	<i>trochisch.</i>	vestibule	<i>lobby.</i>
trône	<i>throne.</i>	viatique	<i>viaticum.</i>
trope	<i>trope.</i>	vide	<i>emptiness.</i>
trophée	<i>trophy.</i>	vignoble	<i>small vineyard.</i>
tropique	<i>tropic.</i>	violoncelle	<i>violoncello.</i>
tube	<i>tube.</i>	viscère	<i>intestines.</i>
<i>tubercule</i>	<i>tubercle.</i>	vote	<i>vote.</i>
tumulte	<i>tumult.</i>	zèle	<i>zeal.</i>
<i>tuorbe</i>	<i>theorbo.</i>	zodiaque	<i>zodiac.</i>
type	<i>type.</i>		

80. Among the French nouns ending with *eur*, there are some that are used both for the masculine and the feminine. We say, in speaking of a gentleman, *il est l'auteur de ce livre*, he is the author of this book; and of a lady, *elle est l'auteur de ce livre*, she is the authoress of this book. Some change the termination *eur* into *euse* for the feminine; thus we say of a gentleman, *un danseur*, a dancer; and of a lady, *une danseuse*, a dancer. Some change the termination *eur* into *rice* thus, we say of a gentleman, *un lecteur*, a reader; and of a lady, *une lectrice*, a reader. Some others are very irregular in the formation of the feminine.

81. Some of the nouns ending with *eur* are also used as adjectives; they will be found among the adjectives, page 49, and will be pointed out in the three following lists, by an *asterisk* * placed before them.

82. All substantives ending with *eur*, not found in the three following lists, have no feminine, or their feminine is like the masculine.

83. List of nouns ending with *eur* for the masculine, and *euse* for the feminine.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
.Accapareur	accapareuse	<i>monopoliser.</i>
.acheteur	acheteuse	<i>buyer.</i>
.affronteur	affronteuse	<i>impostor.</i>
.arracheur	arracheuse	<i>puller.</i>
.avaleur	avaleuse	<i>one that swallows.</i>
.baigneur	baigneuse	<i>bather.</i>
.balayeur	balayeuse	<i>sweeper.</i>

Masculine.		Feminine.	English.
baragouineur		baragouineuse	<i>jabberer.</i>
barguineur		barguineuse	<i>haggler.</i>
bateleur		bateleuse	<i>juggler.</i>
bayeur	[er	bayeuse	<i>gaper.</i>
.blanchisseur, <i>bleach-</i>		blanchisseuse	<i>washerwoman.</i>
.boudeur		boudeuse	<i>one who pouts.</i>
bousilleur		bousilleuse	<i>bungler.</i>
.brasseur		brasseuse	<i>brewer.</i>
bredouilleur		bredouilleuse	<i>stammerer.</i>
brocardeur		brocardeuse	<i>scoffer.</i>
brocheur		brocheuse	<i>stitcher.</i>
.brodeur		brodeuse	<i>embroiderer.</i>
brunisseur		brunisseuse	<i>burnisher.</i>
.buveur		buveuse	<i>drinker.</i>
.cajoleur		cajoleuse	<i>cajoler.</i>
caqueteur		caqueteuse	<i>prattler.</i>
cardeur		cardeuse	<i>carder.</i>
*.causeur		causeuse	<i>talker.</i>
.chanteur		chanteuse	<i>singer.</i>
<i>singer</i>		cantatrice	<i>a theatrical singer.</i>
.chasseur		chasseuse	<i>huntress.</i> [huntress.
<i>hunter</i>		chasserresse	<i>used in poetry,</i>
chercheur		chercheuse	<i>seeker.</i>
chicaneur		chicaneuse	<i>chicaner.</i>
chuchoteur		chuchoteuse	<i>whisperer.</i>
clabaudeur		clabaudeuse	<i>elamorer.</i>
.coiffeur		coiffeuse	<i>hair dresser.</i>
.complimenteur		complimenteuse	<i>complimenter.</i>
.confiseur		confiseuse	<i>confectioner.</i>
.connaisseur		connaisseuse	<i>connoisseur</i>
conteur		conteuse	<i>teller.</i>
.coucheur		coucheuse	<i>bed-fellow.</i>
.coupeur		coupeuse	<i>cutter.</i>
.coureur		coureuse	<i>runner.</i>
.cracheur		cracheuse	<i>spitter.</i>
craqueur		craqueuse	<i>fibber.</i>
criailleur		criailleuse	<i>squaller.</i>
crieur		crieuse	<i>bawler.</i>
.danseur		danseuse	<i>dancer.</i>
.débiteur		débiteuse	<i>spreader of news.</i>
.débiteur		débitrice	<i>debtor.</i>
découpeur		découpeuse	<i>carver.</i>
demandeur		demandeuse	<i>begger.</i>
demandeur		demandresse	<i>prosecutor.</i>
dévideur		devideuse	<i>winder.</i>
.devineur		devineuse	<i>guesser.</i>
devineur, <i>diviner</i>		devineresse	<i>divineress.</i>
discoureur		discoureuse	<i>tattler</i>
.diseur		diseuse	<i>teller.</i>
.donneur		donneuse	<i>giver.</i>
doreur		doreuse	<i>gilder.</i>
.dormeur		dormeuse	<i>sleeper.</i>
écornifleur		écornifleuse	<i>spunger.</i>

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
.écouteur	écouteuse	listener.
emboiseur	emboiseuse	coaxer.
empailleur	empailleuse	{ one that makes straw bottoms for chairs.
empeseur	empeseuse	starcher.
empoisonneur	empoisonneuse	poisoner.
.emprunteur	emprunteuse	borrower.
enjôleur	enjôleuse	wheelder. [or prints.
enlumineur	enlumineuse	one who colors maps
ensorceleur	ensorceleuse	bewitcher.
.entrepreneur	entrepreneuse	undertaker.
éplucheur	éplucheuse	picker
escroqueur	escroqueuse	sharpener.
.faiseur	faiseuse	maker.
faneur	faneuse	haymaker.
fendeur	fendeuse	cleaver.
.fileur	fileuse	spinner.
finasseur	finasseuse	a sly person.
flagorneur	flagorneuse	sycophant.
*.flatteur	flatteuse	flatterer.
flûteur	flûteuse	whistler.
frappeur	frappeuse	striker.
fraudeur	fraudeuse	cheat.
gageur	gageuse	better.
.gagneur	gagneuse	gainer.
gardeur	gardeuse	keeper.
gaspilleur	gaspilleuse	squanderer.
gausseau	gausseuse	flouter.
.glaneur	glanceuse	gleaner.
glisseur	glisseuse	slider.
gloseur	gloseuse	censurer.
goailleur	goailleuse	jeerer.
grapilleur	grapilleuse	grape gleaner.
.grasseyeur	grasseyeuse	lisper.
.grondeur	grondeuse	scolder.
hableur	hableuse	boaster.
jargonneur	jargonneuse	gibberer.
.jaseur	jaseuse	prater.
jeûneur	jeûneuse	faster.
.joueur	joueuse	gamester.
jugeur	jugeuse	judger.
louangeur	louangeuse	praiser.
loueur	loueuse	{ praiser, or a person who lets out any thing.
laveur	laveuse	washer.
leveur	leveuse	{ one who takes up printed sheets.
ligueur	ligueuse	leaguer.
liseur	liseuse	a lover of reading.
mâcheur	mâcheuse	chewer.
.mangeur	mangeuse	eater.
.marcheur	marcheuse	walker.

Masculine	Feminine.	English.
marieur	marieuse	matchmaker.
*.menteur	menteuse	liar.
.moissonneur	moissonneuse	reaper.
*.moqueur	moqueuse	mocker.
.nageur	nageuse	swimmer.
ouvreur	ouvreuse	box-keeper.
.parfumeur	parfumeuse	perfumer
.parleur	parleuse	talker.
.piailleur	piailleuse	squaller.
.plaideur	plaideuse	narrator.
.pleureur	pleureuse	weeper.
plieur	plieuse	folder.
polisseur	polisseuse	polisher.
.porteur	porteuse	porter.
pourvoyeur	pourvoyeuse	purveyor.
.preneur	preneuse	taker
.prêteur	prêteuse	lender.
.prometteur	prometteuse	promiser.
.prôneur	prôneuse	praiser.
*.querelleur	querelleuse	quarreller.
.questionneur	questionneuse	questioner.
quêteur	quêteuse	{ one that goes about to obtain money for charitable purposes.
rabâcheur	rabâcheuse	{ one that makes tire- some repetitions in discourse.
raccomodeur	raccomodeuse	mender.
raconteur	raconteuse	relater.
.radoteur	radoteuse	dotard.
*.railleur	railleuse	jeerer.
.raisonneur	raisonneuse	reasoner.
rançonneur	rançonneuse	exacter.
.rapporteur	rapporteuse	reporter.
ravaudeur	ravaudeuse	patcher.
recéleur	recéleuse	concealer.
.receveur	receveuse	receiver
rempailleur	rempailleuse	{ one who puts new straw bottoms to chairs.
remueur	remueuse	mover.
.repasseur, <i>grinder</i>	repasseuse	one who irons linen.
.revendeur	revendeuse	huckster
*.rêveur	rêveuse	dreamer
.ricaneur	ricaneuse	giggler.
.rieur	rieuse	laugher.
rioteur	rioteuse	smiler.
rogneur	rogneuse	clipper.
.ronfleur	ronfleur	snorer.
rôtisseur	rôtisseuse	one that roasts meat.
roupilleur	roupilleuse	dozing person.
sarcleur	sarcleuse	weeder.
.sauteur	sauteuse	leaper.

Masculine	Feminine.	English.
.siffleur	siffleuse	whistler.
souffleteur	souffleteuse	{ one who slaps the cheeks of another.
souffleur	souffleuse	prompter.
suborneur	suborneuse	suborner.
tâteur	tâteuse	feeler.
tâtonneur	tâtonneuse	fumbler.
tilleur	tilleuse	{ one who takes the filaments from the hemp or flax plant.
.tisonneur	tisonneuse	{ one who likes to poke the fire
tousseur	tousseuse	cougher.
.trembleur	trembleuse	coward.
tricoteur	tricoteuse	knitter.
*.trompeur	trompeuse	deceiver.
troqueur	troqueuse	swapper.
veilleur	veilleuse	night watcher.
.vendeur	vendeuse	{ one whose profes- sion is to sell any thing.
.vendeur	venderesse	one who sells.
.vendangeur	vendangeuse	vintager.
verbiageur	verbiageuse	a prolix talker.
vétilleur	vétilleuse.	punctilious person.
vielleur	vielleuse	{ player of the hurdy gurdy.
.voleur	voleuse	thief.
.voyageur	voyageuse	traveller.

84. List of nouns ending with *eur* for the masculine and *rice* for the feminine.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
Accélérateur	accélétratrice	accelerator.
.accompagnateur	accompagnatrice	accompanist.
.accusateur, <i>accuser</i>	accusatrice	accuseress.
.acteur, <i>actor</i>	actrice	actress.
administrateur, <i>admi-</i>	administratrice	administratrix.
.admirateur [<i>nistrator</i>]	admiratrice	admirer.
*.adorateur	adoratrice	adorer.
.adulateur, <i>adulator</i>	adulatrice	adultratrix.
.ambassadeur, <i>ambas-</i>	ambassadrice	ambadressess.
approbateur [<i>sador</i>]	approbatrice	approver.
.bienfaiteur, <i>benefac-</i>	bienfaitrice	benefactress.
.calomniateur [<i>tor</i>]	calomniatrice	calumniator.
.collaborateur	collaboratrice	fellow-labourer.
.conciliateur [<i>tor</i>]	conciliatrice	conciliator.
.conducteur, <i>conduc-</i>	conductrice	conductress.
.conservateur	conservatrice	conservator.
.consolateur	consolatrice	consoler.
.contemplateur	contemplatrice	contemplator.
.co-opérateur	co-opératrice	co-operator.
.correcteur	correctrice	corrector.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
.corrupteur	corruptrice	corruptor.
*.créateur, <i>creator</i> ,	créatrice	creatress.
.curateur	curatrice	curator.
.débiteur	débitrice	debtor.
.débiteur	débiteuse	spreader of news.
.délateur	délatrice	delator.
.dénonciateur	dénonciatrice	denunciator.
*.désapprobateur	désapprobatrice	blamer.
.dessinateur, <i>draught-</i>	dessinatrice	a lady who draws.
détenteur [man]	détentrice	detainer.
*.dévastateur	dévastatrice	destroyer.
dilapidateur	dilapidatrice	spendthrift.
.directeur, <i>director</i>	directrice	directress.
.dispensateur	dispensatrice	dispensator.
.dissimulateur	dissimulatrice	dissembler.
.dissipateur	dissipatrice	waster.
.distributeur	distributrice	distributor.
divulgateur	divulgateur	divulger.
dominateur	dominatrice	dominator.
.donateur	donatrice	donor.
émulateur, <i>emulator</i>	émulatrice	emulatress.
.exagérateur	exagératrice	amplifier.
.exécuteur, <i>executor</i>	exécutrice	executrix.
.expositeur	expositrice	expositor.
fauteur, <i>fautor</i>	fautrice	fautress.
.fondateur	fondatrice	founder.
.générateur	génératrice	generator.
.imitateur	imitatrice	imitator.
*.improbateur	improbatrice	one who improbates.
improvisateur	improvisatrice	{ one who speaks ex- tempore.
inoculateur	inoculatrice	inoculator.
insidiateur	insidiatrice	insidiator.
.inspecteur	inspectrice	inspector.
.instigateur	instigatrice	instigator.
.instituteur, <i>instructor</i>	institutrice	instructress.
.interpréteur	interprétrice	interpreter.
interrupteur	interruptrice	interrupter.
introduceur	introducitrice	introducer.
.inventeur	inventrice	inventor.
investigateur	investigatrice	indagator.
.lecteur	lectrice	reader.
.législateur, <i>legislator</i>	législatrice	legislatress.
.libérateur	libératrice	liberator.
.littérateur	littératrice	a literary character.
.médiateur, <i>mediator</i>	médiatrice	mediatress.
.modérateur	modératrice	moderator.
*.observateur	observatrice	observer.
.opérateur	opératrice	operator.
.persécuteur	persécutrice	persecutor.
perturbateur	perturbatrice	perturbator.
présentateur	présentatrice	patron.
.profanateur	profanatrice	profaner.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
*.protecteur, <i>protector</i>	protectrice	<i>protectress.</i>
.réconciliateur	réconciliatrice	<i>reconciler.</i>
.réformateur	réformatrice	<i>reformer.</i>
.séducteur	séductrice	<i>seducer.</i>
.spectateur, <i>spectator</i>	spectatrice	<i>spectatress.</i>
subornateur	subornatrice	<i>briber.</i>
.tentateur, <i>tempter</i>	tentatrice	<i>temptress.</i>
.testateur	testatrice	<i>testator.</i>
.tuteur	tutrice	<i>guardian.</i>
.violateur	violatrice	<i>infringer.</i>
.usurpateur	usurpatrice	<i>usurper.</i>
.zélateur	zélatrice	<i>zealot.</i>

85. List of nouns ending with *eur* for the masculine, and which form their feminine variously.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
·Avant-coureur	avant-courrière	<i>forerunner.</i>
baillieur	bailleresse	<i>lessor.</i>
chanteur	cantatrice	<i>opera singer.</i>
chanteur	chanteuse	<i>singer.</i>
·chasseur, <i>hunter</i>	{ chasseresse	<i>huntress, (in poetry.)</i>
défendeur	{ chasseuse	<i>huntress.</i>
demandeur	défendresse	<i>defendant.</i>
demandeur	demandresse	<i>prosecutor.</i>
devineur	demandeuse	<i>beggar.</i>
·devineur	devineresse	<i>divineress.</i>
dissertateur }	devineuse	<i>guesser.</i>
dissertateur }	disserteuse	<i>dissertator.</i>
·empereur, <i>emperor</i>	impératrice	<i>empress.</i>
*.enchanteur,	enchanteresse	<i>enchantress.</i>
<i>enchanter</i>		
·gouverneur, <i>gover-</i>	gouvernante	<i>governess.</i>
·pêcheur [nor]	pêcheresse	<i>sinner.</i> [proxy.
procureur	procuratrice	<i>one who acts by</i>
procureur, <i>solicitor</i>	procureuse	<i>the solicitor's wife.</i>
·serviteur	servante	<i>servant.</i>
·vendeur	venderesse	<i>seller.</i> [is to sell.
·vendeur	vendeuse	<i>one whose profession</i>
*.vengeur, <i>avenger</i>	vengeresse	<i>avengeress.</i>

86. I have said much on the nouns ending with *eur* because the subject could not be treated in a shorter way to be of any use. No grammar that I know gives any information on this subject. Wanostrocht does not speak of it. What Lévizac says about it, page 87, of his own grammar, is no direction for the learner. Many nouns in the above three lists are seldom used. It would be well if the learner committed to memory those before which a . is placed as the most used.

OF NUMBERS.

87. By Number is understood that property which nouns have of denoting either *one* or *several* persons or things.

88. There are *two numbers*, the singular and the plural.

89. The singular number expresses but one person or one thing—as, *a man, a table, &c.*

90. The plural number expresses more than one person or thing—as, *men, tables, &c.*

*Of the Formation of the Plural of French Substantives.**Direction.*

91. Whenever you want to form the plural of any French noun—1st, See whether that noun does not come under the following exceptions (which may be ascertained by its termination in the singular): if it does not come under any of the exceptions, then it comes under the general rule.

General Rule.

92. The plural of French nouns, is generally formed, as in English, by the addition of an *s* to the singular, as:

porte	door,	portes	doors,
rue	street,	rues	streets.

Exceptions.

93. 1st, All nouns ending in the singular, with *s*, *x*, or *z*, remain the same for the plural, as:

films	son,	films	sons,
voix	voice,	voix	voices,
nez	nose,	nez	noses.

94. 2d, All nouns ending in the singular with *au*, *eu*, or *œu*, take *x* to form the plural, as:

bateau	boat,	bateaux	boats,
feu	fire,	feux	fires,
vœu	vow,	vœux	vows.

95. 3d, Of nouns ending in the singular, with *ou*, 6 of them take *x* to form the plural; the rest follow the general rule, that is, they take *s*.

bijou	jewel,	bijoux	jewels,
caillou	pebble,	cailloux	pebbles,
chou	cabbage,	choux	cabbages,
genou	knee,	genoux	knees,
hibou	owl,	hiboux	owls,
joujou	plaything,	joujoux	playthings.

96. 4th, Of nouns ending in the singular with *al*, 20 of them change that termination *al* into *aux*, to form the plural. The rest follow the general rule, that is, they simply take *s* to form the plural.

amiral	admiral,	amiraux	admirals.
arsenal	arsenal,	arsenaux	arsenals.
canal	canal,	canaux	canals.

capital	<i>principal,</i>	capitiaux	<i>principals.</i>
cheval	<i>horse,</i>	chevaux	<i>horses.</i>
cristal	<i>crystal,</i>	cristaux	<i>crystals.</i>
fanal	<i>light-house,</i>	fanaux	<i>light-houses.</i>
général	<i>general,</i>	généraux	<i>generals.</i>
hôpital	<i>hospital,</i>	hôpitaux	<i>hospitals.</i>
madrigal	<i>madrigal,</i>	madrigaux	<i>madrigals.</i>
mal	<i>evil,</i>	maux	<i>evils.</i>
maréchal	<i>farrier, marshal,</i>	maréchaux	<i>farriers.</i>
métal	<i>metal,</i>	métaux	<i>metals.</i>
minéral	<i>mineral,</i>	minéraux	<i>minerals.</i>
quintal	<i>quintal,</i>	quintaux	<i>quintals.</i>
rival	<i>rival,</i>	rivaux	<i>rivals.</i>
signal	<i>signal,</i>	signaux	<i>signals.</i>
total	<i>total,</i>	totaux	<i>totals.</i>
tribunal	<i>tribunal,</i>	tribunaux	<i>tribunals.</i>
vassal	<i>vassal,</i>	vassaux	<i>vassals.</i>

97. 5th, Of nouns ending in the singular with *ail*, 8 of them change that termination *ail* into *aux*, to form the plural. The rest follow the general rule, that is, they take *s* for the plural.

bail	<i>lease,</i>	baux	<i>leases.</i>
corail	<i>coral,</i>	coraux	<i>corals.</i>
émail	<i>enamel,</i>	émaux	<i>enamels.</i>
soupirail	<i>vent,</i>	soupiraux	<i>vents.</i>
sous-bail	<i>under-lease,</i>	sous-baux	<i>under-leases.</i>
travail	<i>work</i>	travaux	<i>works.</i>
vantail	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{a leaf of a} \\ \text{folding door,} \end{array} \right.$	vantaux	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{leaves of a} \\ \text{folding door.} \end{array} \right.$

98. 6th, Nouns of more than one syllable ending in the singular with *ant* and *ent*, according to the most general practice, drop the *t* and take *s* to form the plural, as :

enfant	<i>child,</i>	enfants	<i>children.</i>
moment	<i>moment,</i>	momens	<i>moments.</i>

99. 7th, Monosyllables retain the *t* and take *s* to form the plural, as :

gant	<i>glove,</i>	gants	<i>gloves.</i>
dent	<i>tooth,</i>	dents	<i>teeth.</i>

100. 8th, The only monosyllable that drops the *t* and takes *s* is *gent*, nation, which makes *gens*, people.

101. 9th, The six following nouns are quite irregular in the formation of their plural.

ail	<i>garlick,</i>	aulx	<i>garlicks.</i>
bétail	<i>cattle,</i>	bestiaux	<i>cattle.</i>
aïeul	<i>grandfather,</i>	aïeux	<i>ancestors.</i>
ciel	<i>heaven,</i>	cieux	<i>heavens.</i>
œil	<i>eye,</i>	yeux	<i>eyes.</i>
bercail	<i>sheepfold,</i>	has no plural.	
miel	<i>honey,</i>	has no plural.	

102. 10th, *Aïeul*, *ail*, *ciel*, make also *aïeuls*, *ciels*, *ails*, as : *ses aïeuls*, meaning a person's *two grandfathers* ; *des ciels-de-lit*, *testers of beds* ; *des œils de bœuf*, *ovals*,

Of the formation of the plural of Compound Nouns.

103. N. B. As several parts of speech are here introduced which have not yet been explained, no exercise on them will be given in this place. I give these rules now to be referred to hereafter.

104. When a noun is compounded of a substantive and an adjective both take the mark of the plural, as:

un gentilhomme, a nobleman, *des gentilshommes*, noblemen;
une basse-cour, a poultry-yard; *des basses-cours*, poultry yards.

105. We say for the sake of pronunciation without giving to the adjective the mark of the plural:

grand'mère grandmother, *grand'mères* grandmothers.
grand'messe high mass, *grand'messes* high masses.

106. When a noun is compounded with a verb or with an adverb and a substantive, the substantive alone takes the mark of the plural, as:

un tournebroche a jack, *des tournebroches* jacks.
un avant-coureur a fore-runner, *des avant-coureurs* fore-runners.

107. When a noun is compounded of two substantives united by a preposition, the first alone takes the mark of the plural, as:

un maître-d'hôtel, a steward. *des maîtres-d'hôtel*, stewards.

108. *Coq-à-l'âne*, and *tête-à-tête* do not take the mark of the plural; We say *un coq-à-l'âne*, *des coq-à-l'âne*, *un tête-à-tête*, *des tête-à-tête*.

109. Words compounded with a verb and an adverb, or with a preposition, do not take the mark of the plural, as:

un passe-partout, a master key. *des passe-partout*, master keys.

110. The following nouns, compounded with *sieur*, *dame*, *demoiselle*, and with the possessive pronoun *mon* and *ma*, take *s* for the plural, and change *mon* and *ma* into *mes*:

<i>Monsieur</i> , Sir or Gentleman,	<i>Messieurs</i> , Sirs or Gentlemen,
<i>Madame</i> , Madam,	<i>Mesdames</i> , Ladies,
<i>Mademoiselle</i> , Miss,	<i>Mesdemoiselles</i> , Misses.

111. N. B. In the following exercises the French noun, when put under the English, will be put in the singular: the learner will have to form the plural according to the foregoing rules and exceptions whenever the English noun is in the plural:

EXERCISE.

The flowers of the gardens,	the niceties of the languages,
<i>fleur</i> <i>jardin</i> ,	<i>délicatesse</i> <i>langue</i> ,
the palaces of the kings,	the woods of those countries,
<i>palais</i> <i>roi</i> ,	<i>bois</i> <i>pays</i> ,
the walnuts of their orchards,	the pictures of those painters,
<i>noix</i> <i>verger</i> ,	<i>tableau</i> <i>peintre</i> ,
the feathers of these birds,	the melody of their voices, the gods of
<i>plume</i> <i>oiseau</i> ,	<i>mélodie</i> f. <i>voix</i> , <i>dieu</i>
the pagans, the jewels of my sisters,	the cabbages of our gardens,
<i>païen</i> , <i>bijou</i> , <i>sœur</i> , <i>chou</i> <i>jardin</i> ,	
these charming places, the horses of my stables, the fans of these	
² <i>charmans</i> ¹ <i>lieu</i> , <i>cheval</i> <i>écurie</i> , <i>éventail</i>	
ladies, the (front gates) of those churches, the actions of my	
<i>dame</i> , <i>portail</i> <i>église</i> ,	

ancestors, the evils of this life, the victories of those generals,
aïeul, mal vie,
 the works of those architects, the corals of those seas, the
travail architecte, corail mer,
 (learned men) of those times, the presents of my parents, the
savant temps-là,
 teeth of your combs, the playthings of our children, the heads of
dent peigne, joujou enfant, tête
 these nails.
clou.

CHAPTER II.

OF THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

112. The *definite article* is a small word prefixed to substantives to determine the extent of their signification.

The French definite article is $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{le} \text{ before a sing. mascu.} \\ \text{substantive.} \\ \textit{la} \text{ before a sing. femin.} \\ \text{substantive.} \end{array} \right\}$ the plural is *les* for both genders.

EXAMPLES.

Sing. $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{le} \text{ jour} \text{ the day} \\ \textit{la} \text{ nuit} \text{ the night} \end{array} \right\}$ plur. $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{les} \text{ jours} \text{ the days.} \\ \textit{les} \text{ nuits} \text{ the nights.} \end{array} \right\}$

EXERCISE.

The sun, the moon, and the stars, are the glory of nature.
soleil, m. lune, f. étoile, f. sont f. art. f.
 The king, the queen, and the princes are well pleased. The
roi, reine, très-satisfaits.
 rose, the violet, the tulip, the narcissus, the hyacinth,
f. violette, f. tulipe, f. narcisse, m. jacinthe, f.
 the gilliflower. the jasmine, the lily, the honeysuckle, the
giroflee, f. jasmin, m. lis, m. chèvre-feuille, m.
 ranunculus, are the delight of the sight. Poetry,
renoncule f. délices f. pl. vue f. art. poésie, f. art.
 painting, and music are (sister arts). The day and the
peinture, f. art. musique f. sœurs. jour m.
 night are equally necessary.
nuit f. également nécessaires.

113. The article is subject to elision and contraction. (See page 14.)

114. Elision of the article is the omitting of the *e* in *le*, or the *a* in *la*, when these articles precede a noun beginning with a vowel or *h* mute.

EXAMPLES.

l'argent $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{instead of} \\ \textit{le} \text{ argent} \end{array} \right\}$ the money.
l'histoire $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{la} \text{ histoire} \end{array} \right\}$ the history.

115. But in this case the place of the letter thus omitted is supplied by an apostrophe.

The soul of man without cultivation is like a diamond
ame f. art. homme m. sans culture est comme diamant m.

(in the rough). The history of Spain is sometimes very interesting.

brut.

histoire f. Espagne est quelquefois très-intéressante.

(Look at) the amaranth and the anemone; what beauty!

Considérez

amaranthe f.

f.

quelle

Self-love and pride are always the offspring of a weak art. *amour-propre* art. *orgueil* sont toujours partage m. ²*faible*

mind. Honesty, innocence, honour, and the love of

'esprit m. art. *Honnêteté*, art.

art. *honneur*

amour art.

virtue are (very much esteemed). Summer, autumn, and

vertu f.

très-estimés

art. *été*

art. *automne*, art.

winter are very changeable. France is separated from Italy by the

hiver

variables. art.

séparée de art. *Italie* par

Alps, and from Spain by the Pyrenees.

Alpes,

art.

Pyénées.

116. Contraction in grammar is the reducing of two syllables into one, and takes place when the preposition *à* or *de* precedes the article; in which case, instead of putting *de le* before a masculine singular, beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirated, *du* must be employed; instead of *à le*, *au* must be used; and before the plural substantives of both genders, *de les* is changed into *des*, and *à les* into *aux*.

Thus	{	Du roi	is instead of	de le roi	of the king
		du héros	—	de le héros	of the hero
		au roi	—	à le roi	to the king
		au héros	—	à le héros	to the hero
		des rois	—	de les rois	of the kings
		des reines	—	de les reines	of the queens
		aux rois	—	à les rois	to the kings
		aux reines	—	à les reines	to the queens

EXERCISE.

The top of the mountains and the bottom of the vallies are
sommet m. *montagne* *fond* m. *vallée*

equally agreeable. Silk is soft to the touch. The

également. *agréables*, art. *Soie* f. *douce* *toucher* m.

happiness of a feeling man is to relieve the wants of the poor.

bonheur m. *sensible* *de subvenir* *à besoin* *pauvre* m. s.

A man given to pleasure was never a great man. He obeyed the

livré art. *plaisir* m. *fut* *grand* *Il obéit à*

orders of the king. The warbling of birds, the murmuring of

ordres *gazouillement* m. art. *oiseau*, *murmure* m. art.

streams, the enamel of meadows, the coolness of woods, the

ruisseau, *émail* m. art. *prairie*, *fraîcheur* f. art. *bois*,

fragrance of flowers and the sweet smell of plants contribute

parfum m. art. *fleur*

douce odeur f. art. *plante contribuent*

greatly to the pleasures of the mind and to the health of the body.

beaucoup

esprit

santé f.

corps m.

117. *De* and *à* are never contracted with *la* before a sing. fem. substantive beginning with a consonant or an *h* aspirated.

EXAMPLES.

De la reine of the queen *à la reine* to the queen.

118. Nor are *de* and *à* contracted with *le* or *la* before any substantive singular beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, but then the article suffers elision.

EXAMPLES.

<i>De l'esprit</i>	of the mind	<i>de l'homme</i>	of the man
<i>A l'esprit</i>	to the mind	<i>à l'homme</i>	to the man
<i>De l'ame</i>	of the soul	<i>à l'ame</i>	to the soul
<i>De l'histoire</i>	of the history	<i>à l'histoire</i>	to the history

119. Contraction likewise does not take place when the adjective *tout*, all, every, intervenes between *de* or *à* and the article.

EXAMPLES.

<i>De tout le monde,</i>	of every body	<i>A tous les hommes,</i>	to all men
<i>De tous les hommes,</i>	of all men	<i>De toutes les vertus,</i>	of all virtues
<i>A tout le monde,</i>	to every body	<i>A toutes les maisons,</i>	to all houses

EXERCISE.

The hope of success strengthened the cause of virtue
espérance f. art. *réussite* f. *fortifia* f. art. *vertu* f.
 and weakened the audaciousness of rebellion. Fire of
affaiblit *audace* f. art. f. art. *Feu* m. art.
 imagination, strength of mind, and firmness of soul,
 f. art. *force* f. art. *esprit*, art. *fermeté* f. art. *ame*,
 are gifts of nature. We saw with horror that man (given up)
des don art. f. *Nous vîmes avec* *livré*
 to avarice and voluptuousness. Good cultivation is that
 art. *à* art. *volupté* f. art. *Bonne culture* f. *ce*
 which contributes most to the fertility of the soil. More or less
qui contribue le plus *terre* f. *Plus ou moins*
 pain is the lot of (every body.) The history of man under
de peine *partage* m. *tout le monde* m. art. *dans*
 all the circumstances of life is the study of the wise.
toutes *circonstance* f. art. *vie* f. *étude* *sage* m. sing.
 Playfulness (does not become) all ages nor all
 art. *Enjouement* m. *ne sied ni à* art. m. *ni à* art.
 characters.
caractère m.

120. GENERAL RULE. In French, the article always agrees in gender and number with the substantive to which it relates.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Le livre que je cherche,</i>	The book which I am looking for.
<i>La femme que je vois,</i>	The woman whom I see.
<i>Les hommes qui étudient,</i>	The men that study.

EXERCISE.

The father, mother, brothers, sisters, uncles, aunts,
père art. *mère* art. *frère* art. *sœur* art. *oncle* art. *tante*
 and several other relations were present. What we
plusieurs autres parents étaient présents. *Ce que nous*
 value is health, frugality, liberty, vigour of
estimons c'est art. *santé* f. art. f. art. f. art. *vigueur* f. art.
 mind and body; it is the love of virtue, reverence
de art. *corps* m. *ce* *amour* m. art. f. art. *crainte* f.
 for the gods, fidelity to all mankind, moderation in
de *dieu* m. art. f. *envers* art. *monde* m. art. f. *dans*
 prosperity, fortitude in adversity, courage, good
 art. f. art. *force* f. art. f. art. m. art. *bonnes*
 morals, and the abhorrence of flattery.
mœur *horreur* f. art. f.

121. GENERAL RULE. The article and the prepositions *à* and *de*, whether contracted or not, are invariably to be repeated before every substantive.

EXAMPLES.

<i>L'esprit, les grâces, et la beauté nous captivent.</i>	Wit, grace, and beauty, captivate us.
<i>Je vis hier le roi, la reine, et les princes.</i>	I saw yesterday the king, queen, and princes.
<i>L'ignorance est la mère de l'erreur, de l'admiration, et des préventions de toute espèce.</i>	Ignorance is the mother of error, admiration, and prejudices of every kind.

EXERCISE.

Innocence of	manners,	sincerity,	obedience,	and
art. f.	art. <i>mœurs</i>	art. f.	art. <i>obéissance</i>	f. art.
abhorrence of	vice,	inhabit	this happy region.	The plants
<i>horreur</i>	art. m. <i>habitent</i>	<i>heureuse</i>	f.	<i>plante</i>
of the gardens,	the animals of the forests,	the minerals of the earth,		
<i>jardin</i> , m.	<i>forêt</i> , f.	<i>terre</i> f.		
the meteors of the sky,	must all	concur to store	the mind	
<i>météore</i>	<i>ciel</i> , m. <i>doivent tous</i>	<i>concourir à enrichir</i>		
with an ² inexhaustible	variety.	Neither	suffering	punishment
<i>par</i>	<i>in'puisable</i> f.	*	art. <i>peine</i> . f. art. <i>châtiment</i>	m.
nor kindness	(make any)	impression on those minds.		
* art. <i>carresse</i> f. pl.	<i>ne font nulle</i>	<i>sur</i>	<i>ame</i> .	
The lily is the	emblem of	virginity,	candour,	
<i>lis</i> m.	<i>symbole</i> m.	art. f. <i>de</i> art. f. <i>de</i> art.		
innocence, and	purity.			
f.	<i>de</i> art. <i>pureté</i> f.			

122. *Du, de la, de l', des*, answering to the English indefinite adjective pronoun *some* or *any*, expressed or understood, have by way of ellipsis passed into habitual use. The same directions must be attended to as are given page 12, art. 50.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Je mange du pain.</i>	I eat bread.
<i>Il prend de la peine.</i>	He takes some trouble.
<i>Nous mangeons du hachis.</i>	We eat some hash.
<i>Elle conçoit de la haine.</i>	She conceives a hatred.
<i>Vous avez de l'amitié.</i>	You have some friendship.
<i>Vous prenez de l'humeur.</i>	You go into an ill humour.
<i>Nous cueillons des pommes.</i>	We gather apples.
<i>Ils vendent des oranges.</i>	They sell oranges.

EXERCISE.

Give me some bread	and butter.	Offer him	some meat.
<i>Donnez-moi</i>	<i>pain</i> m.	<i>beurre</i> m.	<i>Offrez-lui</i> <i>viande</i> f.
Take some salt.	(There is) mustard.	We have	some girkins.
<i>Prenez</i>	<i>sel</i> m.	<i>Voilà</i>	<i>moutarde</i> f. <i>Nous avons</i> <i>cornichon</i> .
(Shall I offer you) some chicken?	(Shall I help you to) some fruit?		
<i>Vous offrirai-je</i>	<i>poulet</i> m.	<i>Vous servirai-je</i>	m.
I (will take) (with pleasure) some broth.	Bring me	some bread.	
<i>Je prendrai</i>	<i>volontiers</i>	<i>bouillon</i> m.	<i>Apportez-moi</i>
(Pour me out) some beer.	Drink some wine.	Take	some tea.
<i>Versez-moi</i>	<i>bière</i> f. <i>Buvez</i>	<i>vin</i> m. <i>Prenez</i>	<i>thé</i> m.

(Put in) some sugar and milk. I hear some noise. (There
Mettez-y sucre m. lait m. J'entends bruit m. Il
 falls) some hail. She has some pride. Have you any ink
tombe grêle f. s. Elle a orgueil. Avez-vous encre f.
 and pens? Put some oil and vinegar to the salad. Eat
plumes? Mettez huile vinaigre m. sur salade f. Mange
 some lobster. He has received gold and silver.
homard m. Il a reçu or m. argent m.

CHAPTER III.

OF THE ADJECTIVE.

123. THE adjective is not, like the substantive or noun, the name of any person or thing, physical, metaphysical, or abstract, but it is a word which, when added to a substantive or noun, expresses the particular quality or defect of that substantive or noun, as

<i>bon père,</i>	good father.	<i>bonne mère,</i>	good mother.
<i>mauvais pères,</i>	bad fathers.	<i>mauvaises mères,</i>	bad mothers.
<i>bon ange,</i>	good angel.	<i>mauvais ange,</i>	bad angel.
<i>beau livre,</i>	fine book.	<i>mauvais livres,</i>	bad books.

124. In the above sentences, *good* and *bad* are the adjectives which express the qualities and defects of the substantives or nouns *father*, *fathers*, *mother*, *mothers*, *angel*, *angels*, *book*, *books*.

125. In English the adjective is invariable; that is, the English adjective is the same before a noun, whether that noun be masculine or feminine, singular, or plural, as

<i>un homme savant,</i>	a learned man.
<i>une femme savante,</i>	a learned woman.
<i>hommes savans,</i>	learned men.
<i>femmes savantes,</i>	learned women.

126. In French, the adjective must agree with the noun which it qualifies, in gender and number; that is, the adjective must be masculine singular, if the noun be mas. sing.; feminine singular, if the noun be fem. sing.; masculine plural, if the noun be mas. pl.; feminine plural, if the noun be fem. pl. The adjective *learned*, which is the same in the above four English sentences, has in French four different terminations.

Of the formation of the Feminine of French Adjectives.

127. N. B. Whenever you want to form the feminine of any adjective, first see whether that adjective is to be found amongst the lists of exceptions to the different rules: if not to be found there, find out from its masculine termination under what rule it comes.

128. For the formation of the plural of French adjectives, see page 51, art. 150.

129. French adjectives that end in the masculine singular with an *e* mute* remain the same for the feminine singular.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
aimable	aimable	<i>amiable.</i>
aveugle	aveugle	<i>blind.</i>

130. *The name of mute is given to the French *e* without an accent; it is not pronounced at all at the end of French words of more than one syllable, but causes the consonant that precedes it to be pronounced very forcibly: it is of the same nature as the English *e* at the end of *love, mate, tare, &c.*

131. French adjectives that do not end in the masculine singular with *e* mute, take *e* mute to form the feminine singular, if not found under the following rules or exceptions:

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
prudent	prudente	<i>prudent.</i>
sensé	sensée	<i>sensible.</i>
poli	polie	<i>polite.</i>
tortu	tortue	<i>crooked.</i>
instruit	instruite	<i>informed.</i>

132. Adjectives ending in *er* in the mas. sing., besides taking an *e* mute to form their fem. sing., require a grave accent to be put over the *e* that precedes the *r* in the masculine, as

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
léger	légère	<i>light.</i>
cher	chère	<i>dear.</i>

133. French adjectives that end in the mas. sing. with the following terminations,

el, eil, ien, on, et,

form their feminine by doubling the last consonant and taking *e* mute.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
cruel	cruelle	<i>cruel.</i>
pareil	pareille	<i>like.</i>
ancien	ancienne	<i>ancient.</i>
bon	bonne	<i>good.</i>
net	nette	<i>clean.</i>

134. The following adjectives, although ending with *et*, form their feminine by taking an *e*, and placing a grave accent on the *e* that precedes the *t* in the masculine:

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
concret	concrète	<i>concrete.</i>
discret	discrète	<i>discrete.</i>
indiscret	indiscrète	<i>indiscreet.</i>
inquiet	inquiète	<i>uneasy.</i>
complet	complète	<i>complete.</i>
incomplet	incomplète	<i>incomplete.</i>
replet	replète	<i>replete.</i>
suret	surète	<i>sourish.</i>

135. The thirteen following French adjectives, though not ending in the masculine singular with *el, eil, ien, on, et*, form their singular by doubling the last consonant and taking an *e* mute:

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
bas	basse	<i>low.</i>
cas	casse	<i>hoarse, or broken.</i>

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
gras	grasse	<i>fat.</i>
las	lasse	<i>tired.</i>
exprès	expresse	<i>express.</i>
profès	professe	<i>professed.</i>
épais	épaisse	<i>thick.</i>
métis	métisse	<i>mongrel.</i>
gros	grosse	<i>big, large.</i>
sot	sotte	<i>foolish, or silly.</i>
vieillot	vieillotte	<i>oldish.</i>
nul	nulle	<i>null, or none.</i>
gentil	gentille	<i>genteel.</i>

136. The French adjectives that end in the masculine singular with an *f*, change this letter *f* into *v*, and take *e* mute to form the feminine singular, as

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
bref	brève	<i>short.</i>
actif	active	<i>active.</i>
naïf	naïve	<i>ingenuous.</i>
neuf	neuve	<i>new.</i>

137. French adjectives that end in the masculine singular with an *x*, change this letter *x* into *s*, and take an *e* mute to form the feminine singular :

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
honteux	honteuse	<i>shameful.</i>
vertueux	vertueuse	<i>virtuous.</i>
jaloux	jalouse	<i>jealous.</i>

138.

EXCEPTIONS.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
préfix	préfixe	<i>prefixed.</i>
faux	fausse	<i>false.</i>
roux	rousse	<i>reddish.</i>
doux	douce	<i>sweet.</i>
aigre-doux	aigre-douce	<i>tart.</i>

139. The *five* following French adjectives have two masculines singular, and they form their feminine singular by doubling the *l* in the masculine singular before a vowel and taking an *e* mute :

Masculine, before a vowel or <i>h</i> aspirated.	Masculine, before a vowel or <i>h</i> mute.	Feminine.	English.
beau	bel	belle	<i>fine.</i> [zy.
fou	fol	folle	<i>mad or cra-</i>
nouveau	nouvel	nouvelle	<i>new.</i>
mou	mol	molle	<i>soft.</i>
vieux	vieil	vieille	<i>old.</i>

140. The nineteen following French adjectives are entirely irregular in the formation of their feminine singular :

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
blanc	blanche	<i>white.</i>
franc	franche	<i>frank.</i>
frais	fraîche	<i>fresh.</i>
sec	sèche	<i>dry.</i>
grec	grecque	<i>Greek.</i>
public	publique	<i>public.</i>

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
caduc	caduque	<i>decrepit.</i>
turc	turque	<i>Turkish.</i>
long	longue	<i>long.</i>
bénin	bénigne.	<i>benign.</i>
malin	maligne	<i>malignant.</i>
tiers	tierce	<i>third.</i>
tors	torse or torte	<i>twisted.</i>
coi	coite	<i>still.</i>
favori	favorite	<i>favorite.</i>
jumeau	jumelle	<i>twin.</i>
traître	traïtesse	<i>traitor.</i>

141. French adjectives ending with *eur*, and which are also used as substantives, form their feminine singular as follows :

The eight following change the mas. termination *eur* into *euse* for the f. :

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
causeur	causeuse	<i>prattler.</i>
flatteur	flatteuse	<i>flattering.</i>
menteur	menteuse	<i>lying.</i>
moqueur	moqueuse	<i>mocker.</i>
querelleur	querelleuse	<i>quarrelsome.</i>
raïlleur	raïlleuse	<i>jeering.</i>
rêveur	rêveuse	<i>thoughtful.</i>
trompeur	trompeuse.	<i>deceitful.</i>

142. The seven following change the masculine termination *eur* into *rice* for the feminine :

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
adrateur	adoratrice	<i>adoring.</i>
créateur	créatrice	<i>creating.</i>
désapprobateur	désapprobatrice	<i>blamer.</i>
dévastateur	dévastatrice	<i>destructive.</i>
improbateur	improbatrice	<i>disapproving.</i>
observateur	observatrice	<i>observing.</i>
protecteur	protectrice.	<i>protecting.</i>

143. The two following change the masculine termination *eur* into *resse* for the feminine :

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
enchanteur	enchanteresse	<i>charming.</i>
vengeur	vengeresse	<i>revengeful.</i>

144. The eleven following adjectives, ending also with *eur*, simply take *e* mute to form their feminine :

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
antérieur	antérieure	<i>anterior.</i>
citérieur	citérieure	<i>citerior.</i>
extérieur	extérieure	<i>exterior.</i>
inférieur	inférieure	<i>inferior.</i>
intérieur	intérieure	<i>interior.</i>
majeur	majeure	<i>of age.</i>
meilleur	meilleure	<i>better.</i>
mineur	mineure	<i>minor.</i>
postérieur	postérieure	<i>posterior.</i>
supérieur	supérieure	<i>superior.</i>
ultérieur	ultérieure	<i>ulterior.</i>

145. The eleven above adjectives, ending with *eur*, are not used as substantives, as those of the three preceding lists are.

146. The above twenty-eight adjectives are the only adjectives ending in *eur* in the French.

147. Some adjectives have no feminine, as *dispos*, *active*; *fat*, *foppish*; *paillet*, *pale*, &c. Others have no masculine, as *blette*, *mellow*, &c.

148. For the formation of the plural in French adjectives, see page 51.

149. N. B. In the following exercises, when the French adjective is put under the English, it is put in the masculine: the learner will have to form the feminine, when required, by the foregoing given directions:

EXERCISE.

She is decent. This house is well situated. This pear is
Elle Cet maison f. bien situé. poire
 too ripe. She is tall and well formed. This story is very enter-
trop mûr. grand bien fait. histoire f. très-amu-
 taining. This person is very unsteady. This mountain is steep.
sant. personne f. bien léger. montagne escarpé.
 This road is not very safe. The door is not open. This
route f. sûr. porte f. ouvert.
 room is dark. This street is too narrow. It is an ancient cus-
chambre f. obscur. rue f. étroit. Ce cou-
 tom. She has carnation lips. His memory will be immortal.
tume f. a art. 2vermeil 1lèvre. Sa immortel.
 His manners are natural. The engagement was warm. (That is) an
manière naïf. action f. fut vif. voilà
 original thought. This cloth is the best of all. They are
2neuf 1pensée f. étoffe f. meilleur toutes. Ce des
 delusive promises. He seduces by his fawning manners. The
2trompeur 1promesse. séduit par 2flatteur 1manières f.
 delightful valley of Tempe is in Thessaly.
délicieux vallée f. Tempé dans art. Thessalie f.

EXERCISE.

The grass is very thick. That soup is very good, but too fat. It
herbe f. soupe f. mais trop
 is a foolish undertaking. (There is no) truth in all that. This
sot entreprise f. Il n'y a nul vérité f. dans tout cela.
 water is not clean. It is a ²very silly ¹history. It is in the newest
eau f. net. Ce fou f. à nouveau
 fashion. It is a fine statue. The law is express upon that point.
mode f. beau f. loi f. sur m.
 He lives in a state of luxurious idleness. This wax is not very white.
*Il vit dans * * mou oisiveté f. cire f.*
 She is as fresh as a rose. The paint on that wainscot is not dry.
** comme f. peinture f. de lambris m.*
 His answer is a mere evasion. The thing is public. That plant
réponse f. franc défaite f. chose f. herbe f.
 possesses a pernicious property. She (is of) a benevolent character.
a 2malin 1qualité. a 2bénin 1humeur f.
 The avenging thunderbolt smote that (impious wretch). He extended
2vengeur 1foudre f. frappa impie m. 2tendit
 to us a protecting hand. This woman is jealous and deceitful. His
** 1nous 2protecteur 1main f. femme f. jaloux faux.*

temper is mild. This color is too red. These old clothes
humeur f. doux. couleur f. trop roux. hardes f.
 are good for nothing.
à ne rien.

Formation of the Plural of French Adjectives.

150. GENERAL RULE. The plural of adjectives and participles is generally formed like the plural of nouns by adding an *s* to the singular :

Mas. sing.	Mas. plu.	Fem. sing.	Fem. plu.	English.
grand,	grands,	grande,	grandes,	great.
poli,	polis,	polie,	polies,	polite.
aimé,	aimés,	aimée,	aimées,	loved.

151. The above rule admits of no exceptions with respect to the formation of the plural feminine from the sing. fem. of adjectives ; but in forming the masculine plural from the mas. sing. there are several exceptions, which must be attended to.

152. N. B. To form the plural feminine of any adjective, it is necessary first to find its feminine singular, from which the feminine plural is formed by the addition of an *s* :

153. First exception—Adjectives ending with *s* or *x* in the mas. sing. do not change their termination for the plural masculine :

Mas. sing.	Mas. plu.	English.
gras,	gras,	fat.
heureux,	heureux,	happy.

154. Second exception—Adjectives of more than one syllable (polysyllables), ending with *ant* and *ent*, according to the most general practice, change *t* into *s* to form the plural masculine :

Mas. sing.	Mas. plu.	English.
reconnaissant,	reconnaissans,	grateful.
diligent,	diligens,	diligent.

155. Third exception—However, adjectives of one syllable (monosyllables) retain the *t* final and take an *s* to form the plural masculine :

lent,	lents,	slow.
-------	--------	-------

156. Fourth exception—The adjective *tout* makes *tout* mas. sing. ; *toute*, fem. sing. ; *tous*, mas. plu. ; *toutes*, fem. plu. *all*.

157. Fifth exception—Adjectives ending with *au* in the sing. mas. take *x* to form the plu. mas. ; as

Mas. sing.	Mas. plu.	English.
beau,	beaux,	fine.
nouveau,	nouveaux,	new.

158. Sixth exception—Some adjectives, ending with *al* in the masculine singular, change that termination *al* into *aux*, to form the plu. mas. :

159. List of adjectives ending with *al*, which form their plural masculine in changing that termination *al* into *aux* :

Masculine singular.	Masculine plural.	English.
.annal	annaux	annual.
.austral	austraux	austral.
.automnal	automnaux	autumnal.
banal	banaux	common.
.baptismal	baptismaux	baptismal.
biennal	biennaux	biennial.

Masculine singular.	Masculine plural.	English.
.brutal	brutaux	<i>brutal.</i>
.bursal	bursaux	<i>pecuniary.</i>
.capital	capitaux	<i>capital. [brain.</i>
.cérébral	cérébraux	<i>belonging to the</i>
.cérémonial	cérémoniaux	<i>ceremonial.</i>
.claustral	claustraux	<i>claustral.</i>
.collatéral	collatérau	<i>collateral.</i>
.collégial	collégiaux	<i>collegiate.</i>
.colossal	{ colossal	<i>colossal.</i>
	{ colossaux	
.commensal	commensaux	<i>commensal.</i>
.conjugal	conjugaux	<i>conjugal.</i>
.costal	costaux	<i>costal.</i>
.crural	cruraux	<i>crural.</i>
.déceviral	déceviraux	<i>decemviral.</i>
.décennal	décennaux	<i>decennial.</i>
.décimal	décimaux	<i>decimal.</i>
.déloyal	déloyaux	<i>disloyal.</i>
.diagonal	diagonaux	<i>diagonal.</i>
.doctrinal	doctrinaux	<i>doctrinal.</i>
.domanial	domaniaux	<i>belonging to a de-</i>
.dorsal	dorsaux	<i>dorsal. [mesne.</i>
.dotal	dotaux	<i>dotal.</i>
.égal	égaux	<i>equal.</i>
.électoral	électoraux	<i>electoral.</i>
.épiscopal	épiscopaux	<i>episcopal.</i>
.équilatéral	équilatéraux	<i>equilateral.</i>
.équinoxial	équinoxiaux	<i>equinoxial.</i>
.féal	féaux	<i>trusty.</i>
.féodal	féodaux	<i>feudal.</i>
.fiscal	fiscaux	<i>fiscal.</i>
.fondamental	fondementaux	<i>fundamental.</i>
.général	généraux	<i>general.</i>
.grammatical	grammaticaux	<i>grammatical.</i>
.horizontal	horizontaux	<i>horizontal.</i>
.idéa	idéaux	<i>ideal.</i>
.illégal	illégaux	<i>illegal.</i>
.immoral	immoraux	<i>immoral.</i>
.impartial	impartiaux	<i>impartial.</i>
.impérial	impériaux	<i>imperial.</i>
.inégal	inégaux	<i>unequal.</i>
.infernal	infernaux	<i>infernal.</i>
.latéral	latéraux	<i>lateral.</i>
.légal	légaux	<i>legal.</i>
.libéral	libéraux	<i>liberal.</i>
.littéral	littéraux	<i>literal.</i>
.local	locaux	<i>local.</i>
.loyal	loyaux	<i>loyal.</i>
.machinal	machinaux	<i>machinal.</i>
.martial	martiaux	<i>martial.</i>
.médicinal	médicinaux	<i>medicinal.</i>
.méridional	méridionaux	<i>méridional.</i>
.moral	moraux	<i>moral.</i>

.natal	{ natal	<i>natal.</i>
.national	{ nataux	<i>national.</i>
.numéral	nationaux	<i>numeral.</i>
.nuptial	numéraux	<i>nuptial.</i>
.occidental	nuptiaux	<i>occidental.</i>
.ordinal	occidentaux	<i>ordinal.</i>
.oriental	ordinaux	<i>oriental.</i>
.original	orientaux	<i>original.</i>
paradoxal	originaux	<i>paradoxical.</i>
patrimonial	paradoxaux	<i>patrimonial.</i>
.partial	patrimoniaux	<i>partial.</i>
patriarcal	partiaux	<i>patriarchal.</i>
.pectoral	patriarcaux	<i>pectoral.</i>
présidial	pectoraux	<i>presidial.</i>
prévôtal	présidiaux	<i>provostal.</i>
primordial	prévôtiaux	<i>primordial.</i>
.principal	primordiaux	<i>principal.</i>
.proverbial	principaux	<i>proverbial.</i>
.provincial	proverbiaux	<i>provincial.</i>
.pyramidal	provinciaux	<i>pyramidal.</i>
quatriennal	pyramidaux	<i>quadrennial.</i>
.radical	quatriennaux	<i>radical.</i>
.royal	radicaux	<i>royal.</i>
.rural	royaux	<i>rural.</i>
seigneurial	ruraux	<i>seigneurial.</i>
.septentrional	seigneuriaux	<i>northly.</i>
sépulcral	septentrionaux	<i>sepulchral.</i>
.social	sépulcraux	<i>social.</i>
spiral	sociaux	<i>spiral.</i>
synodal	spiraux	<i>synodal.</i>
transversal	synodaux	<i>transversal.</i>
trionphal	transversaux	<i>triumphal.</i>
trivial	trionphaux	<i>trivial.</i>
vénal	triviaux	<i>venal.</i>
verbal	véniaux	<i>verbal.</i>
vertical	verbaux	<i>vertical.</i>
vital	verticaux	<i>vital.</i>
	vitaux	

160. All adjectives ending with *al* not found in the above list have no plural or are only used in the plural feminine. The learner will do well to commit to memory those most commonly used in conversation, and which are marked with a . before them.

EXERCISE.

They are envious and jealous. Those fowls are big and fat.
Ils *poulet m.*
Owls are frightful birds. (There are) some beautiful jewels.
art. *hibou m.* des ²*hideux* ¹*oiseau m.* Voilà de beau bijou m.
The two new operas have succeeded. Men are only
deux nouveau m. ont réussi. art. ²*sont* ¹*ne* ⁴*que*
equal in the infirmities of nature. The ²general ¹officers are assem-
³*égal par* art. f. *officiers* *assem-*
bled. This fruit is excellent. His proficiency is slow, but solid.
blé. m. pl. *sont* *Ses progrès m. pl. sont* *solide.*

All his friends have been very glad to see him. Those ladies are
ami m. ont été bien aise de ²voir ¹le. dame
 tired with walking. You have powerful enemies, but their efforts
las de marcher. Vous avez de ennemi m. mais leurs
 (will be) vain and useless. The four ²cardinal ¹points are the
seront inutile. quatre point m.
 east, west, south, and north.
orient m. art. occident m. art. midi m. art. nord m.

Of the Degrees of Signification of the Adjective.

161. Grammarians commonly reckon *three* degrees of comparison: the *positive*, the *comparative*, and the *superlative*.

162. The *positive* is the adjective expressing the quality of an object, without any increase or diminution, as *beau*, fine; *bon*, good.

EXERCISE.

A child gentle, amiable, and docile, is beloved (by every body.)
enfant m. doux, aimable, aimé de tout le monde.
 An ²ingenuous ¹candour, an amiable simplicity, and a lively artlessness,
ingénu f. f. ²piquant ¹naïveté f.
 are the charms of youth. The sight of an agreeable landscape
charme m. art. jeunesse f. vue f. agréable paysage m.
 is a ²varied ³and ⁴rapid ¹source of ²delightful ¹sensations.
varié rapide f. délicieux f.

163. The *comparative* is so called because it draws a comparison between two or many objects. When two things are compared, the one is either superior, inferior, or equal to the other; hence, three sorts of comparison—that of *superiority*, *inferiority*, and *equality*.

164. The adverbs *plus*, *moins*, and *aussi*, which mark these three kinds of comparison, are to be repeated before every adjective, when several are joined to the same substantive, and are followed by the conjunction *que*, rendered in English by *than* or *as*.

165. The *comparative* of *superiority* is formed in French by putting *plus*, more, before the adjective, and *que*, than, after it.

EXAMPLE.

La rose est plus belle que la violette, The rose is more beautiful than the violet.

166. Observe that in English the *comparative* of *superiority* may be expressed by putting *more* before the adjective—as *more wise*; or in adding to the adjective the termination *er*—as *wiser*. When the comparative is expressed in English in the last manner, it must be rendered in French as if it stood *more wise*.

EXERCISE.

The republic of Athens was more illustrious than that of Lacedæmon.
république f. Athènes a été illustre celle Lacédémone. Homère
 was perhaps a greater genius than Virgil; but Virgil
mon. Homère était peut-être grand génie m. Virgile; mais
 had a ²more ³delicate ⁴and ⁵more ⁶refined ¹taste ⁷than Homer
avait fin délicat goût m. Homère.
 Milton appears (to me) more sublime than all the other epic poets.
²paraît ¹me autre ²épique ¹poète.

167. The *comparative* of *inferiority* is formed by prefixing *moins*, less, to the adjective, and adding *que*, than, after it.

EXAMPLE.

La violette est moins belle que la rose, The violet is less beautiful than the rose.

EXERCISE.

Shipwreck and death are less fatal than the pleasures
 art. *naufnage* m. art. *mort* f. *funeste* m.
 which attack virtue. The violet is less brilliant to the eye than
qui attaquent art. f. f. *brillant* m. pl.
 the lily, a true emblem of modesty and of pride.
lis, m. * ²*véritable* ¹*emblème* m. art. f. *de art. orgueil* m.
 Autumn is less varied than spring, but it is richer.
 art. *automne* f. *varié* art. *printemps* m. *elle* *riche*.

168. The comparative of equality is formed by placing *aussi*, as, before the adjective, and *que* as, after it.

EXAMPLE.

La tulipe est aussi belle que la rose. The tulip is as beautiful as the rose.

EXERCISE.

†Pope's images are as perfect as his style is harmonious. Deli
Pope f. *parfait* son m. art. *déli-*
 cacy of taste is a gift of nature, as scarce as true
catesse f. art. *goût* m. *don* m. art. f. *rare* art. *vrai*
 genius. The love (of our neighbour) is as necessary in society
génie m. *amour du prochain* dans art.
 for the happiness of life, as in Christianity for eternal
pour bonheur m. art. *vie* f. art. *Christianisme* m. art. ²*éternel*
 salvation. It is as easy (to do) good as to do evil.
¹*salut* m. *aisé de faire du bien* du mal.

†Pope's images translate *The images of Pope*.

169. The three following adjectives—*meilleur*, better, *pire*, worse, *moindre*, less—are comparatives in themselves:

170. N. B. As most beginners are apt to confound these comparative adjectives with the comparative adverbs, *mieux*, *pis*, and *moins*, because they are generally rendered by the same English words *better*, *worse*, and *less*, it may be advisable to subjoin here these comparative adverbs with their positives, that the difference of meaning may serve as a distinction:

- | | | |
|-------------|---|--|
| Adjectives. | { | <i>Meilleur</i> , better, is the comparative of <i>bon</i> , good, and is used instead of <i>plus bon</i> , which is never said. |
| | | <i>Pire</i> signifies <i>plus mauvais</i> , worse, or more wicked, and is used instead of <i>plus mauvais</i> . |
| | | <i>Moindre</i> means <i>plus petit</i> , less, or smaller, and is used instead of <i>plus petit</i> . |
| Adverbs. | { | <i>Mieux</i> , better, is the comparative of <i>bien</i> , well, and is used instead of <i>plus bien</i> , more well, which is said in neither language. |
| | | <i>Pis</i> is the comparative of <i>mal</i> , badly, and is used for <i>plus mal</i> , worse, which is likewise employed. |
| | | <i>Moins</i> is the comparative of <i>peu</i> , little, and is used for <i>plus peu</i> , which is never used. |

EXAMPLES.

Ce fruit-là est bon, mais celui-ci est meilleur,	<i>That fruit is good, but this is better.</i>
Sa condition est mauvaise, mais elle a été pire,	<i>His condition is bad, but it has been worse.</i>
Ma dépense est petite, mais la vôtre est moindre,	<i>My expense is small, but yours is smaller.</i>
Il se conduit bien, mais elle se conduit encore mieux,	<i>He behaves well, but she behaves still better.</i>
Il se portait mal, mais il est pis que jamais,	<i>He was unwell, but he is worse than ever.</i>
Je parle peu, vous parlez encore moins,	<i>I speak little; you speak still less.</i>

EXERCISE.

His reasoning	is not better than yours.	Your style is
<i>Son raisonnement m.</i>		<i>le vôtre. Votre m.</i>
(a great deal) better than that of his brother.	The thickness of this	
<i>de beaucoup</i>	<i>celui son</i>	<i>épaisseur f.</i>
wall is less than that of the ² next wall.	This column is less than	
<i>mur m.</i>	<i>celle voisin</i>	<i>colonne f.</i>
the other in height and thickness.	The remedy is worse than	
<i>autre en hauteur f.</i>	<i>en grosseur f.</i>	<i>remède m.</i>
the disease. Your horse is worse than mine.		
<i>mal m.</i>	<i>cheval m.</i>	<i>le mien.</i>

171. The adjective is in the *superlative* degree when it expresses the quality in a very high, or in its highest state; hence there are two sorts of superlatives, the *absolute* and the *relative*.

172. The *superlative absolute* is formed by putting *très, fort, bien*, very, before the adjective; it is called *absolute*, because it does not express any relation to other objects.

EXAMPLE.

Londres est une très-belle ville, London is a very fine city.

173. REMARK. The adverbs *extrêmement*, extremely, *infiniment*, infinitely, are likewise marks of the superlative absolute.

EXAMPLE.

Cet homme est extrêmement savant, That man is extremely learned.
Dieu est infiniment heureux, God is supremely happy.

EXERCISE.

That landscape is very diversified, very extensive, and infinitely agreeable (on every side). The Alps are very high and very steep.
paysage m. varié étendu
agréable de tout côté m. Alpes f. haut escarpé.
 The style of Fenelon is very rich and very harmonious, but it is sometimes prolix; that of Bossuet is extremely sublime, but it is sometimes harsh and unpolished.
m. Fénelon il quelque-fois prolixe; celui élevé,
dur rude.

174. The *superlative relative* is formed by prefixing the article *le* to the comparatives *meilleur, moindre, pire*, and to the adverbs *plus* and *moins*; it is called *relative*, because it expresses a relation to other objects.

EXAMPLES.

Londres est la plus belle des villes. London is the finest of cities.
Je préfère une maison de campagne au plus beau palais. I prefer a country-house to the finest palace.

175. *Plus* and *moins* with the article are repeated before every adjective.

EXERCISE.

The most beautiful comparison (that there is) perhaps in any
comparaison f. que il y ait peut-être dans aucun
 language is that which Pope has drawn from the Alps, in his Essay
langue f. celle que tiré f. de dans son Essai
 on Criticism. The most able men are not always the most
sur art. Critique f. habile gens toujours
 virtuous. The most ancient and most general of all kinds of
vertueux. f. f. art. espèce f.
 idolatry was the worship rendered to the sun. The least excusable
était culte m. rendu soleil m.
 of all errors is that which is wilful.
art. f. celle qui volontaire.

Agreement of the Adjective with the Substantive.

176. RULE I. The adjective always agrees in gender and number with the substantive to which it relates.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Le bon père,</i>	The good father.
<i>La bonne mère,</i>	The good mother.
<i>De beaux jardins,</i>	Fine gardens,
<i>De belles promenades,</i>	Fine walks.

177. *Bon* is masculine singular, because *père* is mas. and in the sing.; *bonne* is feminine singular, because *mère* is fem. and in the sing.; *beaux* is in the masculine plural, because *jardins* is mas. and pl., &c.

EXERCISE.

These hills are covered with trees loaded with fruit already
coteau m. couvert de arbre m. chargé de m. pl. déjà
 ripe. A pure stream rolls its limpid water through the
mûr. clair ruisseau m. roule son ²limpide ¹eau à
 midst of meadows enamelled with flowers. (Every thing) interests
milieu m. de prairie f. émaillé de fleur. Tout intéresse
 the heart in this abode, which is full of charms. Fly, incon-
*cœur m. séjour m. * * plein attrait m. Fuyez, ²incon-*
 siderate youth, fly from the enchanting allurements of a vain
*sidéré ¹jeunesse f. * ²enchanteur ¹attrait ²vain*
 world: its perfidious sweets are a slow poison, which (would
¹monde m. ses ²perfide ¹douceur f. lent m. qui dé-
 destroy) in your soul the noble enthusiasm of goodness and
truirait dans ame enthousiasme m. art. bien m.
 the precious seeds of sublime virtues.
germe m. art. vertu.

178. RULE II. When the adjective relates to two substantives singular of the same gender, it must be put in the plural, and agree with them in gender.

EXAMPLE.

Le roi et le berger sont égaux après la mort, The king and the shepherd are equal after death.

EXERCISE.

Uprightness and piety are much esteemed even by the
 art. *droiture* f. art. *piété* f. *très estimé même de*
 wicked. A man in the most elevated and a man in the
méchant pl. *Le dans* ³le ⁴plus ⁵élevé ¹le ²état *le* ²le
 most obscure situation are equally precious in the eyes of God.
⁴plus ⁵obscur ¹le ²état m. *également à m. Dieu.*
 Pilpay and Confucius are very celebrated among the nations of Asia.
célèbre parmi peuple m. art.

179. RULE III. When the two substantives to which the adjective relates are of different genders, the adjective is to be put in the masculine plural.

EXAMPLE.

Mon père et ma mère sont contents, My father and mother are contented.

EXERCISE.

His probity and disinterestedness are known (every where).
 f. *son désintéressement* m. *connu partout.*
 The love of life and the fear of death are natural to
amour m. art. *vie* f. *crainte* art. *mort* f. *naturel*
 man. Ignorance and self-love are equally presumptuous.
 art. art. f. art. *amour-propre* m. *présomptueux.*
 My sister and brother were very attentive to the instructions of their masters.
f. mon ont été maître m.

NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES OF NUMBER.

180. Numbers are divided into five classes, viz. *cardinal, ordinal, collective, distributive, and proportional.*

CARDINAL NUMBER.	ORDINAL NUMBER.		NUMERICAL COLLECTIVE NOUNS.	
1 un, une	<i>premier</i>	<i>first</i>	unité	<i>unit</i>
2 deux	{ <i>deuxième,</i> <i>second</i> }	2d	couple, paire	<i>couple</i>
3 trois	<i>troisième</i>	3d	trio	<i>trio</i>
4 quatre	<i>quatrième</i>	4th	deux couples	<i>two couple</i>
5 cinq	<i>cinquième</i>	5th		
6 six	<i>sixième</i>	6th	{ <i>demi-</i> <i>douzaine</i>	<i>half a dozen</i>
7 sept	<i>septième</i>	7th		
8 huit	<i>huitième</i>	8th	huitaine	<i>eight</i>
9 neuf	<i>neuvième</i>	9th	neuvaine	{ <i>nine days of</i> <i>prayer</i>
10 dix	<i>dixième</i>	10th	dizaine	<i>half a score</i>
11 onze	<i>onzième</i>	11th		
12 douze	<i>douzième</i>	12th	douzaine	<i>dozen</i>

CARDINAL NUMBER.		ORDINAL NUMBER.		NUMERICAL COLLECTIVE NOUNS.	
13	treize	treizième	13th		
14	quatorze	quatorzième	14th		
15	quinze	quinzième	15th	quinzaine	{ fortnight, fifteen
16	seize	seizième	16th		
17	dix-sept	dix-septième	17th		
18	dix-huit	dix-huitième	18th		
19	dix-neuf	dix-neuvième	19th		
20	vingt	vingtième	20th	vingtaine	a score
21	vingt-et-un	{ vingt-et- unième }	21st		
22	vingt-deux	{ vingt deux- ième, &c. }	22d		
30	trente	trentième	30th	trentaine	a score & a half
31	{ trente-et- un, &c. }	{ trente- unième }	31st		
40	quarante	quarantième	40th	quarantaine	two score
41	{ quarante- et-un }	{ quarante- unième }	41st		
50	cinquante	cinquantième	50th	{ cinquan- taine }	{ two score and a half
51	{ cinquante- et-un }	{ cinquante- unième }	51st		
60	soixante	soixantième	60th	soixantaine	three score
61	{ soixante- et-un }	{ soixante- unième }	61st		
*70	{ soixante- et-dix }	{ soixante- dixième }	70th		
71	{ soixante- onze }	{ soixante- onzième }	71st		
72	{ soixante- douze, &c. }	{ soixante- douzième }	72d		
80	{ quatre- vingts. }	{ quatre- vingtième }	80th	{ quatre- vingtaine }	{ four score
81	{ quatre- vingt-un, &c. }	{ quatre- vingt- unième }	81st		
90	{ quatre- vingt-dix }	{ quatre- vingt- dixième }	90th	centaine	five score
91	{ quatre- vingt- onze }	{ quatre- vingt- onzième }	91st		
100	cent	centième	100th	1 centaine	one hundred
101	{ cent-un, &c. }	{ cent-uni- ème, &c. }	101st		
200	deux cents	{ deux-cent- ième }	200th	2 centaines	two hundred
1000	mille	millième	1000th	1 millier	one thousand

* Lévizac had *soixante-dix*; in his dictionary, at the word *soixante*, he gives *soixante-dix*; and in the same dictionary, at the word *seventy*, he gives *soixante-et-dix*. It should be *soixante-et-dix*. See *Grammaire des Grammaires*, 7th ed. page 333.

CARDINAL NUMBER.		ORDINAL NUMBER.		NUMERICAL COLLEC- TIVE NOUNS.	
2000	{ deux mille &c. }	{ deux-mill- ième, &c. }	2000th	2 milliers	2 thousand
10,000	dix mille	dix-millième	10,000th	1 myriade	1 myriad
1,000,000	{ mille-fois mille }	{ millionième }	millionth	1 million	1 million

181. The formation of the ordinal number from the cardinal does not require any explanation, except that *-unième* is only found in compound numbers, where *premier* and second are inadmissible.

182. When mentioning the days of the month, the French make use of the cardinal instead of the ordinal number, and say *le onze d'avril*, not *le onzième*, &c. *le vingt-cinq du mois prochain*, and not *le vingt-cinquième*, &c. except, however, that instead of *l'un du mois*, they say *le premier*, the first day of, &c., and sometimes *le second*, though not so well, for *le deux*; but this mode proceeds no farther.

183. Although *onze* eleven, and *onzième* eleventh, begin by a vowel, when the article is put before them it does not suffer elision; for we say *le onze*, *le onzième*, and not *l'onze*, *l'onzième*; we say also *sur les onze heures*, and not *sur lè zonzè heures*.

184. Remark that in French we use the conjunction *et*, and, although not used in English, in the following numbers:—*vingt-et-un*, *vingt-et-une*, twenty-one; *trent-et-un*, *trente-et-une*, thirty-one; *quarante-et-un*, *quarante-et-une*, forty-one; *cinquante-et-un*, *cinquante-et-une*, fifty-one; *soixante-et-un*, *soixante-et-une*, sixty-one; *soixante-et-dix*, seventy. The above are the only ones used with *et* and; for though we say *vingt-et-un*, &c., we cannot say *vingt-et-deux*, &c.; some say and write *soixante-et-onze*, *soixante-et-douze*; but it is not right.

185. The following mode of counting in English, *one-and-twenty*, *six-and-thirty*, &c., is not used in French.

186. When in *quatre-vingts*, *vingt* is immediately followed by a *noun*, either expressed or understood, it takes an *s* as the mark of the plural. We say, for instance, *quatre-vingts chevaux*, eighty horses; how many books have you? *j'en ai quatre-vingts*, I have eighty, &c.; but if in *quatre-vingts*, *vingt* is followed immediately by any other number, it does not take *s*, and we say *quatre-vingt-trois chevaux*, eighty-three horses; how many books have you? *j'en ai quatre-vingt-quatre*, I have eighty-four, &c.

187. When in *deux cents*, *trois cents*, &c., *cent* is immediately followed by a *noun*, either expressed or understood, it takes an *s* as the mark of the plural: we say, for instance, *trois cents livres*, three hundred books; how many pens have you? *j'en ai quatre cents*, I have four hundred, &c.; but if in *deux cents*, *trois cents*, &c., *cent* is immediately followed by another number, it does not take *s*, and we say *trois cent six livres*, three hundred and six books; how many pens have you? *j'en ai cinq cent huit*, I have five hundred and eight, &c.

188. *Mille*, thousand, takes no *s* as mark of the plural: we say *deux mille*, two thousand, &c.; but *mille*, mile, takes an *s* for the plural; as *il y a deux milles de B. à P.*, it is two miles from B. to P.

189. *Mil*, instead of *mille*, is used for the date of the year: thus we write *mil huit cent trente*, one thousand eight hundred and thirty.

190. Observe that *a*, *one*, put in English before hundred and before *thousand*, are not expressed in French; and that *and* put in English after hundred and after thousand, when followed by another number, is not expressed in French: thus we say, for instance, *cent cinquante tables*, one hundred and fifty tables; *mille soixante tables*, one thousand and sixty tables, &c.

191. In some parts of France, instead of *soixante-et-dix*, *soixante-onze*, &c., they say *septante*, *septante-un*, *septante-deux*, &c.

192. Instead of *quatre-vingts*, *quatre-vingt-un*, *quatre-vingt-deux*, &c., they say *octante*, *octante-un*, *octante-deux*, &c.

193. Instead of *quatre-vingt-dix*, *quatre-vingt-onze*, *quatre-vingt-douze*, &c., they say *nonante*, *nonante-un*, *nonante-deux*, &c.

194. There are many other numerical expressions used in poetry, music, games, &c., as *distique*, *tercet*, *quatrain*, *sixain*, *huitain*, &c.; *solo*, *duo*, *trio*, *quatuor*, *quinque*, *quinte*, *octave*, &c.; *beset*, *sonnez*, &c.

195. *Un millier* is very often employed for one thousand *weight*; *quintal* is never used except in the sense of one hundred weight.

196. The DISTRIBUTIVE numbers are those which express the different parts of a whole; as *la moitié*, the half; *le quart*, the quarter; *un cinquième*, a fifth, &c.

197. The PROPORTIONAL denote the progressive increase of things; as *le double*, the double; *le triple*, treble; *le centuple*, a hundred-fold, &c.

CHAPTER IV.

OF THE PRONOUN.

198. A PRONOUN is a word substituted in the place of a noun.

199. There are several kinds of pronouns, as the *personal*, *possessive*, *relative*, *absolute*, *demonstrative*, and *indefinite*.

Of the Personal Pronouns.

200. Personal pronouns are used for the names of persons or things.

201. There are three *persons*: the first, who speaks; the second, who is spoken to; and the third is the person or thing spoken of.

202. *Pronouns of the First Person.*

Singular.

Subject.	je		<i>I</i>	je loue Dieu	<i>I praise God.</i>
Object.	me	for	à moi <i>to me</i>	il me donne	<i>he gives me.</i>
	me	for	moi <i>me</i>	il me blesse	<i>he hurts me.</i>
	moi	for	à moi <i>to me</i>	donnez-moi	<i>give me.</i>
	moi	for	moi <i>me</i>	aidez-moi	<i>help me.</i>

Plural.

Subj. nous we nous louons Dieu we praise God.

Obj. { nous for à nous to us il nous donne he gives us.
 { nous for nous us il nous blesse he hurts us.

203. They are both masculine and feminine; that is, of the same gender as the person or persons they represent.

204. In general, *je* and *me* are put before the verb, *moi* after it, and *nous* before, but sometimes likewise after it.

EXERCISE.

I cast my eyes upon the objects which surrounded me, and
portai vue f. sing. sur objet qui environnaient me,
 saw with pleasure that all was calm and tranquil. Do ³you ¹not⁴
*je vis avec que était calme tranquille. **
²see in all the features of my father that he is satisfied with me?
voyez dans trait m. que il content de moi?
 We have told the truth. What were they saying of us? If we desire
*avons dit vérité f. Que * ²on ¹disait Si désirons*
 to be happy, we ²must ¹not³ deviate from the path of virtue.
de être devons nous écarter de sentier m. art. f.

205. Pronouns of the Second Person.

Singular.

Subj. tu thou tu crains Dieu thou fearest God.
 Obj. { te for à toi to thee il te parle he speaks to thee.
 { te for toi thee il te voit he sees thee. [ble.
 { toi for à toi to thee donne-toi la peine give thyself the trou-
 { toi for toi thee habille-toi dress thyself.

Plural.

Subj. vous ye or you vous louez Dieu you praise God.

Obj. { vous for à vous to you il vous parle he speaks to you.
 { vous for vous you il vous respecte he respects you.

206. In general *tu* and *te* are put before the verb, *toi* after, and *vous* before, but sometimes after it.

207. REMARK. Politeness has led to the use of the plural *vous*, instead of the singular *tu*: as *vous êtes bien bon*, you are very good, for *tu es bien bon*, thou art very good. (See page 6, art. 55.)

EXERCISE.

Thou art greater than I; and from thee I have ²(at once) ¹learnt
es moi; toi ai en même temps appris
 humility and wisdom. I (was telling) thee that dancing is
 art. f. art. sagesse f. disais te que art. danse f.
 to the body what taste is to the mind. You ²have ³shown ¹us
m. ce que art. m. esprit. avez montré de
 great talents; when ²(will you show) ¹us great virtues? How ³amiable
m. quand montrerez-vous de f. Que
¹you ²are! How ³good ¹you ²are (to have thought) of us! (It was said)
êtes! de vous être occupé On disait
 of you the other day, that (you intended to) spend a winter in
autre jour m. vous vous proposiez de passer m. à

London, (in order to) see (every thing) ⁶curious ¹which ²that ³city
Londres pour voir ce tout ce que cette ville
⁴presents.
offre de.

208. *Pronouns of the Third Person.*

Singular.

Subject.	il m.	he	{ il perd son temps }	{ he loses his time. }
	elle f.	she	{ elle travaille toujours }	{ she is always at work. }
	il	it	il pleuvra	it will rain.

Object.	lui m.	for	à lui	to him	{ dites-lui que je lui parlerai }	{ tell him that I will speak to him. }
	lui f.	for	à elle	to her	{ dites-lui que vous lui donnerez }	{ tell her that you will give her. }
	lui m.	for	le	him	{ je ne connais que lui de capable }	{ I know but him capable. }
	le m.	for	lui	him	je le méprise	I despise him.
	la f.	for	elle	her	je la respecte	I respect her.
	elle f.		elle	her	{ il ne connaît qu'elle }	{ he knows but her. }
	le m.	for	cela	it	{ je ne le savais pas }	{ I did not know it. }

Plural

Subject.	ils m.	—	—	they	ils chantent	{ they sing. (gentlemen) }
	elles f.	—	—	they	elles rient	{ they laugh. (ladies) }

Object.	leur m.	for	à eux	to them	{ payez-leur ce que vous leur devez }	{ pay them what you owe to them (to men). }
	leur f.	for	à elles	to them	{ dites-leur, que je désire leur parler }	{ tell them that I wish to speak to them (to ladies). }
	les m.	for	eux	them	{ vous les trouverez }	{ you will find them (men). }
	les f.	for	elles	them	il les admire	{ he admires them (ladies). }
	eux m.	—	—	them	{ je ne vois qu'eux }	{ I see but them (gentlemen). }
	elles f.	—	—	them	{ il ne connaît qu'elles }	{ he knows but them (ladies). }

209. All the personal pronouns *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles*, when subjects, are put after the verb in interrogations, as

Singular.

Subject.	{	je	<i>I</i>	dois-je payer ?	<i>must I pay ?</i>
		tu	<i>thou</i>	as-tu dit ?	<i>hast thou said ?</i>
		il	<i>he</i>	chante-t-il bien ?	<i>does he sing well ?</i>
		elle	<i>she</i>	travaille-t-elle ?	<i>does she work ?</i>

Plural.

Subject.	{	nous	<i>we</i>	irons-nous ?	<i>shall we go ?</i>
		vous	<i>you</i>	viendrez-vous ?	<i>will you come ?</i>
		ils m.	<i>they</i>	chantent-ils ?	<i>do they sing ?</i>
		elles f.	<i>they</i>	travaillent-elles ?	<i>do they work ?</i>

210. *Il, le, ils, eux*, are always masculine : *elle, la, elles*, feminine ; and *les, leur*, of both genders, as well as *lui*, when meaning *to him or to her* : in other cases, *lui* exclusively belongs to the masculine.

211. All personal pronouns, when subjects, are placed before their verbs, except in interrogative sentences, and most of them likewise, when objects precede them, except in the imperative affirmative. But the objective *eux, elles, lui*, for *le*, and *moi, toi, soi*, with one exception of this last, in *soi-disant*, styling himself, are invariably placed after the verbs by which they are governed.

EXERCISE.

He loved them because they were mild, attentive, and grateful.
amait m. parce que doux reconnaissant
 He ²(was saying) ¹(to them) do ³you ¹not⁴ ²know that the property
disait savez que propre m.
 of merit is to excite envy ? She often exhorted me to
art. mérite m. de exciter art. envie f. 2souvent 1exhortait
 the study which is the most useful, that of the ²human ¹heart. They
*étude f. * * utile, celle m.*
 make us love virtue, more by their examples than by their words.
font aimer art. f. par exemple m. parole f.
 What (has been said) of them ? Did they speak of them ? Do
¹Que ³on ²a-t ⁴dit m. * ²on ¹parlait f ? *
⁴you ¹not⁵ ³see ²her ? With what pleasure she plays !
voyez quel joue !

212. Reflected and Reciprocal Pronouns of the Third Person.

Singular.

EXAMPLES.

Object.	{	soi	{ with a preposi- tion	{	chacun tire à soi	{ every one draws to himself.
	{	soi	{ governed by the verb	{	l'égoïsme fait qu'- on ne voit que soi	{ egotism makes a person see none but himself.
Object.	{	se	for	{ à soi, à lui- même	{ il se donne des louanges	{ he gives himself praises.
	{	se	for	{ à elle mêm- me	{ elle se fait illu- sion.	{ she imposes on herself.
	{	se	for	{ soi or lui- même	{ il se perd	{ he ruins himself.
	{	se	for	{ soi or elle même	{ elle se flatte	{ she flatters her- self

Plural.		EXAMPLES.	
Object.	se for à eux-mêmes	ils s'attribuent la gloire de, &c.	they attribute to themselves the glory of, &c.
	se for à elles-mêmes	elles se prescrivent pour règle de, &c.	they prescribe to themselves as a rule to, &c.
	se for l'un à l'autre	ils s'entredonnent, ou se font des cadeaux	they exchange gifts.
	se for eux-mêmes	ils se sont déshonorés	they have disgraced themselves.
	se for elles-mêmes	elles se sont flattées	they have flattered themselves.
	se for l'un l'autre	ils s'entraident	they help one another.
	se for { les uns les autres	{ les rats, dit-on, s'entre-dévorent	{ rats, it is said, eat each other.

213. REMARK. *Se* is placed before a verb, and *soi* after a preposition, and sometimes after a verb.

EXERCISE.

In a thousand instances we do not watch sufficiently over ourselves.
 * mille occasion f. on * veille assez sur soi.
 The glory of the world (passes away) in an instant. He gives himself
 monde m. s'évanouit en m. ²donne ¹se
 (a great deal) of trouble. She tires herself. People should (very seldom)
 beaucoup peine f. lasse se. On doit rarement
 speak of themselves. Virtue is amiable in itself. We must take
 parler soi. art. f. de soi. On doit prendre
 upon ourselves the care of our own affairs.
 sur soi soin m. ses propre affaire f.

214.

Of the Relative Pronoun EN.

EN for	de lui	of him	{ cet homme vous plaît, vous en parlez souvent	{ that man pleases you, you speak of him often.
	d'elle	of her	{ je ne crois pas cette femme sincère, je m'en méfie	{ I do not believe that woman sincere, I distrust her.
	d'eux	of them	{ ces fruits paraissent bons, j'en mangerais volontiers	{ these fruits look good, I should like to eat some of them.
	d'elles	of them	{ voilà de belles oranges, voulez-vous m'en donner ?	{ these are beautiful oranges, will you give me some.
	de cela	of it	{ on ne m'a pas trompé j'en suis sûr	{ I have not been imposed upon, I am sure of it.
	d'ici	hence	{ il arriva ici, comme j'en parlais	{ he arrived here as I was setting off from hence.
	de là	thence	{ vous allez à Paris, et monsieur en vient	{ you are going to Paris, this gentleman comes from thence.

215. *Of the Relative Pronoun, or Adverb Y.*

Y for	à lui	to him	{ c'est un honnête } he is an honest man
			{ homme, fiez-vous-y } trust him.
	à elle	to her	{ cette raison est so- } that reason is good.
			{ lide, je m'y rends } I yield to it.
	à eux	to them	{ ces argumens sont } these arguments are
			{ pressans, je n'y vois } cogent, I see no
			{ point de réplique } reply to them.
	à elles	to them	{ accablé de vos civili- } loaded with your ci-
			{ tés, je ne sais com- } vilities, I do not
			{ ment y répondre } know how to ac-
	à cela	to it	{ j'ai éprouvé cette } I experienced that
			{ perte quand j'y } loss, when I least
			{ pensais le moins } thought of it.
	ici	here	{ nous partions de } we set off from Lon-
			{ Londres, quand } don, when you
			{ vous y veniez } came hither.
	là	there	{ c'est un endroit char- } It is a fine place, I
			{ mant, je compte } intend to settle
			{ m'y fixer } there.

216. REMARK. Y and en are always put before the verb, except with the imperative affirmative.

EXERCISE.

They speak (a great deal) of it. You like French authors, you
On parle beaucoup aimez art. ²français ¹auteur,
 are ²always ¹speaking of them. That is a ²delicate ¹affair; the success
 * *parlez* Ce délicat f. succès m.
 of it is doubtful. See them; I consent to it, but (do not trust
douteux. Voyez consens ne vous y fiez
 them). That is a fine appointment: he had ³long ²aspired
pas. Ce charge f. * *depuis long-temps aspirait*
¹to it. He has done it; but he will get nothing by it.
a fait ³gagnera ¹ne ⁴rien y.

OF POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

217. These pronouns (now called pronominal possessive adjectives), denote the possession of things. When we say *mon habit*, my coat; *votre maison*, your house; *son jardin*, his or her garden; it is the same as saying *l'habit qui est à moi*, the coat which belongs to me; *la maison qui est à vous*, the house which belongs to you; *le jardin qui est à lui*, or *à elle*, the garden which belongs to him or to her.

218. Of these pronominal adjectives, *some* always agree with a noun expressed, and *the others* with a noun understood; hence there are *two* sorts of possessive pronouns.

219. Of those that always agree with a noun expressed, some relate to *one* person and others to *several*.

220. *Pronominal Adjectives relating to One Person.*

PERSON.	Singular.		Plural.	
<i>for the</i> {	1st	mon, <i>m.</i>	ma, <i>f.</i>	mes, <i>m. f.</i> <i>my.</i>
	2d	ton, <i>m.</i>	ta, <i>f.</i>	tes, <i>m. f.</i> <i>thy.</i>
	3d	son, <i>m.</i>	sa, <i>f.</i>	ses, <i>m. f.</i> <i>his, her, its.</i>

221. *Pronominal Adjectives relating to Many Persons.*

PERSON.	Singular.	Plural.		
<i>of the</i> {	1st	notre, <i>m. f.</i>	nos, <i>m. f.</i>	<i>our.</i>
	2d	votre, <i>m. f.</i>	vos, <i>m. f.</i>	<i>your.</i>
	3d	leur, <i>m. f.</i>	leurs, <i>m. f.</i>	<i>their.</i>

222. N. B. These possessive pronouns in French always agree in gender and number with the object *possessed*, and not with the *possessor* as in English, for which reason they must be repeated before every noun.

EXAMPLES.

Mon père, ma mère, et mes frères My father, mother, and brothers
sont à la campagne avec vos amis et are in the country, with your
leurs enfants, friends and their children.

Mon cousin est allé consoler sa My cousin is gone to visit and con-
sœur, qui a perdu son fils, sole his sister, who has lost her son.

223. *Mon, ton, son*, are also used before a noun feminine when beginning with a vowel or *h* mute; thus, *mon ame*, my soul; *ton humeur*, thy humour; *son amitié*, his friendship; must be said instead of *ma ame*, *ta humeur*, *sa amitié*.

EXERCISE.

My principles, my love of retirement, my taste for
principe m. goût m. pour art. retraite f. amour m.
(every thing) that (is connected) with learning, and my detestation
tout ce qui tient à art. instruction, haine
of all spirit of party, (every thing) has induced me to prefer a life
pour esprit parti, tout porté préférer la vie f.
passed in the closet, to the ²active ¹life of the world. Do not think,
* de * cabinet, f. monde m. * pense,
my daughter, that thy candour, thy ingenuousness, thy taste, so delicate
que f. ingénuité f. m. si délicat
and so refined, and even thy graces, can (shelter) thee from
fin, même m. puissent mettre à l'abri de
censure. His wit, his talents, his honesty, and even his
art. f. esprit m. m. honnêteté f. même
(good nature), make him beloved (by every body). Our constancy and
bonhomie f. font aimer de tout le monde. f.
our efforts will (at last) surmount all obstacles. I see nothing
m. * enfin surmonteront art. m. vois ne rien
that can (be censured) in your conduct. Their taste for the
que on puisse reprendre dans conduite f. pour
fantastical, the monstrous, and the marvellous, gives to all their
bizarre m. monstrueux m. merveilleux, m. donne
compositions, although very fine in themselves, an air of deformity,
f. quoique beau en elles-mêmes, m. difformité f.
which shocks at first sight.
qui choque à art. coup-d'œil m.

224. Of the pronouns, which always agree with nouns *understood*, some relate to one person and others to several persons.

225. Those which relate only to one person are :

PERSON.	m. Sing.	f. Sing.	m. Plur.	f. Plur.	
1st	Le mien,	la mienne,	les miens,	les miennes,	<i>mine</i>
2d	Le tien,	la tienne,	les tiens,	les tiennes,	<i>thine</i>
3d	Le sien,	la sienne,	les siens,	les siennes,	<i>his, her, its.</i>

226. Those which relate to several persons are :

PERSON.	m. Sing.	f. Sing.	Pl. of both gen.	
1st	Le nôtre	la nôtre	les nôtres	<i>ours.</i>
2d	Le vôtre	la vôtre	les vôtres	<i>yours.</i>
3d	Le leur	la leur	les leurs	<i>theirs.</i>

227. N. B. The real use of these pronouns is to spare the repetition of the nouns which have been expressed a little before.

EXAMPLE.

Avez-vous toujours votre cheval ? Have you still your horse ? I
je n'ai plus le mien. have disposed of mine.

EXERCISE.

Is it your temper or hers that hinders you from living well together ?
ce humeur f. qui empêche de vivre ensemble ?
 If it be yours, it is easy for you (to remedy) it (by mastering
*ce est il aisé * de porter remède y en le prenant*
 your temper;) if it be hers, redouble (your) complaisance, atten-
sur vous-même ; ce redoublez de - de
 tion, and good behaviour; it is very seldom that this method
de procédé m. pl. il très-rare ce moyen
 (proves unsuccessful). If my friends had served me with the same
ne réussisse pas. Si avaient servi même
 zeal as yours, it is very certain that I (should have) succeeded : but
zèle m. que il très-sûr aurais réussi :
 yours have been all fire, and mine all ice. All the pictures which
ont été de de glace. tableau m. que
 we expected from Rome are arrived : (there are some) that are a little
attendions arrivés : il y en a qui un peu
 damaged ; but yours, his, and mine are in good condition. We know
endommagés ; en état m. savons
 perfectly well what are your amusements in town, and I assure
*parfaitement * quels à art. ville f. assure*
 you we are very far from envying you them ; but if you
que sommes bien éloigné envier
 knew ours in the country, (it is most likely)
saviez quels sont à campagne f. il y a toute apparence que
 you (would not be long) in giving them the preference. You have
ne tarderiez pas à donner leur f. avez
 opened your heart to me with that noble frankness which so well
ouvert franchise f. qui si
 becomes an honest man : this confidence well deserves mine.
ried à honnête confiance f. mérite

228. REMARK. When through politeness *vous* is used for *tu*, then *votre*, *vos* must take the place of *ton*, *ta*, *tes*, and *le vôtre*, *la vôtre*, *les vôtres*, must be used for *le tien*, *la tienne*, *les tiens*, *les tiennes*.

EXAMPLES.

Que vous ressemblez peu à vos ancêtres !

How little you resemble your ancestors !

Quand vous aurez entendu nos raisons, nous écouterons les vôtres.

When you have heard our reasons, we shall listen to yours.

OF THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

229. Relative pronouns are those which relate to a preceding noun, or pronoun, called *the antecedent*. In the phrase *l'homme qui joue*, the man who plays, *qui* relates to the substantive *homme* ; *l'homme* is then the *antecedent* to the pronoun relative *qui*.

Qui	who	<i>Dieu qui voit tout</i>	God, <i>who</i> sees every thing.
	which	<i>les chevaux qui courent</i>	the horses <i>which</i> are running.
Que	whom	<i>l'homme que vous cherchez</i>	the man <i>whom</i> you seek.
	which	<i>les lois que nous observons</i>	the laws <i>which</i> we observe.
Dont or de qui	of which	<i>l'insulte dont vous vous plaignez</i>	the insult <i>of which</i> you complain.
	whose	<i>la nature dont nous ignorons les secrets</i>	nature <i>whose</i> secrets are unknown to us.
	of whom	<i>les gens de qui vous parlez</i>	the people <i>of whom</i> you speak.
Lequel Laquelle	which	<i>c'est une condition sans laquelle il ne veut rien faire</i>	it is a condition, without <i>which</i> he will do nothing.
	to whom	<i>ceux auxquels il s'est adressé, ont refusé de le défendre</i>	those <i>to whom</i> he applied, refused to protect him.
Quoi	which	<i>ce sont des choses à quoi vous ne pensez pas</i>	these are things <i>of which</i> you do not think.
	why	<i>la cause, pourquoi on l'a arrêté, est connue</i>	the reason <i>why</i> he was arrested, is known.

230. *Qui*, *que*, and *dont*, are of both genders and both numbers.

231. *Lequel* is a compound of *quel*, and the article *le*, *la*, *les*, with which it coalesces in the following manner :

m. Singular. . f.		m. Plural. f.		
lequel	laquelle	lesquels	lesquelles	<i>which</i>
duquel	de laquelle	desquels	desquelles	<i>of which</i>
auquel	à laquelle	auxquels	auxquelles	<i>to which</i>

232. This pronoun always agrees in gender and number with its antecedent. *Quoi*, which sometimes supplies its place, is always governed by a preposition.

OF PRONOUNS ABSOLUTE.

233. Pronouns absolute are those which have no relation to an antecedent. They are the five following :

Qui	who	{ <i>je vous dirai qui l'a fait</i>	{ I will tell you <i>who</i> has done it.
	whom	{ <i>vous pouvez consulter qui vous voudrez</i>	{ you may consult <i>whom</i> you please.
	whom	{ <i>qui consulterez-vous ?</i>	{ <i>whom</i> will you consult ?
Que	what	{ <i>il ne sait que résoudre</i>	{ he does not know on <i>what</i> to determine.
	what	{ <i>que ferez-vous ?</i>	{ <i>what</i> will you do ?
Quoi	what	{ <i>en quoi puis-je vous servir ?</i>	{ in <i>what</i> can I serve you ?
	what	{ <i>il y a là je ne sais quoi d'obscur</i>	{ there is in it I do not know <i>what</i> obscurity.
Quel.	what	{ <i>quelle instabilité dans les choses humaines !</i>	{ <i>what</i> instability in human affairs !
	what	{ <i>il ne sait quel parti prendre</i>	{ he does not know <i>what</i> resolution to take.
Lequel	which	{ <i>lequel aimez-vous le mieux de ces tableaux ?</i>	{ <i>which</i> do you prefer of those pictures ?
	which	{ <i>je sais bien lequel je choisirais</i>	{ I know well which I would choose.

234. *Qui* applies only to persons. *Que* and *quoi* to things.

235. *Quel*, mas. sing., *quelle*, fem. sing., *quels*, m. pl., *quelles*, f. pl., always precede a substantive, the gender and number of which they take.

236. *Lequel*, m. s., *laquelle*, f. s., *les quels*, m. pl., *les quelles*, f. pl.—which ; *duquel*, m. s., *de laquelle*, f. s., *desquels*, m. pl., *desquelles*, f. pl.—of which ; *auquel*, m. s., *à laquelle*, f. s., *aux quels*, m. pl., *aux quelles*, f. pl.—to which ; are used to mark a distinction between several nouns or objects.

OF DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

237. Demonstrative pronouns are those which point, as it were, to the objects spoken of. They are,

Singular.

mas.	fem.	
ce, cet*	cette	<i>this</i> or <i>that</i>
celui	celle	<i>this</i> or <i>that</i>
celui-ci	celle-ci	<i>this</i>
celui-là	celle-là	<i>that</i>
ceci		<i>this</i>
cela		<i>that</i>

Plural.

mas.	fem.	
ces	ces	<i>these</i> or <i>those</i>
ceux	celles	<i>these</i> or <i>those</i>
ceux-ci	celles-ci	<i>these</i>
ceux-là	celles-là	<i>those</i>

} these have no plural.

* m.	CE	before a consonant	CE livre	<i>this book</i>
	CE	before an <i>h</i> aspirated	CE héros	<i>that hero</i>
	CET	before a vowel	CET enfant	<i>this child</i>
	CET	before an <i>h</i> mute	CET homme	<i>that man</i>
f.	CETTE	before any feminine noun	CETTE femme	<i>that woman</i>

238. CE { when without a noun, } as { *qui est-ce ?* } who is it ?
 intimates a person or { *ce que je vous* } what I tell you
 thing spoken of, { *dis est vrai* } is true.

EXERCISE.

Nothing is so opposite to that true eloquence, ²the office
²*ne rien opposé véritable f. fonction f.*
¹(of which) is to ennoble (every thing), as the use of those refined
^{de} ²*ennoblir* ¹*tout que emploi m.* ²*fn*
 thoughts and hunting after those light, airy, (unsolid)
¹*pensée f.* art. *recherche f. de* ²*léger* ³*délié* ⁴*sans consistance*
 ideas, which, like a leaf of ²beaten ¹metal, ²(acquire)
¹*idée f.* *comme feuille f.* *battu m.* *prennent de*
³brightness ¹only ⁴by losing part of their solidity. This man
 art. *éclat m. ne que en perdant ** ** art. f.*
 has nothing in common with that hero. This long restrained
^{en commun} *héro.* ²*long-temps* ³*contenu*
 hatred (broke out), and was the unhappy source of those dreadful
¹*haine f.* *éclata fut malheureux f.* *terrible*
 events. It is a great pleasure to me. It was a great
événement m. *plaisir m. pour fut*
 pain to us.
déplaisir m. pour

OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

239. Indefinite pronouns are those which are of a vague and indeterminate nature. They are of four sorts :

FIRST CLASS.

240. *Those that are never joined to a substantive.*

ON	one	{ on aime à se flatter	{ one is apt to flatter one's self.
	a man	{ on n'est pas toujours maître de soi	{ a man is not always master of his own temper.
	a woman	{ on n'est pas toujours maîtresse d'aller où* l'on veut	{ it is not always in the power of a woman to go where she wishes.
	somebody	{ on frappe à la porte	{ somebody knocks at the door.
	people	{ on pense et * l'on dit tout haut	{ people think and say openly.
	they	{ on raconte diversement cette histoire	{ they relate that story differently.
	we	{ on acquiert l'expérience à ses dépens	{ we acquire experience at our own expense.
	you	{ on trouve partout des importuns	{ you will find troublesome people everywhere.

*Instead of { *et on* } it is better for euphony
 { *ou on* } to part these words
 { *si on* } with an *l'*

and
 *Instead of { *les habitudes qu'on contracte.*
 { *ce après quoi on court.*
 { *quoiqu'on croie.*
 { *un homme à qui on reproche.*

{ thus { *et l'on* } when the next word
 { *ou l'on* } does not begin with
 { *si l'on* } an *l*, as is seen by the examples.

{ say rather { *les habitudes que l'on contracte.*
 { *ce après quoi l'on court.*
 { *quoi que l'on croie.*
 { *un homme à qui l'on reproche.*

on	I	{ on prévient qu'on n'a point eu l'intention de, &c.	{ I beg to observe, that I had no intention to, &c.
	I	{ Quand on vous dit que * l'on compte sur vous	{ when I tell you that I depend upon you.
	they	{ si * l'on vous blâme et si * on le loue, on a tort	{ if they blame you and praise him, they are wrong.
Quelqu'un	{ one somebody some one	{ quelqu'un m'a dit, somebody told me.	
Quiconque	{ whoever whosoever	{ quiconque connaît les hommes, apprend à s'en défier, whoever knows mankind, learns to distrust them.	
Chacun	{ each every one	{ chacun s'en plaint, every one complains of him.	
Autrui	{ other people	{ n'enviez pas le bien d'autrui, do not covet the property of others.	
	{ others	{ ne faites pas à autrui ce que vous ne voudriez, pas qu'on vous fit, do not do to others what you would not have done to you.	
Personne	{ nobody no one	{ la fierté ne convient à personne, pride becomes nobody.	
Rien	{ nothing	{ rien ne lui plaît, nothing pleases him.	
	{ not any thing any thing	{ y a-t-il rien qui puisse lui plaire ? is there any thing that can please him ?	

EXERCISE.

If you (behave yourself) (in that manner), what will people say of you? *vous conduisez ainsi que * 2on 1dira-t*
 you? It (is thought) that this news is true. They write me word
*On croit nouvelle f. écrit **
 from Ispahan that thou hast left Persia, and art
Ispahan as quitté art. Perse f. que tu es
 now at Paris. One (cannot) read Telemachus without becoming
actuellement à ne peut lire Télémaque sans devenir
 better: we there find (every where) a mild philosophy, *2noble*
meilleur: on y trouve partout doux f. des
³and ⁴elevated ¹sentiments: we there find in every line the effu-
élévé y voit à chaque ligne épan-
 sions of a noble soul, and we admire precepts calculated to
chément m. beau f. des précepte propre
 effect the happiness of the world.
faire bonheur m. monde m.

SECOND CLASS.

241. *Those which are always joined to a substantive.

Quelque	{ some	{ si cela était vrai, quelqu' historien en aurait parlé, if that were true, some historian would have mentioned it.
Chaque	{ each, every	{ à chaque jour suffit sa peine, the trouble of each day is sufficient of itself.

<i>Quelconque</i>	{ whoever whatever	{ <i>il n'y a raison quelconque qui puisse l'y obliger</i> , no reason whatever can oblige him to it.
<i>Certain</i> , m. s.	{ certain some	{ <i>certain homme</i> , a certain man. <i>certaines nouvelles</i> , some news.
<i>Certaine</i> , f. s.		
<i>Certains</i> , m. pl.		
<i>Certaines</i> , f. pl.		
<i>Un</i> , m. une, f.	{ a, an	{ <i>j'ai vu un homme</i> , I saw a man; <i>prenez une orange</i> , take an orange.

THIRD CLASS.

242. *Those which are sometimes joined to a substantive and sometimes not.*

<i>Nul</i> , m. s.	{ no, none	{ <i>nulle raison ne peut le convaincre</i> , no reason can convince him. <i>nul d'eux ne l'a rencontré</i> , not one of them has met him.
<i>Nulle</i> , f. s.		
<i>Nuls</i> , m. pl.		
<i>Nulles</i> , f. pl.		
<i>Pas un</i> , m. s.	{ no, not one	{ <i>il n'y a pas une erreur dans cet ouvrage</i> , there is no error in that work. <i>pas un ne le dit</i> , not one says so.
<i>Pas une</i> , f. s.		
<i>Aucun</i> , m. s.	{ no, none.	{ <i>je ne connais aucun de vos juges</i> , I know none of your judges. <i>il n'a fait aucune difficulté</i> , he has made no difficulty.
<i>Aucune</i> , f. s.		
<i>Aucuns</i> , m. pl.		
<i>Aucunes</i> , f. pl.		
<i>Autre</i> , m. f. s.	{ other	{ <i>servez-vous d'une autre expression</i> , make use of another expression. <i>je vous prenais pour un autre</i> , I took you for another.
<i>Autres</i> , m. f. pl.		
<i>Même</i> , m. f. s.	{ same	{ <i>c'est le même homme que je vis hier</i> , he is the same man I saw yesterday. <i>cet homme n'est plus le même</i> , that man is no longer the same.
<i>Mêmes</i> , m. f. pl.		
<i>Tel</i> , m. s.	{ such	{ <i>il tint à peu près un tel discours</i> , he delivered nearly such a discourse. <i>je ne vis jamais rien de tel</i> , I never saw any thing like it.
<i>Telle</i> , f. s.		
<i>Tels</i> , m. pl.	{ like	{ <i>il est arrivé plusieurs vaisseaux</i> , several vessels are arrived. <i>il ne faut pas que plusieurs pâtissent pour un seul</i> , many must not suffer for one.
<i>Telles</i> , f. pl.		
<i>Plusieurs</i> , indeclinable	{ several	{ <i>tous les êtres créés</i> , all created beings. <i>tout disparaît devant Dieu</i> , every thing vanishes before God.
	{ many	
<i>Tout</i> , m. s.	{ all every every thing	
<i>Toute</i> , f. s.		
<i>Tous</i> , m. pl.		
<i>Toutes</i> , f. pl.		

FOURTH CLASS.

243. *Of those which are followed by QUE.*

<i>Qui que</i>	{ whoever	{ <i>qui que tu sois</i> , whoever thou mayest be. <i>qui que ce soit</i> , whoever it may be.
----------------	-----------	---

<i>Quoi que</i>	{ whatever	{ <i>quoi que ce soit</i> , whatever it may be. <i>quoi que vous disiez</i> , whatever you may say.
<i>Quel que</i>	{ whoever { whatever	{ <i>quel que soit cet homme</i> , whoever that man may be. <i>quel que soit votre courage</i> , whatever your courage may be.
<i>Tel que</i>	{ such as	{ <i>cette étoffe est telle que vous la voulez</i> , this stuff is such as you wish for.
<i>Quelque—que</i>	{ whatever { however	{ <i>quelque raison que vous donniez</i> , whatever reason you may give. <i>quelque puissant que vous soyez</i> , however powerful you may be.
<i>Tout—que</i>	{ however	{ <i>tout savant qu'il est</i> , however learned he may be.

CHAPTER V.

OF THE VERBS.

244. HERE, instead of adopting Lévizac's plan about the arrangement of the different kinds of verbs—that is, instead of scattering them in different parts of the Grammar—I have placed them all at the end of it.

The arrangement and division or classification of the verbs adopted by Lévizac I know, by long experience, is far from being advantageous to scholars; and if I have adopted a different arrangement, &c., it is because I have been convinced in the course of my teaching that the verbs in Lévizac's own Grammar are not laid down at sufficient length to make plain to scholars the difference and the relation of the French and English verbs.

N. B. At the beginning of each exercise on the verbs, I have indicated the page of the particular verb on which each exercise is given; and in order to facilitate the finding out of the verbs, the part that contains every thing about them is of a different color from that of the rest of the Grammar.

A thorough knowledge of the French verbs is one-third of the acquisition of the French language, and should of course be better explained and better learned than is generally done.

NOTE.—The verb *avoir*, to have, must of course be thoroughly learned before the following exercises are written.

EXERCISES ON *AVOIR*, TO HAVE—VERBS, PAGE 10.

245. In the following exercises, the substantive being taken in a participative sense, it will be necessary to use the article according to the direction given, page 45, art. 122.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.—I have books. Thou hast friends. He has honesty.
livre. *ami.* *honnêteté f.*
 She has sweetness. We have credit. You have riches. They have
douceur f. *m.* *richesse pl. m.*
 virtues. They have modesty.
vertu. f. f.

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—I have had pleasure. Thou hast had gold.
plaisir m. or m.
 He has had patience. She has had beauty. We have had honours.
f. f. honneur.
 You have had friendship. They have had sentiments. They have had
amitié f. m. f.
 sensibility.
f.

IMPERFECT.—I had ambition. Thou hadst wealth. He had sincerity.
f. bien m. f.
 She had graces. We had oranges. You had pears. They had apples.
poire. m. pomme
 They had lemons.
f. citron.

PLUPERFECT.—I had had apricots. Thou hadst had nectarines. He
abricot. brugnon.
 had had walnuts. She had had hazel-nuts. We had had chestnuts. You
noix. noisette. châtaigne.
 had had figs. They had had medlars. They had had filberts.
figue. m. nêfle. f. aveline.

PRETERIT DEFINITE.—I had plums. Thou hadst cherries. He had
prune. cerise.
 strawberries. She had pineapples. We had almonds. You had cur-
fraise. ananas. amande. gro-
 rants. They had raspberries. They had grapes.
seille. m. framboise. f. raisin.

246. In the following exercises, the addition of an adjective, after the substantive, will make no change in the remark on the preceding exercise.

PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—I had had ²very ¹black ¹ink. Thou hadst had
fort noir encre f.
²honest ¹proceedings. She had had ²uncommon ¹graces. We had had
honnête procédé. rare
²very ³ripe ¹grapes. You had had ²exquisite ¹melons. They had had
mûr exquis m.
²ready ¹money.
comptant argent m.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—I shall have ²studious ¹pupils. Thou wilt have
appliqué élève m.
²horrid ¹pains. He will have ²ridiculous ¹ideas. We shall have
horrible peine f. ridicule idée f.
²useless ¹cares. You will have ²true ³and ⁴real ¹pleasures. They will
inutile soin m. réel m.
 have ²poignant ¹griefs.
cuisant chagrin m.

247. But if the adjective precedes the substantive, then *de* before an adjective beginning with a consonant or an *h* aspirated, and *d'* before an adjective beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute, only is to be used.

FUTURE ANTERIOR.—I shall have had good paper. Thou wilt have
papier m.
 had excellent fruit. She will have had charming flowers. We shall have
m. pl. charmant fleurs f.

had good pens. You will have had large buildings. They will
plume f. grand bâtiment m.
 have had fine clothes.
superbe habit m.

PRESENT OF THE CONDITIONAL.—I should have fine engravings. Thou
gravure f.
 shouldst have pretty playthings. He should have immense treasures.
joli joujou m. trésor m.
 We should have beautiful pictures. You would have pretty houses.
tableau m. f.
 They should have long conversations.
f.

248. After words expressing quantity, such as *beaucoup*, a great deal, great many; *peu*, little, few; *plus*, more; *moins*, less; *trop*, too much, too many, &c., *de* and *d'* are used as directed art. 247.

249. After *bien*, much, many, *du, de la, de l', des*, are used as directed page 45, art. 122.

CONDITIONAL PAST.—I should have had a great deal of trouble. Thou
peine f.
 wouldst have had more pleasure. He would have had (a vast deal) of
infiniment
 knowledge. We should have had more opportunities of succeeding.
connaissance f. pl. occasion f. réussir.
 You would ²certainly ¹have ³had many advantages over him.
certainement beaucoup avantage sur lui.
 They would have had many enemies.
bien ennemi.

250. Observe that when the verb is followed by several substantives, the proper article and preposition must be repeated before each.

IMPERATIVE.—Have complaisance, attention, and politeness. Let him
f. égard m. pl. politesse f.
 have modesty, and ²more ³correct ¹ideas. Let her have more decency.
f. juste décence.
 Let us have courage and firmness. Have gravy soup, nice
m. fermeté f. un ²gras ¹soupe f. bon
 (roast beef), and a pudding. Let them have ale, rum, and punch.
rosbif m. pouding m. m. aile f. rum m. ponche m.
 Let them have manners and conduct.
f. mœurs f. conduite f.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

251. The subjunctive, in French, is always preceded by the conjunction *que*, that, which is often suppressed in English.

PRESENT.—That I may have many friends. That thou mayest have
beaucoup
 good reasons to give him. That he may have ²elevated ¹sentiments.
donner lui. élevé m.
 That we may have courage and magnanimity. That you may have
bravoure f. f.
²delightful ¹landscapes, and beautiful (sea-pieces). That they may
délicieux paysage m. marine f. pl.
 have more condescension and ²more ³prepossessing ¹manners.
condescendance prévenant manière f.

PRETERIT.—That I may have had wine, beer, and cider. That
 thou may'st have had a good horse, and a fine dog. That he may have
 had ^{vin m. bière f. cidre m.} 2enlightened ^{cheval chien.} 1judges. That we may have had snow, rain, and
 wind. That you may have had a great (dining-room), a beautiful
 (drawing-room), a pretty (dressing-room), and a charming
 meadows, and 2delightful 1groves.
éclairé juge. neige f. pluie f.
vent m. salle à manger f. superbe
salon m. joli cabinet de toilette m. charmant
(bed-room). That they may have had vast possessions, fine
chambre à coucher f. vaste f.
prairie f. délicieux bois m.

IMPERFECT.—That I might have a sword, musket, and pistols.
 That thou might'st have a knife, a spoon, and a fork. That
 we might have a penknife, pencils, and good copies. That he might
 have a coach, a good house, and furniture, simple but elegant.
 That you might have health and great respect. That they might
 have 2fruitful 1lands.
épée f. fusil, m. pistolet m.
couteau m. cuillère f. fourchette f.
canif m. pinceau m. modèle m.
carrosse m. f. meuble m. pl. mais
santé f. un considération f.
fertile terre f.

PLUPERFECT.—That I might have had friendship. That thou might'st
 have had gloves, boots, and horses. That he might have had 2zealous
 3and 4faithful 1servants. That we might have had fine clothes, 2precious
 1jewels, and 2magnificent 1furniture. That you might have had 2warm
 1friends. That they might have had greatness of soul and pity.
amitié f.
gant m. botte f. cheval m. zélé
fidèle domestique m.
bijou m. magnifique m. pl. chaud
grandeur f. pitié f.

Sentences on the same Verb, with a Negative.

252. In the following sentences, the preposition *de* or *d'* is put before the substantive, according as it begins with a consonant, an *h* aspirated, a vowel, or an *h* mute (see art. 247); *ne* is put between the personal pronoun and the verb, and *pas* or *point* after the verb in the simple tenses, and between the verb and the participle in the compound tenses; as,

Je n'ai pas de livres,	<i>I have no books.</i>
Tu n'avais pas de bien,	<i>Thou hadst no wealth.</i>
Elle n'eut pas d'honnêteté,	<i>She had no honesty.</i>
Nous n'avons pas eu d'amitié,	<i>We have had no friendship.</i>
Vous n'aviez pas eu de puissans amis,	<i>You had not had powerful friends.</i>
Ils n'auront pas d'ennemis redoutables,	<i>They will not have formidable enemies.</i>

EXERCISE—See VERBS, page 13.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.—I have no ²precious ¹medals. We have no ²useless
médaille f. *inutile*
¹things. PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—I have had no constancy. We have
chose f. *f.*
 had no generosity. IMPERFECT.—Thou hadst not a beautiful park.
f. *parc m.*
 You had no good cucumbers. PLUPERFECT.—He had had no fine
concombre m.
 houses. They had had no money. PRETERIT DEFINITE.—He had not
argent m.
 a skilful gardener. They had no carpets. PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—
habile jardinier m. *tapis m.*
 Thou hadst had no complaisance. You had had no great talents.
f. *m.*
 FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—I shall have no great business. We shall have
affaire f. pl.
 no ²uncommon ¹prints. FUTURE ANTERIOR.—Thou shalt have had
rare estampe f.
 no consolation. You shall not have had ²quiet ¹days.
f. *tranquille m.*

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.—He should not have bad pictures. They should
mauvais tableau m.
 have no leisure. PAST.—I should have had no griefs. We should
loisir m. *chagrin m.*
 have had no troubles.
peine f.

IMPERATIVE.

Have no impatience. Let him not have ²absurd ¹ideas. Let us not
sing. *absurde f.*
 have ²dangerous ¹connexions. Have no such whims. Let them not
liaison f. *caprice m.*
 have ³so ⁴whimsical ¹a ²project.
bizarre projet m.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.—That I may have no protectors. That we may have no
m.
 success. PRETERIT.—That he may have had no perseverance. That
succès m. *f.*
 they may have had no valour. IMPERFECT.—That thou might'st have
bravoure f.
 no principles of taste. That you might not have a just
principe m. *goût m.* *juste*
 reward. PLUPERFECT.—That I might have had no good advice.
récompense f. *avis m. pl.*
 That we might have had no news.
nouvelle f. pl.

The Verb Avoir, interrogatively.

253. In interrogations, the personal pronoun, accompanied by a hyphen (-), is placed after the verb in the simple tenses, and between the verb and the participle in the compound tenses; and when the third person singular of the verb ends with a vowel, for euphony a *t* is put between it and the pronoun, preceded and followed by a hyphen; thus, (-).

254. Mind what has been said page 45, art. 122.

Ai-je des livres ?	<i>Have I books ?</i>
Avais-tu du bien ?	<i>Hadst thou wealth ?</i>
Eut-elle de l'honnêteté ?	<i>Had she honesty ?</i>
Avons-nous eu de bons conseils ?	<i>Have we had good advice ?</i>
Aviez-vous eu de la prudence ?	<i>Had you had prudence ?</i>
Aura-t-il de l'argent ?	<i>Will he have money ?</i>
Aura-t-elle eu des protecteurs ?	<i>Will she have had protectors ?</i>

EXERCISE.—See Verbs, page 16.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.—Hast thou needles ?	Have you ² coloured ¹ maps ?
<i>aiguille f.</i>	<i>enluminé carte f.</i>
PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—Have I had pens ?	Have we had ² convenient
<i>plume f.</i>	<i>commode</i>
¹ houses ? IMPERFECT.—Had she silk ?	Had they large buildings ?
<i>soie f.</i>	<i>grand bâtiment m.</i>
PLUPERFECT.—Had she had pins ?	Had they had ² extensive ¹ fields ?
<i>épingles f.</i>	<i>spacieux champ m.</i>
PRETERIT DEFINITE.—Had he good shoes ?	Had they (looking-glasses) ?
<i>soulier m.</i>	<i>f. miroir m.</i>
PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—Hadst thou had lace ?	Had you had ² odoriferous
<i>dentelle f.</i>	<i>odoriférant</i>
shrubs ? FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—Shall I have gold, silver, and pla-	
<i>arbuste m.</i>	<i>m. argent m. pla-</i>
tina ? Shall we have (good luck) ? FUTURE ANTERIOR.—Will she	
<i>tine m.</i>	<i>bonheur m.</i>
have had joy ? Will they have had company ?	
<i>joie ?</i>	<i>compagnie f.</i>

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.—Shouldst thou have happy moments ?	Should you have
<i>heureux m.</i>	
good wine and ² nice ¹ cordials ?	PAST.—Should he have had
<i>vin m.</i>	<i>fin liqueur f.</i>
uncommon fruits ?	Should they have had rich clothes ?
<i>rare m.</i>	

The Verb Avoir, interrogatively and negatively.

255. In interrogative and negative sentences, observe the different rules (art. 245, 246, 247, 248, 249), and always place *ne* at the beginning of sentences, and *pas* or *point* after the personal pronoun, whether in the simple or compound tenses.

N'ai-je pas des livres ?	<i>Have I no books ?</i>
N'avais-tu pas des amis ?	<i>Hadst thou no friends ?</i>

N'a-t-elle pas beaucoup d'esprit ?	<i>Has she not a great deal of wit ?</i>
N'avons-nous pas eu de bons procédés ?	<i>Have we not acted fairly ?</i>
N'aviez-vous pas eu de nouvelles robes ?	<i>Had you not had new gowns ?</i>
N'aura-t-il pas des ressources ?	<i>Will he have no resources ?</i>
N'auront-elles pas eu des consolations ?	<i>Will they have had no consolations ?</i>

EXERCISE.—See Verbs, page 18.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.—Hast thou no diamonds ? Have you no ²indulgent ¹parents ?
diamant m. m.

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—Hast thou not had contempt and even hatred
mépris m. même haine f.
 for that man ? Have you not had better examples ? IMPERFECT.—
pour meilleur exemple m.

Had he not a ²rigid ¹censor ? Had they not ²inattentive ¹children ?
sévère censeur m. enfant m.

PLUPERFECT.—Had I not had other views ? Had we not had amethysts,
autre vue ? f. améthyste f.

rubies, and topazes ? PRETERIT DEFINITE.—Had I no great wrongs ?
rubis m. topaze f. tort m.

Had we not ²perfidious ¹friends ? PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—Had he not
perfide

used ²far-fetched ¹expressions ? Had they not excellent models ?
eu très-recherché f. modèle m.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—Wilt thou not lead a ²more ³regular ¹life ? Will
avoir réglé conduite f. ?

you not have ²fashionable ¹gowns ? FUTURE ANTERIOR.—Shall I have
à la mode robe f.

had no sweetmeats ? Shall we not have had a good preacher ?
confiture f. ? prédicateur m.

CONDITIONAL

PRESENT.—Should she not have ²clear ³and ⁴just ¹ideas ? Would
clair

they not have ²more ³extensive ¹knowledge ? PAST.—Should she
étendu connaissances f. pl.

have had no patience ? Should they have had no rectitude ?
f. droiture f. ?

NOTE.—The verb *être*, to be, must of course be thoroughly learned before the following exercises are written.

EXERCISES ON ETRE, TO BE.—See Verbs, page 24.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.—I am very glad to see you. Art thou not pleased with
aise de voir satisfait de

that book ? Is she really amiable ? We are happy. Are you
véritablement heureux.

not too condescending ? *Are your friends still in London ?
complaisant ? encore à Londres ?

* About such sentences, see Verbs, page 8, art. 63.

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—Have I not been constant? Hast thou always been steady? She has been faithful. Have we been firm and courageous? *posé?* *fidèle.* *ferme*
 You have been charitable. Have those men always been good and benevolent?
bienfaisant?

IMPERFECT.—I was too busy to see you. Wast not thou troublesome? Was this girl idle? Were we not too untractable? You *importun?* *fille paresseux?* *indocile?*
 were not ²quiet ¹enough. They were vain, frivolous, and coquettish.
tranquille assez. *f.* *frivole coquette.*

PLUPERFECT.—I had hitherto been very indifferent. Hadst thou not been too imprudent? Had his wife been sufficiently modest and reserved? We had not yet been sufficiently attentive. Had you *réserve?* *épouse assez* *assez*
 been envious and jealous? They had not been grateful.
jaloux? *encore appliqué.* *reconnaissant.*

PRETERIT DEFINITE.—Perhaps I was not sufficiently prudent. Wast thou ²discreet ¹enough on that occasion? Was not that princess too proud? We were very unhappy. Were you not too hasty? They were not much satisfied.
Peut-être que assez
discret en f. *princesse fier?* *prompt?*
fort satisfait.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—To-morrow I shall be (at home) till (twelve o'clock.) Wilt thou always be restless, brutal, and sour?
Demain chez-moi jusqu'à midi
 Will your father be (at home) this evening? Shall we not be more diligent? Will you ³always ²then ¹be capricious, obstinate, and particular? Will not your scholars be troublesome?
**Monsieur chez-lui soir m.* *donc quineux, opiniâtre,*
pointilleux? *écolier incommode?*

FUTURE ANTERIOR.—Shall I not have been too severe? Thou wilt have been too distrustful. Will not his sister have been whimsical and capricious? Shall we not have been ²eager ¹enough? Will you not have been inconsiderate? Will not the judges have been just?
défiant. *sœur fantasque*
empresé
indiscret? *juge*

* 255. It is customary, through respect, in speaking of a person's relations, to prefix to the name Mr., Mrs., or Miss: thus we say, *Monsieur votre père; Monsieur votre frère; Madame votre mère; Mademoiselle votre sœur, &c.*

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.—I would not be so rash. Would'st thou
téméraire.
 be as consistent in thy behaviour as in thy language? Would not
conséquent dans conduite f. propos m. pl.
 his son be ready in time? Should we be always incorrigible? You would
filis prêt à
 not be ²disinterested enough. Would not those ladies be always virtuous?
désintéressé dame vertueux?

PAST.—(Had it not been for) your instructions, I should have been
Sans conseil m.
 proud and haughty. Would'st thou not have been malicious and
dédaigneux hautain. malin
 sarcastic? Would that man have been so destitute of common sense?
ricaneur? tellement dépourvu bon sens?
 Certainly we should not have been so ridiculous. Would you not have been
si ridicule.
 more kind and indulgent? They would not have been so ungentle
doux plus complaisant? malhonnête.

IMPERATIVE.—Be liberal. Do not be so lavish. Let us be equi-
sing. sing. prodigue.
 table, humane, and prudent. Let us not be covetous. Be economical
humain avide. pl. économe
 and temperate. Do not be thoughtless.
sobre. pl. léger.

257. As the *third person* singular and plural of the imperative mood belong rather to the subjunctive, they are there exemplified.

258. Before the *subjunctive* can form a complete sense, it must be preceded by another verb. For the sake of brevity, therefore, complete sentences will only be given on the present tense. This remark applies alike to the four conjugations.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.—Is it possible I can be so credulous? They wish
† que crétule On désire
 thou may'st be more modest. Is it possible she can be so obstinate?
modeste. entêté?
 They wish us to be more assiduous. It is not expected you should be
*assidu. On * s'attend*
 timid. It is feared they may be guilty.
*timide. On * craint ne coupable.*

PRETERIT.—That I should have been so hasty and impatient. That
emporté si
 thou should'st have been so (puffed up) with pride. That she should have
bouffi de
 been so fickle. That we should have been so (headstrong). That you should
volage. têt.
 have been so avaricious. That they should have been so unreasonable.
avare. déraisonnable.

259. Observe, the verb *être* serves as an auxiliary to conjugate the passive verbs through all their tenses, the compound tenses of the pronominal verbs, and those of about fifty neuter verbs. See VERBS, p. 162.

IMPERFECT.—That I should not be humane and generous. That thou
humain
 might'st be more careful. That she might not be so arrogant. That
soigneux.
 we might be victorious. That you might not be so stern. That they
sévère.
 might not be so cruel.

PLUPERFECT.—That I might have been more studious. That thou
 might'st have been more circumspect. That she might have been more
circonspect.
 attentive to her duty. That we might have been less addicted to
devoir m. pl. *livré à*
 pleasure. That you might have been more assiduous and more
 art. m. pl. *assidu* *plus*
 grateful. That they might have been less daring.
reconnaissant. *hardi.*

First Conjugation in ER.

See VERBS, page 34 and following, and 48 and following.

NOTE.—The verb *parler*, to speak, must of course be thoroughly learned before the following exercises are written.

260. OBSERVE, that in the following exercises the French verbs, which are found under the English verbs, are in the infinitive present; it is for the student to put them in the tenses required by the meaning of the English sentences.

261. Adverbs, with few exceptions, must be placed after the verb in simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle in compound tenses, when this adverb is only a single word.

EXERCISES ON THE FIRST CONJUGATION IN ER.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.—I willingly give that plaything to your sister.
volontiers donner joujou m.
 Do I prefer pleasure to my duty? Dost thou not irritate thy
préférer art. m. devoir m. irriter
 enemies? He does not propose ²salutary ¹advice to his friends. We
ennemi? proposer un avis m.
 sincerely love peace and tranquillity. We do not neglect
sincèrement art. paix f. art. f. ne négliger
 (any thing) to ²please ¹you. Do you not admire the beauty of that
rien pour plaire admirer f.
 landscape? Do not your parents comfort the afflicted? They
paysage m. consoler affligé m. pl.
 (make use of) all means to succeed.
employer art. moyen m. pl. pour réussir. /

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—I have (given up) my ²favourite ¹horse to my
céder favori cheval
 cousin. Hast thou not exchanged watches with my sister? Has the
changer de montre

tutor given fine engravings to his pupil? We have spoken
précepteur gravure f. pupille m.
 (a long while) of your adventure. Have you not insisted (too much)
long-temps aventure f. insisté trop
 upon that point? Have your aunts prepared their ²ball ¹dresses?
sur m. tante préparer de bal habit m.

IMPERFECT.—I unceasingly thought of my misfortunes. Didst thou
sans cesse penser à malheur m.
 dread his presence and firmness? He exhibited in his person all
redoubter f. sa fermeté? retracer en f.
 the virtues of his ancestors. Did not that woman accuse her friend of
f. ancêtre. accuser amie f.
 levity? We did not protect that bad man. You despised a
légèreté f. protéger méchant mépriser
²vain ¹erudition. Did the Romans disdain ³so ⁴weak ¹an ²enemy?
f. Romain dédaigner faible m.
 The bees were there sucking the cups of the flowers.
abeille y sucer calice m. fleur.

PLUPERFECT.—I had drained an ²unwholesome ¹marsh. Had'st
dessécher mal sain marais m.
 thou not married a man rich, but unluckily without education?
épouser malheureusement sans f.
 Had his father rejected these ²advantageous ¹offers? We had not
rejeter avantageux offre f.
 long listened to the singing of the birds. Had you already
*long-temps écouter * chant m. oiseau m. déjà*
 studied geography and history? Had not his friends procured
étudier art. f. art. h. histoire f. procurer
 him a troop of cavalry?
lui compagnie f. cavalerie?

PRETERIT DEFINITE.—Did I not gladly give peaches and flowers
avec plaisir pêche f. fleur f.
 to my neighbours? Thou forgottest an ²essential ¹circumstance. Did
voisin m. oublier essentiel circonstance f.
 not your cousin relate that charming history with (a great deal) of
raconter charmant avec beaucoup
 grace? He lightly judged of my intentions. Did we not shew
légèrement juger montrer
 courage, constancy, and firmness? Did you visit the grotto and the
m. f. f. visiter grotte f.
 grove? They did not generously forgive their enemies.
bois m. généreusement pardonner à

PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—I had soon wasted my money and exhausted
bientôt manger argent m. épuiser
 my resources. Hadst thou (very soon) reinforced thy party? Had not
ressource f. vite renforcer parti m.
 Alexander soon surmounted all obstacles? We had not ²soon ¹enough
Alexandre surmonter tous art. m. tôt assez
 shut the shutters, and (let down) the curtains. Had you not quickly
fermer volet baisser rideau. promptement
 dined? In (the twinkling) of an eye, they had dispersed the mob.
*dîner? Dans un clin * œil, disperser populace f.*

262. There is a fourth preterit, called *preterit anterior indefinite*, which is used instead of the preterit anterior, when speaking of a time not entirely elapsed; as *j'ai eu achevé mon ouvrage ce matin, cette semaine, &c.*, and not *j'eus achevé*: as it is found in every conjugation, I shall insert it here: *j'ai eu parlé, tu as eu parlé, il a eu parlé, nous avons eu parlé, vous avez eu parlé, ils ont eu parlé*, they had spoken.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—I shall relieve the poor. Wilt thou faithfully keep that secret? Will he consult ^{soulager} ^{pauvre m. pl.} ^{fidèle-} ^{ment garder m.} ^{consulter éclairé juge?} ²enlightened ¹judges? He will support you with all his credit. We shall not prefer pleasure ^{appuyer de m.} ^{préférer art. m.} to glory, and riches to honor. ¹By ²such ^{2a} ⁴conduct, art. f. art. art. ^{tel conduite f.} will you not afflict your father and mother? Will they astonish their hearers? ^{affliger votre étonner}
auditeur m.

FUTURE ANTERIOR.—I shall soon have finished this book. By thy submission, wilt thou not have appeased his anger? Will the king have triumphed over his enemies? ²We ¹perhaps shall not have rewarded enough the merit of this ²good ¹man. Will you not have flown to his assistance? Will our servants have brought money?
soumission f. appaiser colère f. triompher de récompenser
mérite m. de bien voler
secours m. domestique m. apporter argent?

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.—Should I form conjectures without number? Thou would'st not avoid ²so ²great ^{1a} ⁴danger. Would not his attorney (clear up) that business? We would (drive away) the importunate. Would you not discover that ²atrocious ¹plot? They would not unravel the clue of that intrigue.
débrouiller affaire f. chasser importun m. pl. dévoiler atroce complot m.
démêler fil m. f.

PAST.—I should have liked hunting, fishing, and the country. Would'st thou not have played? Would he not have bowed to the company? Would we ³gladly ¹have ²praised his pride and incivility! You would have awakened (every body.) Would those merchants have paid their debts?
aimer art. chasse f. art. pêche f. cam- payer dette f.
pagne f. jouer? saluer
compagnie f. avec plaisir louer orgueil m.
sa malhonnêteté f. éveiller tout le monde

IMPERATIVE.—In all thy actions, consult the light of reason. Never yield to the violence of thy passions. Let us love justice, peace, and virtue. Let us not cease to work. Sacrifice
Dans f. consulter lumière art. te abandonner f. art. art. f. art. f. cesser de travailler. Sacrifier

your own interest to the ²public ¹good. Do not omit such
 * *intérêt* m. pl. *bien* *négliger des*
²useful ³and ⁴interesting ¹details.
si utile si intéressant m.

263. The second person singular of the imperative of this conjugation, and likewise of some verbs of the second ending in *vrir*, *frir*, *lir*, take *s* after *e* before the word *y* and *en*: as, *portes-en à ton frère*, carry some to thy brother; *offres-en à ta sœur*, offer some to thy sister; *cueilles-en aussi pour toi*, gather some likewise for thyself; *apportes-y tes livres*, bring there thy books.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.—That I may not always listen to a ²severe
écouter *
¹censor of my defects. That thou should'st find real friends.
défaut m. *trouver vrai*
 That he would adorn his speeches with the graces of a ²pure ¹diction.
parer discours de f.
 That she would remain in her boudoir. That we should so hastily
rester m. légèrement
 condemn the world. That you may pout incessantly. That
condamner monde m. *bouder sans cesse.*
 they may work more willingly.
travailler plus volontiers.

PRETERIT.—That I may have caressed insolence and flattered
caresser art. f. *flatter*
 pride. That thou would'st have added nothing to that work.
art. ajouter ouvrage m.
 That he should have carried despair into the soul of his friend.
porter art. *désespoir* m. *dans ame*
 That we may have blamed ³so ⁴prudent ⁵and ⁶so ⁷wise ¹a ²conduct.
blâmer sage conduite f.
 That you may have exasperated ³so ⁴petulant ¹a ²character. That they
exaspérer caractère m.
 may not have (taken advantage) of the circumstances.
profiter circonstance.

IMPERFECT.—That I should not copy his example. That thou might'st
imiter exemple m.
 (give up) ²perfidious ¹friends. That he might inhabit a hut
abandonner perfide habiter chaumière f.
 instead of a palace. That we should fall at the feet of an ²ille-
au lieu palais m. *tomber pied* m. *illé-*
 gitimate ¹king. That you would respect the laws of your country.
gitime respecter loi f. *pays* m.
 That they would not speak (at random).
à tort et à travers.

PLUPERFECT.—That I should not have burnt that work. That thou
brûler m.
 might'st not have contemplated the beauties of the country. That he
contempler campagne.
 should have perfected his ²natural ¹qualities. That we might not
perfectionner naturel f.

have gained the victory. That you had enchanted the public. That
remporter f. *enchanter* m.
 they would have struck their enemies with fear.
frapper *de crainte*.

Second Conjugation in IR.

See VERBS, page 52 and following.

NOTE.—The verbs *finir*, to finish, page 54; *ouvrir*, to open, page 130; *sentir*, to feel, page 130; and *tenir*, to hold, page 132, must be thoroughly learned before the following exercises are written.

264. IMPORTANT DIRECTION.—Whenever the student has a French verb ending with IR to translate, the first thing he must do is to look for it among the verbs composing the list given page 162. If the verb looked for is not to be found in the above mentioned list, he must conjugate it on *finir*, to finish, page 54; and if it be found in the list, he will be directed on which verb to conjugate it.

EXERCISES.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.—I choose this picture. I feel all the unpleasantness
choisir *tableau* m. *désagrément* m.
 of your situation. Whence comest thou? Does he thus define
D'où *venir* *ainsi définir*
 that word? Does his mother (go out) so soon? Do we not (set off)
not m. *sortir* *tôt* *partir*
 for the country? Do you not pity his sorrows? Do you
campagne f. *compâtrer* à *mal* m.
 not (tell a lie)? They are finishing at this moment. They
mentir *finir* *dans* *art.* m.
 (act contrary) to your orders.
contrevenir *ordre*.

IMPERFECT.—I fortified his soul against the dangers of seduction.
prémunir *contre* *art.* f.
 I served my friends warmly. Did'st not thou amuse him with
servir *avec chaleur.* *entretenir* *de*
 fair promises? He complied (at last) with the wishes of his
beau promesse f. *consentir* *enfin* à *désir* m.
 family. Did we not frequently warn our friends of the bad
famille f. *fréquemment avertir*
 state of their affairs? Did we sleep then? Did you not belie
état *dormir alors?* *démentir*
 your character? Did not the enemies invade an immense country?
caractère m. *envahir* *pays* m.
 Did the wild beasts often (come out) from the bottom of their
sauvage bête f. *souvent* *sortir* *fond* m.
 mountains?
montagne?

PRETERIT.—I softened my father by my submission. I foresaw
fléchir *soumission* f. *pressentir*
 that terrible catastrophe. Thou did'st not (come again) as thou
revenir *comme* *le*

had'st promised. He did not succeed through thoughtlessness. Did
promis. réussir par étourderie.
 his daughter not (set out again) immediately? Did not Alexander sully
repartir sur le champ? ternir
 his glory by his pride? Did we (go out) of the city before him? We
sortir ville f. avant lui?
 never betrayed that ²important ¹secret. Did you not agree (to
trahir m. consentir de vous en
 trust) to me? They served their country with courage. Did the
rapporter moi? pays
 ancient philosophers enjoy great consideration?
philosophe m. jouir de un f.

FUTURE.—Shall I not obtain this of you? What will become
obtenir cela de Que devenir
 of thee if I forsake thee? Will he not embellish his (country-seat)?
** tu abandonner embellir maison de campagne?*
 He will not sleep quietly. Shall we consent to that ²ridiculous
tranquillement.
¹bargain? With time and patience you will compass your
marché m. Avec m. f. venir à bout de
 end. We shall not sully the splendor of our life by an ²unworthy
dessein m. éclat m. indigne
¹action. Will those men enrich their country by their industry?
enrichir pays industrie?
 Will not our friends offer us their assistance?
offrir secours?

CONDITIONAL.—I would open the door and the window. I should
porte f. fenêtre f.
 still cherish life. Would'st thou not interpose in that affair? Would
cherir art. intervenir
 my brother (set off again) without taking leave of us? You would
*repartir sans prendre * A. congé*
 not succeed (in injuring him) in the ²public ¹opinion. Could'st
*parvenir à nuire * A lui dans f.*
 thou soften that ²flinty ¹heart? Could they foresee their misfor-
attendrir de rocher pressentir mal-
 tune? Would men always (grow old) without growing wiser,
heur? art. vieillir sans devenir A.†
 if they reflected on the shortness of life?
réfléchir sur brièveté f. art.

IMPERATIVE.—Shudder with horror and terror. Support thy
Frémir de horreur de effroi m. Soutenir
 character in good and bad fortune. Do not obtain thy
art. dans art. mauvais f. ne parvenir à
 point but by means ²consistent with ¹delicacy. Let us
*fin f. pl. que par des moyens que la avoue * délicatesse.*

† The student must have before this time observed that, in the conjugation of the verbs, letters A, B, C. &c., have been put before the name of each tense, with a view to use these letters as references in the exercises. Here, for instance, *growing* is in the present participle; and as the French idiom requires the French verb *devenir* in the present of the infinitive, the letter A is put after *devenir* as a warning to the student.

feed the poor. Let us gain glory by our perseverance. Let
nourrir m. pl. *obtenir* art. f.
 us not divulge our secrets (to every body). Never submit to ³so
découvrir à tout le monde. *fléchir sous*
⁴unjust ¹a ²yoke. Do not maintain ³so ⁴absurd ¹an ²opinion. Do
joug m. *soutenir* *absurde*
 not (come upon us) again (in that unexpected manner.)
ne survenir plus ainsi à l'improviste.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.—That I may never blemish my reputation.

flétrir f.
 That I may (be beforehand) with ²such ³dangerous ¹enemies. (I will
prévenir de si je ne veux
 not have thee) (go out) this morning. That he may not enjoy his
pas que tu sortir Q. *matin* m. *jouir de*
 glory. That he may not obtain his ends. That we may become
f. parvenir à fin f. devenir
 just, honest, and virtuous. That you may punish the guilty. That
honnête vertueux. coupable pl.
 you may return covered with laurels. That they may establish ²wise
revenir couvert de laurier m. *établir*
³and ⁴just ¹laws. That they may agree about the conditions.
convenir de

IMPERFECT.—That I might stun the whole neighbourhood. That

étourdir tout voisinage m.
 I might not (bring about) my designs. That thou would'st
venir à bout de projet m.
 (tell a wilful lie). That he might not bear his disgrace with
mentir de dessein prémédité. soutenir f.
 firmness. That we might disobey the laws. That we should
fermeté. désobéir à
 belong to that great king. That you might renounce your errors
appartenir revenir de
 and prejudices. That they might weaken the force of their
de vos préjugé. affaiblir f.
 reasons. That they might hold ²the ³most ⁴absurd ¹ideas.
raisonnement. tenir aux

Third Conjugation in OIR.

See VERBS, page 64 and following.

EXERCISES ON THE VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJ. IN OIR.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.—I perceive the summit of the Alps covered

apercevoir sommet Alpes f.
 with ²perpetual ¹snow. What gratitude dost thou not owe
de éternel neige f. pl. *reconnaissance* f. *devoir*
 to her ¹who ³(has discharged) ⁵(the duty of a mother) ⁴(to thee)
celle remplir près de toi
²(in thy infancy)! Does your scholar understand well that rule which
écolier concevoir bien règle f. *
 is so simple? We do not owe a large sum. Do you not perceive the
 * *devoir gros somme* f.

90 EXERCISES ON THE VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJ. IN OIR.

snare? ⁵Ought ²firm ³and ⁴courageous ¹men to yield to
*piège m. Devoir des hommes * céder art.*
 circumstances?
circonstance?

IMPERFECT.—Did I not receive him kindly? Did he see
le avec amitié? apercevoir
 the castle from such a distance? We did not receive our income.
*château si * loin? percevoir revenu m. pl.*
 Did you not receive great civilities? Did those tyrants conceive
de honnêteté f. tyran concevoir
 all the blackness of their crimes?
noirceur f.

PRETERIT.—I perceived him walking (by moon light).
le qui se promenait au clair de la lune.
 Did the queen conceive a great esteem for that ²honest ¹man. Did we
estime f. de bien
 not immediately perceive the snare? You did not receive his letters (in
lettres à
 time). Did the ministers conceive the depth of his plan.
temps. ministre profondeur f. m.

FUTURE.—Shall I receive visits to-day? He will not discover
visite aujourd'hui?
 the spire of his village. We shall conceive ²well-²founded ¹hopes.
clocher m. m. fondé espérance f.
 Will you never conceive ³so ⁴luminous ¹a ²principle? Shall men
art.
 always owe their misfortunes to their faults?
malheur faute?

CONDITIONAL.—Should I receive the offers of my enemy? ⁴Should ¹a
offre Devoir
³wise ²man ⁶thus ⁵(give himself up) to despair? Should we con-
s'abandonner art. désespoir m.
 ceive ²such ³abstract ¹ideas? You would easily perceive ²so ⁴gross ¹a
si abstrait des idées? grossier
²trick. Would not my sisters receive their friend with tenderness?
ruse f. tendresse f.?

IMPERATIVE.—Conceive the horror of his situation. Do not receive
 that mark of confidence with indifference. Let us entertain a
*marque f. confiance concevoir **
 horror of vice. Let us never owe (any thing). Receive
de le horreur pour art. m. rien.
 his advice with respect and gratitude. Receive no more of his letters.
avis lettre f.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.—That I may receive consolations. That he
 should not conceive a thought so well explained. That we may always
pensée f. développé.
 receive false news. That you may not perceive the danger of
nouvelle f. pl. art

books which are contrary to good morals. That they may not
 * * *contre* * art. *mœurs* f.

collect ²unjust ¹taxes.
percevoir injuste f.

IMPERFECT.—That I might conceive ²such ¹a ³project. That he might
tel *projet* m.

perceive the ²secret ¹designs † of the enemy's general. That we should not
caché dessein *

receive every body with civility. That you could not conceive the
honnêteté.

depth of this book. That they might not perceive the masts
profondeur f. *mât* m.

of the ship.

vaisseau m.

Fourth Conjugation in RE.

See VERBS, page 76 and following.

NOTE.—The verbs *vendre*, to sell, page 78; *joindre*, to join, page 148; *paraître*, to appear, page 152; *plaire*, to please, page 153; and *réduire*, to reduce, page 156, must be thoroughly learned before the following exercises are written.

265. IMPORTANT DIRECTION.—Whenever the student has a French verb ending with RE to translate, the first thing he must do is to look for it among the verbs composing the list given page 162. If the verb looked for is not to be found in the above mentioned list, he must conjugate it on *vendre*, to sell, page 78; and if it is found in the list, he will be directed on which verb to conjugate it.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.—I know his ²fiery ³and ⁴impetuous ¹tem-
connaître bouillant *carac-*
 per. I wait his return with impatience. Does he fear
rière m. *attendre retour* *craindre* art.
 death? Does not virtue please every body? We do not force you
 f. *plaire à* *contraindre*
 to adopt this opinion. We suppress for the present several ²interesting
de adopter f. *taire* m. *intéressant*
¹circumstances. Do you not confound these notions one with
 f. *confondre* art. art.
 another? You seduce your hearers by your ²modest ¹exterior. Do
séduire auditeur m. m.
 your sons acknowledge their errors? Do not those workmen waste their
reconnaître *ouvrier perdre*
 time about trifles?
à des bagatelle?

IMPERFECT.—I did not displease by my conduct. I was pitying
déplaire *plaindre*
 those sad victims of the revolution. ‡ Did not this dog bite? Did
triste victime f. f. *chien mordre*?

92 EXERCISES ON THE VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJ. IN RE.

that man (at last) acknowledge his injustice? We did not appear
enfin *f.*
 convinced. We joined our sighs and tears. Were you painting
convaincu f. *soupir m.* *nos larme f.* *peindre*
 an ²historical ¹subject? Did those orators throw the graces of ex-
d'histoire tableau m. *répandre* *art.*
 pression into their speeches? They led the people into an error.
discours ? *induire* *m.* *en **

PRETERIT.—I aimed at an ²honest ¹end. Did his prudence extinguish
tendre à *but m.* *f.* *éteindre*
 the fire of a ²disordered ¹imagination? Did not your conduct (do away)
dérégulé f. *conduite f.* *détruire*
 his prejudices? We led our friend back to his ²country ¹house.
prévention f. *reconduire* *** *de campagne f.*
 Did we offer our incense to the pride of a blockhead? Did you feign
vendre encens *sot ?* *feindre*
 to think as a madman? Did you conduct your children from truth
*de en * fou ?* *conduire* *vérité*
 to truth? Did ¹those ³frightful ²spectres appear again? Did
en effrayant m. *apparaître de nouveau ?*
 not the children (come down) at the first summons?
descendre à *ordre m. sing.*

FUTURE.—Shall I hear the music of the new opera? I shall
entendre musique f.
 not conceal from you my mind. Will the general constrain
*taire ** *façon de penser f.* *contraindre*
 the officers to join their ²respective ¹corps? Will not a thought, true,
officier rejoindre *f.*
 grand, and well expressed, please at all times? We shall (make
exprimé dans art. m.
 our appearance) on this great theatre ²next ¹month. Shall we
paraître sur m. art. prochain mois m.
 describe all the horror of this ²terrible ¹night? Will you not (new-
dépeindre *nuît f.* *re-*
 model) a work so full of ²charming ¹ideas? Will you know
fondre *plein* *reconnaître*
 your things again? Will they always reduce our duties to bene-
*effet m. ** *devoir m. art. bien-*
 ficence? They will assiduously correspond with their friends.
faisance f. *assidûment correspondre*

CONDITIONAL.—Should I, by these means gain the ²desired
moyen m. *atteindre à* *désiré*
¹end? I should (carry on) the undertaking with success. Would his
but m. *conduire* *entreprise f.*
 mother wait with (so much) patience? Could sincerity displease
tant de *art. f.* *à*
 the man (of sense)? Should we sell our liberty? Should we
sensé *vendre*
 build our house upon that plan? Would you oblige young
construire *m.* *astreindre des*
 people to live as you do? Would you reduce your child to
*gens pl. vivre comme **

despair? They should dread ¹the ²(public) ²censure. Would
 art. *désespérer* m. *craindre* du public f.
 my protectors introduce an unknown person into the world?
introduire *inconnu* m. *

IMPERATIVE.—Depict in thy idyl all the charms of a ²rural
Peindre *idylle* *douceur* f. *champêtre*
¹life. Expect not happiness from ²external ¹objects; it is in
Attendre art. art. *extérieur* m. *il*
 thyself. Know the powers of thy mind before thou writest. Let us
force f. *avant de* * *écrire* A.
 unite prudence with courage. Let us not descend to
joindre art. f. *à* art. m. *descendre dans des*
²useless ¹particulars. Let us not (give offence) by an air of haugh-
particularité. *déplaire* *des* m. pl.
 tiness? ²Seem ¹neither³ too cheerful nor too grave. Ye sovereigns,
Paraître *ne ni* *gai* *ni* *sérieux.* * *souverain*
 make the people happy. Do not despise his friendship. Sweet
rendre *dédaigner* *doux*
 illusions, vain phantoms, vanish! (Keep to yourself) such truths
 f. *fantôme* m. *disparaître!* *taire* *certain*
 as may offend.
qui peuvent offenser.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.—That I may fear that cloud of enemies.
nuée f.
 That I should please every body, is impossible. That he may not
à *ce*
 reply to ²such ³absurd ¹criticism. That he may lead his pupil
répondre *un si* *critique* f. *conduire* *élève*
 step by step to a perfect knowledge of the art of speaking and writing.
pas à *connaissance* *de* A
 That we may entice by an ²enchancing ¹style. That we may confound
séduire *enchanteur* m.
 the arts with the sciences. That you may have ²the ³same ⁴end
but m.
¹(in view.) That they may not depend on any body. That they
tendre à *dépendre de personne.*
 may not increase our sufferings.
accroître *peines.*

IMPERFECT.—That I might not melt into tears. That I would
fondre en larme.
 acknowledge the truth. That he might (draw a picture of)
reconnaître *peindre* art.
²distressed ¹virtue. That she might please by her accomplishments
malheureux f. *elle* *grâce* f.
 more than by her beauty That we might conduct him to court.
conduire art. *cour* f.
 That we should affect ²such ³low ¹sentiments. That you might
feindre des si bas m.
 hear their justification. That you might know your real friends.
entendre *vrai*
 That they might (wait for) the opinion of ²sensible ¹persons. That
attendre art. *sensé* f.
 they would not appear so scornful and vain.
dédaigneux f. pl. *ni si* f. pl.

Of Pronominal Verbs.

See VERBS, page 88 and following.

NOTE.—In all past participles, except *absous*, *dissous*, and *résous*, which are to be seen hereafter, the feminine is formed by adding *e* mute to the masculine, and the plural by adding *s* to the singular, both masculine and feminine, when it does not already end with *s*. In the following exercises the past participles, if put in French under the English, are always put in the masculine singular; it is for the student to put them in the number and gender required.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.—I commonly walk (by moonlight).
d'ordinaire se promener au clair de la lune.
 Dost thou not (deceive thyself)? He (is never happy) but (when he
se tromper ne se plaire que à
 is doing) wrong! Do we not (nurse ourselves) too much? How
faire A. du mal! s'écouter
 do you do? They mean to travel in the spring.
se porter? se proposer de voyager à m.

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—I (have been) tolerably well for some
se porter assez bien depuis
 time. Didst thou not (lose thyself) in the wood? (It is said) that he
s'égarer On dit
 (killed himself) (out of) despair. Have we (flattered ourselves) without
se tuer de se flatter
 foundation? Ladies, have you walked this morning? Did
fondement? Mesdames, se promener
 those ladies (recognise themselves) in this portrait?
dame se reconnaître à m.

IMPERFECT.—I (tormented myself) incessantly about the affairs of
se tourmenter sans cesse pour
 others. Wast thou not (laying the foundation for) much sorrow by
autrui. se préparer bien des regrets
 thy foolish conduct? He (made himself) more and more unhappy
se rendre
 (every day). We despaired without reason. Did you not
de jour en jour. se désespérer
 laugh at us? They (ruined themselves) wantonly.
se moquer de se perdre de gaieté de cœur.

PLUPERFECT.—I (had trusted myself) to ²(very uncertain) ¹guides.
se livrer à des peu sûr m.
 Didst thou not confide too inconsiderately in this man? Had that
se confier légèrement à
 officer rushed rashly into this danger? We had con-
officier se précipiter témérairement dans m. se con-
 demned ourselves. Had you not (been engaged) in trifles? Had
damner nous-mêmes. s'occuper de bagatelle f.
 those travellers (gone out) of the right way?
voyageurs se détourner droit chemin m.

PRETERIT.—I repented but too late of having taken ²such ¹a step.
tard A. fait tel démarche f.
 Wast thou not well entertained (yesterday evening?) He (suffered
s'amuser hier au soir? ne se trouver

for) his imprudence. We met in the street, but did
pas bien de *se rencontrer* *rue*
 not speak. Did you say nothing (to each other)? Did not
se parler. *dites-vous* *
 those ²rash ¹children (applaud themselves) for their folly?
téméraire *s'applaudir* *de* *sottise?*

PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—(As soon as) I discovered that they sought
Dès que *s'apercevoir* *on chercher*
 to deceive me, I was on my guard. What didst thou, when
H. tromper *se tenir* *J. garde f. pl.* *fis* *quand*
 thou (sawest thyself) thus forsaken? When she recollected
se trouver *ainsi abandonné?* *se souvenir*
 all the circumstances, she was quite ashamed. When he had
de *f.* *J. toute honteux.*
 rejoiced sufficiently, we parted. When you (had amused
se réjouir *assez* *se séparer* *J.* *s'amuser*
 yourself) sufficiently at his expense, did you not leave him quiet?
à dépens m. pl. *laisser* *J.* *tranquille?*
 When they had walked enough, they (sat down) at the foot of a tree.
se promener *s'assirent à*

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—I will yield if they convince me. Wilt thou
se rendre *on convainc*
 remember the engagement that thou makest? What will not he
se souvenir de *prends?* *Que*
 reproach (himself for)? We shall not (forget ourselves) (so far as)
se reprocher à lui-même? *s'oublier* *jusque*
 to ²(be wanting) ³in respect towards ¹him. Will you employ the
manquer A de * *lui.* *se servir de*
 means I (point out) to you? Will not these flowers fade?
que indiquer * *f.* *se flétrir?*

FUTURE ANTERIOR.—Shall I have betrayed myself? Wilt thou
se trahir moi-même?
 not have (degraded thyself) in his eyes? He will have (been proud) of
s'avilir *à* *s'enorgueillir*
 this trifling advantage. We shall have (fatigued ourselves)
faible avantage m. *se fatiguer*
 (to no purpose). In the end, you will have (been undeceived.) Will
inutilement. *à* *fin f.* *se désabuser.*
 your children have (loved each other) (too much)?
s'entr'aimer *trop?*

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.—Should I (suffer myself) to (be drawn)
se laisser * *entraîner*
 into the party of the rebels? Wouldst ²thou be ³(so easily)
parti m. *de si peu de chose*
¹frightened? Would not the nation submit to ³so ⁴just ^{1a} ²law?
s'effrayer? *f.* *se soumettre*
 We should not rejoice to see the triumph of guilt. Would
se plaire voir *triomphe* *art. crime m.*
 you (dishonour yourselves) by ²such ^{1a}an action? Would those
se déshonorer *tel*

lords (avail themselves) of their birth and fortune,
seigneur se prévaloir de naissance f. de leurs richesses,
 (in order to) hurt our feelings?
pour faire violence à sentiment ?

PAST.—Should I not (have devoted myself) entirely to the service
se dévouer entièrement
 of my country? (Had it not been for) thy carelessness, thou wouldst
pays m. sans insouciance f.
 certainly have (grown rich). Would this pleasing hope have vanished
s'enrichir doux espoir m. s'évanouir
 so soon? Should we have (degraded ourselves) to ²such 'a degree?
se dégrader point m.
 You would have (reduced yourselves) to every kind of want.
se réduire toute sorte pl. privation f. pl.
 They would have (been drowned) if (they had not had assistance).
se noyer on ne les avoit secourus.

IMPERATIVE.—O man, remember that thou art mortal. Do not
se souvenir
 flatter (thyself that thou wilt succeed easily). Let us take an
te promets un succès facile. se rendre
²exact 'account of our actions. Let us not deceive ourselves.
compte se séduire nous-mêmes.
 (Rest yourself) under the shade of this tree. Do not (expose
Se reposer à ombre s'exposer
 yourself) so rashly.
 * *témérement.*

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.—(I must) rise to-morrow at an ear-
Il faut que se lever de meil-
 lier hour. I wish that thou mayst be better. (I wish him to)
leur heure f. souhaiter se porter mieux. Je veux qu'il
 (conduct himself) better. Is it not essential that we should contain
se conduire essentiel se contenir
 ourselves? They wish that you should (accustom yourselves)
 * *On désire s'habituer*
 early to labor. It is time that they should
de bonne heure art. travail m.
 (have relaxation) from the fatigue of business.
se délasser f. art. f. pl.

PRETERIT.—Can I have (been deceived) so grossly?
Se peut-il que se tromper grossièrement ?
 It is astonishing that thou hast determined to stay. It is not said that
étonnant se décider rester. On dit*
 he interfered in this business. It will never (be believed) that we have
se mêler de On croira
 (conducted ourselves) so ill. It is not suspected that you have
se comporter mal. On soupçonne*
 (disguised yourselves) so ingeniously. It is not feared that they
se déguiser adroitement. On craint*
 have behaved ill.
se conduire

IMPERFECT.—They required that I should (go to bed) at ten o'clock.
On exigeait se coucher à heure.

They wish that thou shouldst walk oftener. Did they not
On voudrait se promener On
 wish that he should practise fencing? Was it necessary that
voulait s'exercer à faire des armes?
 we should (make use) of this method? Did they wish that you should
se servir moyen m. voulait
 complain without reason? Did they not wish them
se plaindre on désire H. que ils
 (to make more haste)?
se hâter S. davantage?

PLUPERFECT.—Would they have wished that I had (revenged
voulu se venger
 myself)? I could have wished that thou hadst (shewn thyself)
** désirer se montrer*
 (more accommodating). I could have wished that this painter had
moins difficile. voulu peintre
 (been less negligent.) Would you have wished that we should have
se négliger moins. voulu
 (ruined ourselves) in the ²public ¹opinion, (in order to) satisfy your
se perdre f. pour satisfaire
 resentment? I could have wished perhaps that you had (applied
ressentiment? désirer peut-être s'appliquer
 yourselves) more to your studies. We could have wished that they
** davantage*
 had (extricated themselves) more skilfully from the difficulties
se tirer adroitement embarras
 (in which) they (had involved themselves).
où s'étaient mis.

Conjugation of the Passive Verbs.

266. There is but one mode of conjugating passive verbs: it is by adding to the verb *être*, through all the moods and tenses, the participle past of the verb active, which then must agree in gender and number with the subject; as,

Je suis aimé, <i>or</i> aimée	<i>I am loved.</i>
tu étais estimé, <i>or</i> estimée	<i>thou wast esteemed.</i>
ce roi fut chéri de son peuple	<i>that king was beloved by his people.</i>
elle fut toujours chérie	<i>she was always beloved.</i>
mon père fut respecté	<i>my father was respected.</i>
ma mère fut révérée	<i>my mother was revered.</i>
nous serons loués <i>or</i> louées	<i>we shall be praised.</i>
vous en serez blâmés, <i>or</i> blâmées	<i>you will be blamed for it.</i>
ils seroient craints et redoutés	<i>they would be feared and dreaded.</i>
je voudrais que les portes fussent } ouvertes }	<i>I wish the doors were opened.</i>
tu en avais été averti, <i>or</i> avertie	<i>thou hadst been apprized of it.</i>
lorsqu'il eut été mordu	<i>when he had been bitten.</i>
je soupçonne que la ruse aura été } découverte }	<i>I suspect the artifice will have been discovered.</i>
vous auriez été aperçus, <i>or</i> aperçues	<i>you would have been perceived.</i>

bien qu'elles aient été reconnues *although they were recognised.*
 supposez que les lumières eussent }
 été éteintes } *suppose the lights had been put out.*

267. In the following exercises upon the verbs, the tenses will now be promiscuously intermixed :—

EXERCISE ON THE PASSIVE VERBS.

That young lady is so mild, so polite, and so kind, that she is
jeune demoiselle doux, honnête, bon,
 beloved by every body. He performed with (so much) ability, that
aimé de jouer J. tant de intelligence,
 he was universally applauded. He is known by nobody. How many
J. applaudi. connu de Que de
 countries, unknown to the ancients, have been discovered by ²modern
pays, inconnu découvert art.
¹navigators ?
navigateur m.

Of the Neuter Verbs.

See VERBS, page 160 and following.

268. REMARK.—The participle of these neuter verbs, which take *être* for auxiliary, must accordingly agree both in gender and number with their subject.

EXERCISE ON THE NEUTER VERBS.

They came to see us in the greatest haste. When
*G. * voir avec empressement. Quand est-ce que*
 did they arrive ? That estate fell to his lot. He fell
*arriver G. terre f. lui est échu en * partage. tomber G.*
 from his horse, but happily received only a slight contusion on the knee.
** il G. ne que léger f. à genou m.*

Of the Impersonal or Unipersonal Verbs.

See VERBS, page 123 and following.

269. Observe that, in impersonal verbs, *il* has no relation to a substantive, as may be seen by the impossibility of substituting a noun in its place.

EXERCISE ON THE UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

Does it rain this morning ? Did it hail ²last ¹night ? It
pleuvoir matin m. grêler J. art. dernier f.
 does not snow. I thought it had thundered. Does it not
neiger. croyais que tonner I.
 lighten ? Do you think it freezes ? It is a ²remarkable ¹thing. It
éclairer ? croyez que geler ? Ce Ce
 was a ²terrible ¹hurricane. It is ten o'clock. It (was not my friend's fault)
J. ouragan. heure. ne tenir pas à mon ami
 that (it) was not so. It will freeze long. I do not think
la chose S. ne ainsi. long-temps. crois
 so ; it seems, (on the contrary), that it thaws. * It (is fit) to act
le ; sembler au contraire dégeler. convenir de

so. It (was of great importance) to succeed. Would it be proper
ainsi. importer H. beaucoup de réussir. à propos
 to write to your friends? It appears that he has not attended to that
de écrire s'occuper de
 business. Perhaps it (would be) better (to give up) the undertaking.
voudrait abandonner entreprise.
 It (was sufficient to) know his opinion.
suffisait de

EXERCISE ON THE VERB *FALLOIR*.

See VERBS, page 136.

270. OBSERVE, that all expressions implying necessity, obligation, or want, may be rendered by *falloir*: as, I want a new grammar, *il me faut une grammaire neuve.*

You must speak to him about that affair. It was necessary for him
*de f. H. que * il*
 to consent to that bargain. We were obliged to (set out) immediately.
 * S. *marché m. J. partir S. sur le champ.*
 Children should learn every day something by heart. Shall I suffer
 art. N. S. L. Q.
 patiently ²such ¹an ³insult? He must have been a blockhead not to
O. S. sot pour
 understand ²such ³easy ¹rules. (How much) do you want? He
comprendre des si règle f. Combien
 does what is requisite. Do that as it (should be). What must he
fait Faites F. Que lui F.
 have for his trouble? You are the man I want. Do not give me
 * *peine f. que F.*
 any more bread; I have already more (than I want). (I need
 * *de en déjà qu'il ne m'en faut. Il ne me*
 not) ask you whether you will come. I do not think that it is neces-
faut pas A. si crois il Q.
 sary to be a conjurer to guess his motives. I could not suspect
 * * *sorcier pour deviner motif. pouvais soupçonner*
 that I ought (to ask) pardon for a fault I have not committed.
 S. A. *de faute f. que commise.*

EXERCISE ON *Y AVOIR*, THERE TO BE.

See VERBS, page 20 and following.

271. N. B. This verb in English is used in the plural, when followed by a substantive plural; in French it remains always in the singular.

There must be a great difference of age between those two persons.
il doit f.
 There being (so many) ²vicious ¹people in this world, is it astonishing
tant de gens m. pl. étonnant
 that there are so many persons who become the victims of the corruption
 Q. *devenir perversité f.*
 of the age? (It is a thousand to one) that he will not succeed.
siècle m. Il y a mille à parier contre un réussir.

There would be more happiness if (every one) knew how to moderate
bonheur *chacun* *savait* * * *modérer*
 his desires. I did not think that there could be (any thing) to blame
désir. *croyais* *S.* *rien* *reprendre*
 in his conduct. There would not be so many duels (did people)
conduite f. *si* *l'on*
 reflect that one of the first obligations of a Christian is to forgive
réfléchir H. f. f. *Chrétien* *de pardonner*
 injuries. Could there be a king more happy than this, who
 art. *Pourrait-il* *celui-ci*,
 has always been the father of his subjects?
sujet ?

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

See VERBS, *s'en aller*, to go away, page 112; also page 122.

272. The imperative *va* of *aller*, to go, takes an *s* when followed by *y*; as *vas-y*, go thither: however, it takes no *s* when the *y* is followed by a verb; as *va y donner ordre*, go and order that affair.

273. *Je vas*, I go, and *je m'en vas*, I am going, although authorized, are but seldom used by any writer.

Will you go this evening into the country? I am going to pay
soir *à* *campagne* f. * *faire*
 some visits, and if I be ²early ¹(at liberty) I shall certainly
F. de bonne heure *libre*
 go home. Go there with thy brother. Go and do that
s'en aller chez-moi. * *faire*
 errand. Go there, and put (every thing) in order. Let him go
commission f. * *mettre* *tout* *en*
 to church on (holidays). By being loaded with scents,
art. église f. * *les jour de fête.* *A force de A. chargé de odeur* f.
 and particularly amber, he (offends the smell). They have woven
surtout d'ambre, *sentir mauvais.* *tissu*
 silk and cotton together, and (made) a very pretty stuff. I shall
m. *en ont fait* *éttoffe* f.
 send ²spring ¹flowers to those ladies. I would go to Rome, if I
printanier f. *dame.*
 could. We would (send back) our horses. Why do they go
le pouvais. *Pourquoi*
 away so soon? My brother and my sister went yesterday to
ma *J.*
 Windsor. I will not go (any more) (a hunting).
plus *à la chasse.*

EXERCISES ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

See VERBS, page 124 and following.

May the name of that good king be †blessed from generation to gener-
nom m. *bénir* *en*

† See page 87, art. 264.

ation! These trees blossomed twice (every year). The arts and

H. *deux fois tous les ans.*

sciences †flourished at Athens in the time of Pericles. Horace
art. H. *à Athènes Périclès.*

and Virgil †flourished under the reign of Augustus. We discovered
Virgile H. sous règne Auguste. découvrir

from the top of the mountain a vast plain full of ²flowery
haut plaine f. rempli fleurissant

¹meadows. The empire of the Babylonians was long a flourishing
*prés m. Babyloniens J. long-temps **

one. We did not †hate the man, but his vices. Does she really †hate

that vain pomp and all the parade of grandeur?
pompe f. appareil art.

'Take that water off the fire; it boils too fast. Do not let
Retirer f. de dessus m. elle bouillir fort. laisser

³the ⁴soup ²(boil away) ¹(so much). That sauce has ²(boiled away)
*ébouillir tant f. **

¹(too much). Boil that meat again; it has not ²boiled
*trop. Faites rebouillir viande f. * f.*

¹(long enough). He runs faster than I. He ran about uselessly
*assez. plus vite moi. J. * inutilement*

all the morning. We ran at the voice of that honest man, and assisted
matinée f. J. f. J.

him. (The moment) he saw us in danger, he ran to us and delivered us.
*Dès que vit en J. * J.*

By ²so ⁴whimsical ¹a ²conduct, should we not contribute to our destruction?
bizarre concourir perte f.

He discoursed so long on the immortality of the soul, and the certainty
J. sur certitude f.

of another life, that he left nothing unsaid. If we (were to act
laisser J. en arrière. agir H.

thus), we should certainly incur the displeasure of our parents. I
ainsi disgrâce f.

would not have recourse to ³so ⁴base ¹a ²method. Will men
bas moyen m. art.

always run after shadows?
chimère f.

He (was near) losing his life in that rencounter. He (was near)
*faillir J. perdre * art. rencontre f. faillir*

falling into the snare which was laid for him. His strength
*donner A. piège m. qu'on avait tendu * lui. * art. f. pl.*

fails him (every day). Let us have something ²to ³eat
*défaillent lui tous les jours. Donnez-nous * * manger*

¹directly; we are fainting with fatigue and hunger. I cannot meet
vite; défailloons de de faim. ne puis rencontrer

him; he shuns me. When (we have no employ), we endea-
fuir on ne sait pas s'occuper, on cher-

vor to fly from ourselves. Would he not avoid flatterers, if he
*che se fuir * soi-même. fuir art. flatteur m.*

† See VERBS, page 128.

† See VERBS, page 129.

knew all their falsehood? He died by a ²(very painful) ¹disease.
connaître H. fausseté f. de cruel maladie f.
 She died of grief (for the loss of) her son. He (is dying.) She
J. chagrin m. d'avoir perdu se mourir.
 was expiring with grief, when the fear of death (at last) wrested
se mourir de crainte f. art. enfin arracher J.
 her secret from her.
*m. * lui.*

(Send for) the physician, and follow exactly his advice. Go and
*Envoyez quérir médecin, suivez **
 fetch my cane. Every day he acquired celebrity by works
canne f. Tous les jours H. f. des ouvrage m.
 calculated to fix the attention of an ²enlightened ¹public. That I
fait pour éclairé
 would acquire riches at the expense of my honesty! He had acquired
S. dépens m. pl. probité f.
 by his merit great influence over the opinions of his contemporaries.
une f. sur opinion sing. contemporain.
 I have inquired about that man (every where), and have not
de homme-là partout je
 (been able) (to hear any thing of him). Who ³has ⁴requested
pu en avoir de nouvelles. Qui est-ce qui requérir
²it of ¹you? Sesostriis, king of Egypt, conquered a great part of Asia.
*en * J. art.*
 The ²formidable ¹empire which Alexander conquered did not last
Alexandre I. ne durer pas
 longer than his life. I have heard that ²important ¹news.
plus long-temps f. ouïr-dire sing.
 He dressed himself (in haste), and (went out) immediately. I wish
se vêtir à la hâte sortir J. sur-le-champ. voudrais
 she would dress the children with more care. If his fortune
que vêtir S. de
²permitted ¹him, he would clothe all the poor of his parish. Two
le permettait lui, paroisse f.
 servants clothed him with his ²ducal ¹mantle. He only passed
domestique revêtir H. de manteau m. ne que H.
 for a traveller; but lately he has assumed the character of an envoy.
*voyageur; depuis peu revêtir un * envoyé.*
 It begins to be very warm; it is time to (throw off some clothing).
commencer faire chaud; de se dévêtir.

I will gather with pleasure some of these flowers and fruits,
quelques-unes de ces
 since you wish to ²have ¹some. Do not gather those peaches
puisque seriez bien aise de en f.
 before they are ripe. That is a country where they neither
avant que ne Q. mûr. Ce pays où on ne
 reap corn nor gather grapes. We shall collect in ²ancient
*recueillir ni blé ni * vin. recueillir*
¹history ²important ³and ⁴valuable ¹facts. He received us in ²the
précieux fait. accueillir dela la
³most ⁴polite ¹manner. Poverty, misery, sickness, per-
manière f. art. f. art. f. art. maladie f. art.

secution, in a word, all the misfortunes in the world, have (fallen upon)
 f. *en* *malheur* m. *de* *accueillir*
 him. You will give six inches to that cornice; it will project
voulez donner *pouce* J. *corniche* f. *elle* *saillir*
 too much. That balcony projected too much; it darkened the
balcon m. H. *obscurcir* H.
 dining-room. When Moses struck the rock, there gushed out
Quand Moïse frapper J. *rocher* m. *il* *saillir* J.
 of it a spring of ²(fresh running) ¹water. The blood gushed from
en *source* f. *vif* f. H.
 his vein with impetuosity. We shall assault the enemy to-morrow in
veine f. pl. *demain*
 their entrenchments. Were we not overtaken by a horrible storm?
retranchement. J. *assailli* *tempête* f.
 At every word they said to him concerning his son, the good
A chaque *que on disait* * *de*
 (old man) leaped for joy. Shall you not shudder with fear?
vieillard tressaillir H. *de joie.* *tressaillir* *peur* f.

EXERCISES ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

See VERBS, page 134 and following.

274. IMPORTANT DIRECTION.—Whenever the student has a French verb ending with *oir* to translate, the first thing he must do is to look for it among the verbs composing the list given page 162. If the verb looked for is not to be found in the above mentioned list, he must conjugate it on *recevoir*, to receive, page 66; and if it be found in the list, he will be directed on which verb to conjugate it.

I had apartments that I liked; I will endeavor to have them
 H. *un logement* sing. *aimer* H. *veux essayer de* *le* sing.
 again. Beware of falling. How has he fallen into poverty?
Prenez-garde A. *Comment* * *déchoir en pauvreté?*
 Since the publication of his last work, he has much fallen in the
Depuis *dernier* *déchoir dans*
 esteem of the public. If he do not alter his conduct, he will
changer F. *de* *
 decline (every day) in his reputation and credit. He has
déchoir de jour en jour de f. *de son* m.
 put in the lottery, and he hopes that a capital prize will fall
mis à loterie f. * art. *gros lot* m. *échoir*
 (to his share). That bill of exchange has expired. The first term
lui *lettre* f. *change* *échoir.* *terme* m.
 expires (at Midsummer). You have drawn on me a bill of ex-
à la Saint Jean. *tirer sur moi*
 change; when is it payable? I did not believe that (I must) so
échoir F. *croyais* *il me fallût*
 soon (have taken) that journey. He must have sunk under
faire *voyage* m. *a fallu qu'il* *succomber* S.
 the efforts of (so many) enemies.
tant de

The spring which moves ²the ¹whole machine is very ingenious,
ressort m. tout f.
 though very simple. It was passion which moved him to that
quoique Ce H. art. f. J.
 action. Can you doubt that the soul, though it is spiritual, moves
*f. Pouvez douter f. * * spirituel ne Q.*
 the body (at pleasure)? That is a man whom nothing moves. We
à sa volonté? Ce émouvoir.
 had scarcely lost ⁴sight ³of ¹land² when there arose a
H. à peine perdu vue f. la terre f. que il s'émouvoir
 violent tempest. We were moved with fear and pity. When
grande tempête f. J. émus de crainte f. de pitié f. Quand
 the famous d'Aguesseau was promoted to the dignity of chancellor, all
célèbre J. f. chancelier
 France shewed the greatest joy. That bishop ²well
art. f. en témoigner J. f. évêque
¹deserved, by his talents and by his virtues, that the king should promote
mériter H. S.
 him to the dignity of primate. The people think that it rains
primat. peuple sing. croit
 frogs and insects at certain seasons. It will not rain
grenouille f. insecte m. en temps m.
 to-day, but I (am fearful) (of its) raining to-morrow.
d'aujourd'hui craindre qu'il ne Q.

When he arrived at home he (was quite exhausted). The
fut arrivé chez-lui n'en pouvoir H. plus.
 minister had (so many) people at his levee, that I could not
ministre H. tant de monde à audience f. G.
 speak to him. Are ²you ¹afraid that he will not accomplish
** craignez pouvoir Q. venir à bout de*
 that affair? I know that he is not your friend, but I know likewise
savoir de pl. aussi
 that he is a man of probity. Let them know that their pardon depends
** bien. savoir grâce dépendre*
 on their submission. I could wish that he knew his lessons a
de soumission. désirer N. savoir Q.
 little better. Let us see if this ²(new-fashioned) ¹gown becomes
voir d'un nouveau goût robe soir
 you or not. Be assured that ²too ³gaudy ¹colors will not become
non. art. voyant f. soir
 you. The head-dress which that lady wore became her very ill.
coiffure f. que porter H. H. lui
 These colors become you so well, you (would do wrong) to wear any
C. avoir N. tort de en porter
 others. Set that child in this arm-chair, and take care lest
Asseoir m. fauteuil m. prenez-garde que
 he fall. I will sit down on the top of that hill, whence
ne Q. s'asseoir sommet m. coteau m.
 I shall discover a prospect (no less) magnificent than diversified.
découvrir scène f. aussi magnifique varié.
 We (were seated) on the banks of the Thames, whence we were
s'asseoir I. bord m. Tamise f.

contemplating myriads of vessels, which bring (every year) the
 H. *milliers vaisseau, apporter tous les ans*
 riches of the two hemispheres.

See the ²admirable ¹order of the universe: does it not announce a
Voir m.
²supreme ¹architect? Has he again seen with pleasure his country and
artisan m. revoir pays
 his friends? (Had he a glimpse of) the dawn of this fine day? To
entrevoir aurore Pour
 finish their affairs, it would be necessary for them to (see one another).
*falloir N. que * ils * s'entrevoir S.*
 I clearly foresaw (from that time) all the obstacles he would have to
bien prévoir J. dès lors m.
 surmount. Would you have the judge (put off) the execution
*surmonter. H. * que surseoir S.*
 of the sentence that he had pronounced? I shall not put off the
arrêt rendu?
 pursuit of that affair. If men do not provide (for it), God
poursuite f. pl. art. pourvoir y
 will provide for it. Would this book (be good for) nothing? You
valoir N.
 have not paid for this ground more than it is worth; (are you afraid)
** terre f. f. ne valoir F. craignez-vous*
 that it is not worth six hundred pounds? Let us take arbitrators.
que Q. livres sterlings? prenons arbitre.
 One ounce of gold is equivalent to fifteen ounces of silver. Doubt
once f. équivaloir
 not that reason and truth will prevail (at last). I can
*art. art. * ne prévaloir Q. à la longue. pouvoir*
 and will tell the truth. If you are willing, he will be willing
je vouloir dire le vouloir le
 too. Let us resolve to resist our passions, and we shall be sure
aussi. veuillons combattre
 to conquer them. (Be so good as) to lend me your grammar.
*de vaincre veuillez * prêter*

EXERCISES ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION.

See **VERBS**, page 141 and following.

Wood which (is burned) (resolves itself) into ashes and
art. bois m. on brûle † se résoudre en cendre f. en
 smoke. Have they resolved on peace or war? The fog
*fumée f. on résoudre * art. f. art. f. brouillard m.*
 (has resolved itself) into rain. Could that judge ²thus ³lightly
se résoudre I. pluie f. si légèrement
¹absolve the guilty? ²Strong ¹waters dissolve metals.
absoudre N. coupable m. pl. art. Fort f. dissoudre art.

† See page 91, art. 265.

²Those ³drugs (were dissolved) (before they were put) into that
drogue on a dissous avant que de les mettre A.
 medicine. My sister was sewing all day yesterday. That piece is not
*remède m. coudre J. * hier m.*
 well sewed; it must (be sewed over again). Unpick that lace,
la recoudre F. Découdre dentelle f
 and sew it again very carefully. Does he set a great value
avec beaucoup de soin. mettre prix m.
 upon riches? I never admitted those principles. Has he committed
aux admettre J. commettre
 that fault? If he (would take my advice), he would resign his
faute f. m'en croyait se démettre de
 charge in favor of his son. He put his arm (out of joint)
*f. en se démettre J. le bras m. **
 yesterday. I will omit nothing that depends on me to serve
omettre de ce qui dépendre I. de pour
 you. God frequently permits the wicked to prosper.
*souvent permettre que méchant m. pl. * prospérer Q.*
 Put this book in its place again. Under whatever form of govern-
*Remettre à f. * Sous quelque gouvernement*
 ment you may live, remember that your first duty is to be
ment m. que vivre, se souvenir devoir m. de
 obedient to the laws. It frequently happens that fathers transmit to
soumis arriver art. transmettre
 their children both their vices and their virtues. He has long
et long-temps
 meddled with ²public ¹affairs; but his endeavors have not
s'entremettre de art. effort
 been crowned with success.
couronner de art. m.

I took great pains; but, at last, I ground all the coffee.
prendre J. beaucoup enfin moudre J. café m.
 Grind those razors with care. Those knives (are just) ground.
émoudre rasoir m. couteau m. viennent d'être
 This grain is not sufficiently ground; it should be (ground again).
assez il faut le remoudre.
 I wish that you would take courage. What news have you learned?
vouloir Q. f. pl.
 Philosophy comprehends logic, ethics, physics,
art. comprendre art. logique f. art. morale f. s. art. physique f. s.
 and metaphysics. It is (with difficulty) that he (divests himself)
art. métaphysique f. s. Ce difficilement que se déprenre
 of his opinions. He has forgotten all that he knew. I fear
désapprendre ce que savoir H.
 you will undertake a task above your strength. Could
que ne entreprendre Q. tâche f. au-dessus de f. pl.
 he have been mistaken so grossly? I reproved him continually
se tromper O. grossièrement reprendre H. sans cesse
 for his faults, but (to no purpose). We surprised the enemy, and
défaut, inutilement. surprendre J. pl.
 cut them to pieces. In the middle of the road the axletree of our
tailler J. en à chemin essieu m.

carriage broke. Bad company corrupts the minds of young people.
carrosse se rompre J. art. f. pl. *corrompre esprits.* gens pl.
 Why do you interrupt your brother, when you see him busy?
Pourquoi interrompre occupé?

³(For a long while) ¹we ²followed that method, which was only
long-temps suivre J. f. H. *ne que*
 calculated to mislead us. What (is the consequence)? See the errors
propre égarer Que s'ensuivre
 that (have sprung) from this proposition, which appeared so true.
se sont ensuivies f. H.

We pursued our course, when some cries, which came from the
suivre H. *chemin, lorsque des cri,* * *sortis*
 midst of the forest excited terror in our souls. The Greeks
fond m. *forêt* f. *porter* J. art. f. *ame.* *Grec*
 vanquished the Persians at Marathon, Salamis, Platea, and Mycale.
Perse à à Salamine, à Platée, à

I have at last convinced him, by ²such ³powerful reasons, of the
convaincre des si fort f.
 greatness of his fault, that I (have no doubt) but he will
énormité fuute f. *ne doute nullement que ne*
 repair it. It is during winter that they thrash corn in
réparer Q. *Ce pendant* art. *on battre blé*

²cold ¹countries. The enemy was so completely beaten in that
les froid pays m. pl. *battre*
 engagement, that he was forced to abandon thirty leagues of the country.
rencontre f. *de lieue* f. * *pays.*

The cannon (beat down) the tower. They were fighting with
canon abattre J. *tour* f. *combattre* un
²unexampl'd ¹fury when a ²panic ¹terror made them take
sans exemple acharnement m. *panique* f. *faire* J. *leur*
 flight, and dispersed them in an instant. Beat these mattresses
 art. *fuute* f. J. m. *Rebattre matelas* m.
 again. Happy are those who live in solitude! ²Long ¹live that
 * * *vivre* art. *retraite* f. *Long-temps* Q.
 good king! He did not long survive a person who was so dear to him.
survivre à f.

Fathers live again in their children. He was in a strange dejection
 art. *revivre* *accablement*
 of mind; but the news which he has received (has revived) him.
esprit; f. pl. f. pl. *ont fait revivre* A.

What will you (have him do)? Do not make (so much)
Que vouloir que il fasse? tant
 noise. Do they never exact? That woman mimicked all the
de bruit. *surfaire?* *contrefaire* H.

persons whom she had seen; this levity rendered her odious. It was
 f. *que* f. pl. *légèreté* f. J. f. *Ce* J.
 with difficulty he (divested himself) of the false opinions which
peine que se défaire f. on
 had been given him in his infancy. Could it be possible that we should
 * f. pl. *lui* f.
 not again make a journey to Paris, Rome, and Naples? He
refaire S. art. * *voyage de de de*

says that you have offended him, and that, if you do not satisfy him
dit offensé satisfaire

quickly, he will find means to satisfy himself.
promptement, art. moyen sing. de se satisfaire lui-même.

(Every night) she milked her sheep, which gave her a ²(great
Tous les soirs traire H. brebis pl. H. lui abon-

quantity) of ³wholesome ¹milk. Have you milked your goats? Are
*dant * et sain lait m. chèvre f.*

the cows milked? Salt is good to entice pigeons. You
vache art. Sel m. pour attirer art. m.

will never know the nature of bodies, if you do not abstract their
*connaître art. * abstraire*

²necessary ¹qualities from those which are inherent (in them). The
celles leur.

least thing (diverts his attention). Will you not extract that
moindre le distraire F. extraire

charming passage? Have you darned your gown? Should he
m. rentraire

not redeem that land? What! would you (have me screen)
retraire Quoi! F. que je soustraie

those (guilty persons) from the rigor of the laws?
coupable m. pl. à rigueur f.

Was not Virgil born at Mantua? It is from that ²poisoned ¹source
naître J. Mantoue? Ce empoisonné f.

that have arisen all the ²cruel ¹wars that have desolated the universe.
guc naître f. pl. f. désoler

The fable says that, (as soon as) Hercules had (cut off) one of the heads
f. dit aussitôt que H. Hercule couper tête f.

of the hydra, ²others ¹(sprang up). While their ²united
hydre f. d'autres il en renaître H. Tandis que réuni

¹flocks fed on the ²tender ³and ⁴flowery ¹grass, they
*troupeau m. paître H. * fleuri herbe f.*

sang under the shade of a tree the sweets of ²rural ¹life.
chanter H. à ombre douceur f. art. champêtre f.

Your horses have not fed to-day: (you must have them fed).
repaitre d'aujourd'hui il faut les faire repaitre A.

He is a man who thirsts ²after nothing ¹but blood and slaughter.
*Ce ne se repaitre de * que de carnage m.*

The thunder which roared from afar announced a
tonnerre m. bruyait dans art. lointain m. H.

²dreadful ¹storm. They heard roar the waves of an ²agitated
terrible orage m. On entendre H. bruire A. flot m. agité

¹sea. That street is too noisy for those who love retirement and
mer f. rue f. bruyant art. retraite f.

study. I (have a glimpse of) something that shines through
art. entrevoir quelque chose à travers

those trees. A ray of hope shone upon us in the midst of the
*rayon m. luire J. * à milieu*

misfortunes which overwhelmed us. (Every thing) is well rubbed in
malheur m. accabler H. Tout frotté

that house: every thing shines, even the floor. Would he not
y reluire, jusque à plancher m.

have injured you in that affair? Jesus Christ was circumcised eight
nuire *circconcis*
 days after his birth. Will you preserve these peaches with sugar,
naissance *confire* *à art. sucre* *m.*
 with honey, or with brandy? Did you pickle cucumbers,
à art. miel *m.* *à art. eau-de-vie* *f.* *concombre* *m.*
 purslane, and sea-fennel? If he loses his lawsuit, all his
pourpier *m.* *perce-pierre* *f.* *procès* *m.*
 property will not suffice.
bien *suffire.*

Always speak truth, but with discretion. Never contradict
dire *art.* *f.*
 (any one) in public. You thought you were serving me in speaking
personne *en* *penser* *G.* * * *A.* *en parler*
 thus: well (let it be so); you shall not be contradicted. What!
ainsi: eh! bien, soit; n'en pas dédire. Quoi!
 would you forbid him all communication with his friends? That
interdire *f.*
 woman who slandered (every one) soon lost all kind of
H. de tout le monde, J. espèce *f.*
 respect. You had foretold that event. Let us curse no one;
considération. ne personne;
 let us remember that our law forbids us to curse even those who
se rappeler *défendre* * *de*
 persecute us. Write (every day) the reflections which you make
persécuter *écrire tous les jours*
 on the books you read. Did he not read that ²interesting ¹history with
lire. J.
 (a great deal) of pleasure? God is an ²infinite ¹being, who is circum-
beaucoup *être* *m.* *ne*
 scribed neither by time nor place. Will you not describe
ni art. ni par art. lieu *m. pl.*
 in that episode the ²dreadful ¹tempest which assailed your hero? ¹Get
m. horrible *f.* *J. faire*
³those ⁴soles ⁵and ⁶whittings ²fried. If you wish to form your taste,
ces merlan *frir* *A.* *vouloir* *
 (read over and over) unceasingly the ancients. He was elected by a
lisez et relisez sans cesse J. à
 great majority of voices. We have laughed heartily, and have
f. rire de bon cœur, nous
 resolved to (go on). He did not answer him (any thing:) but he
résolu de continuer. ne répondre *J. lui rien*
 smiled at him, as a sign of approbation, in the ²kindest ¹manner.
sourire *J. * lui, en * de gracieux air* *m.*

Seated under the shade of palm-trees, they were milking their
Assis à art. palmier
 goats and ewes, and ²merrily ¹drinking that nectar, which
chèvre *f.* *leurs brebis* *f.* *avec joie* *m.*
 (was renewed) every day. Should they not have drunk with ice?
se renouveler *H. boire à art.*
 This window does not shut well; when you have made some alterations
clore M. réparation *f.*

(to it), it will shut better. He had scarcely closed his eyes, when the
y f. clore mieux. à peine G. les que
 noise which they made at his door awoke him. Have they not
que on H. à réveiller J. on
 enclosed the suburbs within the city? Will you enclose your park
enclore faubourg m. dans ville f. parc
 with a wall or a hedge? Put the eggs of those silk-worms
de mur m. de haie f. Mettez auf m. vers à soie m.
 in the sun, that they may hatch. Those flowers just blown,
soleil m. éclore Q. nouvellement éclore,
 spread the sweetest fragrance. When did they conclude this treaty?
répandre doux parfum m. G. traité m.
 His enemies managed so well, that he was unanimously excluded from
faire J. J. unanimement
 the company. Did you think me capable of ³so ⁴black ¹an ²act?
compagnie f croire F. noir trait m.
 He possesses some kind of knowledge; but (not so much as he thinks).
quelque espèce savoir il s'en fait trop accroire.

CHAPTER VI.

OF THE PREPOSITIONS.

275. PREPOSITIONS, which are so called from being *prefixed* to the nouns which they govern, serve to connect words with one another, and to show the relation between them. Thus, in this phrase, *le fruit de l'arbre*, the fruit of the tree, *de* expresses the relation between *fruit* and *arbre*. Likewise in this, *utile à l'homme*, useful to man; *à* forms the relation between the noun *homme* and the adjective *utile*. *De* and *à* are *prepositions*, and the word to which they are *prefixed* is called their *regimen*.

276. There are different kinds of prepositions.

277. Some denote *place*, as :

CHEZ. *Il est chez-lui*, he is *at* home.

DANS. *Il se promène dans le jardin*, he is walking *in* the garden.

DEVANT. *Il est toujours devant mes yeux*, he is always *before* my eyes.

DERRIERE. *Il ne regarde jamais derrière lui*, he never looks *behind* him.

PARMI. *Que de fous parmi les hommes !* how many fools *among* men !

SOUS. *La taupe vit sous terre*, the mole lives *under* ground.

SUR. *Il a le chapeau sur la tête*, he has his hat *on* his head.

VERS. *L'aimant se tourne vers le nord*, the loadstone points *towards* the north.

EXERCISE ON THESE PREPOSITIONS.

We find less ²real ¹happiness in an ²elevated ¹condition than in a
On de bonheur f.
²middling ¹state. One is never truly peaceful, but at home.
moyen véritablement tranquille que soi.
 He walked before me to serve me as a guide. There was a ²delightful
*marcher pour de * H.*

¹grove behind his house. Among (so many) ²different ¹nations,
bosquet m. *tant de*
 (there is not one) that has not a ²religious ¹worship. Nature
il n'y en a pas une Q. *culte m.* art.
 displays her riches with magnificence under the ²torrid ¹zone.
déployer *torride f.*
³Eternal ²snows ¹(are to be seen) on the summit of the Alps. Towards
f. *on voit* *sommet* *Alpes.*
 the north, nature assumes a ²gloomy and wild ¹aspect.
 art. *triste* *sauvage aspect m.*

278. Some mark *order*, as :

AVANT. *La nouvelle est arrivée avant le courrier*, the news is come
before the courier.

APRES. *Il est trop vain pour marcher après les autres*, he is too proud
 to walk *after* other people.

ENTRE. *Elle a son enfant entre les bras*, she holds her child *in* (for
between) her arms.

DEPUIS. *Depuis la création jusqu'à nous*, from the creation to the
 present time.

DES. *Dès son enfance*, from his infancy; *dès sa source*, from its source.

EXERCISE.

We (were up) before (daylight) (in order to) enjoy the ²mag-
se lever I. art. *jour* *pour* *de* *ma-*
 gnificent ¹spectacle of the ²rising ¹sun. After such great faults,
gnifique m. *levant.* *de si* *faute f.*
 it only remained for us to repair them (as well as we could). Be-
*ne que rester H. ** *réparer* *de notre mieux.*
 tween those two mountains runs a ²deep ²hollow ¹road. ²Many
est *profond et creux chemin m.*
⁴very ⁵astonishing ³events ¹(have taken place) ⁶within these ten years.
il s'est passé *depuis **
 From my earliest infancy I have had an abhorrence of lying.
tendre ** horreur* art. *mensonge m.*

279. Some denote *union*, as :

AVEC. *Il faut savoir avec qui on se lie*, we ought to know *with* whom
 we associate.

DURANT. *Durant la guerre*, during the war; *durant l'été*, during
 the summer.

PENDANT. *Pendant l'hiver*, in winter; *pendant la paix*, in time of peace.
 This preposition denotes a duration more limited than *durant*.

OUTRE. *Outre des qualités aimables*, *il faut encore*, &c., besides
 amiable qualities, there ought still, &c.

SUIVANT. *Je me déciderai suivant les circonstances*, I shall determine
 according to circumstances.

SELON. *Le sage se conduit selon les maximes de la raison*, a wise
 man acts according to the dictates of reason.

EXERCISE.

With wit, politeness, and some (readiness to oblige), one generally
un peu de *prévenance*,

succeeds in the world. We are fit for meditation during winter.
réussir *On est propre à* art. f.
 (In the course of) that siege the commandant of the city made some
Pendant *siège* m. J.
²very ²successful ¹sallies. Besides the ²exterior ¹advantages of figure
heureux *sortie* f. art.
 and the graces of deportment, she possesses an ²excellent ¹heart, a
 art. *maintien* m. *avoir*
²correct ¹judgment, and a ²sensible ¹soul. Always act according
sain *jugement* *se conduire*
 to the maxims which I have given you.
 * f. *inculquer* f. pl.

280. Some express *opposition*, as :

CONTRE. *Je plaide contre lui*, I plead against him.

MALGRE. *Il l'a fait malgré moi*, he has done it in spite of me.

NONOBTANT. *Nonobstant ce qu'on lui a dit*, notwithstanding what has been said to him.

EXERCISE.

We cannot long act (contrary to) our own character: notwithstanding all the pains we take to disguise it, it (shews itself), and betrays us on many occasions. (In vain we dissemble); in spite of ourselves, (we are known) at last.
savoir N. *agir* *contre* *
que *pour* *se montrer*
trahir *en bien* *nous avons beau faire*;
on nous connaît à la longue.

281. Some express *privation or separation*, as :

SANS. *Des troupes sans chef*, troops without commanders.

EXCEPTÉ. *Excepté quelques malheureux*, except some wretches.

HORS. *Tout est perdu hors l'honneur*, all is lost save honor.

HORMIS. *Tous sont entrés hormis mon frère*, they are all come in except my brother.

EXERCISE.

(Had it not been for) your care, I should have been ignorant all my life. All the philosophers of antiquity, except a few, have held the world to be eternal. All laid down their arms, except two regiments, who preferred (making their way) through the enemy. Every thing is absurd and ridiculous in that work, except a chapter or two.
Sans pl. *un*
 art. *très-petit nombre*,
croire * * *mettre bas les*
se faire F. *jour à travers*
 pl.

282. Some denote the *end*, as :

ENVERS. *Il est charitable envers les pauvres*, he is charitable to the poor.

TOUCHANT. *Il a écrit touchant cette affaire*, he has written *respecting* that business.

POUR. *Il travaille pour le bien public*, he labors *for* the public good.

EXERCISE.

I have written to you concerning that business, in which I take the
à laquelle
most lively interest; and as I know your benevolence towards the
vif connaître bienveillance f.
unfortunate, I (make not the least doubt) that you (will carefully
malheureux pl. ne doute nullement ne donner Q. tous
attend) (to it), (not so much) for the satisfaction of obliging me, as for
vos soins y moins A.
the pleasure of justifying innocence and confounding calumny.
justifier A. art. de confondre A. art. f.

283. Others mark the *cause* and *means*, as :

PAR. *Il l'a fléchi par ses prières*, he has softened him *by* his entreaties.

MOYENNANT. *Il réussira moyennant vos avis*, he will succeed *by*
means of your counsels.

ATTENDU. *Il ne peut partir attendu les vents contraires*, he cannot
sail *on account of* contrary winds.

EXERCISE.

Is there any man that has never been softened by tears or dis-
aucun Q. fléchir art. ni dés-
armed by submission? Through the precautions which we took,
armer art. que J.
we avoided the rocks of that ²dangerous ¹coast. Owing to the bad
J. écueil m. côte f.
state †(of my father's health), I shall not travel this year.
voyager année f.

284. The use of the prepositions *à*, *de*, *en*, is very extensive.

285. A is generally used to express several relations, as *destination*,
tendency, *place*, *time*, *situation*, &c., being often a substitute for various
other prepositions; ex.:—*destination*, to: *aller à Londres*, to go to
London.—*Tendency*, to, toward: *courir à sa perte*, to hasten to one's
ruin.—*Aim*, at, for: *aspirer à la gloire*, to aspire to glory.—*Résidence*,
at, in: *être à Rome*, to be at Rome.—*Time*, at: *à midi*, at twelve
o'clock.—*Concern*, on: *à ce sujet*, on this subject.—*Manner*, with: *sup-
plier à mains jointes*, to entreat earnestly.—*Means*, with: *peindre à
l'huile*, to paint in or with oil; with: *bas à trois fils*, three-thread stock-
ings—that is, with three threads.—*Situation*, at, with: *être à son aise*,
to be at ease.—*Purpose*, for: *une table à manger*, a dining-table.—*Suit-
ableness*, for, to: *homme à réussir*, a man likely to succeed.—*Desert*, to:
crime à ne pas pardonner, a crime not to be forgiven, &c.

EXERCISE ON THE PREPOSITION *à*.

Fathers! give good counsels and ²still ¹better ²examples to your
encore meilleur

† Translate as if it stood thus:—*Of the health of my father*.

children. A good minister only aims at the glory of ²serv³ing ³his
ne que aspirer à A.
¹country ¹well. When we were in the country, we devoted the
pays H. *à* campagne f. consacrer H.
 morning to study, we walked at noon, and at three or four
matinée, f. art. *se promener* H. *midi*
 o'clock we went a hunting or fishing. Michael Angelo has
heure H. *à* art. *chasse* f. *à la pêche* f. *Michel-Ange*
 painted (a great deal) in fresco. It is a bed with (ivory posts)
beaucoup art. *fresque* f. *Ce* *lit* m. *colonnes d'ivoire*
 and (mahogany feet). That man, with his ²gloomy ¹looks and
à pied d'acajou. *les sombre regard* m.
²surly ¹behaviour, seems fit only to serve as a scarecrow.
au brusque maintien m. *semble propre* *ne que* *de* * *épouvantail.*

236. DE is generally used to express *separation, extraction, possession, appartenance, cause, shift, result, &c.*, and supplies the place of several prepositions; as, *from*: *je viens de France*, I come *from* France; *d'un bout à l'autre*, *from* one end to the other.—*Of*: *le palais du roi*, the palace *of* the king; *les facultés de l'ame*, the faculties *of* the soul; *un homme d'esprit*, a man *of* wit. In a partitive sense—*of*: *moitié de, quart de, &c.*, the half *of*, the fourth *of*, &c.: it is used for *PAR*, *by*: *il est aimé de tout le monde*, he is beloved *by* every body; *for, through, or by, &c.*; *mourir de faim, de soif*, to die *of* hunger, *of* thirst.—*On, upon, with*: *vivre de fruits*, to live *upon* fruit.—*On account of, or for*: *sauter de joie*, to leap *for* joy.

EXERCISE ON THE PREPOSITION *de*.

I come from London, where I have spent (a week) very agreeably.
où *passé huit jours*
 From one end of the horizon to the other, the sky was covered with
bout m. *m.* *ciel* m.
²thick ³black ¹clouds. The marble of Paros is not finer than that
épais et noir nuage m.
 which we get from Carrara. Montaigne, Madame de Sévigné, and
qui nous vient *Carrare.*
 La Fontaine, were writers of ²truly ³original ¹genius. One half
H. écrivain *un* *moitié* f.
 of the ²terrestrial ¹globe, is covered with water, and above a (third part)
terrestre globe m. *plus de tiers* m.
 of the rest is uninhabited, either through ²extreme ¹heat or through
inhabité, ou par un chaleur f.
²excessive ¹cold. In that happy retreat, we lived on the milk of
un *froid* m. *asile* m. *H.*
 our flocks, and the ²delicious ¹fruits of our orchards.
brebis pl. *de* *verger* m

287. EN serves to mark the relations of time, place, situation, &c., and is variously expressed; as, *c'était en hiver*, it was *during* winter; *être en Angleterre*, to be *in* England; *aller en Italie*, to go *into* Italy; *elle est en bonne santé*, she is *in* good health; *il vaut mieux être en paix, qu'en guerre*, it is better to be *at* peace than *at* war; *il l'a fait en haine de lui*, he did it out of hatred to him, &c.

EXERCISE ON THE PREPOSITION *en*.

³He had ¹for ²(a long while) ⁴lived in France; the troubles which
 * *depuis* *long-temps* *vivre* H.
 agitated that fine kingdom obliged him to retire to Switzerland,
 J. *royaume* m. J. *de se retirer* Suisse,
 whence ³he ¹soon ²after (set out) for Italy. We were at peace, and
d'où *se rendre* J. H.
 enjoyed all its blessings, when ambition rekindled the
nous en goûter H. art. * *charme* m. art. *rallumer*
 flames of war, and forced us to put our frontiers in a state of
feu sing. art. J. *de mettre* *frontière* f. *
 defence. The savage is almost continually at war; he cannot remain
presque toujours
 at rest. He has acted, on this occasion, like a great man.
repos. *dans* *en* *

CHAPTER VII.

OF THE ADVERB.

288. THE *adverb* is a word which accompanies verbs, adjectives, and even other adverbs, to express their manner or circumstances.

289. REMARK. There are adjectives which are sometimes used as adverbs; as, *il chante juste*, he sings well; *elle chante faux*, she sings out of tune; *ils ne voient pas clair*, they do not see clear; *cette fleur sent bon*, this flower has a good smell, &c. The adjectives *juste*, *faux*, *clair*, and *bon*, here supply the place of adverbs.

290. Adverbs are of different kinds.

291. The most numerous are those which express manner, and are formed from adjectives by the following method:

292. RULE I. When the adjective ends in the masculine with a vowel, the adverb is formed by adding *ment*; as, *modeste-ment*, modestly; *poliment*, politely; *ingénû-ment*, ingenuously, &c.

293. EXCEPTIONS. *Impuni* makes *impunément*, and *traître*, *traîtreusement*.

294. The following six take *é* close before *ment*, instead of the *e* mute in the adjective:

aveuglement,	<i>blindly</i>	conformément,	<i>conformably</i>
commodément,	<i>commodiously</i>	énormément,	<i>enormously</i>
incommodément,	<i>incommodiously</i>	opiniâtrément	<i>obstinately</i>

295. RULE II. When the adjective ends with a consonant, in the masculine, the adverb is formed from the feminine termination, by adding *ment*; as, *grand*, *grandement*, greatly; *franc*, *franchement*, frankly; *naïf*, *naïvement*, artlessly, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

296. 1st, *Gentil*, makes *gentiment*, prettily.

297. 2d, The following eight adverbs,

communément,	<i>commonly</i>	importunément,	<i>importunately</i>
confusément,	<i>confusedly</i>	obscurément,	<i>obscurely</i>

diffusément,	<i>diffusedly</i>	précisément,	<i>precisely</i>
expressément	<i>expressly</i>	profondément,	<i>deeply</i>

take before *ment* the *é* close, instead of the *e* mute, in the feminine of the adjectives from which they are derived.

298. REMARK. The six following adverbs are not derived from adjectives :

comment,	<i>how</i>	profusément,	<i>lavishly</i>
incessamment,	<i>presently</i>	nuitamment,	<i>by night</i>
notamment,	<i>especially</i>	sciemment,	<i>knowingly</i>

299. 3d, Adjectives ending in *nt* form their adverbs by changing *nt* into *mmment* ; as *consta-nt*, *consta-mmment*, constantly ; *éloque-nt*, *éloque-mmment*. Except *lent* and *présent*, the only two of this class that follow the second general rule, making *lentement* and *présentement*.

300. REMARK. Most adverbs denoting manner, and a few others, have the three degrees of comparison ; as, *profondément*, *aussi*, *plus*, or *moins profondément*, *fort*, *bien*, or *très-profondément*, and *le plus profondément*.

301. The following degrees of comparison are irregular :

POSITIVE.	COMPARATIVE.	SUPERLATIVE.
bien, <i>well</i>	mieux, <i>better</i>	le mieux, <i>the best</i>
mal, <i>bad</i>	pis, <i>worse</i>	le pis, <i>the worst</i>
peu, <i>little</i>	moins <i>less</i>	le moins <i>the least</i>

EXERCISE ON THESE ADVERBS.

Bourdaloue and Massillon have both spoken very eloquently
l'un et l'autre
 on ²evangelical ¹truths ; but (the former) has principally (proposed
art. évangélique *celui-là* *se pro-*
 to himself) to convince the mind ; (the latter) has generally had in
poser de convaincre *celui-ci* *en*
 view to touch the heart. Several of † La Bruyère's characters are
vue de *art.*
 as finely drawn as they are delicately expressed. Buffon is one of
finement tracé * *
 the best writers of the ²last ¹century ; he thinks deeply, describes for-
siècle m. *peindre for-*
 cibly, and expresses himself (with dignity). Corneille and Racine are
tement, *noblement.*
 the two best ³French ²tragic ¹poets ; the pieces of the former are
tragique *f.*
²strongly ³but ⁴incorrectly ¹written ; those of the latter are more regu-
 larly beautiful, more purely expressed, and more delicately conceived.
beau, *pensé.*

302. There are likewise various other sorts of adverbs

OF	{ Affirmation,	as	<i>Certes</i> , certainly ; <i>oui</i> , yes.
	{ Consent,	as	<i>Soit</i> , be it so ; <i>volontiers</i> , willingly.
	{ Doubt,	as	<i>Peut-être</i> , perhaps.
	{ Denial,	as	<i>Non</i> , <i>ne</i> , <i>ne pas</i> , <i>ne point</i> , no, not.

† Translate, *Of the characters of La Bruyère*.—All such phrases are rendered in French in this manner.

EXERCISE ON THE ADVERBS OF AFFIRMATION, &c.

Certainly, either I mistake, or the business passed (in that manner). *ou se tromper, se passer J.*
 Do you think that he listens willingly to this proposal? *ainsi. écouter **
 Have you ever read in Racine the famous scene of Phædra's delirium? *f. Phèdre délire m.*
 Yes, I have; and I own it is one of the finest of the ²French *la lue; avouer que ce*
 'theatre. Perhaps you will discover, on a second perusal of La *dans lecture f.*
 Fontaine's Fables, beauties which you did not perceive at first. *f. que avoir H. aperçues à la f.*
 Will you have some? No. Will you not have any? The *Vouloir F. * en **
 man who (is willing) to do good is not stopped by any obstacle. *vouloir F. * * art. arrêté aucun*
 I will pay him what I owe, but not (all at once). *lui ce que lui non pas à la fois.*

303. OF { Order, or { *Premièrement, first; secondement, secondly, &c.*
 Rank, { *D'abord, at first; ensuite, après, afterwards, then; auparavant, before.*
 Place, or { *Où, where; ici, here; là, there; de-ça, on this side; de-là, on that side; partout, every where; près, proche, near, nigh; loin, far, &c.*
 Distance, {

EXERCISE ON THE ADVERBS OF ORDER, &c.

We ought first to avoid doing evil; afterwards we ought to do *Il faut * de art. **
 good. 'Read ²books ⁴of ⁵instruction ²first, and then you may *art. art. **
 proceed to those of entertainment. If you will go, settle *passer L. agrément. vouloir s'en aller régler*
 first what is to be done. The painter had (brought together) *auparavant falloir * * A. rassembler*
 in the same picture several ²different ¹objects:—here, a troop of Bac- *un tableau Bac-*
 chants: there, a troop of young people; here, a sacrifice; there, a *chante: gens*
 disputation of philosophers. Sesostris carried his conquests farther *dispute Sésostriis pousser conquête*
 than Alexander did afterwards. Call upon your cousin; he *ne faire J. depuis. Passer chez*
 lives ²near ¹here. I cannot see that, if I be not near it. When *loger F. auprès * Quand*
 he knew where he was, he began to fear the consequence of *savoir J. H. commencer J. suite*
 his imprudence. Contemplate (at a distance) lofty mountains, *de loin art. haut f*
 if you wish to behold prospects ever varied and ever new. *vouloir * découvrir site m.*

304. OF TIME.	Present	{	<i>Maintenant</i> , now; à <i>présent</i> , at present; <i>actuellement</i> , this moment, &c.
	Past	{	<i>Hier</i> , yesterday; <i>avant-hier</i> , the day before yesterday; <i>autrefois</i> , formerly, &c.
	Future,	{	<i>Demain</i> , to-morrow; <i>après-demain</i> , the day after to-morrow, &c.
	Indeterminate	{	<i>Souvent</i> , often; <i>d'ordinaire</i> , generally; <i>quelquefois</i> , sometimes; <i>matin</i> , early; <i>tôt</i> , soon; <i>tard</i> , late, &c.

EXERCISE ON THE ADVERBS OF TIME.

I have finished the work you prescribed me; what do you wish
achever *que* *ordonner* I. *que* *vouloir*
me to do now? Formerly, education was neglected; it is ³now
que je * Q. *on*
²(very much) ¹attended to; it is (to be hoped) that ³new ⁴views
beaucoup s'occuper en; falloir F. espérer A. on
will ²soon ¹(be adopted). They grieved (at it) yesterday; now
adopter. On s'affliger H. en aujourd'hui
they laugh (at it); to-morrow, it will no longer (be thought) of. It is
rire en; on plus penser L. y.
one of those accidents which it is sometimes impossible to avoid. The
de
dew ³incommoded ¹me ²(very much); I shall not (in future)
serein m. G. désormais
walk so late. ²Rude ³and ⁴coarse ¹criticism gene-
se promener Malhonnête grossier une f.
rally (does greater injury) to the person who indulges himself in
*nuire plus se permettre * **
it, than to him who is the object (of it).
celle en.

305. OF	Quantity,	as	{	<i>Peu</i> , little, few; <i>assez</i> , enough; <i>trop</i> , too much; <i>beaucoup</i> , much, very much, many; <i>tant</i> , so much, &c.
	Comparison,	as	{	<i>Plus</i> , more; <i>moins</i> , less; <i>aussi</i> , so; <i>autant</i> , as much, &c.

EXERCISE ON THE ADVERBS OF QUANTITY, &c.

There are many people who have pretensions; but very few who
*gens * * à en*
have such as are well founded. To ²embellish ³a ⁴subject ¹too much,
Q. * * * * *de fondé f. pl. **
frequently betrays a want of judgment and taste. One very often
souvent être fautive
experiences disgust in the midst of ²the most riotous ¹pleasures.
trouver art. ennui à des bruyant
She is a ²giddy ³and ⁴thoughtless ¹woman, who speaks much and
Ce léger inconséquent
reflects little. She has so much kindness, that it is impossible
réfléchir de de
not to love her These stuffs are beautiful; consequently they (are
étouffe f. aussi coûtent

dear). This book has merit; but there are others as good. If he
cher. *en* *de aussi*
 has done that, I can do (as much). What I say to you (about it) is
en *autant.* *en*
 meant less to give you pain, than to apprize you of the language
** pour faire* *avertir* *propos pl.*
 (that is used). She is six years younger than her brother. Nobody
qu'on tient. *avoir* *de moins*
 is more interested than you are ³(in the success) of ¹the ²affair.
ne ** à ce que réussir Q.* ***
 You do not offer enough for this garden: give something more. The
offrir *de* *de* ***
¹more ⁴ignorant ²we ³are, the ⁵less we (believe ourselves so).
*on est, ** *on* *croit l'être.*

CHAPTER VIII.

OF CONJUNCTIONS.

306. THE conjunction is a word which serves to connect words or sentences; as, *Il pleure et rit en même temps*, he cries *and* laughs at the same time: the word *et* unites the first sentence, *il pleure*, with the second, *il rit*. Likewise in *Pierre et Paul rient*, Peter *and* Paul laugh: the word *et* unites these two sentences into one, *Pierre rit* and *Paul rit*.

307. There are different kinds of conjunctions.

308. To unite two words under the same affirmation, or under the same negation, *et* is used for the affirmation and *ni*, neither, nor, for the negation.

309. To denote an alternative or distinction—*ou*, either, or; *soit, que*, whether, or; *tantôt*, sometimes, &c.

310. To restrict an idea—*sinon*, but, except; *quoique, encore que*, though, although; *à moins que*, unless, till.

EXERCISE ON THESE CONJUNCTIONS.

Gold and silver are metals less useful than iron. To listen
art. *art.* *art.* ***
 with joy to a slanderer, and to applaud him, is to cherish the serpent
** médisant,* ** lui, ce* ** réchauffer*
 which stings, that he may sting more effectually. I like neither
piquer, afin que *plus sûrement.* *les*
 flatterers nor the wicked. Those who have never suffered, know
flatteur *pl.* *savoir*
 nothing; they know neither good nor evil. You may choose
connaître *art. bien* *art. mal.* *avez à choisir*
 either a happy mediocrity or a sphere more elevated, but exposed to
de *de* *f.*
 many dangers. He is an ²inconsistent ¹man; he is sometimes of one
bien *Ce* *inconséquent* *tantôt*
 opinion and sometimes of another. I have (nothing more) to say to
avis *ne* *autre chose*

you, only that I will have it so. I shall not yet proceed to the perusal
sinon que vouloir * * *encore* *lecture* f.
 of the authors of the second class, unless you advise me to do so.
ordre m. *ne conseiller* Q. * * *le*

311. To express opposition—*mais*, but; *cependant*, yet, nevertheless;
néanmoins, for all that, however; *pourtant*, however, though; *toutefois*,
bien que, although.

312. To express a condition—*si*, if; *sinon que*, except that; *pourvu*
que, provided that; *à condition que*, on condition that.

313. To express consent—*à la vérité*, indeed; *à la bonne heure*,
 very well.

314. For explanation—*savoir*, *c'est-à-dire*, viz., that is to say;
comme, as.

EXERCISE.

The serpent bites; it is only a bite; but from this bite the venom
ce ne que morsure f; *venin*
 communicates itself to the whole body: the slanderer speaks; it is but
ne que
 a word; but this word resounds every where. (That is) certainly a
parole f. *retentir* *Voilà*
 superb picture; nevertheless, there is some incorrectness in the design.
tableau; *incorrection* pl. *dessein*.
 Although Homer, according to Horace, slumbers (at times), he (is)
Homère, *sommeiller* Q. *quelquefois* *n'en est*
 nevertheless the first of all poets. You will succeed, provided you
pas moins art. *réussir*,
 act with vigor. We have within us two faculties that are seldom
agir Q. *en* * *
 united, viz: imagination and judgment.
 art. f. art. m.

315. To express relation or parity—*comme*, as; *ainsi*, thus, so; *de*
même, as, just as; *ainsi que*, as; *autant que*, as much as; *si que*, as, &c.

316. To express augmentation—*d'ailleurs*, besides, moreover; *outre*
que, besides that; *de plus, au surplus*, besides, furthermore.

317. For diminution—*au moins, du moins, pour le moins*, at least.

318. To express the cause or the reason of a thing—*car*, for; *comme*,
 as; *parce que*, because; *puisque*, since; *pour que*, that, in order that, &c.

EXERCISE.

The most beautiful flowers last but a moment; thus ³human
durer ne que art.
²life ¹passes away. The (greatest part) of mankind have, like
 * *plupart* f. art. *l'homme* pl.
 plants, ²hidden ¹qualities that chance discovers. Madame
 art. *caché propriété* f. art. *hazard fait découvrir*.
 de Sévigné's letters are models of elegance, simplicity, and taste;
 art. *de* *de*
 besides, they are replete with ²interesting ¹anecdotes. Nothing is
plein de f. * *de*
 more entertaining than history; besides, nothing is more instructive.
amusant art. * *de*

Circumstances show us to others, and still more to our-
 art. *Occasion faire connaître encore*
 selves. I shall always advise you to take the ancients as your
conseiller de pour
 guides; at least, ²quit ¹but seldom the way which they
écarter de ne vous que de route f. que
 have traced for you. We must, at least, know the ²general ¹principles
*tracée * Il faut,*
 of a language, before (we take upon ourselves) to teach it.
*langue f. de se mêler A. de * enseigner*
 Certain people hate grandeur, because it lowers and hu-
 f. *gens art. f. elle les rabaisser qu'elle*
 miliates them, and makes them feel the privation of the
que elle leur
 advantages which they covet.
bien aimer.

319. To draw a conclusion—*or*, now; *donc*, then; *par conséquent*, consequently; *c'est pourquoi*, therefore.

320. To express a circumstance—*quand*, *lorsque*, when; *pendant que*, *tandis que*, whilst, while; *tant que*, as long as; *depuis que*, ever since; *avant que*, before; *dès-que*, *aussitôt que*, *d'abord que*, as soon as; *à peine*, hardly, scarcely; *après que*, after that; *enfin*, in fine, finally, to conclude, &c.

321. To express a transition—*car*, for; *en effet*, indeed, in effect; *au reste*, besides, otherwise; *à propos*, now I think of it; *après tout*, after all.

EXERCISE.

We ought to love what is amiable: now, virtue is amiable; there-
*Il faut * cequi art.*

fore we ought to love virtue. We ought to practise what the
** art. * ce que*

Gospel commands us; now, it commands us, not only to forgive
évangile m. non de pardonner

our enemies, but also to love them. Despréaux was (extremely
à encore de de la plus grande

particular) in not coming late, when he was invited to dinner; he
exactitude à A. trop H.

said that all the faults of those who (are waited for) present themselves
H. défaut se font attendre

to those who wait for them. The pride which possesses us,
*attendre * posséder tout*

visible as it is, escapes our eyes, while it manifests itself to the eyes of
que à

the public, and displeases (every one). After we had examined
choquer tous les esprits. A.

that ²singular ¹effect, we (inquired into) (its) causes. We had hardly
rechercher J. en les H.

done, when he (came in). Pride counterbalances all our imperfections;
finir, que entrer J. contre-peser misère

for, whether it hides them, or whether it discovers them, it glories in
ou cacher si se glorifier de

knowing them. (None but) an Englishman can (be a judge)
connaître A. Il n'y a que Anglais qui Q. juger A.

of Shakspeare; for what foreigner is sufficiently versed in the English *quel* *anglais*
 language to discover the ²sublime ¹beauties of that author?
langue f. pour

322. The conjunction *que* is always placed between two ideas, both necessary to complete the sense; as, *Il est très-important que tout le monde soit instruit*, it is of great importance *that* every body should be well instructed. It differs from the relative pronoun *que*, as it can never be converted into *lequel, laquelle*. The conjunction *que* is generally repeated in French before every member of a period, although it is often understood in English.

EXERCISE.

(As long as I live), this image will be before my eyes; and, if
Toute ma vie f. f. peint f.
 ever the gods permit me to reign, I shall not forget, after ³so ⁴terrible ¹an
faire de
²example, that a king (is not) worthy to govern (nor) happy in
n'est de commander et n'est
 his power, (but in proportion as) he subjects it to reason. I
puissance f. qu'autant que soumettre art.
 am very glad to see that you do not love flattery, and that one
de
 (runs no risk) in speaking to you with sincerity.
ne hazarde rien à A.

CHAPTER IX.

OF INTERJECTIONS.

323. Interjections are words which serve to express the sudden emotions of the soul. The only point to be attended to, is not to place them between words which custom has made inseparable. There are interjections for every feeling, viz: Of

<i>Pain</i>	ahi, aïe! ouf! ah!	<i>Astonishment</i>	oh! bon Dieu! miséricorde! peste!
<i>Grief</i>	hélas! mon Dieu, &c.	<i>Warning</i>	gare! hem! holà, ho!
<i>Fear</i>	ha! hé!	<i>Checking</i>	tout beau! holà!
<i>Joy</i>	ah! bon, bon! o!	<i>Encouraging</i>	alerte! allons! ça cou-
<i>Aversion</i>	fi! fi donc! oh, oh!	<i>Applauding</i>	bravo, vivat! [rage!
<i>Disgust</i>	pouah, pouah!	<i>Encoring</i>	bis, bis!
<i>Indignation</i>	foin de!	<i>Calling</i>	hola! ho! hem, hem!
<i>Imprecation</i>	peste de, la peste de!	<i>Derision</i>	oh! eh! zest! oh, oh, oh!
<i>Disbelief</i>	chansons, tarare!	<i>Silence</i>	chut! paix! s
<i>Surprise</i>	ouais!		

PART II.

THE SYNTAX;

OR,

WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR CONSTRUCTION.

CHAPTER I.

OF THE SUBSTANTIVE.

324. THERE are some substantives which are never used in the plural; such are—1. The names of metals, considered in their original state; as, *l'or*, gold; *le platine*, platina.—2. The names of virtues and vices; as, *la chasteté*, chastity; *l'ivrognerie*, drunkenness.—3. Some words of a physical or moral nature; as, *l'ouïe*, hearing; *l'odorat*, smelling; *le sang*, blood; *le sommeil*, sleep; *la pauvreté*, poverty.—4. The infinitive of verbs and adjectives used substantively, together with some other words, which cannot be reduced to any particular class.

325. Others, on the contrary, which likewise cannot be reduced to any particular class, are never used in the singular; as, *annales*, annals; *ancêtres*, ancestors; *mouchettes*, snuffers, &c.

OF COMPOUND NOUNS.

Of the formation of their Plural

326. When a noun is compounded of a substantive and an adjective, they both take the sign of the plural; as, *un gentilhomme*, a nobleman; *des gentilshommes*, noblemen.

327. When a noun is compounded of two substantives, united by a preposition, the first only takes the sign of the plural; as, *arc-en-ciel*, a rainbow; *des arcs-en-ciel*, rainbows.

328. When a noun is compounded of a preposition or verb and a substantive, the substantive alone is put in the plural; as, *un entre-sol* (a low room between two floors), *des entre-sols*; *un garde-fou* (rails on bridges), *des garde-fous*.

329. REMARK. There is a small number of substantives composed of a verb and an adverb; as, *un passe-partout*, a master or general key; or of a verb repeated; as, *passe-passe*, sleight of hand: they never take the sign of the plural.

See page 41, art. 103 and following.

EXERCISE ON SUBSTANTIVE AND COMPOUND NOUNS.

Gold is the most pure, the most precious, the most ductile, and, art. *parfait*,
 after platina, the heaviest of all metals. Chastity is an obligation
 art. m. *pesant* art. art. * *
 of all times, all ages, and all conditions. Intoxication
 art. *de* art. *de* art. *état* m. art. *Ivresse*
 which proceeds from beer is of longer duration than that which pro-
venir art. * * *celle*
 ceeds from wine. It is the sense of feeling which teaches
 art. *Ce* art. *toucher* *apprendre*
 to guard against the errors of sight. Sleep is the image of
à se garantir *de* art. art.
 death. ²(Early) ¹learn to distinguish truth from
 art. *De bonne-heure* *apprendre* *distinguer* art.
 falsehood. That is more bitter than wormwood. Dignity
 art. *faux*. *amer* *de* art. *absinthe*. art. *Élévation*
 of mind was formerly the (distinguishing mark of)
 art. *sentiment* m. pl. H. *ce qui* * *distinguer* H.
 noblemen. One of the buttresses of the vault has fallen.
 art. *arc-boutant* m. pl. *tomber*.
 He is always making (cock-and-bull stories). The Tartars always
 * *fait des* *coq-à-l'âne* m. *Tartare*
 form the scouts of an army. The fish-carriers did not
être *avant-courier* m. *chasse-marée* m.
 arrive in time. This door is only fastened with a latch; and
 J. *à* *ne que fermer* *à* * art. *loquet* m. *
 all (the persons) in the house have each their key.
ceux *de* *passe-partout* m.

CHAPTER II.

OF THE ARTICLE.

330. THE difficulty attendant on rendering into French the *a* or *an* which precedes a substantive, when it follows the verb *to be*, will easily be removed by examining whether that substantive be restricted by a particular idea: if it be not restricted, the *a* or *an* is not expressed in French; thus, *I am a Frenchman*, *I am a prince*, must be translated by *je suis Français*, *je suis prince*. But if it be restricted, then the *a* or *an* must be expressed by the word *un* placed before the substantive; as, *I am a Frenchman of an illustrious family*, *I am a very unfortunate prince*, must be translated by *je suis un Français d'une illustre maison*, *je suis un prince très-malheureux*.

331. When the verb *être* is preceded by the demonstrative *ce*, in phrases of this kind, *un* is always required before the substantive; as, *c'est un trésor*, &c.

332. The French do not use the article before substantives expressing the quality of a preceding noun, though in cases of this kind the English

usually employ the article *the*, and still more frequently *a* or *an*; as, *Télémaque, fils d'Ulysse roi d'Itaque*, Telemachus, *the* son of Ulysses king of Ithaca; *le Duc d'York, prince du sang*, the Duke of York, a prince of the blood.

EXERCISE ON THE ARTICLE.

I am a Frenchman and a merchant; after having (been at) the most
négoçant; A. parcouru
 famous (trading towns) in the Levant, (my commercial concerns) have
échelle f. de m. les affaires de mon commerce
 brought me here. I am an unhappy Frenchman, who, a ²striking
conduire ^{* mémorable}
¹example of the vicissitudes of fortune, seeks an asylum where I
art. chercher asile m.
 may end my days in peace. He was a man of ²uncommon ¹probity
puisse finir Ce un rare f.
 and of ²tried ¹virtue: (as a reward) for the services he
un éprouvé f. pour le récompenser de que
 had rendered to the church and state, the king has made him a
 H. m. pl. *église à le*
 bishop. Neoptolemus had hardly told me that he was a Greek, when
évêque. Néoptolème eut à peine dit que
 I (cried out), "O, enchanting words! after so many years of silence
s'écrier J. doux parole f. de
 and ²unceasing ¹pain! O, my son, what misfortune, what
de sans consolation malheur m.
 storm, or rather what ²propitious ¹wind has brought you hither
tempête f. plutôt favorable conduire
 to end my woes?" He replied, "I am of the island of Scyros, I
pour mal? m. répondre J. île
 am returning thither; (I am said to be) the son of Achilles."
retourner y on dit que je suis Achille.

333. Without entering more minutely into this subject, the following comparative table, in which the same words are exhibited, according to circumstances, both with and without the article, will, it is presumed, be considered as a sufficient illustration of custom.

COMPARATIVE TABLE.

WITH THE ARTICLE.

The writings of Cicero are full of
 the soundest ideas.
 Divest yourself of the prejudices
se défaire
 of childhood.
 The different kinds of animals that
 are upon the earth.
 He enters into a detail of the rules
 of a good grammar.
 He affects circumlocutions.
chercher des détour.

WITHOUT THE ARTICLE.

The writings of Cicero are full of
²sound ¹ideas.
 Have no prejudice (with regard
sur
 to) this question.
 There are different kinds of animals
 upon the earth.
 He enters into a long detail of ²fri-
 volous ¹rules.
 He affects long circumlocutions, in
 order to explain the ²simplest
¹things.

WITH THE ARTICLE.

He loads his memory with the verses
of Virgil and the phrases of Cicero.

Essays supported by ²strong ¹ex-
Discours soutenu
pressions.

He has collected precepts of
recueillir *sur*
morality.

mœurs pl.

Make use of the tokens
se servir *signe dont*
(we agreed upon).
nous sommes convenu.

The choice of studies, proper &c.

Knowledge has always been the
Connaissance pl.

object of the esteem, the praise,
éloge pl.

and the admiration of men.

The riches of the mind can (only
be acquired) by study.
ne que s'acquérir.

The gifts of fortune are uncertain.
fragiles.

The connexion of proofs makes
enchaînement *preuve*
them please and persuade.
qu'elles

It is by meditation upon what we
read, that we acquire ²fresh
¹knowledge.

connaissance pl.

The advantages of memory.

The memory of facts is the most
showy.
brillant.

The aim of good masters should
devoir F.
be to cultivate the mind and
être de
reason of their pupils.

The taste of mankind is liable to
homme pl.
great changes.

He has no need of the lessons you
wish to give him.

France, Spain, England, &c.

The isle of Japan.

He comes from China.

He arrives from America.

The extent of Persia.

WITHOUT THE ARTICLE.

He loads his memory with ⁴insipid
¹verses ²and ³phrases.

Essays supported by ²lively ¹ex-
vive
pressions.

A collection of precepts in morals.
* *recueil* *sur*

We are obliged to use some ²ex-
terior ¹signs in order to make
ourselves understood.
nous entendre.

He has made a choice of books
which are, &c.

It is an object of esteem, of praise,
Ce
and admiration

There is in Peru a prodigious
le Pérou
abundance of ²useless ¹riches.

Gifts of fortune.

Bien

There is in this book an admirable
connexion of ²solid ¹proofs.

It is by meditation that we acquire
²fresh ¹knowledge.
nouveau

There are different kinds of memory.
He has only a memory of facts.

He has an air of pedantry that
ton m. maître
shocks you at first sight.
abord.

Society of ²chosen ¹men.

He has no need of lessons.
avoir besoin

Kingdom of France, of Spain, of
England, &c.

Island of Candia.

He comes from Poland.

He arrives from Italy.

He is gone to Persia.

en

WITH THE ARTICLE.

He has returned from the East Indies, from Asia, &c.

He lives in Peru, in Japan, in the
à

Indies, in Jamaica, &c.

The politeness of France, &c.

The circumference of England.

The interest of Spain.

The invention of printing is attributed to Germany.

He comes from ²French ¹Flanders.
français Flandre f.

WITHOUT THE ARTICLE.

He has returned from Spain, from Persia, &c.

He lives in Italy, in France, in London, in Avignon, &c.
à à

The fashions of France.

The horses of England.

The wines of Spain.

The empire of Germany is divided into a great number of states.

He comes from Flanders.

ON MEASURE, WEIGHT, &c.

334. The English make use of *a* or *an* before nouns of measure, weight, and purchase; as, *wheat is sold for a crown a bushel; butter sells for sixpence a pound; wine sold yesterday for forty crowns a hogshead, 'tis more than a groat a bottle.* But the French make use of the article *le, la*; as, *le blé se vend un écu le boisseau; le beurre se vend six sous la livre; le vin se vendit hier quarante écus le muid, c'est plus de quatre sous la bouteille.*

335. When speaking of *time*, *a* or *an* is expressed in French by the preposition *par*; as, *so much a week, tant par semaine.*

336. In English *a* is sometimes put between the pronoun which expresses admiration and the substantive that accompanies it; as, *what a beauty!* but in French, the *un* is never expressed in similar cases; as, *quelle beauté!*

337. In English, when the adverbs *more* and *less* are repeated to express a comparison, they must be preceded by the article; as, *the more difficult a thing is, the more honorable it is.* But in French, the article is omitted; as, *plus une chose est difficile, plus elle est honorable.*

EXERCISE ON MEASURE, WEIGHT, &c.

Corn sells for eight shillings a bushel. Veal and mut-
art. *blé m. se vendre ** schelling boisseau. art. *Veau art.*

ton cost ten pence a pound. This lace (is sold at) ²half ¹a ³guinea
coûter sou livre f. f. *se vendre F. demi guinée*

an ell. The best ²French ¹wines (are sold at) from twelve to fifteen
aune. de France se vendre F.

shillings a bottle. My father goes to Ireland four or five times a year.
bouteille f, en Irlande fois an.

He gives his son seven shillings a day. It (is necessary), if you
falloir

desire (to improve fast) that you should take a lesson three
*faire des progrès rapides prenez **

times a week. The more I contemplate those precious remains of
reste m.

antiquity, the more I am struck with wonder. What a beautiful
art. *frappé de étonnement.*

morning! come, let us go and walk in the fields.

*matinée f. * se promener A. champ m.*

CHAPTER III.

OF THE ADJECTIVE.

338. It has been said (page 46) that an adjective *agrees* in gender and number with the substantive which it qualifies: from this rule, however, must be excepted, *nu*, bare, and *demi*, half, when placed *before* a substantive, and *feu*, late, when *before* the article or a pronominal adjective; as *il va nu-pieds*, he goes barefoot; *je suis à vous dans une demi-heure*, I will be with you in half an hour; *feu la reine*, the late queen; *feu ma mère*, my late mother. But the agreement takes place if *nu* and *demi* be placed *after* the substantive, and *feu* between the article or pronominal adjective and the substantive; as, *il a les pieds nus*, his feet are bare; *je suis à vous dans une heure et demie*, I will be with you in an hour and a half; *la feue reine*, *ma feue mère*.

339. An adjective frequently serves to qualify two or more substantives expressing either persons or things of different genders.

340. If it be used to qualify more than two substantives, it must agree with them, for either these substantives perform the office of subject; as, *la grammaire, la logique, et la rhétorique, méthodiquement enseignées, ne s'oublient guère*, grammar, logic, and rhetoric, when taught with method, are seldom forgotten: or they constitute the regimen; as, *c'est un homme d'une valeur, d'une vertu et d'une fidélité, éprouvées*, he is a man of tried courage, virtue, and fidelity.

341. If it be used to qualify only two substantives, the substantive of persons must be distinguished from the substantive of things; with the first, the rules of agreement are to be observed in all cases; with the second, custom allows, when the substantives form the regimen, to make the adjective agree with the last only; as, *elle avait les yeux et la bouche ouverte*. Nevertheless, modern grammarians prefer the agreement, even in this case.

342. With respect to phrases like the following, *les langues anglaise et française sont fort cultivées*, though they are in opposition to the rules of grammar, yet it is allowable to use them. However, in strict propriety, it seems better to say, *la langue française et l'anglaise sont très-cultivées*.

EXERCISE ON THE ADJECTIVE.

He ran through the streets like a madman, bare-foot and bare-headed.

H. * rue f. tête.
His ²legs ¹(were) ³bare. Give me half a guinea, and then you
* art. jambe f. il avait

(will only owe) me a guinea and a half. I shall be at home in
ne devrez plus que *chez-moi dans*
half an hour. Come before ²half ¹(past one). ²The ¹late queen
une heure et.

was idolized. The late queen was universally regretted. His impetuosity

H. adoré. J.
and courage, long restrained, soon surmounted all obstacles. The
son enchaîné, J. art.

imagination and genius of Ariosto, although irregular in their
 art. *l'Arioste, quoique*
 course, yet interest, (hurry along), and captivate the reader,
mar-che, néanmoins attacher, entraîner, *lecteur,*
 who can never be tired of admiring them. There are in Gessner's
se lasser A.

idylls sentiments and a grace altogether affecting. The good taste
 art. *idylle* *tout-à-fait touchant.*
 of the Egyptians, (from that time), made them love solidity and
dès-lors J. *leur* art.
 unadorned regularity. In those climates, the dry and the rainy
tout nu *sec* *pluvieux*
 monsoons divide the year.
mousson f. se diviser *année.*

Difference of construction between the English and French Languages.

343. In English, the substantive of *measure* is placed before the substantive or adjective expressing the dimensions; as, *a tower two hundred feet high*, or *in height*. In French, the word which expresses dimension is placed first, if it be an adjective, and the preposition *de* be added to it as a regimen; as, *une tour haute de deux cents pieds*. But if it be a substantive, or an adjective used substantively, it is placed after, with the preposition *de*, either before the noun of measure or of dimension; as, *une tour de deux cents pieds de haut*, or *de hauteur*. This last mode is the most elegant.

344. The English manner of expressing *dimensions* is to use the verb *to be*; as, *the walls of Algiers are twelve feet thick and thirty feet high*: the French, in general, make use of the verb *avoir* when there are two constructions; as, *les murs d'Alger ont douze pieds d'épaisseur, et trente de hauteur*; or *les murs d'Alger ont douze pieds d'épaisseur sur trente de hauteur*. This second mode of expression is most generally adopted.

345. In comparative sentences, to express difference, the English sentence often runs thus: *she is taller than her sister by the whole head*. The French, in this manner: *elle est plus grande que sa sœur de toute la tête*

EXERCISE ON THE DIFFERENCE OF CONSTRUCTION.

This trunk, which is six feet long, is very convenient. You will
coffre m. *commode.*
 be stopped in your march by a river three hundred feet broad. This
arrêté *f.*
 observatory, which is twelve hundred feet high, is very proper for
 knowing the true position of the stars. It is a terrace a hundred
connaître A. *astre m.* *Ce* *terrace f.*
 and eighty feet broad and twelve hundred feet long. The walls of
large *mur m.*
 our garden are twenty feet high and three broad. It is one of the
jardin *Ce*

finest stones that (was ever seen): it is twenty feet long and six
on ait jamais vues: longueur
 thick. This ditch is nine feet six inches deep and six
épaisseur. fossé m. ponce m. profondeur f.
 feet broad. My son is taller than yours by two inches.

Regimen of the Adjectives.

346. Several adjectives have a regimen; some require the preposition *de* and others the preposition *à* before a noun or a verb, which is then called the regimen or government of the adjective.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Digne de récompense,</i>	Worthy of reward.
<i>Utile à l'homme,</i>	Useful to man.
<i>Digne de régner,</i>	Worthy of reigning.
<i>Content de son sort, de vivre, &c.</i>	Satisfied with his lot, with living.
<i>Beau à voir, bon à manger,</i>	Fine to the sight, good for eating.
<i>Apre au gain, avide d'honneur,</i>	Eager after gain, greedy of honor.
<i>Propre à la guerre,</i>	Fit for war.

347. *Récompense* is the government of the adjective *digne*, as it is joined to that adjective by the word *de*: *l'homme* is the government of the adjective *utile*, because it is joined to that adjective by the word *à*, and so of the rest.

EXERCISE ON THE REGIMEN OF THE ADJECTIVES.

²Virtuous ¹men are always worthy of esteem. A ²weak ¹mind
 art. *Vertueux* *toujours* *estime f.* *faible m.*
 is liable to many contradictions. A heart free from cares enjoys
sujet bien des f. *cœur m. libre de soin m. jouit*
 the greatest ²possible ¹felicity. Voltaire was always greedy of
de f. *fut* *avide*
 praise and insatiable of glory. Rousseau, endowed with a ²strong
louange f. pl. *doué de fort*
³and ⁴fiercy ¹imagination, was all his (life time) subject to frequent
bouillant f. *vie f. enclin à de*
 fits of misanthropy, and liable to all the variations (attendant upon it).
accès m. *sujet f.* *qui en sont la suite.*

PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES ON THE ARTICLE AND THE ADJECTIVES.

THE FAULTS OF INFANCY.

The amiable Louisa and her young brother Charles were gentle,
Louise H. doux,
 humane, and sensible. To the ²most interesting ¹person, Louisa joined
sensible, spirituel. intéressant figure f. Louise H.
 all the modesty, the pleasing ingenuousness, and ²artless ¹graces of her
f. heureux ingénuité f. naïf art. f.
 sex; and Charles, the vivacity, the fire, and the manly gracefulness
sexe m. f. feu m. mâle agrément m. pl.

of his. But these advantages, the ²precious ¹gifts of nature, were
du sien. *avantage* m. * *don* m. art. f. H.
 obscured by great defects. They were both inclined
un peu obscurci de *défaut* m. *l'un et l'autre enclin*
 to idleness, and liable to fits of sullenness and ill humor
 art. *paresse* f. *sujets des accès bouderie* f. de * *humeur*
 when they were contradicted. Faults are diseases of the soul,
lorsque H. *contredit.* art. *Défaut des maladies* ame,
²the ³cure ¹(of which) is the work of time. In (good dispositions),
guérison f. *dont* *ouvrage* art. m. *les ames bien nées*
 it is generally the fruit of the developement of reason and
elle d'ordinaire m. *développement* m. art. de
 the desire of pleasing. Though their parents ²were ³persuaded ¹(of this),
 m. A. *Quoique* S. en
 they employed, to hasten it, an expedient which succeeded. If
employer J. pour hâter la, *moyen* m. *leur réussir.* *
²they ¹were satisfied with them, contentment and joy were painted
 H. *content* de art. *satisfaction* f. art. f. H. *peint*
 in their countenances; if dissatisfied, they did not
sur *figure* f. * *en étaient-ils mécontent,* * *les*
 scold, but they received them with a ²sorrowful ¹air, a ²dejected
gronder H. H. *triste regard,* *abattu*
¹countenance, and every sign of chagrin and trouble.
maintien, *tous* art. *signe* m. pl. art. m. de art. *douleur.*
 Louisa and Charles were naturally kind and feeling; they could
naturellement bon sensible; ne pouvaient
 not long support the idea of having afflicted ²such ³tender
long-temps résister à *idée* A. *affligé des si tendre*
¹parents. They felt their error, burst into tears, and asked pardon.
 H. *faute* f. *fondre* H. *larme,* H. m.
²All ³was ¹immediately ⁴forgotten, and satisfaction (again smiled)
 H. *aussitôt oublié,* art. *contentement* m. *renâître* H.
 around. It was by this means that these amiable children ²soon
autour d'eux. Ce fut *moyen que* *bientôt*
¹became models of docility, complaisance, and application.
devenir J. *des modèle* m. de de

CHAPTER IV.

OF THE PRONOUNS.

OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

Of the Place of Personal Pronouns.—See page 61.

348. THERE is no difficulty in placing personal pronouns, when they act as subjects: the person who speaks always names himself last, and the person addressed is generally named first.

EXAMPLES.

Vous et moi, nous irons à la cam- You and I will go into the coun-
pagne, try.
Nous irons ce soir à la promenade, We will take a walk this evening,
vous, votre frère, et moi, you, your brother, and I.

EXERCISE.

My sister and I were walking by the last rays of the ²setting
nous H. à rayons m. couchant
¹sun, and we were saying, what a mild splendor does ²it ³still ¹spread
disions, éclat m. pas ne répand
over all nature! In the long ²winter ¹evenings, my father, my
art. de hiver soirée f.
brothers, and I (used to spend) two hours in the library, and
nous passer H. bibliothèque f. nous
to read there, (in order to) (unbend our minds) from the ²serious ¹studies
** lisions y, pour nous se délasser*
of the day, those ²amiable ¹poets who interest most the heart, by the charms
le plus
of a ²lively ¹imagination, and make us love truth, by disguising it under
riant art. en déguiser
the mask of an ²ingenious ¹fiction. You and your friend shall accompany
trait m. pl. f. accompagner
me to the museum, where we shall study nature in her three kingdoms.
musée m. où règle m.

349. RULE. The pronouns *il* and *ils* always represent a substantive masculine—*il*, if it be singular and *ils*, if it be plural; and *elle* and *elles*, on the contrary, represent a substantive feminine—*elle*, if it be singular, and *elles*, if plural.

350. Thus, in speaking of the rose, we should say, *elle a un parfum exquis, aussi est-elle la fleur la plus recherchée*, it has an exquisite fragrance, and is indeed the choicest of flowers—because *rose* is feminine and singular; and, in speaking of several ladies, *elles ont autant de modestie que de beauté, d'esprit, et de grâce*, they have as much modesty as they have beauty, wit, and accomplishments—because *dames* is feminine and plural.

EXERCISE.

(Look at) that magnificent building; it unites grace to beauty,
Regarder magnifique bâtiment m. réunir art. grâce f. art. f.
and elegance to simplicity. Ignorance is jealous, presumptuous,
art. f. art. f. f. présomptueux
and vain; it sees difficulties in nothing, (is surprised) at nothing,
ne de f. à rien, ne s'étonner de
and stops at nothing. Let us gather these roses; Heavens! what
ne s'arrêter à cueillir Ciel! quel
a sweet fragrance they exhale! Never judge from appearances;
** parfum exhaler! sur art. f.*
they are often deceitful: the wise man examines them, and does not
** * se*
decide upon them till he has had time to fix his judgment.
décider d'après f. que lorsque art. m. de fixer

351. With respect to pronouns, when used as a regimen, custom has established the following rules :

352. RULE I. The pronouns *me, te, se, leur, le, la, les, y, and en*, are generally placed before verbs, as are *nous, vous, and lui*, when without a preposition in French, whether they are or not in English.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Il me dit,</i>	he tells me.	<i>Je lui parle,</i>	I speak to him.
<i>Je le vois,</i>	I see him.	<i>J'y songerai,</i>	I will think of it.
<i>Je les écoute,</i>	I listen to them.	<i>J'en suis ravi,</i>	I am delighted at it.

EXERCISE.

(As soon as) he had explained to us the maxims of Socrates, he
*Dès que expliquer K. * Socrate,*
 said, you see that it is not without reason (he is looked upon) as
J. ce que on le regarde
 truly wise. He was continually saying to me, Yet a little patience,
un vrai de
 and you will disarm even envy itself. You have, no doubt,
*désarmer * art. être, sans doute,*
 (some foundation) for reproaching him with his faults; but is there
*fondé à A. lui de * art. m.*
 (any man) on earth that is exempt (from them)? To please
quelqu'un art. qui Q. en Pour
 her, you must never flatter her. To abandon one's self to ²metaphy-
lui, des métaphy-
 sical 'abstractions, is to plunge into an ²unfathomable 'abyss.
*sique ce * se jeter sans fond abîme m.*

353. RULE II. The pronouns *moi, toi, soi, nous, vous, lui, eux, elle, and elles*, are placed after verbs, when they are preceded by a preposition, in French, whether they are or not in English.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Cela dépend de moi,</i>	That depends on me.
<i>Je pense à toi,</i>	I think of thee.
<i>On s'occupe trop de soi,</i>	We are too attentive to ourselves.
<i>Que dites-vous d'eux ?</i>	What do you say of them ?

EXERCISE.

My father loved me so tenderly, that he thought of none but me,
H. penser H. à ne que
 (was wholly taken up) with me, and saw none but me in the universe.
ne s'occuper H. que de H.
 If you wish to obtain that favor, you must speak to him himself. It
de
 depended on you to excel your rivals, but you would not.
H. de de l'emporter sur le vouloir G.
²Philip, ³father ⁴of ⁵Alexander, ¹(being advised) to expel from
Philippe comme on conseillait à de chasser
 his dominions a man who (had been speaking) ill of him, I shall take care
état m. parler I. se garder bien
 not to do that, said he; he would go and slander me every where.
** * * en, J. * médire de*

354. RULE III. In imperative phrases, when affirmative, *moi, toi, nous, vous, lui, leur, eux, elle, elles, le, la, les, y*, and *en* are placed after verbs ; but, with a negation, *me, te, se, nous, vous, lui, leur, le, la, les, y*, and *en* are placed before verbs.

EXAMPLES.

AFFIRMATIVELY.

<i>Dites-moi,</i>	Tell me.
<i>Donnez-m'en la moitié,</i>	Give me half of it.
<i>Songez-y sérieusement,</i>	Think of it seriously.

NEGATIVELY.

<i>Ne me dites pas,</i>	Do not tell me.
<i>Ne m'en donnez point,</i>	Do not give me any.
<i>N'y songez pas,</i>	Do not think of it.

355. REMARK. If the pronouns *me, te, moi, toi*, intervene between an imperative and an infinitive, *me, te* are used when the imperative is without a regimen direct.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Venez me parler,</i>	Come and speak to me.
<i>Va te faire coëffer,</i>	Go and get thy hair dressed.

356. But *moi, toi* are used if the imperative have a regimen direct.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Laissez-moi faire,</i>	Let me do it.
<i>Fais-toi coëffer,</i>	Get thy hair dressed.

357. If *moi, toi*, when placed after the imperative, be followed by the pronoun *en*, they are changed into *me, te*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Donnez-m'en,</i>	Give me some.	<i>Retourne-t'en,</i>	Go back.
---------------------	---------------	-----------------------	----------

358. When there are two imperatives joined together by the conjunctions *et, ou*, it is most elegant to place the second pronoun before the verb.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Polissez-le sans cesse et le repolissez,</i>	Polish and repolish it continually.
<i>Gardez-les, ou les renvoyez,</i>	Keep them or send them back.

EXERCISE.

Listen to me ; do not condemn me without a hearing. Complain ;
écouter * * *m'écouter* A. *se plaindre* ;
 thou hast just cause of complaint : however, do not complain too
un sujet plainte :
 bitterly of the injustice of mankind. Give some. Do not give any.
amèrement art. *homme pl.* *en.* *en.*
 Think (of it). Do not think of it. Repeat to them continually, that,
y
 without honesty, one can never succeed in the world. Do not repeat to
on
 them continually the same things. Acknowledge him as your master,
Reconnaître pour
 and obey him. Tread upon that spider, and kill it.
lui. Marcher *araignée f. écraser*

359. RULE IV. When several pronouns accompany a verb, *me, te, se, nous, vous*, must be placed first; *le, la, les*, before *lui, leur*; and *y* before *en*, which is always the last.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Prêtez-moi ce livre ; je vous le</i>	Lend me that book ; I will return it
<i>rendrai demain ; si vous me le</i>	to you to-morrow ; if you refuse
<i>refusez, je saurai m'en passer,</i>	me, I can make shift without it.
<i>Aurez-vous la force de le leur</i>	Will you have resolution enough to
<i>dire ?</i>	mention it to them ?
<i>Il n'a pas voulu vous y mener,</i>	He would not take you there.
<i>Je vous y en porterai,</i>	I will bring you some there.

360. EXCEPTION. In an imperative sentence, when affirmative, *le, la, les*, are always placed first; as, *donnez-le-moi*, give it me; *offrez-la-lui*, offer it to him; *conduisez-les-y*, conduct them thither: and *moi* is placed after *y*; as, *menez-y-moi*, carry me thither: but *nous* will precede *y*; as, *menez-nous-y*, take us thither.

361. REMARK. The word *même* is sometimes added to the pronouns *moi, toi, soi, nous, vous, eux, lui, elle, elles*, to specify the person or thing spoken of.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Ils se sont perdus eux-mêmes,</i>	They have ruined themselves.
<i>Le monde estime bien des choses</i>	The world prizes many things which,
<i>qui, en elles-mêmes, sont fort</i>	in themselves, are worthless.
<i>méprisables,</i>	

EXERCISE.

You wish to make a present to your sister. (There is) a beautiful
*vouloir ** *Voilà*
 fan; you should present her with it. (How many) people are there
*éventail m. devoir N. offrir lui ** *Que de gens * **
 (destitute of) merit and without occupation, (who would be mere nothings)
sans ne tenir N. à rien
 in society, did not gaming introduce them (into it). I shall speak
 art. *si* art. *jeu m. introduire H. y.*
 to them (about it), and give you a faithful account of it. It is cer-
en je rendre exact compte m.
 tain that old Geronte has refused his daughter to Valère: but because
 art.
 he does not give her to him, it does not follow that he will give her to you.
s'ensuivre

OF THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

362. The relative pronouns are *qui, que, dont, le quel, &c.*—See page 69.

363. RULE I. *Qui*, when a relative, is always of the number, gender, and person of its antecedent.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Moi qui suis son fils,</i>	I who am his son.
<i>Toi qui es si jeune,</i>	Thou who art so young.
<i>L'enfant qui joue,</i>	The child who plays.
<i>Nous qui étudions,</i>	We who study.
<i>Vous qui riez,</i>	You who laugh.
<i>Les livres qui instruisent,</i>	The books which instruct.

364. In the first example, *qui* is singular and of the first person, because the pronoun *moi* is in the singular and of the first person. In the second, it is singular and of the second person, for a similar reason, &c.

EXERCISE.

I, who did not suspect (so much) falsehood, cunning, and
soupçonner H. *tant de fausseté f. de ruse f. de*
 perfidy, in a man whom I loved, blindly followed his counsels.
f. H. aveuglement je suivre J. conseil m.
 Thou, who art candor and innocence itself, trust not too lightly.
art. f. art. f. même, te confie légèrement.
 The great empire of the Egyptians, which was, (as it were), detached
m. Egyptien, J. comme, détaché
 from all others, was not of long duration. We who know the
art. J. durée f. connaître
 value of time ought to make a good use (of it), instead
prix m. art. nous devoir F. emploi m. en, au lieu*
 of wasting it in idleness and frivolity. What! is it you, my
perdre A. dans art. oisiveté f. art. inutilité f. Quoi! ce
 daughter, who (would wish) that I (should love) you less? The
vouloir N. que S.
 greatest men, who were the ornament and glory of Greece, Homer,
G. ornement art. f. art. Grèce f. Homère,
 Pythagoras, Plato, even Lycurgus and Solon, went to learn
*Pythagore, Platon, même Lycurgue Solon, J. * apprendre*
 wisdom in Egypt.
art. sagesse f. en Egypte.

365. RULE II. *Que*, when a relative, is of the number and gender of its antecedent.

EXAMPLES.

<i>C'est moi que l'on demande,</i>	It is I whom they ask for.
<i>C'est toi qu'on appelle,</i>	It is thou whom they call.
<i>La femme que je vois si bien parée,</i>	The woman whom I see so well dressed.
<i>C'est nous que vous offensez,</i>	It is we whom you offend.
<i>C'est vous que je cherche,</i>	It is you I am seeking.
<i>Les dames que vous voyez,</i>	The ladies whom you see.

EXERCISE.

I, whom temptation surrounded on every side, fell
art. séduction f. environner H. de tout part f. pl. je tombai
 into the snare. It is thou whom the ²public ¹voice calls to that
dans piège m. Ce f. appeler
 employ. A power which terror and force have founded,
place f. puissance f. art. f. art. f. fondé f.
 cannot be of long duration. It is we whom they persecute with
ne peut durée f. l'on poursuit avec une
²unexampled ¹rage. You, whom (every body) respects, hasten to
sans exemple fureur f. tout le monde respecter, se hâter de
 (come forward). (Every thing) in the universe alters and perishes;
paraître. Tout dans univers m. s'altérer périr;
 but the writings which genius has dictated shall be immortal.
écrit m. art. génie m. dicté m. pl. immortel.

366. *Dont* sometimes represents *dequi*, *duquel*, *de laquelle*, *desquels*, *desquelles*, and even *de quoi*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>L'homme dont vous parlez est parti,</i>	The man of whom you are speaking is gone.
<i>La tour dont nous apercevons les créneaux doit être très-élevée,</i>	The tower whose battlements we perceive must be very high.
<i>Ce dont je vous ai parlé l'autre jour n'a pas réussi,</i>	What I was speaking to you of the other day did not succeed.

367. *Qui*, *que*, and *dont* may equally apply to persons and things; but *qui*, preceded by a preposition, can never apply to things: in this case, *lequel*, *duquel*, *auquel*, &c. must be used.

368. *Lequel*, *laquelle*, &c. apply both to persons and things; but *quoi* applies only to things.

369. The adverb *où* is likewise employed as a relative pronoun, for *dans lequel*, *auquel*, *dans laquelle*, &c.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Voilà le but où il tend,</i>	That is the object he has in view.
<i>Ce sont des affaires, où je suis embarrassé,</i>	Those are affairs with which I am perplexed.

370. REMARK. *Où* admits the prepositions *de* and *par*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Voilà une chose d'où dépend le bonheur public,</i>	That is an affair on which the public happiness depends.
<i>Tels sont les lieux par où il a passé,</i>	These are the places through which he passed.

EXERCISE.

Persons of ²ordinary ¹condition have not the same need of
 art. *Personne* f. *commun* f. *même besoin* m.
 being cautioned against the dangers to which elevation and
 A. *précautionné* f. pl. *contre* *écueil* m. art. f.
 authority expose those who are destined to govern man-
 art. *autorité* f. *exposer* ceux *destiné* m. *gouverner* art. hom-
 kind. The protection on which he relied has been too weak.
 me pl. f. *sur* *compter* H. *faible*.
 That after which a true philosopher sighs most ardently, is
Ce après *vrai philosophe* m. *soupirer* art. *plus ardemment*,
 to spread that sentiment of ²universal ¹benevolence which should
de répandre m. *universel bienveillance* f. *devrait*
 unite and (bring together) all men. These are conditions
unir *rapprocher* art. *Ce sont de*
 without which the thing would not have been concluded. Nature, of
sans *fait* f. art. f.
 whose ³secrets ¹we ²(are ignorant), will be always ³a ⁴source ⁵of
 art. m. *ignorer* f.
⁶conjecture ¹to ²mankind. That of which we complain most
 f. pl. *pour* art. *homme* pl. *Ce* *se plaindre*

bitterly is not always what affects us the most. The only
amèrement *ce qui affecter* *seul*
 moments in which his soul ²still ¹expands to pleasure, are
m. pendant *encore s'ouvrir* art.
 those which he devotes to study. The mountains from whence
ceux *consacrer* art. *étude f.* *f.* *où*
²gold ¹(is extracted) are not in general fruitful. The different
 art. or *on tire* * *en* *infertile.*
 countries through which he has passed have furnished his pencil
pays m. par *passé* *fourni à* *pinceau m.*
 with ²romantic ³and ⁴picturesque ¹scenes.
de art. romantique *pittoresque*

OF PRONOUNS ABSOLUTE.

See page 112—The pronouns absolute *qui, que, quoi, quel, le quel*.

371. *Qui* signifies *quel homme*, what man; *quelle personne*, what person.

EXAMPLES.

Qui vous a dit cela ? Who told you that ?
J'ignore qui a fait cela, I don't know who did that.

372. *Que* signifies *quelle chose*, what thing.

EXAMPLES.

Que dit-on ? What do they say ?
Je ne sais qu'en penser, I don't know what to think of it.

373. *Quoi* has the signification of *que*.

EXAMPLES.

A quoi s'occupe-t-on ? What are they engaged in ?
Dites-moi en quoi je puis vous servir, Tell me how I can serve you.

374. REMARK. If *que* or *quoi* be followed by an adjective, it requires the preposition *de* before that adjective.

EXAMPLES.

Que dit-on de nouveau ? What news is there ?
Quoi de plus instructif et de plus amusant ? What is more instructive and amusing ?

EXERCISE.

Who will not agree that life has few real pleasures and
convenir art. *f.* *peu de vrai*
 many ²dreadful ¹pains? (Some one) entered secretly; guess
beaucoup d'affreux peine f. *On* *entra secrètement; deviner*
 who it was. What have you read in that book that can have excited
 * * *m. qui puisse porté*
 in your soul emotion and enthusiasm? I know not what to
 art. *f.* art. *enthousiasme m.* *savoir* *
 think (of it). At what did you find them occupied? There is in
en. *avez* *trouvés* *occupé m. pl.*
 that discourse I know not what, which appears to me designing. What
discours m. savoir *sembler* * *insidieux.*

have you remarked good, beautiful, and sublime in Homer? What more
remarqué Homère?
 brilliant, and, at the same time, more false than the expressions of a
 man who has (a great deal) of wit, but wants judgment?
beaucoup esprit, qui manque de jugement?

375. In interrogations, or after a verb, *quel* is used to ask the name or qualities of a person or thing.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Quel homme est-ce ?</i>	What man is it?
<i>Quel temps fait-il ?</i>	What weather is it?
<i>Je ne sais quel homme c'est,</i>	I don't know what man it is.
<i>Il sait quel parti prendre,</i>	He knows what steps to pursue.

376. The adverb *où*, it has been already seen, is employed as a relative pronoun; it is likewise used as a kind of absolute pronoun.

377. *Où* represents *en quel endroit*, in what place, or *à quoi*, to what.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Où allez-vous ?</i>	Where are you going to?
<i>Où cela nous mènera-t-il ?</i>	Where will that take us to? [me.]
<i>J'ignore où l'on me conduit,</i>	I don't know whither they are taking
<i>Il n'a pas prévu où cette conduite</i>	He did not foresee where such a con-
<i>le mènerait,</i>	duct would lead him to.

378. REMARK I. When *où* is preceded by the preposition *de*, it marks the place or cause spoken of.

EXAMPLES.

<i>D'où vient-il ?</i>	Where does he come from?
<i>D'où sa haine procède-t-elle ?</i>	Whence proceeds his hatred?
<i>Voilà d'où il vient,</i>	It was there he came from.
<i>Le mal me vient d'où j'attendais</i>	The evil proceeds from that quarter
<i>mon remède,</i>	whence I had expected a remedy.

379. REMARK II. *Où*, preceded by the preposition *par*, signifies through what place, or by what means.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Par où avez-vous passé ?</i>	Which way did you come?
<i>Par où me tirerai-je d'affaire ?</i>	Which way shall I extricate myself?
<i>Voilà par où j'ai passé,</i>	This is the way I came.
<i>Je ne sais par où je me tirerai</i>	I don't know which way I shall ex-
<i>d'affaire,</i>	tricate myself.

380. By the manner in which these pronouns are employed, it will be seen they are only *interrogative* when at the beginning of a sentence, and consequently the most proper name for them is that of *pronouns absolute*.

EXERCISE.

What grace, what delicacy, what harmony, what coloring, what
grâce f. délicatesse f. f. coloris m.
 beautiful lines in Racine! What, ²then, ¹must have been that
vers m. donc doit

²extraordinary ¹man, to whom seven cities contested the glory of
 having given birth? He does not know what model to follow.
avoir A. *donné* art. *jour* m. *savoir* *modèle* m. * *suivre*.
 I have told you what man it is. Which of those ladies do you
 think the most amiable? Choose which ⁴of ⁵those ⁶two ⁷pictures
trouver f. *Choisir* m. *tableau* m.
¹you ²like ³best. Where am I? He knows not where
aimer art. *mieux*. *Où* *en* *savoir*
 he is. He is gone, I don't know whither. (Whence) does he get
en *allé*, *ne* *savoir* *D'où* * *lui vient*
 that pride? (It is) from where he derives his origin. (Which way)
orgueil m. *Voilà* *de* *tirer* *origine*. *Par où*
 did you come? (That is) (the road) I came.
êtes-vous arrivé? *Voilà* *par où* *venir* G.

OF DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.—Page 113.

381. *Ce, cette, ces*, are often joined to the adverbs of place—*ci*, here, and *là*, there—in order to point out in a more precise manner the thing spoken of; the demonstrative pronoun is then placed before the substantive, and *ci* and *là* after it.

EXAMPLES.

Ce livre-ci, this book. *Cet homme-là*, that man.
Cette fleur-ci, this flower. *Ces femmes-là*, those women.

382. *Celui, celle, ceux, celles*, are followed by the preposition *de*, when placed before a substantive, and by a pronoun relative when placed before a verb.

EXAMPLES.

Les maladies de l'ame sont plus dangereuses que celles du corps, The disorders of the mind are more dangerous than those of the body.
L'homme dont je vous ai parlé, est celui que vous voyez, The man of whom I spoke to you is he whom you see.
De toutes les choses du monde, c'est celle que j'aime le moins, Of all the things in the world, it is that which I like least.

383. REMARK. The pronouns *celui, celle, ceux, celles*, when followed by a pronoun relative, are expressed in English by the personal pronouns *he, she, they*, or by *that which, those which, such as, &c.*

EXERCISE.

The pleasures of the wise resemble in nothing those of a ²dissipated
resembler à *dissipé*
¹man. He that suffers himself to (be ruled) by his passions, must
se laisse * *dominer* A. *doit*
 renounce happiness. This stuff will become you wonderfully.
renoncer à art. *bonheur* m. *étouffe-ci* f. *siéra* à *merveille*.
 That action is worthy of blame. This scene is calculated to
 f. *là* *blâme*. f. *ci* *faite* *pour*
 interest all men, but that cannot succeed.
intéresser art. *là* *ne saurait réussir*

384. *Celui-ci* and *celui-là* adopt the gender and number of the substantives whose place they supply. When opposed to each other, *celui-ci* marks the nearest object, and *celui-là* the remotest.

EXAMPLE.

Celui-ci plaît, mais celui-là captive, This pleases, but that captivates.

385. *Ci* and *là* coalesce with *ce*, and form two other demonstrative pronouns, *ceci* and *cela*—the first of which signifies *cette chose-ci*, this object; the second, *cette chose-là*, that object.

386. They may be used singly; but when they are opposed to each other, *ceci* expresses the nearest object and *cela* the remotest.

EXAMPLE.

Je n'aime point ceci, donnez-moi cela, I don't like this, give me that.

387. REMARK. When *cela* is alone, and not opposed to the pronoun *ceci*, it refers, like this last, to an object pointed to.

EXAMPLES.

Que dites-vous de cela ?

What do you say of that ?

Cela est fort beau,

That is very handsome.

EXERCISE.

(Here are) certainly two charming prospects; this has some-
Voilà certainement beau perspective f. quelque
 thing more cheerful, but many people think that more
chose de riant, bien de art. personne f. pl. trouver
 striking and more majestic. The body perishes, the soul is
imposant majestueux. m. périr, f.
 immortal; yet all our cares are for that, while we neglect
immortel; cependant soin tandis que négliger
 this. What means this? That is true. It is not that. This
veut dire Ce
 is low and mean, but that is grand and sublime.
bas rampant,

OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

FIRST CLASS.

Of those that are never joined to a Substantive.—Page 114.

388. *Quelqu'un, quelqu'une*, means *un, une*, one.

EXAMPLES.

Nous attendons des hommes, il en viendra quelqu'un, We expect men, some one will come.

Plusieurs femmes m'ont promis de venir, il en viendra quelqu'une, Several women have promised me to come, some one of them will come.

389. *Quelqu'un, quelqu'une*, taken absolutely and substantively, is of both genders, and means *une personne*, a person, some one, any one.

EXAMPLE.

J'attends ici quelqu'un,

I wait here for somebody.

390. *Quelques-uns, quelques-unes*, signifies some people, some; *plusieurs dans un plus grand nombre*, several out of a great number.

EXAMPLES.

Quelques-uns assurent, Some people affirm.
Entre les nouvelles qu'il a débitées, Among the reports he has circulated,
il y en a quelques-unes de vraies, several are true.

391. *Quiconque*, whoever, signifies *quelque personne que ce soit, qui que ce soit*, any person whatever. It takes no plural, and is never used but of persons.

EXAMPLE.

Ce discours s'adresse à quiconque est coupable, This speech is addressed to whoever is guilty.

392. *Chacun, chacune*, every one, is used either distributively or collectively. It has no plural.

393. Distributively, it means *chaque personne, chaque chose*, each person or thing. It is then used likewise in the feminine, and requires the preposition *de* after it.

EXAMPLES.

Chacun de nous vit à sa mode, Each of us lives as he pleases.
Voyez séparément chacune de ces médailles, Look at each of these medals separately.

394. Collectively, it signifies *toute personne*, every person.

EXAMPLES.

Chacun a ses défauts, Every body has his faults.

EXERCISE ON THE INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

²Can any one (be still ignorant) that it is from the earliest
Pourrait-il ignorer encore ce des tendre
 infancy we ought to form the mind, the heart, and the taste? Will
*enfance f. on doit * former*
 not some one of these ladies be of the party? Some people like to read
f. partie f. aimer
 (every thing new). (There are) beautiful pictures; I could wish
toutes les nouveautés. Voilà de superbe tableau m. vouloir en
 to buy some. Whoever has studied the principles of an art, knows that
** acheter principes m. savoir*
 it (is only) (by length of time) and by deep reflection, that he can
ce n'est que à la longue de profond réflexion f.
 succeed in making it his own. All the ladies at the ball were very fine-
*réussir serendrele * propre. balm. H. superbe-*
 ly dressed, and each differently. Every one should, for
ment paré, avait une parure différente. devrait, pour
 (the sake of) his own happiness, listen only to the voice of reason
** propre m. n'écouter que voix m. art. raison f.*
 and of truth. What is the price of each of these medals?
art. vérité f. prix m. f. médaille f.

395. *Autrui* means *les autres personnes*, other people: it only applies to persons, is never accompanied by an adjective, has no plural, and is never used in a sentence without being preceded by a preposition.

EXAMPLE.

La charité se réjouit du bonheur d'autrui, Charity rejoices in the happiness of others.

396. *Personne*, which is always masculine and singular, means *nul*, *qui que ce soit*, no one, nobody, whosoever. In this sense, it is preceded or followed by the negative *ne*, which is placed after *personne* when this word stands before the verb, and before the verb when *personne* stands after. The same observation applies to *rien*.

EXAMPLES.

Il ne faut nuire à personne, We must injure nobody.
Personne n'est assuré de vivre jusqu'au lendemain, Nobody is certain of living till to-morrow.

397. REMARK I. The negative is sometimes understood; as, *y a-t-il quelqu'un ici?* is there any body here? *personne*, nobody. *Personne* stands for *il n'y a personne*, there is nobody here.

398. REMARK II. In interrogative phrases without negation, or in those expressing doubt, *personne* signifies *quelqu'un*, any body.

EXAMPLES.

Personne oserait-il nier? Would any body dare deny?
Je doute que personne soit assez hardi, I doubt whether any body be bold enough.

399. REMARK III. When *personne* is placed in the second member of a comparison, it means *any body*.

EXAMPLE.

Cette place lui convient mieux qu'à personne, That place suits him better than any body.

400. *Rien*, nothing, which is masculine and singular, is used with or without a negation. When with a negation, it means *nulle chose*, nothing.

EXAMPLE.

Il ne s'attache à rien de solide, He applies himself to nothing fixed.

401. When used without a negation it means *quelque chose*, something.

EXAMPLE.

Je doute que rien soit plus propre à faire impression que, &c. I doubt whether any thing be more suited to make an impression than, &c.

402. The negation is sometimes understood—*que vous a coûté cela?* *rien*, how much did you pay for that? nothing.

403. It always requires the preposition *de* before the adjective or participle that follows it, and then the verb is understood, as is likewise the negation; as, *rien de beau que le vrai*, nothing is noble but truth.

EXERCISE.

To most men, the misfortunes of others are but a
Pour la plupart de art. mal m. ne *
 dream. Do not to others what you would not wish (to be done to you).
songem. vouloir qu'on vous fit.

No one knows whether he deserves love or hatred. An egotist
savoir si est digne de de égotiste
 loves nobody, not even his own children; in the whole universe, he
*pas même propre dans * univers,*
 sees no one but himself. He is, more than (any body), worthy of the
voit que lui seul. digne
 confidence (with which) the king honors him. I doubt whether any
confiance f. dont honorer que
 one (ever painted) nature, in its amiable simplicity, better than
ait jamais peint art. f. f.
 the sentimental Gessner. Has ²any body ¹called ³on me this
*sensible * est-il venu chez*
 morning? Nobody. There was nothing but what was great
*matin m. H. que * de * grand*
 in the designs and works of the Egyptians. I doubt
dans dessein m. art. ouvrage m. Egyptiens.
 whether there is any thing better calculated to exalt the soul than the
que Q. plus propre
 contemplation of the wonders of nature.
merveille f. art. f.

OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

SECOND CLASS.

Of those which are always joined to a Substantive.—P. 116.

404. *Quelque*, some, signifies *un, une, entre plusieurs*, one out of several; it is of both genders, and takes the number of the substantive.

EXAMPLE.

Adressez-vous à quelque autre personne, Apply to somebody else.

405. *Chaque*, each, every, which is of both genders, has no plural.

EXAMPLE.

Chaque pays a ses coutumes, Each country has its customs.

406. *Quelconque, aucun*, any, *quel que ce soit*, whatever it be; *quel qu'il soit*, whoever he be, is of both genders, and is always placed after a substantive; when used with a negative it is always singular.

EXAMPLE.

Il ne veut se soumettre à aucune He will submit to no authority
autorité quelconque, whatever.

407. *Certain* signifies *quelque*, certain, some. In this sense it is used alike of persons and things; but it is always placed before the substantive.

EXAMPLE.

J'ai ouï dire à certain homme, à I have heard some man say.
un certain homme,

408. *Un, une*, a or an, when used indeterminately for *quelque, certain*, some person or some thing, takes the gender of the substantive to which it is joined.

EXAMPLES.

J'ai vu un homme qui courait, I saw a man who was running.
Je me suis promené dans une I walked in a large fine meadow.
grande et belle prairie,

EXERCISE ON THE SECOND CLASS.

Some ²enlightened ¹people among the Egyptians preserved the
éclairé esprit m. pl. Egyptiens conserver H.
 idea of a first being, whose ³attributes ¹they ²represented under
idée être, art. attribut m. représenter H.
 various symbols; (this is proved by the following) inscription
différent symbole m. c'est ce que prouve cette f.
 upon a temple:—"I am all that has been, is, and shall be: ³no ²mortal
de m. ce qui mortel
¹ever removed the veil that covers me." Every nation has ²(in its turn)
lever G. voile m. f. à son tour
¹shone on the theatre of the world. There is no reason whatever that
brillé m. raison f.
 can bring him to it. Some figures appear monstrous and deformed,
puisse déterminer f. monstrueux
 considered separately or too near; but if (they are put) in their proper
*f. pl. séparément de près; on les met **
 light and place, the true point of view restores their beauty
*jour à leur m. vue m. leur rendre * art. f.*
 and grace. Yesterday I saw a lady ²remarkably ¹beautiful.
art. f. J. d'une rare beauté.

OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

THIRD CLASS.

Of those which are sometimes joined to a Substantive and sometimes not.—Page 117.

409. *Nul*, m. *nulle*, f. and *pas un*, m. *pas une*, f., not any, not one, no one, are employed either alone or in conjunction with a substantive. They are accompanied by the negation, have no plural, and may be followed by the preposition *de*.

EXAMPLES.

Nul de tous ceux qui y ont été Not one of those who went there
n'en est revenu, has returned.
Pas un ne croit cette nouvelle, Not one believes that intelligence.
Je n'en ai nulle connaissance, I have no knowledge of it.
Il n'y a pas une seule personne There is not a single person that
qui le croie, believes it.

410. *Aucun*, m. *aucune*, f., signifies *nul*, no, not any, none, when accompanied by a negation, and may be followed by the preposition *de*.

EXAMPLES.

Vous n'avez aucun moyen de réussir You have no means of succeeding
dans cette affaire, in that affair.

411. This pronoun is seldom employed in the plural, except before substantives which, in some particular sense, are better employed in the plural.

EXAMPLE.

Il n'a fait aucunes dispositions, He has made no dispositions.

412. REMARK. *Aucun*, m. *aucune* f., any, any one, may be employed without a negation in interrogative sentences, or those which express doubt or exclusion.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Aucun homme fut-il jamais plus heureux ?</i>	Was ever any man more successful ?
<i>On doute qu'aucune de ces affaires réussisse,</i>	They doubt whether any of those affairs will succeed.
<i>Le plus beau morceau d'éloquence qu'il y ait dans aucune langue,</i>	The finest piece of eloquence that exists in any language.

EXERCISE ON THE THIRD CLASS.

No one likes (to see himself) as he is. No expression, no truth of design and coloring, no strokes of genius in that great work. He is *dessein de coloris, trait* *se voir tel que* *f. f.* *ouvrage m.* as learned as any one. Not one of these engravings announces any *aussi savant que* *gravure f. annoncer un* great skill. None of his works will descend to posterity. He is so *talent m.* *passer art. f.* ignorant, and at the same time so obstinate, that he will not *en * même temps obstiné,* (be convinced) by any reasoning. Did any man ever attain *se rendre à raisonnement m.* *jamais parvenir J.* to such a pitch of glory ! I doubt whether there be, in any science, *ce * comble m.* *que Q. f.* a ²more ³evident ¹principle. *plus lumineux principe m.*

413. *Autre*, other, expresses a difference between two objects, or between one and several ; as, *quelle autre chose souhaitez-vous de moi ?* what else do you wish of me ?

414. REMARK. *Autre* is sometimes used to express a person but indeterminate ; as, *j'aime mieux que vous l'appreniez de tout autre que de moi*, I had rather you learn it of any other person than of me.

415. *Un* is sometimes opposed to *autre*, in which case these two words are preceded by the article, supply the place of the substantives to which they relate, adopt their gender and number, and form the pronouns *l'un l'autre, l'une l'autre, les uns les autres, les unes les autres, l'un et l'autre*, and *ni l'un ni l'autre*.

416. *L'un l'autre*, each other, one another, applies both to persons and things : it takes both gender and number, and requires the article before the two words of which it is composed. If there be any preposition, it must be placed before the last. When these two words are used in conjunction, they express a reciprocal relation between several persons or things.

EXAMPLE.

Il faut se secourir l'un l'autre, We ought to assist each other.

417. When used separately, they denote a difference.

EXAMPLE.

Les passions s'entendent les unes avec les autres ; si l'on se laisse aller aux unes, on attire bientôt les autres, Our passions have a relation with each other ; if we indulge some, the others will soon follow.

418. REMARK. In the latter case *l'un* is used for the person or thing first mentioned, and *l'autre* for the person or thing last spoken of.

419. *L'un et l'autre*, m., *l'une et l'autre*, f., both ; these two words mark union. They require the verb to be in the plural.

EXAMPLE.

L'une et l'autre sont bonnes, Both are good.

420. *Ni l'un ni l'autre*, neither ; these two words mark separation. The verb ought to be put in the singular ; however, many writers put it in the plural in French.

EXAMPLE.

Ni l'un ni l'autre n'ont fait leur devoir, Neither has done his duty.

EXERCISE.

Ask another. Would any other have been so
Demander à * *aurait-il eu* * *assez*
 self-conceited as to think that his ²private ¹opinion could counter-
d'amour-propre * *pour penser* *particulier* f. *pût* *ba-*
 balance the ²public ¹sentiment? Reason and faith ²equally
lancer *opinion* f. art. *Raison* f. art. *foi* f.
¹demonstrate that we were created for another life. They speak ill of
démontrer *créer* G. f. *mal*
 one another. The happiness of the people constitutes that of the prince ;
 m. *faire* m.
 their true interests are connected with each other. Presumption
intérêt m. *lié* à pl. pl. art. *Présomption* f.
 and pride ²easily ¹insinuate themselves into the heart ; if we
 art. *orgueil* *se glisser* * m. *l'on y*
 allow ²one the ¹entrance, it is much to (be feared) that we shall
donne à f. * *entrée,* *bien* *craindre* *on* *
²soon ¹(abandon ourselves) to the other. Both relate the same
bientôt *ne se livre* *rapporter*
 story, though neither believes it to be true.
fait m. *ne penser que* * *soit*

421. *Même*, same, signifies *qui n'est pas autre*, which is not different. It is of both genders, and takes the plural.

EXAMPLES.

C'est le même homme, It is the same man.
La même personne, The same person.
Ce sont les mêmes raisons, They are the same reasons.
Ce poème est le même que celui This poem is the same that I was
dont je vous ai parlé, mentioning to you.

422. *Tel*, m. *telle*, f. *tels*, m. pl. *telles*, f. pl., means *pareil*, *semblable*, *de même*, such, like, similar. It takes both genders and both numbers.

EXAMPLES.

Un tel projet ne saurait réussir, Such a scheme cannot succeed.
Il n'y a pas de tels animaux, de There are no such animals, no such
telles coutumes, customs.

423. When used alone, it either preserves its proper signification, or it expresses a person indeterminately.

EXAMPLES.

Vous ne sauriez me persuader You cannot persuade me of any such
rien de tel, thing.
Tel fait des libéralités, qui ne The same man is liberal in giving
paie pas ses dettes, who does not pay his debts.

424. *Plusieurs*, several, which is plural and of both genders, is used alike of persons and of things. When united to a substantive, or relating to it, it signifies an indeterminate number, without relation to another.

EXAMPLES.

Plusieurs motifs l'ont déterminé, Several reasons determined him.
Je crois cela pour plusieurs raisons, I believe that for several reasons.

425. But it is likewise used as a part of a greater number.

EXAMPLE.

Parmi un si grand nombre de gens, Out of so great a number of per-
il y en eut plusieurs qui s'y oppo- sons, several objected to it.
sèrent,

426. When *plusieurs* is employed absolutely as a substantive, it always means *plusieurs personnes*, several persons.

EXAMPLE.

Plusieurs aiment mieux mourir que Many would rather die than forfeit
de perdre leur réputation, their character.

427. *Tout* is used either alone or with a substantive.

428. When employed alone, it signifies *toutes choses*, all things; *toute sorte de choses*, every kind of things.

EXAMPLE.

Tout nous abandonne au moment Every thing forsakes us at the mo-
de la mort; il ne nous reste que ment of death; we retain nothing
nos bonnes œuvres, but our good works.

429. When united to a substantive, it is used either collectively or distributively.

430. Considered collectively, *tout* signifies the totality of a thing, and is then followed by the article.

EXAMPLES.

Tout l'univers, The whole universe.
Tous les corps célestes, All the celestial bodies.

431. Considered distributively, *tout* signifies *chaque*, each; in this case, it is not accompanied by the article.

EXAMPLE.

Tout bien est désirable,

Every good is desirable.

EXERCISE.

Does he always maintain the same principles? Yes, they are absolutely the same. That general is the same that commanded last year. ²Such ¹a ³conduct is inexplicable. There are no such customs in this country. I never heard (any thing) similar. The same man sows who often reaps nothing. ¹I ³this ⁴morning ²received several letters. Among those manuscripts, there are several G. much esteemed. Many, by endeavoring to injure others, *qu'on beaucoup estime.* injure themselves more than they think. All is in God and God is in all. The whole course of his life has been distinguished by ²generous ¹actions. Every vice is odious.

OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

FOURTH CLASS.

Of those which are followed by QUE.—Page 118.

432. *Qui, que*, whoever, is only said of persons, and signifies *quelque personne que*, whatever person; it requires the verb following to be in the subjunctive.

EXAMPLES.

Qui que ce soit qui ait fait cela, Whoever has done that is a man of talent.
c'est un habile homme,
Qui que je sois, Whoever I may be.
Qui que ç'ait été, Whoever it may have been.
Qui que c'eût été, Whoever it might have been.
Qui que ce puisse être, Whoever it may be.

433. When *qui que*, followed by *ce soit*, is used with a negative, it signifies *aucune personne*, nobody, no one; as, *je n'y trouve qui que ce soit*, I find nobody there.

434. *Quoi que*, whatever it be, is only used of things, and signifies *quelque chose que*, whatever thing; it requires also the verb following to be in the subjunctive.

EXAMPLES.

Quoi que ce soit qu'il fasse, ou Whatever he does or says, he is
qu'il dise, on se défie de lui, distrusted.
Quoi que vous disiez, je le ferai, Whatever you may say, I will do it.

435. REMARK. When *quoi que*, followed by *ce soit*, is used with a negation, it signifies *aucune chose*, not any thing.

EXAMPLE.

Sans application, on ne peut réussir en quoi que ce soit, Without application, it is impossible to succeed in any thing whatever.

EXERCISE ON THE FOURTH CLASS.

Whoever has told you so, he is mistaken. Passenger, whoever
le, se tromper G. Passant,
 thou be, contemplate with ²religious ¹veneration this monument erected
contempler un respect m. m. élevé
 by gratitude; it is the tomb of a ²just ³and ⁴benevolent ¹man.
art. reconnaissance f. ce tombeau m. bienfaisant
 How can he hope to be beloved who has regard for no one?
Comment espérer de lui ne d'égards
 Whatever he may do or say, he (will find it) very difficult to de-
qu'il aura bien de la peine dé-
 stroy prejudices so deeply rooted. A mind vain, presump-
truire des préjugé m. si profondément enraciné. présomp-
 tuous, and inconsistent, will never succeed in any thing whatever.
tueux, sans consistance, réussir
 Whatever a ²frivolous ¹world may think of you, never swerve
frivole monde puisse se détourner
 from the path of virtue.
chemin m. art. f.

436. *Quel que*, m. *quelle que*, f. *quels que*, m. pl. *quelles que* f. pl., signifies *de quelque sorte, de quelque espèce que ce soit*, of whatever sort or kind it may be, when relating to things; or, *qui que ce soit*, whoever it may be, when relating to persons. It takes both gender and number according to the person or thing it relates to, and requires the subjunctive.

EXAMPLES.

Quelles que soient vos affaires, venez, Whatever business you may have, come.
Je n'en excepte personne, quel qu'il soit, I except nobody, whoever he may be.

437. REMARK. *Lequel que*, m. *laquelle que*, f. *lesquels que*, m. pl. *lesquelles que*, f. pl., whosoever, whichever, is also used; as, *lequel des trois que vous choisissiez, peu m'importe*, whichever of the three you choose, I care little.

438. *Quelque-que* m. f. s. *quelques-que* m. f. pl., of both genders, when united to a substantive, signifies *quel que soit le, quelle que soit la, &c.*, whatever be the, &c. It has both numbers, and requires the subjunctive.

EXAMPLES.

Quelque raison qu'on lui apporte, il n'en croit rien, Whatever reason is adduced, he believes nothing about it.
Quelques efforts que vous fassiez, vous ne réussirez point, Whatever attempts you may make, you will never succeed.

439. When united to an adjective, it operates as an adverb, and signifies *à quelque point que*, however great a degree; it then does not take number.

EXAMPLES.

Quelque belle qu'elle puisse être, However beautiful she may be, she
elle ne doit pas être vaine, ought not to be vain.
Quelque puissans qu'ils soient, je However powerful they may be, I
ne les crains point, am not afraid of them.

440 *Tel que*, such as, serves to mark a parity between objects by comparison.

EXAMPLE.

C'est un homme tel qu'il vous le faut, He is just such a man as you want.

441. *Tout*—*que* signifies *quoique*, *encore que*, though, *quelque*, however. On this occasion, *tout* is considered as an adverb, and is employed with adjectives of every kind, and even with some substantives.

EXAMPLES.

Tout artificieux qu'ils sont, je Artful as they are, I doubt whether
doute que le public soit long- the public will be long their dupe.
temps leur dupe,
Toute femme qu'elle est, Woman as she is.

EXERCISE.

Let ³the laws ²be ¹(what they may), we must always respect them.
 * *loi f. Q. quel que respecter*
 Whatever efforts you make, I doubt whether you will succeed. All
 m. Q. que * *réussir Q.*
 men, however opposite they may be, agree on that point. The
 art. *opposé s'accorder m.*
 man who descends into himself only to discover his defects, and
reënter en ne que pour y démêler m.
 correct them, likes to see himself as he is. However surprising
se corriger en, surprenant
²that ³phenomenon ¹may be, it is not against the order of nature.
phénomène m. contre ordre m. art.
 Children as they are, they behaved remarkably well.
se sont conduits fort

A GENERAL EXERCISE ON THE PRONOUNS.

¹THE ³EVENING ²WALK.

du soir promenade f.

On a fine ²summer ¹evening, my brother, my sister, and myself
Dans de soirée f. moi
 (were walking) (by the side) of a wood (not far distant)
nous nous promenions le long bois m. qui n'est pas bien éloigné
 from the castle which we inhabit. We (were contemplating) with
château m. habiter. contempler H.
 rapture the ²majestic ¹scenery which nature exhibits at the
transport majestueux scène f. art. déployer
 approach of night, when we perceived at the foot of an ancient
approche f. art. nuit f. quand apercevoir J. à pied m. vieux
 oak a boy of a ²most ³interesting ¹countenance. His beauty,
chêne m. enfant art. intéressant art. figure f. f.

his air of ingenuousness and candor, his gracefulness struck us, and
 m. *ingénuité* de *grâce* pl. *frapper* J.
 we approached him. What! alone here, my boy? said we;
nous approcher J. *en.* *seul* *ici,* *enfant* *lui* *dîmes*
 whence art thou? Whence comest thou? What art thou doing here
d'où *fais*
 alone? I am not alone, answered he, (smiling); I am not alone;
répondre J. *d'un air riant*;
 but I was fatigued, and I (have seated myself) under the shade of this
 H. *fatigué* *s'asseoir* G. à *ombre* f.
 tree, while my mother is busy in gathering simples to
arbre m. *tandis que* *occupé à cueillir des* *pour*
 give some relief to the pains which ²her ³aged ⁴father
apporter *soulagement* m. *douleur* f. *vieux*
¹suffers. Ah! (how many) troubles ²my ³good ⁴mamma ¹has!
souffrir. *que* *de peine* f. *maman*
 How many troubles! Did you know them, there is not one of you
si *connaître* H.
 that would not be touched with pity, and who could refuse the tribute
qui * S. *pitié,* *lui* S. *un tribut*
 of your tears. We said to him, lovely child, thy ingenuousness,
 * *larme* f. J. * *aimable* *ta*
 candor, innocence, (every thing), interests us in thy misfortunes and
 f. *ton* f. *tout,* *intéresser* à *malheur*
 those of thy mother. Relate them to us; whatever they be, fear not
 à *Raconter* *
 to afflict us. (Wo be) to whoever cannot feel for the
de affliger *Malheur* *ne sait pas s'attendrir sur*
 misfortunes of others! ²He ¹immediately related the history of his mother,
mal m. *aussitôt* J.
 with an expression, an artlessness, a grace, altogether affecting. Our
 f. *naïveté* f. f. *tout-à-fait touchant* f. sing.
 hearts felt the liveliest emotions; tears (trickled down our cheeks),
éprouver J. *vif* f. *nos* *couler* J.
 and we gave him what little money we had about us. (In the
lui *le peu de argent que* H. *sur* *Ce-*
 mean time), the mother returned. (As soon as) he saw her, he
pendant *revenir* J. *Dès-que* *apercevoir* J.
 exclaimed, (make haste), mamma; make haste: see what these good
s'écrier J. *accourir* sing. sing. sing. *ce que*
 little folks have given me; I have related to them thy misfortunes;
gens f.
 they have been affected (by them), and their sensibility (has not been
 m. *touché* m. pl. *en* f. *ne s'est pas*
 satisfied) with shedding tears. See, mamma, see what they have
borné f. à * *des* sing. sing.
 given me. The mother was moved; she thanked us, and
 J. *attendri* f. *remercier* J. *nous*
 said: ²generous, ³feeling ¹souls, the good action which you (have
 J. *et sensible* *ame* f. f.
 just been doing) will not be lost. He who sees (every thing) and
venez de faire *perdu* f.
 judges (every thing) will not let it go unrewarded.
juger *laisser* * *sans récompense.*

CHAPTER V.

OF THE VERB.

Agreement of the Verb with the Subject.

442. THE subject is that of which something is affirmed, and may always be known by the answer to this question, *qui est-ce qui ?* who or what is it? as, *Pierre vit*, Peter lives; *l'oiseau vole*, the bird flies. If it be asked, *qui est-ce qui vit ?* who is it that lives?—*qui est-ce qui vole ?* what is it that flies?—the answers *Pierre* and *l'oiseau* shew that *Pierre* and *l'oiseau* are the subjects of the verbs *vit* and *vole*.

443. RULE. The verb must be of the same number and person as its subject.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Je ris</i>	I laugh.	<i>Nous parlons,</i>	We speak.
<i>Tu joues,</i>	Thou playest.	<i>Vous plaisantez,</i>	You jest.
<i>Il aime,</i>	He loves.	<i>Ils sont fous,</i>	They are mad.
	<i>La vertu est aimable,</i>	Virtue is amiable.	

444. *Ris* is in the singular number and the first person, because *je*, its subject, is in the singular and the first person. *Joues* is in the singular and the second person, because *tu* is in the singular and the second person, &c.

EXERCISE.

The most free of all men is he who can be free, even in slavery. Are we not often blind to our defects? All men (are inclined) to idleness, but the savages of hot countries are the laziest of all men. Do you think of imposing long on the credulity of the public? Thou canst not deny that he is a great man.

libre art. celui même art. esclary. s'aveugler sur défaut? art. tendre art. sauvage art. chaud pays f. m. pouvoir nier ne Q.

445. REMARK I. When a verb has two subjects, both singular, it is put in the plural.

EXAMPLE.

Mon père et ma mère m'aiment tendrement, My father and mother love me tenderly.

EXERCISE.

His uprightness and honesty make him courted by every body. Strength of body and of mind meet not always together. A good heart and a noble soul are precious gifts of nature.

droiture f. his honnêteté faire rechercher de art. f. art. celle art. se rencontrer ensemble. m. beau f. don m. art. f.

446. REMARK II. When a verb relates to subjects of different persons, it agrees with the first, in preference to the other two, and with the second, in preference to the third. The person addressed is named *first* and the person addressing *last*. On this occasion, the pronoun plural *nous* is generally placed before the verb, if the first person has been mentioned before, or the pronoun plural *vous*, if no first person has been mentioned.

EXAMPLES.

Vous, votre frère, et moi, nous lisons ensemble la brochure nouvelle, You, your brother, and I, read together the new pamphlet.
Vous et votre ami, vous viendrez avec moi, You and your friend will come with me.

EXERCISE.

You, your friend, and I, have each a ²different ¹opinion. In our
chacun *f.*
 childhood, you and I (were pleased) with playing together. Neither
enfance f. *se plaire H.* *A.* *ni*
 I nor (any one else) has been able to understand (any thing) in that
ni d'autres ne pouvoir G. ** comprendre rien à*
 sentence. (Take good care), you and your brother, not to
phrase f. *se garder bien P.* ** de*
 (give way) to the impetuosity of your character.
s'abandonner *caractère m.*

447. REMARK III. When a verb has the relative pronoun *qui* for its subject, it is put in the same number and person as the noun or pronoun to which *qui* relates.

EXAMPLES.

Est-ce moi qui ai dit cette nouvelle ? Is it I who told this news ?
Est-ce nous qui l'avons voulu ? Is it we who desired it ?
Ceux qui aiment sincèrement la vertu sont heureux, Those who sincerely love virtue are happy.

EXERCISE.

He that complains most of mankind, is not always he that
Celui se plaindre le plus art. homme pl.
 (has most reason) to complain (of them). You that wish to enrich
est le plus fondé en. *vouloir * enrichir*
 your mind with thoughts vigorously conceived and nobly expressed,
esprit de f. fortement conçu . noblement exprimé
 read the works of Homer and Plato.
ouvrage Homère

OF THE REGIMEN OF VERBS.

448. A verb is active when it will admit after it *quelqu'un* or *quelque chose*, and the word which is put after the verb is called the regimen of that verb. Observe that this regimen may be known by asking the question, *qu'est-ce que ?* It is called *direct*—that is, governed directly by the verb, without any preposition being necessary between the verb and its object, and may be either a noun or a pronoun.

449. RULE. When the regimen of the active verb is a noun, it is always placed after the verb; when it is a pronoun, it is generally placed before it.

EXAMPLE.

Ma mère aime tous ses enfans, My mother loves all her children.

Je vous aime, and not as in English, *J'aime vous*, I love you;
Il m'aime, and not *Il aime moi*, he loves me.

EXERCISE ON THE REGIMEN OF VERBS.

He has discovered to all other nations his ²ambitious ¹design of
montrer art. *peuple* m. *dessein* m.
 enslaving them, and has left us no means of
mettre dans l'esclavage A. *ne laisser aucun moyen*
 defending our liberty but by endeavoring to overturn his new kingdom.
 A. *que en tâcher de renverser* *royaume* m.
 Homer represents Nestor as he that restrained the ungovernable
Homère celui modérer H. *bouillant*
 wrath of Achilles, the pride of Agamemnon, the haughtiness of Ajax,
courroux m. *fiercé*
 and the ²impetuous ¹courage of Diomed. He dared not (lift up) his
 m. *Diomède.* *oser* H. *lever* *
 eyes, lest they should meet those of his friend, whose
 art. *de peur de* * * *rencontrer* A. art.
²very ¹silence condemned him. He caresses them, because he loves them.
même m. H.

450. Besides this regimen *direct*, some active verbs may have a second, which is called *indirect*, and is marked by the words *à* or *de*.

EXAMPLES.

Il a fait un présent à sa sœur, He has made a present to his sister.
Il accuse son ami d'imprudence, He accuses his friend of imprudence.

EXERCISE.

In submitting to the yoke of Asia, Greece would have thought
En subir * *joug* m. art. art. *croire*
²virtue ¹subjected to voluptuousness, the mind to the body, and
 art. *assujettir* A. art. *volupté* f.
 courage to a ²senseless ¹force, which consisted only in numbers.
 art. *insensé* f. H. *ne que* art. *multitude* f. s.
 Three hundred Lacedemonians hastened to Thermopylæ to
Lacédémoniens courir J. art. *Thermopiles* pl. *un*
²certain ¹death, content, in dying, to have sacrificed to their country an
assuré f. *en de immoler* *pays* m.
²infinite ¹number of barbarians, and to have left to their countrymen the
barbare de laisser compatriote
 example of an ²unheard of ¹bravery. You knew the importance
inouï * *hardiesse* f. *savoir* H. f.
 which your parents attached to the success of that affair: why
que H. *réussite* f. f. *pourquoi*
 have you not hastened to announce it to them?
s'empreser G. *de* f.

451. The second regimen is known by the answer to these questions : *à qui?* to whom? *à quoi?* to what? *de qui?* of whom? *de quoi?* of what?

EXAMPLES.

<i>A qui a-t-il fait un présent?</i>	To whom did he make a present?
<i>A sa sœur,</i>	To his sister.
<i>De quoi accuse-t-il son ami?</i>	Of what does he accuse his friend?
<i>D'imprudence,</i>	Of imprudence.

452. Passive verbs require *de* or *par* before the noun or pronoun that follows them.

EXAMPLES.

<i>La souris est mangée par le chat,</i>	The mouse is eaten by the cat.
<i>Un enfant sage est aimé de tout le monde,</i>	A good child is loved by every body.

453. REMARK. The French never use the word *par* before *Dieu*, God; they say, *les méchants seront punis de Dieu*, which, in order to avoid making use of *by*, may be thus Englished: God will punish the wicked.

EXERCISE.

The city of Troy was taken, plundered, and destroyed by the ²confederate ¹Greeks, eleven hundred and forty-eight years before the ²Christian ¹era : this event has been celebrated by the two greatest poets of Greece
Troie pris, saccagé, détruit *avant*
ère f. *art.*
 and Italy. You will only be beloved, esteemed, and courted
de art. *rechercher*
 by men (in proportion as) you join the qualities of the heart
de art. *que autant que joindre L.*
 to those of the mind. †God punished the Jews every time when,
punir J. peuple Juif toutes les fois que
 deaf to the voice of the prophets, they fell into idolatry and
sourd f. prophète, sing. tomber J. dans art.
 impiety.

454. Some few neuter verbs have no regimen; as, *dormir*, to sleep; but many of them have a government.

455. RULE. Some neuter verbs require *à* and others *de* before their regimen.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Tout genre d'excès nuit à la santé,</i>	Every kind of excess is hurtful to health.
<i>Il médit de tout le monde,</i>	He slanders every body.

EXERCISE.

This sentiment has pleased the king and all the nation. In his
à à Dans
 retirement, he (has the full enjoyment) of the faculties of his soul. To
*retraite f. jouir de tout f. **

† Translate as if it stood thus:—The people Jewish were punished by God every, &c

slander (any one) is to assassinate him in ²cold ¹blood. The honest
médire de quelqu'un c'est * *de sang.*
 man seldom (permits himself) (to jest), because he knows
rarement se permettre des plaisanteries parce que savoir
 the most innocent jests may sometimes hurt the reputation.
que f. pl. * *pouvoir F. quelquefois nuire à* f.
 It is only in retirement that one truly enjoys one's self. His
Ce ne que art. *on véritablement jouir de soi.*
 work has pleased (every one) because it unites to ²real ¹utility
ouvrage m. à tout le monde joindre un f.
 the charms of style and the beauties of sentiment.
agrément m. art. m. sing. art. pl.

456. Reflected verbs have for their regimen the personal pronouns *me*, *te*, *se*, *nous*, and *vous*, and this regimen is sometimes direct and sometimes indirect.

OF THE NATURE AND USE OF MOODS AND TENSES.

Of the Indicative.

457. The indicative is that mood which simply declares and affirms a thing. It contains eight tenses, viz:—the *present*, the *imperfect*, the *preterit definite*, the *preterit indefinite*, the *preterit anterior*, the *pluperfect*, the *future simple*, and the *future anterior*.

458. The *present* marks that a thing is either existing or doing at the moment one mentions the circumstance.

EXAMPLES.

J'aime, I love. *Ils jouent,* They play.

459. The *imperfect* is used to express a thing done at a time past, but as present with regard to another thing done at a time likewise past.

EXAMPLE.

J'entraîs au moment où vous sortiez, I came in at the moment you were going out.

460. It is also used to express something past, but habitual, without fixing the time of its duration.

EXAMPLE.

César était un habile général, Cæsar was an able general.

461. The *preterit definite* marks that a thing took place at a time mentioned and completely past.

EXAMPLE.

J'écrivis hier à Rome, I wrote yesterday to Rome.

462 The *preterit indefinite* expresses a thing as having taken place at a time which is neither precise nor determinate.

EXAMPLE.

Il m'a fait un vrai plaisir en venant me voir, He has given me real pleasure by coming to see me.

463. Or at a time which is not absolutely past.

EXAMPLE.

J'ai vu cette semaine beaucoup de monde, I have seen many people this week.

EXERCISE ON THE INDICATIVE.

My sister is in her chamber, where she (is occupied) in reading

²ancient ¹history, ²the study ¹(of which) pleases her extremely.
 art. *où s'occuper F. à A.*
 Benefits bestowed are (so many) trophies erected
 art. *Bienfait que on répandre F. des trophée que on s'ériger F.*
 in the hearts of those whose ²felicity ¹(has been promoted) (by them).
 art. *on faire F. **

The great Corneille was busy in his study tracing the plan of one
occupé cabinet à A. m.

of his tragedies, when a servant, terrified, came to tell him that
*domestique m. tout effrayé J. * lui*

³his ⁴house ²was on ¹fire: "Go and find my wife," re-
*prendre I. à * art. * trouver A. ré-*

plied he; "I do not understand household concerns."
pondre J. entendre rien à art. affaire pl. du ménage m.

Some ²Hungarian ¹noblemen revolted from the Emperor Sigismund;
Des Hongrois seigneur se revolter contre Sigismond;

this prince heard it, and marched boldly against them:
apprendre fièrement au-devant de

"Which among you," said he (to them), "will lay ²hands ³upon
d'entre mettre art. f. sing.

his king ¹first? If there be one ²bold ¹enough, let him advance."
 art. *en un hardi*

This noble firmness struck the rebels (with awe), who returned
*en imposer à séditieux * rentrer*

immediately to their duty. I have travelled through almost all
*aussitôt dans le * devoir. voyager dans*

Europe, and I have visited the most ²celebrated ¹places in Asia,
 art. f. *célèbre lieu de art. Asie,*

and Africa; if, on the one hand, I admired the masterpieces
de art. Afrique; côté m. G. chefs-d'œuvre

of art. of every kind, which the protection of ²enlightened ¹govern-
 art. *en tout genre, art.*

ments has produced, on the other, I shed tears (on seeing) the
faire naître, G. sur

ravages of ignorance and barbarism.
 art. *de art. barbarie f.*

464. The *preterit anterior* expresses that a thing had taken place immediately before a time which is passed, and this tense is either definite or indefinite. There is the same difference between its two forms as between the two preterits, definite and indefinite.—See page 93, art. 54.

EXAMPLES.

<i>J'eus diné hier à midi,</i>	I had dined yesterday at twelve.
<i>Quand j'eus diné hier, midi sonna,</i>	When I had dined yesterday, it struck twelve.
<i>J'ai eu déjeûné ce matin à dix heures,</i>	I had done breakfast this morning at ten o'clock.

465. The *pluperfect* is that past tense which expresses a thing as having taken place at any period antecedent to the time when another thing happened, or it expresses a thing habitually done before another.

EXAMPLES.

<i>J'avais soupé quand il entra,</i>	I had supped when he came in.
<i>Lorsque j'étais à la campagne, dès que j'avais déjeûné, j'allais à la chasse,</i>	When I was in the country, as soon as I had breakfasted, I used to go a hunting.

466. The *future absolute* is that tense which expresses that an action or event will take place at a time which does not yet exist.

EXAMPLE.

<i>J'irai demain à la campagne,</i>	I shall go to-morrow into the country.
-------------------------------------	--

467. The *future anterior* is the tense which expresses that at a time when a thing will take place, another thing will have already taken place.

EXAMPLE.

<i>Quand j'aurai fini, je sortirai,</i>	When I have done, I shall go out.
---	-----------------------------------

EXERCISE ON THE PRETERIT ANTERIOR, &c.

I had done yesterday at noon. I (went out) (as soon as) I had dined.
finir midi. sortir J. dès que
 As soon as Cæsar had crossed the Rubicon, he had no longer to deliberate;
passer plus
 he (was obliged) to conquer or to die. I had finished the task that
*devoir H. * vaincre * tâche f.*
 you had imposed upon me when you came in. Those who had con-
*imposer f. * con-*
 tributed most to his elevation to the throne of his ancestors, were those
tribuer le plus sur
 who labored with the most eagerness to precipitate him (from it).
travailler de acharnement en.
 I shall shortly go into the country, where I intend to (collect
ne point tarder à à campagne, se proposer de h.erbo-
 plants), (in order to) (make myself perfect) in the knowledge of
riser, pour se perfectionner
 botany. When I have done reading the ²divine ¹writings
art.botanique f. achever M. de A. écrit m.
 of Homer and Virgil, and my mind has imbibed their
Homère de que se pénétrer M. de
 beauties, I shall read the other ²epic ¹poets.

Of the Conditional.

468. The *conditional* is the mood which affirms on conditions ; it has two tenses, the *present* and the *past*.

469. The *present of the conditional* is that tense which expresses that a thing would take place on certain conditions.

EXAMPLE.

Je ferais votre affaire avant peu, si elle dépendait uniquement de moi, I would settle your business before long, if it only depended upon me.

470. The *past of the conditional* is that tense which expresses that a thing would have taken place at a time which no longer exists, dependant on certain conditions.

EXAMPLE.

J'aurais, ou j'eusse fait votre affaire, si vous m'en aviez, ou m'en eussiez parlé, I would have settled your business, if you had mentioned it to me.

EXERCISE ON THE CONDITIONAL.

What would not be the felicity of man, if he always sought his
Quel * f. art. *chercher* H.
 happiness in himself? I shall be glad to see you harmonious, happy,
uni,
 and comfortable. A dupe to my imagination, I should have (been
tranquille. * *de*
 bewildered), (but for) you, in my search after truth. Enquire
s'égarer sans * art. *recherche* f. art. *s'informer*
 whether he would have consented to those conditions, in case
si *consentir* *dans* art. *que*
 he had thought himself able to fulfil them.
se croire T. *capable de remplir*

Of the Imperative.

471. The *imperative* is that mood which commands, exhorts, entreats, or reproves. It is a present with respect to the injunction and a future with respect to the thing enjoined.

472. In many verbs a compound of the imperative may be used to express an injunction to have a thing done previously to another ; as, *ayez diné avant que je revienne*, have dined before I return.

EXERCISE ON THE IMPERATIVE.

Be not fond of praise ; but seek virtue, which pro-
 sing. *passionné pour* art. *louange* f. art. *at-*
 cures it. Let us remember that unless virtue guide us, our
tirer *se souvenir* *à moins que* art. *ne*
 choice must be wrong. Let us not be deceived by the first
devoir F. *mauvais.* *se laisser prendre à*
 appearances of things ; but let us take time to fix our judgment.
 art. *se donner* art. *de*
 Arbiters of the destinies of men, do good, if you wish to be happy ;
Arbitre *destinée* art. art. *bien* *vouloir* *

do good, if you wish that your memory should be honored; do good, if
 you wish that ^{Q.} heaven should open to you its ²eternal ¹gates. Never
 forget that the ^{art.} ^{Q.} ^{porte f.} ²truly ³free ¹man is he who, superior to all fears
^{véritablement} ^{dégagé de} ^{f. sing.}
 and all desires, is subject only to God and to reason.
^{de} ^{m. sing.} ^{soumis ne que} ^{art. f.}

Of the Subjunctive.

473. The *subjunctive* is that mood which expresses a subordination to what precedes. With this dependence it forms a sense, and none without. *Je voudrais qu'il lût*, forms a sense, but *qu'il lût*, alone and unconnected, does not.

474. This mood contains four tenses: the *present*—which sometimes expresses a *future*—the *imperfect*, the *preterit*, and the *pluperfect*.

475. The *present* and the *future* of the subjunctive can only be distinguished by the sense. In this phrase, *Il faut que je vous sois bien attaché pour venir vous voir par le temps qu'il fait*, I must have a great esteem for you to come and see you in such weather as this, *je sois* expresses a present time; but in this, *Je ne crois pas que vous obteniez cela de lui*, I do not think you will obtain that of him, *vous obteniez* expresses a future, and stands for *vous obtiendrez*.

476. The *imperfect*, the *preterit*, and the *pluperfect* of the subjunctive express also a past or future, according to circumstances. In this phrase, *Soupçonnez-vous qu'il ne le fit pas?* Did you suspect he would not do it, *fit* expresses a past; but in this, *Je désirerais qu'il vît du monde*, I wish him to see company, *vît* marks a future.

EXERCISE ON THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

²Men ¹must ³be (very much) blinded by their passions, not to
^{art.} ^{il faut que} ^{bien} ^{aveuglé} ^{pour}
 acknowledge that they ought (to love one another) as parts of a
^{convenir} ^{devoir F.} ^{s'entr'aimer} ^{art.}
 whole, and as ²(the members of our body) ¹(would do) if (every one)
^{tout,} ^{chacun}
 had a ²particular ¹vitality. You asked him to come with us, but I
^{sa} ^{vie.} ^{prier G.} ^{de}
 doubt whether he will have that complaisance. I could not persuade
^{que} ^{Q.} ^{H.}
 myself that he was so vain as to aspire to that place. Though every
^{S. assez} ^{* pour} ^{f.}
 body says so, I do not believe that he is gone to Rome. (Is it possible)
^{Q. le,} ^{Q.} ^{se pouvoir F.}
 that he should let slip ²so ²good ¹an ⁴opportunity of acquiring
^{laisser R. échapper} ^{beau} ^{occasion f.} ^{A. un}
²immortal ¹glory? I could have wished that he had availed himself of his
^{profiter T.}
 abode in the country to perfect himself in the study of philosophy.
^{séjour à} ^{campagne pour se perfectionner} ^{art. f.}

Of the Infinitive.

477. The *infinitive* is that mood which affirms indeterminately, without either number or person.

478. It denotes of itself neither *present*, *past*, nor *future*, except when it follows other verbs. The *present* always expresses a present, relative to the preceding verb; as, *je le vois, je le vis, je le verrai venir*, I see, I saw, I shall see him come. The *past* always expresses a past, relative to the verb that precedes it; as, *je crois, je croyais l'avoir vu venir*, I think, I thought that I had seen him coming. To express a *future*, the infinitive must be preceded by the infinitive of the verb *devoir*; as, *je croyais devoir y aller*, I thought I was to go there.

479. REMARK. The infinitive also expresses a future after the verbs *permettre, espérer, compter, s'attendre*, and *menacer*; as, *il promet de venir (qu'il viendra)*, he promises to come (that he will come); *il menace de s'y rendre (qu'il s'y rendra)*, he threatens to go (that he will go) there.

EXERCISE ON THE INFINITIVE.

We only shut our eyes to truth, because we fear to see
ne * art. art. *que parce que* *de*
 ourselves as we are. We were yet far from the castle, when
nous tel que H. *encore*
 one of our friends came to join us. I did not think I was to set
 J. * H. * *devoir* A. *
 out so soon. He promises every day that he will amend, but I do
de * * *se corriger* A.
 not rely upon his promises. They talk of a secret expedition; he
compter *promesse* f. On
 hopes to be (in it). He relies upon seeing you (very soon) to
 * en. compter * A *au premier jour pour*
 terminate amicably his affair with you. You expected to take a
à l'amiable *s'attendre* H. *faire*
 journey this year, but your father has changed his mind. He threat-
voyage m. *de* * *avis*.
 ens to punish us severely, if we (fall again) into the same error.
de *sévèrement* *retomber* *faute*.

OF THE PARTICIPLE.

480. The *participle* is a part of the verb which partakes of the properties both of a verb and an adjective: of a verb, as it has its signification and regimen—of an adjective, as it expresses the quality of a person or thing.

481. There are two participles, the *participle present* and the *participle past*.

Of the Participle Present.

482. The *participle present* always terminates in *ant*; as, *aimant, finissant, recevant, rendant*.

483. RULE. The *participle present* remains unchanged, and takes neither gender nor number when it expresses an action; as, *une montagne, or des montagnes dominant sur des plaines immenses*, a mountain, or

mountains commanding immense plains; *un homme, des hommes, une femme, des femmes lisant, parlant, marchant*, a man, men, a woman, women reading, speaking, walking. But when, like an adjective, it expresses simply a quality, it takes both the gender and number of its substantive; as, *un homme obligeant*, an obliging man; *une femme obligeante*, an obliging woman; *des tableaux parlans*, speaking portraits; *la religion dominante*, the established religion; *à la nuit tombante*, at night fall.

484. What grammarians call *gerund* is nothing but the participle present, to which the word *en* is prefixed; *on se forme l'esprit en lisant de bons livres*, we form our minds by reading good books.

EXERCISE ON THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

That mountain being very high, and thus commanding a vast
élevé, ainsi dominer sur grande
 extent of country, was very well calculated for our observations. This
*étendue pays, H. * propre à*
 woman is of good disposition, obliging every one whenever she
caractère m. tout le monde quand
 (has it in her power). They go cringing before the great, that they
*en a le pouvoir. ramper devant pl. afin de **
 may be insolent to their equals. The state of pure nature is that of
** A. avec égal.*

the savage living in the desert, but living in his family, knowing his
famille f. connaître
 children, loving them, (making use) of speech, and (making himself
user art. parole, se faire
 understood). An agreeable langor imperceptibly (laying hold)
entendre. langueur f. insensiblement s'emparer
 of my senses, suspended the activity of my soul, and I (fell asleep).
sens, suspendre J. s'endormer J.

Time is a real blunderer, placing, replacing, ordering, disordering,
art. vrai brouillon, mettre, remettre, ranger, déranger,
 impressing, erasing, approaching, removing, and making all things, good
imprimer, effacer, approcher, éloigner, rendre f.
 and bad; and almost always (impossible to be known again).
presque méconnaissable.

Of the Participle Past.

485. The participle past has various terminations; as, *aimé, fini, reçu, ouvert, dissous*, &c.

486. This participle sometimes agrees with its subject and sometimes with its regimen.

Agreement of the Participle Past with its Subject.

487. RULE I. The participle past, when accompanied by the auxiliary verb *être*, agrees with its subject in gender and number.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Mon frère est tombé,</i>	My brother is fallen.
<i>Mes frères sont tombés,</i>	My brothers are fallen.
<i>Ma sœur est tombée,</i>	My sister is fallen.
<i>Mes sœurs sont tombées,</i>	My sisters are fallen.

<i>La nuit sera bientôt passée,</i>	The night will soon be over.
<i>Les spectacles sont fréquentés,</i>	The theatres are frequented.
<i>Cette fleur est fort recherchée,</i>	This flower is much sought after.
<i>Ils sont fort estimés,</i>	They are very much esteemed.

EXERCISE ON THE PARTICIPLE PAST.

Fire-arms were not known to the ancients. Ishmael, the son of
 art. *arme-à-feu* f. H. *connu de* *Ismaël*, *
 Abraham, is known among the Arabs as (the man) from whence they
parmi *Arabe* *celui*
 sprung, and circumcision has remained (among them) as the
être sorti G. art. f. *être demeuré* *leur*
 mark of their origin. Heaven is that ²permanent ¹city (into which)
 f. art. *cité* f. *où*
 the just are to be received after this life. In ²Abraham's ¹time,
 pl. *devoir* * *après* *De* art.
 the threatenings of the true God was dreaded by Pharaoh, king of Egypt;
menace f. H. *redouté de Pharaon*,
 but in the time of Moses, all nations were corrupted, and the world,
Moïse, art. f. H. *perversi*,
 which God has made to manifest his power, was become a temple of
pour *pouvoir*, H. *devenu*
 idols. That ²dreadful ¹crisis which threatened the state with ²instant
terrible crise f. H. *de prochain*
¹destruction, was happily soon over. She is come to bring us all
 f. J. *heureusement* *passé*. *
 kinds of refreshments. The sciences have always been
sorte f. sing. *rafraîchissement*. f.
 protected by ²enlightened ¹governments.
protégé art. *éclairé*

488. RULE II. The participle past, when it follows the verb *avoir*, never agrees with *its* subject.

<i>Mon frère a écrit,</i>	My brother has written.
<i>Mes frères ont écrit,</i>	My brothers have written.
<i>Ma sœur a écrit,</i>	My sister has written.
<i>Mes sœurs ont écrit,</i>	My sisters have written.
<i>Les Amazones ont acquis de la</i>	The Amazons have acquired cele-
<i>celebrité,</i>	brity.
<i>J'ai contraint les soldats à marcher,</i>	I have forced the soldiers to march.

489. REMARK. The participle of the verb *être*, and of all the neuter verbs which are conjugated with the auxiliary verb *avoir*, never vary; as, *il* or *elle a été*, he or she has been; *ils* or *elles ont été*, they have been; *il* or *elle a dormi*, he or she has slept; *ils* or *elles ont nui*, they have annoyed.

EXERCISE.

The Romans successively triumphed over the ²most warlike ¹na-
Romains successivement G. *de* *belliqueux*
 tions. Lampridius relates that Adrian erected to Jesus Christ some
raconter *Adrien élever* I. *de*
 temples, which (were still to be seen) in his time. Happy those
 art. *on encore voir* H. *de* *

princes who have never (made use) of their power but to do
 art. *user* *pouvoir que pour*
 good! We have spent the whole day in tormenting ourselves.
 art. *bien!* *journée f. à A. nous.*
 One has seldom seen a great stock of good sense in a man of ima-
 On *rarement* *fonds m. sens a*
 gination. The errors of Descartes (proved very useful) to Newton.
beaucoup servir G.

Agreement of the Participle Past with its Regimen.

490. RULE I. The participle past always agrees with *its regimen direct*, when that regimen is placed before the participle, whether the auxiliary verb that accompanies it be *avoir* or *être*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Les écoliers que j'ai eus, ont fait de</i>	The pupils whom I have had, have
<i>grands progrès,</i>	made rapid progress.
<i>Lucrèce s'est tuée,</i>	Lucretia has killed herself.
<i>J'ai renvoyé les livres que vous</i>	I have sent back the books which
<i>m'aviez prêtés,</i>	you had lent me.
<i>Que de soins je me suis donnés!</i>	What pains I have taken!
<i>Quelle affaire avez-vous entre-</i>	What business have you under-
<i>prise?</i>	taken?
<i>Quand la race de Caïn se fut mul-</i>	When the race of Cain had mul-
<i>tipliée,</i>	tiplied.
<i>Ces yeux que n'ont émus ni soupirs</i>	Those eyes which neither sighs
<i>ni terreur,</i>	nor terror have moved.
<i>Le Dieu Mercure est un de ceux</i>	The god Mercury is one of those
<i>que les anciens ont le plus mul-</i>	whom the ancients have multi-
<i>tipliés,</i>	plied the most.

491. REMARK. The regimen which precedes the participle is either one of these pronouns—*que, me, te, se, le, la, les, nous, and vous*—or a noun sometimes joined to the pronoun *quel*, sometimes preceded by the word of quantity, *combien* or *que*—signifying *combien*, how much—as may be seen in the examples already given.

EXERCISE ON THE AGREEMENT OF THE PARTICIPLE PAST WITH ITS REGIMEN.

All the letters which I have received, confirm that ²important ¹news.
f. confirmer sing.
 The ²agitated ¹life which I have led till now, makes me sigh
agité f. mener jusqu'à présent, soupirer
 for retirement. The difficulties which the academies (have pro-
apprès art. retraite f. f. se
 posed to one another) do not seem easy to (be resolved). The
faire G. paraître aisé résoudre.
 sciences which you have studied will prove infinitely useful (to you).
f. être
 The death which Lucretia (gave herself) has (made her immortal). The
f. se donner G. immortaliser G.
 cities which those nations have (built for themselves) are but a
ville f. peuple se bâtir G. ne que

collection of huts. The persons whom you have instructed appear to
amas m. chaumière. f.
 me possessed of reason and taste. Nothing can equal the ardor of
plein de égal
 the troops which I have seen (setting off). The chimeras which she
f. A. chimère f.
 has got in her head (are beyond) all belief. What measures
*se mettre * art. passer croyance f. démarche f.*
 have I not taken! What fortunes has not this revolution ruined!
faire! f. renverser!
 What tears has she not shed! what sighs has she not heaved! The
Que de f. verser! m. pousser!
 Amazons (made themselves) famous by their courage. The city of
f. se rendre G. célèbre f.
 London (has made itself), by its commerce, the metropolis of the uni-
m. métropole f.
 verse. I have thought her agitated by the furies. This day is one
croire
 of those which they have consecrated to tears. The language in
*m. consacrer art. langue f. **
 which Cicero and Virgil have written will live in their works. I
Cicéron Virgile par ouvrage.
 could have wished to avoid entering into those details, but I thought
*vouloir * éviter d'entrer A. m. croire G.*
 them necessary. The tribunes demanded of Clodius the execution
tribun m. J. à
 of the promises which the consul Valerius had given them.
f. faire leur.

492. RULE II. The participle past *never* agrees with its regimen, either when that participle is without regimen *direct* or when, having a regimen direct, that regimen is placed *after* it.

EXAMPLES.

<i>La lettre dont je vous ai parlé,</i>	The letter which I have mentioned to you.
<i>La perte et les profits auxquels il a participé,</i>	The loss and profits which he has shared.
<i>Les académies se sont fait des objections,</i>	The academies have proposed objections to one another.
<i>Vous avez instruit ces personnes à dessiner,</i>	You have taught these persons to draw.
<i>Lucretia s'est donné la mort,</i>	Lucretia has put a period to her existence.

EXERCISE.

The persons whose ⁵visit you ³had ⁴announced to ²me, are not
*f. art. f. **
 come. Men built themselves cities. The Amazons acquired
*art. se bâtir G. **
 great celebrity. I have forced the soldiers to march. That
beaucoup de contraindre
 woman (has bestowed on herself) fine gowns. ³Letters ⁴and
se donner G. de art.

⁵writing ¹were ²invented to represent speech. She has
 art. *écriture* on a *pour peindre* art. *parole*.
 cut two (of her) fingers. Titus has made his wife mistress of his
se couper * *doigt* m. *rendre*
 riches. I have given myself (a great deal) of trouble. Commerce
bien. *bien* art. *peine* f. art. m.
 nas made this city flourishing. They have made an appointment.
rendre f. *florissant*. *se donner* * *rendezvous*.

493. RULE III. The participle past takes neither gender nor number when the participle and the auxiliary verb to which it is joined are used impersonally, nor when that participle is followed by a verb which governs the pronoun or pronouns preceding it.

EXAMPLES.

Les chaleurs excessives qu'il a fait The excessive heats which we have
cet été, ont beaucoup nui à la had this summer have done great
récolte, injury to the corn.
Quelle fâcheuse aventure vous est-il What unpleasant adventure have
arrivé ? you met with ?
La maison que j'ai fait bâtir, The house which I have ordered
 to be built.
Imitez les vertus que vous avez Imitate the virtues which you have
entendu louer, heard praised.
Les mathématiques que vous n'avez The mathematics which you would
pas voulu que j'étudiasse, not permit me to study.
Elle s'est laissé séduire, She has suffered herself to be se-
 duced.

494. REMARK. To make a right application of the second part of this rule, we ought to examine whether we can put the regimen immediately after the participle. As we cannot say, *J'ai fait la maison, vous avez entendu les vertus, vous n'avez pas voulu les mathématiques*, it follows that the regimen belongs to the second verb. Sometimes, however, the regimen may relate either to the participle or to the following verb, according to the meaning of the speaker. Thus, *Je l'ai vu peindre*, means, I saw her picture drawn ; but *Je l'ai vue peindre*, signifies, I saw her painting.

495. Sometimes it happens likewise that, in sentences which seem to resemble each other, the regimen in one belongs to the participle and in the other to the verb which follows it. For instance, this question—*Avez-vous entendu chanter la nouvelle actrice ?* Have you heard the new actress sing ?—should be thus answered, *Oui, je l'ai entendue chanter* ; Yes, I have : but this question—*Avez-vous entendu chanter la nouvelle ariette ?* Have you heard the new song ?—must be answered, *Oui, je l'ai entendu chanter* ; Yes, I have.

EXERCISE.

The great changes which (have taken place) in the administration
changement *y avoir* G.
 have astonished many people. The heavy rains which (we
bien des personnes. *grand pluie* f. *il*
 have had) in the spring have been the cause of many diseases. The
faire G. *maladie* f.

scarcity which there was ²last ¹winter has afforded the opportunity
dîsette f. G. art. *dernier* *donner* *occasion*
of doing much good. What news (has reached you ?) (How many)
A. *bien.* *vous est-il venu ?* *Que de*
imprudent steps (were taken) on that occasion ! How many large
faux démarche f. il s'est fait en *gros*
ships have been built in England within these fifty years ! The
il se construire G. *depuis **
figures which you have learned to draw are of great beauty. (We
apprendre dessiner un *Il*
ought) never to swerve from the good path which we have begun
falloir F. ** s'éloigner* *route f.* *on*
to follow. The measures which you advised me to adopt have
mesure f. *conseiller G.* *de prendre*
not succeeded. The rule which I have begun to explain seems to
réussir. *règle f.* *expliquer sembler*
me very easy to (be understood). You see that I have not been mistaken
saisir A. *se tromper G.*
respecting the affairs which I had foreseen you would have in hand.
prévoir que * *

CHAPTER VI.

OF THE ADVERBS.

Situation of the Adverbs.

496. RULE I. In the simple tenses, the adverb is generally placed after the verb, and, in the compound tenses, between the auxiliary and the participle.

EXAMPLES.

L'homme le plus éclairé est ordi- The man who is most learned is
nairement celui qui pense le plus generally he who thinks most
modestement de lui-même, modestly of himself.
Avez-vous jamais vu un pédant plus Have you ever seen a pedant more
absurbe et plus vain ? absurd and more vain ?

497. Compound adverbs, and those which have or might have a regimen like the adjectives from which they are derived, are always placed after the verb.

EXAMPLES.

C'est à la mode. That is fashionable.
Il a agi conséquemment, He has acted consistently.

498. Adverbs which denote time in an indeterminate manner are likewise placed after the verb.

EXAMPLES.

Il eût fallu se lever plus matin, It would have been necessary to
rise earlier.
On a vu cela autrefois, That has been seen formerly.

499. EXCEPTIONS. 1st.—Adverbs of order, rank, and those which express a determinate time, are placed either before or after the verb.

EXAMPLES.

Nous devons premièrement faire We ought, first, to do our duty;
notre devoir; secondement, cher- secondly, enjoy lawful pleasures.
cher les plaisirs permis,
Aujourd'hui il fait beau; il pleuvra To-day it is fine; it will rain per-
peut-être demain, haps to-morrow.

500. 2d.—These adverbs—*comment, où, d'où, par où, combien, pourquoi, quand*, used with or without interrogation—are always placed before the verb which they modify.

EXAMPLES.

Comment vous portez-vous? How do you do?
Où allez-vous? Where are you going?
Il ne sait comment s'y prendre, He does not know how to set about it.

501. RULE II. The adverb is always placed before the adjective which it modifies.

EXAMPLE.

C'est une femme fort belle, très- She is a woman very beautiful, of great
sensible, et infiniment sage, sensibility, and infinitely prudent.

502. RULE III. Adverbs of quantity and comparison, and the three adverbs of time—*souvent, toujours, jamais*—are placed before the other adverbs.

EXAMPLES.

Si poliment, fort poliment, So politely, very politely
Très-heureusement, Very happily.
Le plus adroitement, The most skilfully.
Ils ne seront jamais étroitement unis, They never will be intimately united.
Ils sont toujours ensemble, [arrive, They are always together.
C'est souvent à l'improviste qu'il He often comes unexpectedly.

503. *Souvent* may, however, be preceded by an adverb of quantity or comparison; as, *si souvent, assez souvent, fort souvent, plus souvent, moins souvent, trop souvent*.

504. REMARK. When adverbs of quantity and comparison meet together in a sentence, the following is the order which custom has established:

Si peu	Bien peu	†Beaucoup trop	Tant mieux
Trop peu	Bien plus	Beaucoup plus	Tant pis
Très-peu	Bien davantage	Beaucoup moins	&c.

505. When *bien* stands before another adverb, it means *very, much*, &c., as in the preceding and following examples.

Bien assez, Quite enough. *Frapper bien fort,* To strike very hard.
Bien moins, Much less. *Bien tard,* Very late.

506. But when it is placed after the adverb, it signifies *well*; as,

<i>Assez bien,</i>	Pretty well.	<i>Fort bien,</i>	Very well.
<i>Moins bien,</i>	Not so well.	<i>Aussi bien,</i>	As well.

† *Beaucoup* is not, as the English *much*, susceptible of being modified by any adverb preceding; thus, *très-beaucoup, trop beaucoup*, &c. would be barbarism.

CHAPTER VII.

OF THE CONJUNCTIONS.

507. THE conjunction *que* serves to complete a comparison; it is elliptically used to express a restriction when placed after *ne*, and it generally gives grace, energy, and precision to sentences.

EXAMPLES.

QUE,	expressing comparison,	{ <i>L'Asie est plus grande que l'Europe,</i>	{ Asia is larger than Europe.
	for rien que	{ <i>On ne parle que de la nouvelle victoire,</i>	{ They talk of <i>nothing</i> but the new victory.
	— <i>je souhaite que</i>	{ <i>Qu'il vive, pour je souhaite qu'il vive.</i>	{ May he live, for <i>I</i> wish that he may live.
	— <i>à moins que</i>	{ <i>Cela ne finira pas qu'il ne vienne.</i>	{ There will be no end to it, <i>unless</i> he come.
	— <i>avant que</i>		
	— <i>sans que</i>	{ <i>Qu'il fasse le moindre excès, il est malade,</i>	{ If he commits the least excess, he is ill.
	— <i>dès que</i>		
	— <i>aussitôt que</i>		
	— <i>si, or quand</i>	{ <i>Qu'il perde, ou qu'il gagne son procès, c'est un homme ruiné,</i>	{ Whether he gains or loses his lawsuit, he is a ruined man.
	— <i>soit que</i>	{ <i>Attendez qu'il vienne,</i>	{ Wait <i>till</i> he comes.
	— <i>jusqu'à ce que</i>	{ <i>Que ne se corrige-t-il ?</i>	{ Why does he not reform ?
	— <i>pourquoi ?</i>	{ <i>Méchant qu'il est,</i>	{ Wicked <i>as</i> he is.
	— <i>comme</i>	{ <i>Que Dieu est grand !</i>	{ How great is the Almighty !
	— <i>combien</i>	{ <i>Que je hais les méchans !</i>	{ How much I hate the wicked !

EXERCISE ON THE CONJUNCTIONS.

We have every thing to fear from his wisdom, even more than from
encore
 his power. What men style greatness, glory, power, profound
Ce que art. appeler profond
 policy, is in the eyes of God only misery, weakness, and vanity.
politique f. à
 May they understand, at last, that without ²internal ¹peace, there
comprendre, avec soi-même art.
 is no happiness. May she be as happy as she deserves to be !
point de de le
 Never write before you have ²thoroughly ¹examined the subject
que Q. sous toutes ses faces
 which you propose to treat. Let him but hear the least noise, his
se proposer de traiter. *

²terrified ¹imagination presents to him nothing but monsters. Do
effrayé f. * *ne que*
 not sift this question till I (can be your guide). Do not go
approfondir *ne vous mettre* Q. *sur la voie.*
 out till your brother comes in. Why does he not (take advantage) of
ne rentrer Q. *profiter*
 his youth, (in order to) acquire the knowledge he wants?
pour *connaissance* pl. *dont avoir besoin.*

508. Another frequent use of the conjunction *que* is to save the repetition of *comme*, *parceque*, *puisque*, *quand*, *quoi que*, *si*, &c., when to phrases beginning with these words, others are added under the same regimen, by means of the conjunction *et*; as,

Si l'on aimait son pays, et qu'on en If we loved our country, and
désirât sincèrement la gloire, on sincerely wished its glory, we
se conduirait de manière, &c. should act so as &c.

EXERCISE.

Full as he was of his prejudices, he would not acknowledge
Rempli H. *préjugé,* J. *convenir de*
 (any thing). Full ²of ³self-love ¹(as he is), expect nothing good
rien. *Pétri*
 (from him). ¹How ⁶beautiful ⁵is ²that ⁴cultivated ³nature! How, by
en *par*
 the care of man, is it brilliantly and richly adorned! Had
 f. *pompeusement orné!* si * *de*
 profound philosophers presided at the formation of languages, and
 G. à art. *langue,* * *que.*
 had they carefully examined the elements of speech, not only in
avec soin T. m. art. *discours, non*
 their relations (to one another), but also in themselves, it is not
entr'eux *encore en* m.
 (to be doubted), that languages would present principles more
douteux art. *ne offrir* S.
 simple, and, at the same time, more luminous.

Government of Conjunctions.

509. The conjunctions which unite sentences to one another are followed either by the *infinitive*, the *indicative*, or the *subjunctive*.

510. Those which are followed by an infinitive are,

511. 1st.—Such as are distinguished from prepositions only by being followed by a verb; as,

Il faut se reposer après avoir One ought to rest after having
travaillé, labored.

512. 2d.—Those which have the preposition *de* after them; as,

Il travaille afin de vous surpasser, He works that he may surpass you.

EXERCISE ON THE GOVERNMENT OF CONJUNCTIONS.

They were going to spend (a few) days in town, only that
ne * *passer quelques* à art. *que pour*

they might return with more pleasure to their charming solitude.
 * * *se retrouver* A. *dans*
 Many persons work only (in order to) acquire consideration and riches,
ne que afin de
 but the ²honest, ³humane ¹man spends (so much) time in
de bien sensible ne employer tant de à
 study, only to be useful to his fellow-creatures. I reveal to you
 art. *que pour semblables. dévoiler*
 the plot which your enemies have concerted in secret,
trame f. ourdir art. *ténèbres f. pl.*
 in order to warn you against their artifices.
prémunir

513. Conjunctions that govern the indicative

bien attendu que,	autant que,	puisque,	peut-être que,
à condition que,	non plus que,	lorsque,	comme,
à la charge que,	outré que,	pendant que,	comme si,
de même que,	parce que,	tandis que,	quand,
ainsi que,	attendu que,	durant que,	pourquoi,
aussi bien que,	vu que,	tant que,	comment, &c.

514. They are followed by the indicative, because the principal sentence, which they unite with that which is incidental, expresses the affirmation in a direct, positive, and independent manner.

515. The use of the six following conjunctions,

si non que,	de sorte que,	tellement que,
si ce n'est que,	en sorte que,	de manière que,

varies according to the meaning expressed by the principal sentence.

EXAMPLE OF THE INDICATIVE.

Je ne lui ai répondu autre chose
si non que j'avais exécuté ses
ordres,
 I made him no other answer *but*
that I had executed his orders.

EXAMPLE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

Je ne veux autre chose, si non
que vous travailliez avec plus
d'ardeur,
 I desire nothing else *but that* you
 would study with greater ardor.

516. The indicative is required in the first sentence by the verb *j'ai répondu* expressing a positive affirmation, and the subjunctive in the second, because *je veux* expresses but a desire.

EXERCISE.

When you have a more ²extensive ¹knowledge of geometry and
 L. art. *de*
 algebra, I shall give you (a few) lessons in astronomy and
 art. *algèbre f. quelques de*
 optics. Form your mind, heart, and taste while you are still
optique. votre votre encore
 young. Do not keep truth a prisoner, though you should (draw
*retenir art. * captive, quand devoir N. s'at-*
 upon you) a cloud of enemies. I will give you this fine picture upon
tirer nuée f. tableau m. à
 condition that you keep it as a testimony of my friendship.
conserver L. témoignage m.

517. The conjunctions which govern the subjunctive are,

soit que,	jusqu'à ce que,	supposé que,	afin que,
sans que,	encore que,	au cas que,	de peur que,
pour que,	à moins que,	avant que,	de crainte que,
quoique,	pourvu que,	non pas que,	&c. &c.

518. They require the subjunctive, as they always imply doubt, desire, ignorance.

EXERCISE.

You know too well the value of time, to ²make ¹it
connaître *prix* m. art. *pour que être* Q. *il*
 necessary to tell you to (make a good use of) it. Study only great
de de bien employer art.
 models, lest those which are but middling should spoil your
de peur que * *médiocre ne gâter* Q.
 taste before it be entirely formed. I (make not the least doubt) that
ne douter F. *nullement*
 your method will succeed, provided it be well known. Several
f. ne Q. *f.*
 phenomena of nature are easy (to be explained), supposing the
 principle of ²universal ¹gravitation to be true.
*art. f. **

PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES ON THE NINE PARTS OF SPEECH.

THE GOOD MOTHER.

What a fine morning! said the amiable Charlotte to her brother
matinée f. J.
 George. Come, let us go into the garden, and enjoy the ²magnificent
 sing. * A. *de*
¹sight of ²rich ³and ⁴abundant ¹nature. We will gather there
spectacle m. *une* *fertile* *cueillir* y
 the ² freshest ³and ⁴ sweetest ¹ flowers. We will make a nosegay, which
frais *odorant* f. *bouquet* m.
 we will offer to mamma. You know she loves flowers. This
maman. sing. *savoir que* art.
 attention will give her pleasure. Ah! brother, it will obtain us a
faire lui *mon* *f.* *valoir*
 smile, a caress, perhaps even a kiss. Ah! sister, replied
sourire m. *f.* *baiser* m. *ma* *répondre* J.
 George, your proposal delights me; let us run, let us fly, that
 sing. *projet enchanter* *courir,* *voler,* *afin de*
 we may offer her (when she rises) this tribute of our gratitude and
 * * A. *lui à son lever* *hommage* *de*
 our love. Full of this idea, Charlotte and George hastened
Plein *se hâter* J. *de se rendre*
 into the garden. Charlotte gathered violets, jessamine, and (young
 J. *des bou-*
 rose-buds), which (had but just begun) to open their ²purple
tons de rose, *ne commencer* H. *que ** *entr'ouvrir* *de pourpre*
¹cups, while George prepared ²green ¹sprigs of myrtle and thyme,
calice, H. *verdoyant jet* m. *myrte* *thym,*

intended to support the flowers. ¹Never ²had ³these ⁴amiable ⁵children
destiné soutenir H.

⁶worked with (so much) zeal and ardor. Satisfaction and pleasure
travailler tant de zèle art. f. art.

beamed in all their features, sparkled in their eyes, and added still
être peint H. trait m. pétiller H.
 to their beauty.

While they (were employing themselves) (in this manner), their
s'occuper H. ainsi

mother, who had seen them in the garden, came to join them.
J. joindre

(As soon as) they perceived her, they flew to her, and said:- Ah!

Dès que J. J. elle, lui J.

mamma, how ³glad ¹we ²are to see you! how (impatient we were)
que aise de que il tardait à notre impatience

(for) this pleasure! In the pleasing expectation (of it) we were preparing
*d'avoir ce doux attente f. **

this nosegay for you. What satisfaction should we have had in
f. ne pas à

presenting it to you! Look at these rose-buds, these violets, this jessamine,
*offrir Voir **

this myrtle, and this thyme. Well, we designed them for you.
Eh! bien, destiner H. -

These flowers, coming from us, would have been dear to you. When
cher En

you wore them, you would have said, My children were thinking of
** porter C. s'occuper*

me while I slept. I am always as present to their minds as to their
dormir H. sing.

hearts. They love me, and it is by giving me every day new proofs
sing. ce en de preuve f.

of their affection that they acknowledge the care I have taken
reconnaître soin m. pl. que

of them in their childhood, and all the marks of tenderness I
que

(am unceasingly) giving them.

ne cesser F. de A. leur.

My dear children, replied the mother, embracing them, how
répondre J. en embrasser quel

charming you render all my days! your gratitude, your tenderness,
charme répandre sur

your attention to me, make me forget my former misfortunes, and
pl. pour oublier ancien malheur m.

yield my heart again to the soft impressions of pleasure. May
*rouvrir * f. art. Pouvoir Q.*

Heaven continue to bless my labor! May it be your guide and
art. continuer de soin pl. Pouvoir

your support in the career which (will soon be opened) to you!
soutien carrière f. aller F. s'ouvrir devant

may it complete its kindness by preserving you from the dangers
mettre le comble à bienfait pl. en garantir de

to which you (cannot fail) to be soon exposed! Alas! I shudder
*ne pas tarder L. * frémir*

(at them) beforehand, my dear children; the moment is come when you
en d'avance must enter the world. Your persons, your birth, and your
devoir dans *figure sing.* *naissance,*
 fortune call you there, and ensure you a ²distinguished ¹rank (in it).
appeler y assurer m. y

I cannot always be your guide. Young and inexperienced, you will

L. *sans expérience, aller F.*
 (find yourselves) surrounded by every kind of temptation.
se trouver A. entouré sorte f. séduction.

(Every thing), even vice, (presents itself) there under an ²agreeable
*Tout jusque à art. m. s'offrir F. y sous **

¹form, and almost always in the shape of pleasure, which has (so many)
pl. sous image art. tant de

attractions for youth. They will try to mislead you, to
attire f. art. jeunesse f. chercher égarer

corrupt you; they (will make use of) artifice, raillery, and even
employer art. art. même

ridicule, and, if necessary, they will assume even the mask
il est prendre jusque à masque m.

of virtue. If you (abandon yourselves) to first impressions, you
art. se laisser F. aller

are lost. The poison of example (will insinuate itself) into your
art. se glisser L.

hearts, will corrupt the innocence and purity (of them), and will substitute
altérer en,

²violent ¹passions for the mild affections which have hitherto formed
déchirant f. à doux faire
 your happiness.

Do not imagine, my dear children, that in placing before your eyes a
croire en mettre sous

picture of the dangers of the world, my intention is to prohibit
le tableau m. Q. de interdire

you every kind. of pleasure. (God forbid)! Pleasure is necessary
espèce f. à Dieu ne plaise! art.

to man; without it, our existence would be dreadful; (and therefore)
art. lui, affreux; aussi

Providence, ever attentive to our wants, has multiplied the
art. f. besoin, -t-elle

sources of it, both in and out of ourselves. But, in tasting the
en nous nous. en goûter

pleasures of the world, never (abandon yourselves) (to them). Take
se livrer F. y Avoir

care that they do not govern you; know how to quit them the
*dominer savoir * * **

moment they have acquired (too much) sway over you. It is the
que prendre L. trop de empire Ce

only way to enjoy with delight that ²exquisite ¹pleasure which we
moyen de volupté de délicieux

can only find in ourselves, and which has its source in an ²upright ³and
en dans droit

⁴pure ¹conscience. Ah! why can I not give you all my experience?
f. que

Why can you not, like me, read the depths of the heart? With
dans abîme sing. pl.
 what astonishment would you often see *chagrin*, agitation, and
 art. m. art.
 trouble, disguised under the appearance of joy and tranquillity;
 art. m. *déguisé sous apparence* pl. art. *du calme*;
 hatred and envy concealed under the air of confidence and
 art. f. art. f. *caché* art. *confiance* f. *de*
 friendship; indifference and selfishness affecting the most lively
la f. art. *égoïsme* *vif*
 interest; ²the most dreadful and perfidious ¹plots contrived deliber-
trame f. *ourdi de sang*
 ately in the dark; in a word, ²the most odious ¹vices endea-
froid et ténèbres f. pl. *en* art. *s'ef-*
 voring to show themselves under the features of ²(their opposite)
forcer de *traits qui leur sont opposé*
¹virtues! In the world, there is but one (moving principle);
 art. *ne que* *seul mobile* m.
 that is ²self- ¹interest. (To that, every) action refers,
ce art. *personnel* *C'est à lui que toutes* art. pl. *se rapporter*
 every thing tends to that as to its end. I know very well, my dear
lui *fin* f. *savoir*
 children, that your hearts will not be infected by this vice. The senti-
de
 ments of ²universal ¹benevolence with which I (have always)
bienveillance * *ne point cesser* G. *de*
 inspired you, and of which I have seen you give (so many) proofs,
 A. *tant de preuve*,
 (remove already every fear I might have) upon that subject: but will you
me rassurent d'avance *sur* *point* m.
 not yield to other vices not less dangerous? Cruel idea! terrible
de *non* f. *affreux*
 uncertainty! If this misfortune were to happen, ah! my dear children,
 f. * * *arriver*, H.
 instead of being the joy and consolation of my life, you would be the
 art. f.
 torment, the shame, and the disgrace (of it). You would poison
honte f. *opprobre* *en*. *empoisonner*
 my days, and you would plunge a dagger into the ²very ¹bosom which
porter * art. *mort* f. *même sein* m.
 gave you life. But whither is my tenderness for you hurrying me?
 art. *où* *emporter* F.
 No, my children; no, I have nothing to fear; you love me (too much) to
Non, *trop pour*
 wish to afflict me so cruelly; and I shall have the pleasure (as long as)
vouloir * *tant que*
 I live of seeing you walk in the ways of honor and virtue.
 L. A. *marcher* *sentier* art. pr. art.

PART III.

IDIOMS;

OR,

WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR PARTICULAR RULES.

CHAPTER I.

OF THE SUBSTANTIVE.

519. THE substantive performs *three* functions in language, that of the subject, the regimen, and the apostrophe.

520. The substantive is the *subject* whenever it is that of which something is affirmed. When we say *l'oiseau vole*, the bird flies; *le lion ne vole pas*, the lion does not fly; the substantives *oiseau* and *lion* are subjects; because it is affirmed of the first that it flies, and of the second that it does not fly.

521. It is to the substantive as the subject that every thing relates in a sentence. In the following, *un homme juste et ferme n'est ébranlé, ni par les clameurs d'une populace injuste, ni par les menaces d'un fier tyran; quand même le monde brisé s'écroulerait, il en serait frappé, mais non pas ému*, the adjectives *juste* and *ferme* modify the subject *homme*, and all the rest modify *un homme juste et ferme*.

EXERCISE ON THE SUBSTANTIVE.

1. A *king* who is inaccessible to men is inaccessible to truth also, and passes his life in a ferocious, inhuman grandeur: as he is continually afraid of being deceived, he always unavoidably is, and deserves to be so; besides, he is at the mercy of slanderers and tale-bearers—a base, malicious tribe, who feed on venom, and invent mischief, rather than cease to injure.

2. The *good* which a man does, is never lost; if men forget it, God remembers and rewards it.

(1.) *Is inaccessible also*, l'est aussi—*ferocious*, sauvage—*inhuman*, et farouche—as he is afraid, craignant—is, l'est—to be so, de l'être—*besides*, de plus—*tale-bearers*, rapporteur—*tribe*, nation—*feed upon*, se nourrir de—*mischief*, mal—to injure, de nuire.
(2.) *Good*, bien—a man, on—*remember*, s'en souvenir.

522. The substantive is the *regimen*, when governed either

by another substantive, by an adjective, by a verb, or by a preposition ; as,

*La loi de Dieu,
Utile à l'homme,
Aimer son prochain,
Chez son père,*

*The law of God.
Useful to man.
To love one's neighbor.
At his father's.*

523. In French, a substantive cannot be governed by another substantive but by the help of a preposition ; such as *de*—as, *la difficulté de l'entreprise*, the difficulty of the undertaking ; or *à* or *pour*—as, *l'abandon à ses passions*, the giving way to one's passions ; *le goût pour le plaisir*, the love of pleasure.

224. GENERAL RULE. When two substantives are found together—the one *governing*, the other *governed*—the former is generally placed first.

EXAMPLE.

<p><i>La beauté des sentimens, la violence des passions, la grandeur des événemens et les succès miraculeux des grandes épées des héros, tout cela m'entraîne comme une petite fille.</i>—Sévigné.</p>	<p>The beauty of sentiments, the violence of passions, the grandeur of events, and the prodigious successes of the huge swords of heroes, all these transport me like a little girl.</p>
--	--

525. REMARK. This order is not followed—1. When, in English, two substantives are joined by an *s* and an apostrophe placed after the first—thus, *'s* ; as, *the king's palace*—that is, *the palace of the king*—*le palais du roi*. 2. When the two substantives form a compound word ; as, *silk-stockings*—that is, *stockings of silk*—*bas de soie*.

EXERCISE.

1. *The silence of the night, the calmness of the sea, the trembling light of the moon diffused over the surface of the water, and the dim azure of the sky bespangled with glittering stars, served to heighten the beauty of the scene.*

2. Nothing was heard but *the warbling of birds, or the soft breath of the zephyrs sporting in the branches of the trees, or the murmurs of a lucid rill falling from the rocks, or the songs of the young swains who attended Apollo.*

3. A smiling boy was, at the same time, caressing a lap-dog, which is his *mother's favorite*, because it pleases the child.

4. There are several *gold and silver mines* in this beautiful country but the inhabitants, simple, and happy in their simplicity, do not even deign to* reckon gold and silver among their riches.

(1.) *Trembling*, *tremblant*—*diffused*, *répandu*—*dim*, *sombre*—*bespangled*, *parsemé*—*with*, *de*—*heighten*, *rehausser*—*scene*, *spectacle*.

(2.) *Nothing but*, *on ne plus que*—*breath*, *haleine*—*sporting* (*which sported*), *qui se jouer H.*—*branches*, *rameaux*—*lucid rill*, *eau claire*—*falling*, (*which fell*)—*swains*, *bergers*—*attended*, *suivre H.*

(3.) *Smiling boy*, *enfant d'un air riant*—*was caressing*, *caresser*—*lap-dog*, *bichon*—*pleases*, *amuser*.

* In the following exercises, when an asterisk [*] is put after an English word, it shows that that word is not to be expressed in French.

526. The substantive is an *apostrophe* whenever it is the object addressed ; as, *Rois, peuples, terre, mer, et vous, cieux écoutez-moi!*—Kings, nations, earth, sea and you heaven, listen to me ! In this sentence, the substantives *rois, peuples, terre, mer,* and *cieux,* form an *apostrophe*.

527. N. B.—It is only in highly oratorical language that the address is thus directed to inanimate or absent objects.

EXAMPLE OF A BEAUTIFUL APOSTROPHE.

O, Hippias ! Hippias ! I shall never see thee again ! O, my dear Hippias ! it is I, cruel and void of compassion, who taught thee to despise death. Cruel gods ! ye prolonged my life only that I might see the death of Hippias ! O, my dear child, whom I had brought up with so much care, I shall see thee no more. O, dear shade, summon me to the banks of the Styx ; the light grows hateful to me ; it is thou only, my dear Hippias, whom I wish to see again. Hippias, Hippias ! O, my dear Hippias ! I live but to pay the last duty to thy ashes.—*Fénélon*.

Never, ne plus—void of compassion, moi impitoyable—taught, apprendre—prolonged, prolonger—only that I might, pour me faire—brought up, nourrir I.—with so much care, et qui me coûter I. tant de soins—shade, ombre—summon, appeler—to, sur—banks, rive—grows hateful, être odieux—I live but to, ne vivre encore que pour—pay, rendre—ashes, cendre.

CHAPTER II.

OF THE ARTICLE.

528. GENERAL PRINCIPLE.—The article is to be used before all substantives common, taken in a determinate sense, *unless there be another word performing the same office* ; but it is not to be used before those that are taken in an indeterminate sense

Cases in which the Article is to be used.

529. RULE I.—The article necessarily accompanies all substantives common, which denote a whole species of things or determinate things.

EXAMPLES.

L'homme se repaît trop souvent de chimères,	Man too often feeds on chimeras.
Les hommes à imagination sont toujours malheureux,	Men of fanciful dispositions are always unhappy.
L'homme dont vous parlez est très-instruit,	The man you speak of is very learned.

530. In the first example, the word *homme* is taken in its fullest sense; it denotes a collective universality. In the second, *les hommes à imagination* denotes a whole particular class. In the third, *l'homme* denotes but one individual, being restricted by the incidental proposition *dont vous parlez*.

531. REMARK.—In English, the article is not used before substantives taken in a general sense; as, *Men of genius, women of sound understanding*.

EXERCISE ON THE ARTICLE.

1. The moment *elegance*, the most visible image of fine *taste*, appears, it is universally admired: *men* differ respecting the other constituent parts of *beauty*, but they all unite without hesitation in acknowledging the power of *elegance*.

2. *Men of superior genius*, while they* see the rest of mankind painfully* struggling to comprehend obvious truths, glance themselves* through* the most remote consequences, like lightning through a track that cannot be measured.

3. *The man who lives* under an habitual sense of the divine presence, preserves a perpetual cheerfulness of temper, and enjoys every moment the satisfaction of thinking himself* in company with the dearest and best of friends.

(1.) *The moment*, du moment que—*fine*, délicat—*appears*, se montrer—is, elle est—*respecting*, sur—*constituent*, (which constitute)—*hesitation*, hésiter—in, pour.

(2.) *While*, tandis que—*struggling*, se tourmenter—*obvious*, qui s'offrent d'elle-mêmes—*glance*, ils pénètrent en un instant—*lightning*, foudre, f.—*through*, traverse—*track*, espace—that, qu'on—*be measured*, mesurer.

(3.) *Under*, dans—*sense*, conviction—*preserves*, conserver—*perpetual*, constant—*cheerfulness*, gaieté—*temper*, caractère—*enjoys*, jouir de—*of thinking*, se croire—in, dans la—with, de.

532. RULE II.—The article is put before substantives employed in the sense of an extract, or denoting only a part of a species; but it is omitted if they be preceded by an adjective or a word of quantity.

EXAMPLES.

Du pain et de l'eau me feraient plaisir,	Some bread and water would please me.
Je vis hier des savans qui ne pensent pas comme vous,	I yesterday saw some learned men, who do not think as you do.
Voilà de beaux tableaux,	There are beautiful pictures.
J'achetai hier beaucoup de livres,	I bought yesterday many books.
Que de livres j'achetai hier!	How many books I bought yesterday!

533. REMARK.—Among the words of quantity must be reckoned *plus, moins, pas, point, and jamais*.

EXAMPLES.

Il n'y eut jamais plus de lumières,	There never was more learning.
Il y a moins d'habitans à Paris qu'à Londres,	There are fewer inhabitants in Paris than in London.
Je ne manque pas d'amis,	I do not want for friends.

534. EXCEPTIONS.—*Bien* is the only word of quantity which is followed by the article.

EXAMPLES.

Il a bien de l'esprit,
Elle a bien de la grâce,

He has a great deal of wit.
She is very graceful.

535. REMARK.—The sense of *extract* is marked in English by the word *some* or *any*, either expressed or understood, which answers to *quelques*, a particular adjective, and consequently to *du, de la, de l', des*, which are elegantly used instead of *quelque, quelques, &c.*

536. These expressions—*des petits-mâîtres, des petits-pâtés, &c.*—are not exceptions to this rule; because, in cases of this kind, the substantives are so united with the adjectives as to form but one and the same word. We should likewise say, *le propre des belles actions, les sentimens des anciens philosophes, &c.*; because, in expressions of this kind, the substantives are taken in a general sense.

EXERCISE.

1. We could not cast our eyes on either shore without seeing *opulent* cities, *country houses* agreeably situated, *lands* yearly covered with a golden harvest, *meadows* abounding in flocks and herds, *husbandmen* bending under the weight of the fruits, and *shepherds* who made the echoes around them repeat the sweet sounds of their pipes and flutes.

2. Provence and Languedoc produce *oranges, lemons, figs, olives, almonds, chestnuts, peaches, apricots, and grapes*, of an uncommon sweetness.

3. The man who has never seen this pure light is as* blind* as* one* who is born blind: he dies without having seen any thing; at most, he perceives nothing but *glimmering and false lights, vain shadows and phantoms* that have no reality.

4. Among the Romans, those who were convicted of having used *illicit* or *unworthy* means to obtain an employ, were excluded from it for ever.

5. Those who govern are like the celestial bodies, which have *great splendor and no rest*.

6. *What beauty, sweetness, modesty, and, at the same time, what nobleness and greatness of soul!*

7. Themistocles, in order to ruin Aristides, made use of *many* artifices, which would have covered him with infamy in the eyes of posterity, had not the eminent services which he rendered his country blotted out that stain.

(1) *Could, pouvoir, H.—our, les—either, les deux—seeing, apercevoir, A.—yearly, tous les ans—covered with, qui se couvrent de—abounding in, remplis de—flocks and herds, troupeau—bending, qui étaient accablés—weight, poids—shepherds, bergers—pipes, chalumeau—the echoes, aux échos—around them, d'alentour.*

(3) *Who is born blind, aveugle né—without having, n'avoir jamais, C.—any thing, rien—at most, tout au plus—perceives nothing but, apercevoir ne que—glimmering, sombre—lights, lueur—no reality, rien de réel.*

(4) *Used, employer—illicit or unworthy means, moyen illicite ou voie indigne, pl. were, H.—from it, en.*

(5) *Great, beaucoup de—splendor, éclat—no rest (that have no rest), repos.*

(6) *What, que de.—(7.) Ruin, perdre—made use of many, employer J. bien—artifices, manœuvres—with, de—infamy, opprobre—in, à—had, si—rendered, G. à—blotted out, effacer, T.—stain, tache.*

8. The consequences of great passions are blindness of mind and depravity of heart.

9. Noblemen should never forget that their high birth imposes great duties on* them.

(9.) Noblemen, gentilhomme—should, devoir, F.

537. RULE III.—The article is put before proper names of countries, regions, rivers, winds, and mountains.

EXAMPLES.

La France a les Pyrénées et la Méditerranée au sud, la Suisse et la Savoie à l'est, les Pays-Bas au nord, et l'océan à l'ouest, France is bounded on the south by the Pyrenees and the Mediterranean, on the east by Switzerland and Savoy, on the north by the Netherlands, and on the west by the ocean.

La Tamise, le Rhône, l'aquilon, les Alpes, le Cantal, The Thames, the Rhone, the north wind, the Alps, the Cantal.

538. REMARK.—By apposition we find the words *le mont Parnasse, le mont Valérien, &c., le fleuve Don, &c.* But we should say, *la montagne de Tarare, &c., la rivière de Seine, &c.,* though never *le fleuve du Rhône*, but simply *le Rhône*.

EXERCISE.

1. *Europe* is bounded on the north by the Frozen Ocean; on the south by the Mediterranean Sea, which separates it from *Africa*; on the east by the continent of *Asia*; on the west by the Atlantic Ocean. It contains the following states:—on the north, *Norway, Sweden, Denmark, and Russia*; in the middle, *Poland, Prussia, Germany, the United Provinces, the Netherlands, France, Switzerland, Bohemia, Hungary, the British Isles*; on the south, *Spain, Portugal, Italy, Turkey in Europe*.

2. The principal rivers in Europe are, the *Volga*, the *Don* or *Tanaïs*, and the *Boristhenes* or *Nieper*, in Muscovy; the *Danube*, the *Rhine*, and the *Elbe*, in Germany; the *Vistula* or *Wezel*, in Poland; the *Loire*, the *Seine*, the *Rhone*, and the *Garonne*, in France; the *Ebro*, the *Tagus*, and the *Douro*, in Spain; the *Po*, in Italy; the *Thames* and the *Severn*, in England; and the *Shannon*, in Ireland.

3. The principal mountains in Europe are, the *Daarne Fields*, between Norway and Sweden; *Mount Crapel*, between Poland and Hungary; the *Pyrenean Mountains*, between France and Spain; the *Alps*, which divide France and Germany from Italy.

4. The bleak north wind never blows here, and the heat of summer is tempered by the cooling zephyrs which arrive to refresh the air towards the middle of the day.

(1.) Bounded, borné—on, à—frozen ocean, mer glaciale, f.—south, sud or midi—Mediterranean sea, Méditerranée, f.—cast, est or orient—west, ouest or occident—British isles, îles Britanniques—Turkey in, Turquie de.

(2.) Muscovy, Moscovie—Rhine, Rhin, m.—Vistula, Vistule, f.—Loire, f.—Seine, f. Rhône, m.—Garonne, f.—Ebro, Ebre—Tagus, Tage, m.—Thames, Tamise, f.—Severn, Saverne, f.

(3.) Pyrenean Mountains, Pyrénées.

(4.) Bleak, rigoureux—north wind, aquilon—heat, ardeur—cooling, rafraîchissant—arrive, venir—to refresh, adoucir

539. EXCEPTIONS.—The article is not used before the names of countries,

540. 1, When those countries have the names of their capitals ; as, *Naples est un pays délicieux*, Naples is a delightful country.

541. 2, When these are governed by the preposition *en* ; as, *il est en France*, he is in France ; *il est en Espagne*, he is in Spain.

542. 3, When those names are governed by some preceding noun, and have the sense of an adjective ; as, *vins de France*, French wines ; *noblesse d'Angleterre*, the English nobility.

543. 4, When speaking of those countries as of places we come from ; as, *je viens de France*, I come from France ; *j'arrive d'Italie*, I am just arrived from Italy. However, when speaking of the four parts of the world, the present practice favors the use of the article ; as, *je viens de l'Amérique*, *j'arrive de l'Asie*.

EXERCISE.

1. *Naples* may be called a paradise, from its beauty and fertility. ²(From this country) ¹(some suppose) Virgil took the model of the Elysian Fields.

2. I have been a* prisoner *in Egypt*, as a* Phœnician : under that name I have long suffered, and under that name I have been set at liberty.

3. He has received French and Spanish wines, Italian silks, Provence oil, and English wool.

4. We set sail *from Holland* for the Cape of Good Hope.

5. I was but just arrived *from Russia* when I had the misfortune to lose my father.

6. I had set off *from America* when my brother arrived there.

(1.) *From*, à cause de—*from this country*, que c'est là où—*some suppose*, quelques personnes penser.

(2.) *Prisoner*, captif—*under that name*, c'est sous ce nom que.

(4.) *Set sail*, partir—*for*, pour se rendre.

(5.) *I was but just*, ne faire que de.

(6.) *Set off*, partir—*there*, y.

544. The article is also used before the names of countries, either distant or little known ; as, *la Chine*, China ; *le Japon*, Japan ; *le Mexique*, Mexico ; and before those which have been formed from common nouns ; as, *le Havre*, *le Perche*, *la Flèche*, &c.

545. REMARK.—In English the article is generally omitted before the names of countries.

Cases in which the Article is not used.

546. RULE I.—The article is omitted before nouns common when, in using them, nothing is said as to the extent of their signification.

EXAMPLES.

Le sage n'a ni amour, ni haine, The wise man has neither love nor hatred.
Ils ont renversé religion, morale, They have overturned religion, morality,
gouvernement, sciences, beaux- government, sciences, fine arts, in a
arts, en un mot, tout ce qui fait word, every thing which constitutes
la gloire et la force d'un Etat, the glory and strength of a state.

547. Hence the article is not employed before nouns,

48. 1, When they are in the form of a title or an address.

EXAMPLES.

Préface, Preface. *Il demeure* He lives in
Livre premier, Book the first. *Rue Piccadilly,* Piccadilly,
Chapitre dix, Chapter the tenth. *Quartier St. James,* St. James's.

549. 2, When they are governed by the preposition *en*.

EXAMPLES.

Regarder en pitié, To look with pity. *Vivre en roi,* To live as a king.

550. 3, When they are joined to the verbs *avoir* or *faire*, with which they form only one idea.

EXAMPLES.

Avoir peur, To be afraid. *Faire pitié,* To excite pity.

551. 4, When they are used as an apostrophe or interjection.

EXAMPLE.

Courage, soldats, tenez ferme, Courage, soldiers, stand firm.

552. 5, When they serve to qualify a noun or pronoun.

EXAMPLES.

Il est quelquefois plus qu'homme, He is sometimes more than man.
Son Altesse Royale le Duc d'York, His Royal Highness the Duke of
prince du sang, &c. York, prince of the blood.

553. 6, The article is not put before the substantive beginning an incidental sentence, which is opposed to what has been said.

EXAMPLE.

Tous les peuples de la terre ont une All the nations of the earth have
idée plus ou moins développée d'un an idea more or less clear of
Etre-Suprême; preuve évidente a Supreme Being; an evident
que le péché originel n'a pas proof that original sin has not to-
tout-à-fait obscurci l'entendement, tally obscured the understanding.

554. 7, When they are governed by the words *genre*, *espèce*, *sorte*, or terms of this kind.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Sorte de fruit,</i>	A sort of fruit.
<i>Genre d'ouvrage,</i>	A kind of work.
<i>Monceau d'argent,</i>	A heap of money.
<i>Bande de voleurs,</i>	A band of robbers.
<i>Pile de livres,</i>	A pile of books.
<i>Meute de chiens,</i>	A pack of dogs.

EXERCISE.

1. The highways are bordered with *laurels*, *pomegranates*, *jessamines*, and *other trees*, which* are* always green, and always in bloom. The mountains are covered with *flocks*, which yield a fine wool, in great request among all the known nations (of the world).*

2. The fleets of Solomon, under the conduct of the Phœnicians, made frequent voyages to the land of Ophir and Tharsis (of the kingdom of Sophala, in Ethiopia), whence they returned at the end of three years, laden with *gold*, *silver*, *ivory*, *precious stones*, and other kinds of *merchandise*.

3. ²(*Costly furniture*) ¹(is not allowed there), nor *magnificent attire*, nor *sumptuous feasts*, nor *gilded palaces*.

4. We contemplated with pleasure the extensive fields covered with yellow ears of corn, the* *rich gifts* of bounteous Ceres.

5. He was *in a kind of ecstasy* when he perceived us.

6. In the most corrupt age, he lived and died *a wise man*.*

7. Are you surprised that the worthiest men are *but men*, and betray remains of the weakness of humanity, amid the innumerable snares and difficulties which* are* inseparable from royalty?

8. *He excited our pity* when we saw him after his disgrace.

9. Hear then, *O nations* full of valor! and you, *O chiefs*, so wise and so united! hear what I have* to* offer to you.

10. Out of this cavern issued, from time to time, a black thick smoke, which made *a sort of night* at mid-day.

(1.) *Highways*, chemin—*with*, de—*pomegranates*, grenadier—in bloom, *fleuri*—*yield*, fournir—*wool*, laine, pl.—*in great request*, recherché—*among*, de.

(2.) *End*, bout—*laden*, chargé.

(3.) *Is not allowed there*, on n'y souffre ni—*furniture*, meuble—*costly*, précieux—*attire*, ornement—*feasts*, repas.

(4.) *Extensive*, vaste—*fields*, campagne—*ears*, épi—*bounteous*, fécond, f.

(5.) *In a kind of*, comme en.

(6.) *Age*, siècle.

(7.) *That*, de ce que—*worthy*, estimable—*but*, encore—*betray*, montrer—*remains*, reste—*difficulties*, embarras.

(8.) *He excited our pity*, il nous fit pitié.

(9.) *Hear*, écouter.

(10.) *Out of*, de—*issued*, sortir—*thick*, et épais—*mid-day*, milieu du jour.

555. RULE II.—The article is not used either before nouns preceded by the pronominal adjectives *mon*, *ton*, *son*, *notre*, *votre*, *leur*, *ce*, *nul*, *aucun*, *chaque*, *tout* (used for *chaque*), *certain*, *plusieurs*, *tel*, or before those which are preceded by a cardinal number without any relation whatever.

EXAMPLES.

Nos mœurs mettent le prix à nos richesses, Our manners fix the value of our riches.

Toute nation a ses lois, Each nation has its laws.

Cent ignorans doivent-ils l'emporter sur un homme instruit? Are a hundred blockheads to be preferred to one learned man?

EXERCISE.

1. *That good father* was happy in his children and his children were happy in him.

2. *Those imitative sounds* are common to all languages, and form, as it were, their* real basis.

3. *Every man* has his foibles, his moments of ill* humor, even his irregularities.

4. *Each plant* has virtues peculiar to it, the knowledge of which could not but be infinitely useful.

5. *In all his instructions*, he is careful to remember that grammar, logic, and rhetoric are three sisters that ought never to be disjoined.

(2.) *Common, fondu—to, dans—and form, as it were, et ils en sont comme la—real, fondamentale.*

(4.) *Peculiar, qui sont propres—to it, lui—could, N.—not but, ne que.*

(5.) *He is careful to remember, il ne point perdre de vue—ought, on devoit—to be disjoined, séparer.*

556. RULE III.—Proper names of deities, men, animals, towns, and particular places, do not take the article.

EXAMPLES.

Dieu a créé le ciel et la terre,	God has made heaven and earth.
Jupiter était le premier des dieux,	Jupiter was the first of the gods.
Bucéphale était le cheval d'Alexandre,	Bucephalus was Alexander's horse.
Rome est une ville d'une grande beauté,	Rome is a city of great beauty.

557. EXCEPTIONS.—Proper names, however, take the article when used in a limited sense.

EXAMPLES.

Le Dieu des Chrétiens,	The God of Christians.
Le Dieu de paix,	The God of peace.
Le Jupiter d'Homère,	Homer's Jupiter.
Le Bucéphale d'Alexandre,	Alexander's Bucephalus,
L'Ancienne Rome,	Ancient Rome.
La Rome moderne,	Modern Rome.

558. N. B.—In imitation of the Italians, the French use the article before the names of several painters and poets of that nation, by an elliptical mode of expression, the words *peintre, poète, or seigneur* being understood.

EXERCISE.

1. *Jupiter*, son of *Saturn* and *Cybele* or *Ops*, after having expelled his father from the throne, divided the paternal* inheritance with his two brothers, *Neptune* and *Pluto*.

2. On a dispute, at a feast of the gods, between *Juno*, *Pallas*, and *Venus*, for the pre-eminence of beauty, *Jupiter*, not being able to bring them to an agreement, referred the decision to *Paris*, a shepherd of Mount *Ida*, with directions that a golden apple should be given to the fairest. *Paris* assigned to *Venus* the golden* prize.

3. *God* said, let there* be light; and there* was light.

(1.) *Expelled, chasser—divided, en partager J.—inheritance, héritage.*

(2.) *On, dans—at a feast, qu'il y eut à un festin—being able, pouvoir—to bring to an agreement, accorder—referred, renvoyer—directions, ordre—that a golden, &c. to give a golden apple to—assigned, adjuger.*

4. *The Apollo di Belvidere* and *the Venus di Medicis* are valuable remains of antiquity.

5. *May* and *September* are the two finest months of the year in the south of France.

6. *The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob* was the only true God.

(4.) *Di Belvidere* de Belvédér—*di, de*—valuable, précieux.

(6.) *Only*, seul.

CHAPTER III.

OF THE ADJECTIVE.

Of the Adjective with the Article.

559. RULE I.—Adjectives used substantively are, like substantives common, accompanied by the article, if the occasion require it.

EXAMPLE.

Les fous inventent les modes, et les sages s'y conforment, Fools invent fashions, and wise men conform to them.

EXERCISE.

1. Were the *learned* of antiquity to come to life again, they would be much astonished at the extent of our knowledge.

2. *The ignorant* have, in a* large stock of presumption, what they want in real knowledge, and that is the reason they are admired by *fools*.

(1.) *Were the*, si les—to come again, revenir H.—*life*, monde—at, de—*knowledge*, connaissance, pl.

(2.) *Large stock*, forte dose—they want, il leur manquer—*knowledge*, science—the reason, ce qui fait que—they are, &c., the fools admire them.

560. RULE II.—When a noun is accompanied by two adjectives, expressing *opposite* qualities, the article must be repeated before each adjective.

EXAMPLES.

Les vieux et les nouveaux soldats sont remplis d'ardeur, The old and the newly-raised soldiers are full of ardor.

Il faut fréquenter la bonne compagnie et fuir la mauvaise, We ought to frequent good and shun bad company.

561. REMARK.—But if those qualities be nearly similar, the article is not repeated; as, *Le sage et pieux Fénelon*. If merely different, it is perhaps better to repeat it; as, *Le sensible et l'ingénieux Fénelon*.

562. N. B.—In French, the substantive must be joined to the first adjective, when governed by different words.

EXERCISE.

1. The *ancient* and *modern* writers are not agreed upon that point.
2. The wise man preserves the same tranquillity of mind in *good* or *bad* fortune.
3. The man who is jealous of his reputation frequents *good* and shuns *bad* company.
4. *Grand* and *vigorous* thoughts are always the offspring of genius.

(1) *Writers, auteur*—are agreed, s'accorder.

(2) *The wise man, le sage.*

(3) *Vigorous, fort*—offspring, fruit.

563. RULE III.—The article is used before the adjective which is joined to a proper name, either to express its quality, or to distinguish the person spoken of from those who might bear the same name.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Le sublime Bossuet,</i>	<i>Le vertueux Fénelon,</i>	<i>Le tendre Racine,</i>
The sublime Bossuet,	The virtuous Fenelon.	The tender Racine.
<i>Louis le Gros,</i>	<i>Louis le Juste,</i>	<i>Louis le Grand,</i>
Louis the Fat.	Louis the Just.	Louis the Great.

564. REMARK.—If the adjective which is joined to a proper name precede that name, it expresses a quality which may be common to many; if it follow, it expresses a distinguishing quality. Thus, *Le savant Varron*, and *Varron le savant*, do not convey the same meaning: in the first example, *Varron* merely obtains the quality of *savant*; in the second, *Varron* is distinguished for his learning from all of the same name.

EXERCISE.

1. The *great Corneille* astonishes by beauties of the first order and by faults of the worst taste. If the *tender Racine* does not often rise so high, at least, he is always equal, and possesses the art of always interesting the heart.

2. The more we read the fables of the *good* and *artless La Fontaine*, the more we are convinced they are a book for all ages, and the manual of the man of taste.

3. It was only under the reign of *Louis the Just* (XIII.), that good taste began to show itself in France; but it was under that of *Louis the Great* that it was carried to perfection.

(1) *By, par des*—order, ordre—is always equal, se soutenir—possesses, avoir.

(2) *The more we, plus on*—artless, simple—are convinced, on se convainc—they are, que c'est—a, le—for, de—manual, manuel.

(3) *Only, ne que*—carried, porter à.

565. RULE IV.—When a superlative relative precedes a substantive, the article serves for both; if it follow, the article must be repeated before each.

EXAMPLES.

Les plus habiles gens font quelquefois les plus grandes fautes; or
 Les gens les plus habiles font quelquefois les fautes les plus grandes,
 The ablest men sometimes commit the grossest blunders.

EXERCISE.

1. It has been said of the Telemachus of the virtuous Fénélon, that it is *the most useful* present the muses have made to mankind; for, could the happiness of man be produced by a poem, it would be by that.

2. *The smoothest waters* often conceal *the most dangerous* gulfs.

(1.) *It has been said*, on a dit—present, don que—have made, R.—could, (if the, &c. could H.)—be produced by, naitre de—would be, naitre, N.

(2.) *Smoothest*, tranquille.

The Place of Adjectives.

566. RULE I.—Pronominal and numerical adjectives precede their substantives as do generally the following sixteen: *beau, bon, brave, cher, chétif, grand, gros, jeune, mauvais, méchant, meilleur, moindre, petit, saint, vieux*, and *vrai*, when taken in their literal sense.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Mon père,</i>	My father.	<i>Plusieurs officiers,</i>	Several officers.
<i>Quel homme,</i>	What man.	<i>Grand homme,</i>	Great man.
<i>Vieille femme,</i>	Old woman,	<i>Six arbres,</i>	Six trees.
<i>Dix guinées,</i>	Ten guineas.	<i>Chétive mine,</i>	Mean look.

567 EXCEPTION 1, The pronoun *quelconque*.

EXAMPLE.

D'une manière quelconque, In whatever manner.

568. 2, Adjectives of number, joined to proper names, pronouns, and substantives, as quotations.

EXAMPLES.

<i>George Trois,</i>	George Third.	<i>Chapitre dix,</i>	Chapter tenth.
<i>Lui dixième,</i>	He the Tenth.	<i>Page trente,</i>	Page the thirtieth.

569. 3, The above sixteen adjectives, when connected by a conjunction with another adjective, which is to be placed after the substantive.

EXAMPLE.

C'est une femme grande et bien faite, She is a tall, well-made woman.

570. REMARK.—In English, two or even several adjectives may qualify a substantive, without a conjunction: but in French, this is generally required; as, *c'est un homme aimable et poli*, he is an amiable, well-behaved man; EXCEPT when custom allows the substantives to be placed *between* two adjectives; as, *c'est un grand homme sec*, he is a tall, thin man.

EXERCISE ON THE PLACE OF ADJECTIVES.

1. There have been ages when a *great man* was a sort of prodigy, produced by a mistake of nature.

2. In almost all nations, the *great geniuses* that have adorned them were contemporaries.

(1.) *Ages, des siècles—when, où—produced, enfanter.*

(2.) *In, chez—nations, peuple—adorned, illustrer, G.*

3. *Young people*, says Horace, are supple to the enticements of vice, lavish, presumptuous, and equally impetuous and light in their passions; *old people*, on the contrary, are covetous, dilatory, timid, ever alarmed about the future, always complaining, hard to please, panegyrists of times past, censors of the present, and great givers of advice.

4. *What man* was ever satisfied with his condition and dissatisfied with his abilities?

5. *Thirty chambers*, which have a communication one with another, and each of them an iron door, with six huge bolts, are the places where he shuts himself up.

(3.) *People*, gens—*supple*, souple—*lavish*, prodigue—*impetuous*, vif—*old*, f. pl. (the following adjectives in the pl.)—*covetous*, avare—*dilatory*, temporisateur—*about*, sur—*complaining*, plaintif—*hard*, difficile—*please*, contenter—*times*, sing.

(4.) *Dissatisfied*, mécontent—*abilities*, esprit.

(5.) *Have a communication*, communiquer—*each of them*, dont chacun avoir—*huge*, gros—*bolts*, verrou—*places*, lieu, sing.—*shuts himself*, se renfermer.

571. RULE II.—Adjectives formed from the participle present of verbs, are generally placed after the substantive: *ouvrage divertissant*, entertaining work; and from the participle past, always: *figure arrondie*, round figure; those expressing form: *table ovale*, oval table; color: *maison blanche*, white house; taste: *herbe amère*, bitter herb; sound: *orgue harmonieux*, harmonious organ; action: *procureur actif*, active attorney; effect: *coutume abusive*, custom founded in abuse; arrangement: *ordre grammatical*, grammatical order; species: *qualité occulte*, occult quality; nation: *générosité anglaise*, English generosity; those ending in *-esque*, *-il*, *-ule*, *-ic*, *-ique*, *-in*:

<i>Style Burlesque</i> ,	Burlesque style.	<i>Bien public</i> ,	Public welfare.
<i>Jargon puéril</i> ,	Childish jargon.	<i>Ris sardonique</i> ,	Sardonic grin.
<i>Femme crédule</i> ,	Credulous woman,	<i>Voix enfantine</i> ,	Childish voice.

But in this, custom is the best guide

EXERCISE.

1. An *affected* simplicity is a *refined* imposture.
2. The *smiling* images of Theocritus, Virgil, and Gessner, excite in the soul a soft sensibility.
3. In that *antique* palace are to be seen neither *wreathed* columns, nor *gilded* wainscots, nor *valuable* basso-relieues, nor ceilings curiously *painted*, nor *grotesque* figures of animals, which never had existence but in the imagination of a child or a madman.
4. If *human* life is exposed to many troubles, it is also susceptible of many pleasures.
5. A *ridiculous* man is seldom so by halves.

(1.) *Refined*, délicat.

(2.) *Smiling*, riant—*excite*, porter—*soft*, doux.

(3.) *Are to be seen*, on ne voit—*wreathed*, torse—*wainscots*, lambris—*basso-relieues*, bas relief—*ceilings*, plafond—*curiously*, artistement—*had existence*, exister.

(4.) *Many*, bien de—*troubles*, peine.

(5.) *So*, le—*by halves*, à demi.

6. *Spanish* manners have, at first sight, something harsh and uncivilized.
7. *French* urbanity has become a proverb among *foreign* nations.

(6.) *Spanish*, espagnol—*manners*, mœurs—at *first sight*, au premier abord—*uncivilized*, sauvage.

(7.) *Become*, passer en—*among*, chez.

572. RULE III.—Although it may seem that adjectives expressing moral qualities are placed indifferently before or after the substantive, yet taste and a correct ear will assign them their proper situation.

573. In conversation, or in a broken, loose style, it may be indifferent to say, *femme aimable* or *aimable femme*; *talens sublimes* or *sublimes talens*, &c.; but in the dignified style, the place of the adjective may, in a variety of instances, affect the beauty of a sentence.

EXERCISE.

1. An *amiable* woman gives to every thing she says an *inexpressible* grace; the more we hear, the more we wish to hear her.

2. The *majestic* eloquence of Bossuet is like a river which carries away every thing in its rapid course.

3. The *sublime* compositions of Rubens have made ²an ⁴English ³traveller ¹say, that this *famous* painter was born in Flanders, through a mistake of nature.

(1.) *Give to*, répandre sur—we, on.

(2.) *River*, fleuve—*carries away*, entraîner—*its rapid course*, la rapidité de son

(3.) *Say*, dire à—*famous*, célèbre—*through*, par—*mistake*, méprise.

[cours.

Regimen of Adjectives.

574. RULE.—A noun may be governed by two adjectives, provided these do not require different regimens; as, *Cet homme est utile et cher à sa famille*, that man is useful and dear to his family. But it would be incorrect to say, *Cet homme est utile et chéri de sa famille*, that man is useful and beloved by his family; because the adjective *utile* does not govern the preposition *de*.

EXERCISE ON THE REGIMEN OF ADJECTIVES.

1. A young man, whose actions are all regulated by honor, and whose only aim is perfection in every thing, is *beloved* and *courted* by every body.

2. Cardinal Richelieu was all his life time *feared* and *hated* by the great whom he had humbled.

3. A young lady, mild, polite, and delicate, who sees in the advantages of birth, riches, wit, and beauty nothing but incitements to virtue, is very certain of being *beloved* and *esteemed* by every body.

(1.) *Actions are regulated by honor*, l'honneur dirige les actions—*whose only aim is*, qui ne se propose que—*courted*, recherché.

(2.) *Young lady*, demoiselle—*delicate*, décent—*nothing but*, ne que—*incitements*, encouragement—*certain*, assuré.

Adjectives of Number.

575. *Unième* is used only after *vingt, trente, quarante, cinquante, soixante, quatre-vingts, cent*, and *mille*. *C'est la vingt-et-unième fois*, it is the twenty-first time. See page 58.

576. *Cent*, in the plural, takes *s*, except when followed by another noun of number; as,

Ils étaient deux cents,
Trois cents hommes,
Ils étaient deux cent dix,

They were two hundred.
 Three hundred men.
 They were two hundred and ten.

577. *Vingt*, in *quatre-vingts* and *six-vingts*, also takes *s*, when followed by a substantive; as,

Quatre-vingts hommes,
Six-vingts abricots,

Eighty men.
 Six score apricots.

578. But it takes no *s* when followed by another term expressing number, *quatre-vingt-un arbres, quatre-vingt-dix hommes*.

579. The ordinal numbers, collective and distributive, always take the sign of the plural: *les premières douzaines*, the first dozens; *les quatre cinquièmes*, the four-fifths.

580. For dates, the French write *mil*; as, *mil sept cent quatre-vingt-dix-neuf*, one thousand seven hundred and ninety-nine, &c. See page 60.

581. REMARK.—*Cent* and *mille* are used indefinitely; as,

Il lui fit cent caresses,

He showed him a hundred marks of kindness.

Faites-lui mille amitiés de ma part,

Present him for me a thousand compliments.

EXERCISE ON THE ADJECTIVES OF NUMBER.

1. It was the *thirty-first* year after so glorious a peace when the war broke out again, with a fury of which history offers few examples.

2. There were only *three hundred*, and in spite of their inferiority in* numbers,* they attacked the enemy, beat, and dispersed them.

3. He has sold his country house for *two thousand five hundred and fifty* pounds.

4. Choose out of your nursery *eighty* fruit-trees and *ninety* dwarf-trees; divide them into dozens, and put in the first two dozens of each sort those whose fruits are most esteemed.

5. When Louis the Fourteenth made his entry into Strasburg the Swiss deputies having come to pay their respects to him, Le Tellier, archbishop of Reims, who saw among them the bishop of Basle, said to one

(1.) *Year, année—when, que—broke out again, se rallumer.*

(2.) *Only, ne que—in spite of, malgré.*—(3.) *Pounds, livres sterling.*

(4.) *Out of, dans—nursery, pépinière—fruit-trees, pied d'arbre fruitier—dwarf-trees, arbre nain.*

(5.) *Swiss, (of the Swiss)—pay, présenter—respect, hommage—one near him, son*

near him, "That bishop is apparently some miserable character." "How!" replied the other, "he has a *hundred thousand* livres a year." "Oh, oh!" said the archbishop, "he is then a respectable man;" and showed him a thousand civilities.

voisin—that bishop, &c, c'est un misérable apparemment que cet évêque—a year, de rente—showed, faire—civilities, caresse.

582. The French say, *le onze, du onze, au onze, sur les onze heures, sur les une heure*, pronouncing the words *onze* and *une* as if they were written with an *h* aspirated.

583. The cardinal numbers are used for the ordinal.

584. 1.—In reckoning time—that is, the *hour* of the day, the *day* of the month, the *year* of an era; as, *il est trois heures*, it is three o'clock; *le vingt de Mars*, the twentieth of March; *l'an mil sept cent dix*, &c. See pages 60.

585. 2.—In speaking of the order of sovereigns; as, *Louis seize, George trois*; except the first two of the series; as, *Henri premier, George second*. *Quint* for *cing* is only said of the *Empereur Charles-quint* and the *Pape Sixte-quint*.

EXERCISE.

1. They made in the parish and in the neighboring places a collection which produced a *hundred and twenty-one* guineas.

2. William, surnamed the Conqueror, king of England and duke of Normandy, was one of the greatest generals of the *eleventh* century; he was born at Falaise, and was the natural son of Robert, duke of Normandy, and of Arlotte, a furrier's daughter.

3. Make haste; it will soon be *ten* o'clock. We shall have a good deal of difficulty to arrive in time.

4. The winter was so severe in *one thousand seven hundred and nine* that there was but one olive-tree that resisted it,* in a plain where there had been more than ten thousand.

5. It was the *twenty-first* of January, one thousand seven hundred and ninety-three, that the unhappy Louis the *sixteenth* was led to the scaffold.

(1.) *They, on—neighboring places*, voisinage, sing.—collection, quête.

(2.) *William, Guillaume—furrier*, fourreur.

[in, à.

(3.) *Make haste*, se dépêcher—will be, F.—a good deal of difficulty bien de la peine—

(4.) *Severe, rude—but*, ne que—had been, H.

CHAPTER IV.

OF THE PRONOUNS.

OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

Office of Personal Pronouns.

586. THE personal pronouns have the three characteristics of the substantive—that is, subject, regimen, and apostrophe; but with this difference, that some always form the subject; two only are used as an apostrophe: some always form the regimen, and lastly, others are sometimes the subject and sometimes the regimen.

587. *Je, tu, il, and ils*, are always the subject; these four pronouns cannot be separated from the verb which they govern but by personal pronouns acting as a regimen or by the negative *ne*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Je ne lui en veux rien dire,</i>	I will say nothing to him about it.
<i>Tu en apprendras des nouvelles,</i>	Thou wilt hear news of it.
<i>Il nous raconta son histoire,</i>	He told us his history.
<i>Ils sont survenus à l'improviste,</i>	They are come unexpectedly

588. The *two* acting as an apostrophe are *toi*, thou, and *vous*, you, whether they stand alone or are preceded by the interjection *ô*; as, *toi, ô toi: vous, ô vous*.

EXERCISE ON PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

1. The better to bear the irksomeness of captivity and solitude, *I* sought for books; for *I* was overwhelmed with melancholy, for want of some knowledge to cherish and support my mind.

2. Since *thou* art more obdurate and unjust than thy father, mayest *thou* suffer evils more lasting and more cruel than his!

3. What! say *they*; do not men die fast enough without destroying each other? Life is so short, and yet it seems that it appears too long to *them*. Are *they* sent into the world to tear each other in pieces, and to make themselves wretched?

4. O *thou*, my son, my dear son, ease my heart: restore me what is dearer to me than my life! Restore to me my lost son, and restore thyself to thyself.

5. O *ye*, who hear me with so much attention, believe not that I despise men! No, no; I am sensible how glorious it is to toil to make them virtuous and happy; but this toil is full of anxieties and dangers.

(1.) *To bear*, supporter—irksomeness, ennui—overwhelmed with, accablé de—for want, faute—to cherish, qui pût nourrir—support, soutenir.

(2.) *Obdurate*, dur—mayest, pouvoir, Q.—lasting, long.

(3.) *Die fast enough*, être assez mortel—destroying each other, se donner encore une mort précipitée—sent into, sur—world, terre—tear in pieces, se déchirer—make themselves, se rendre.

(4.) *Ease*, soulager—restore, rendre—lost (whom I have lost), perdre.

(5.) *I am sensible*, savoir—glorious, grand—to toil, de travailler à—toil, travail—anxieties, inquiétude, sing.

589. *Me, te, se, leur, le, la, les, y, and en* are always used as a regimen : *direct*, when acted upon by the verb—*indirect*, when referable to the prepositions *à* or *de*. (See page 155.) They always *precede* the *verb*, except in the imperative when affirmative, and can never be separated from *it* by any other word, except *tout, rien, and jamais*, which may intervene before an infinitive.

EXAMPLES.

<i>C'est leur tout refuser,</i>	It is refusing them every thing.
<i>C'est ne me rien permettre,</i>	It is allowing me nothing. [him.
<i>Il a juré de ne lui jamais pardonner,</i>	He has sworn he would never pardon

590. *Me, te, se*, form a regimen, sometimes *direct* and sometimes *indirect*: *direct*, when they represent *moi, toi, soi*; *indirect*, when they supply the place of *à moi, à toi, à soi*. See pages 61 and 62.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Vous me soupçonnez mal à propos,</i>	You suspect me unjustly.
<i>Je t'en remercie,</i>	I thank thee for it.
<i>Il se perd de gaieté de cœur,</i>	He ruins himself out of wantonness.
<i>Vous me donnez un sage conseil,</i>	You give me prudent advice.
<i>Je te donne cela,</i>	I give thee that.
<i>Il se donne bien du mouvement,</i>	He is an active, stirring man.

591. *Leur* is always indirect, as it stands for *à eux, or à elles*.

EXAMPLE.

<i>Je leur représentai le tort qu'ils,</i>	I represented to them the injury
<i>ou qu'elles se faisaient,</i>	they did themselves.

EXERCISE.

1. He has been speaking *to them* with such energy as has astonished *them*.

2. Women ought to be very circumspect; for a mere appearance is sometimes more prejudicial *to them* than a real fault.

3. He comes up to me with a smiling countenance, and, pressing my hand, says, "My friend, I expect you to-morrow at my house."

4. He said *to me*, "Wilt thou torment thyself incessantly for advantages, the enjoyment of which could not render *thee* more happy? Cast thy eyes around thee: see how every thing smiles *at thee*, and seems to invite *thee* to prefer a retired and tranquil life to the tumultuous pleasures of a vain world."

5. The ambitious man* agitates, torments, and destroys *himself* to obtain the places or the honors to which he aspires; and when he has obtained *them*, he is still dissatisfied.

(1.) *Such energy as*, une force qui.

(2.) *Mere*, simple—*more prejudicial*, faire plus de tort.

(3.) *Comes up with*, aborder de—*pressing*, serrer—*my hand*, la main—*says*, il me dit—at my house, chez moi.

(4.) *Incessantly*, sans cesse—*advantages*, des biens—*could*, savoir N.—*cast*, porter—*thy*, les—*smiles*, sourire.

(1.) *Destroys*, consumer—to, pour.

592. *Le, la, les*, are always direct regimen ; as,

Je le vois, je la vois,

for *je vois lui, je vois elle.*

Je les vois,

for *je vois eux, je vois elles.*

593. But *y* and *en* are always indirect regimen ; as,

Je n'y entends rien,

for *je n'entends rien à cela.*

Ces fruits sont bons, en voulez-vous ?

for *voulez-vous d'iceux ?*

Avez-vous reçu de l'argent ?—oui,

for *un peu, une certaine somme,*
or *quantité d'argent.*

j'en ai reçu,

594. Though seeming to perform the function of regimen *direct* in this last and other phrases of the same kind, it is obvious that there is in the word *en* an ellipsis, which may be readily supplied. See pages 65 and 66.

EXERCISE.

1. I have known *him* since his childhood, and I always loved *him* on account of the goodness of his character.

2. This woman is always occupied in doing good works : you see *her* constantly consoling the unhappy, relieving the poor, reconciling enemies, and promoting the happiness of every one around *her*.

3. The more you live with men, the more you will be convinced that it is necessary to know *them* well before you* form a connexion with them.

4. Enjoy the pleasures of the world, I consent *to it* ; but never give yourself up *to them*.

5. I shall never consent to that foolish scheme ; do not mention it any* more.

6. Have you received some copies of the new work ? Yes, I have, (received *some*).

(1.) *Have known*, connaître F.—*loved*, G.—*on account*, à cause—the goodness of his, (his good).

(2.) *In*, à—*works*, œuvres, f.—*constantly*, sans cesse—*consoling*, A.—*relieving*, assister—*promoting*, faire—*every one around her*, tout ce qui l'environne.

(3.) *Live*, L.—*be convinced*, se convaincre—*before*, avant de—*form a connexion*, vous

(4.) *Enjoy*, jouir de—*give yourself up*, se livrer.

[lier A.

(5.) *Scheme*, entreprise—*mention*, parler de.

(6.) *Copies*, exemplaires.

595. The pronouns which are sometimes the subject and sometimes the regimen, are *nous, vous, moi, toi, lui, elle, eux, elles*.

596. *Nous* and *vous* are the subject in *nous aimons, vous aimez* ; the regimen direct in *ils nous aiment, ils vous aiment* ; and indirect in *ils nous parlent, ils vous parlent*.

597. In general, *moi, toi*, are only the subject by apposition or reduplication, whether they precede or follow the verb ; as,

Moi, dont il déchire la réputation,
je ne lui ai jamais rendu que de
bons offices,

I, whose reputation he is aspersing, always did him acts of kindness.

Toi, qui fais tant le brave, tu
oserais, &c.,

Wouldst thou, who pretendest to be so brave, dare, &c.

Je prétends, moi,

I do maintain, I.

Tu dis donc, toi

Thou sayest then, thou.

598. REMARK.—Sometimes the personal pronouns *je* and *tu* are not expressed, but understood; as,

Moi, trahir le meilleur de mes amis! I, betray my best friend!
Faire une lâcheté, toi! Thou, be guilty of such baseness!

that is, *je voudrais moi, &c.!* *tu pourrais toi, &c.!*

599. They are likewise the subject when they are placed in a kind of apposition expressed by *ce* and *il* in impersonal verbs; as, *qui fut bien aise? ce fut moi; ce ne peut être que toi; que vous reste-t-il?—moi.*

600. After a conjunction, they are either the subject or regimen, according to the nature of the phrase; as, *nous y étions mon père et moi; il ne craint ni toi ni moi.*

601. In phrases which are not imperative, *toi* and *moi* can only be the object by apposition before or after the verb; as, *voudriez-vous me perdre, moi, votre allié, &c. toi, je te soupçonnerais de perfidie!*

602. After a preposition, they alone can be employed; as, *vous servirez-vous de moi? selon moi vous avez raison; il est fâché contre toi.*

603. What has just been remarked of *toi* and *moi* is applicable to *lui*, but with this difference, that *lui* can only be the object after *ne—que*, signifying *only*, or in distributive phrases; as,

N'aimez que lui, je ne le trouve pas mauvais; mais ne me haïssez pas, That you should like only him, I do not disapprove, but do not hate me.

604. So, *protégez-nous, lui, à cause de, &c. et moi, parce que, &c.* we may likewise say by apposition, *aimez-le, lui qui, &c.*

605. *Eux* is employed in the same manner as *lui*, but differs from it in this, that it cannot be the regimen indirect, except after a preposition; as, *parliez-vous d'eux? est-ce à eux que vous parlez?*

606. REMARK.—*Lui* and *eux* may be the subject in distributive phrases without being in apposition; as,

Mes frères et mon cousin m'ont secouru; eux m'ont relevé, et lui m'a pansé, My brothers and cousin assisted me; they took me up, and he dressed my wounds.

607. The natural office of *elle* and *elles* is to form the subject; however, they are susceptible of all the other uses just mentioned, except that they cannot be the regimen indirect, unless preceded by a preposition; as, *c'est à elles que je parle*

EXERCISE.

1. In the education of youth, we should propose to ourselves to cultivate, to polish their* understanding, and thus to enable them to fill with dignity the different stations assigned them; but, above all, we ought to instruct them in that religious worship which God requires *of them*.

2. What! *you* would suffer *yourself* to be overwhelmed by adversity!

3. *I*! stoop to the man who has imbrued his hands in the blood of his king!

4. *Thou*! take that undertaking upon thyself? Canst* thou think of it?

5. Your two brothers and mine take charge of the enterprise; *they* find the money, and *he* will manage the work.

6. It is *I* who have engaged him to undertake this journey.

7. It is *thou* who hast brought this misfortune on thyself.

8. When you are at Rome, write *to me* as often as you can, and give *me* an account of every thing that can interest me.

9. He told it *to thee* thyself.

10. Fortune, like a traveller, shifts from inn to inn; if she lodges to-day *with me*, to-morrow, perhaps, she will lodge *with thee*.

11. Whom dost thou think we were talking of?—it was *of thee*.

12. Descartes deserves immortal praise, because it is *he* who has made reason triumph over authority in philosophy.

13. He is dissatisfied *with himself*.

14. She is never satisfied *with herself*.

15. The indiscreet often betray *themselves*.

16. Saumaise, speaking of the English authors, said that he had learned more from *them* than from any other.

17. To love a person, is to render him, on every occasion, all the services in our power, and to afford him, in society, every comfort that depends *upon us*.

(1.) *Youth*, jeunes gens—*should*, devoir F.—*to cultivate*, (to them)—*to polish*, (to them) orner—*understanding*, l'esprit—*enable*, disposer—*stations*, place—(which are) assigned (to) them—*worship*, culte—*requires*, demander.

(2.) *Suffer yourself*, se laisser N.—*to be overwhelmed*, abattre.

(3.) *Stoop to*, s'abaisser devant Q.—*imbrued*, souiller—in, de.

(4.) *Take upon thyself*, se charger N.—*of it*, y.

(5.) *Take charge*, se charger—*find*, fournir—*money*, fonds, pl.—*manage*, conduire F.

(6.) *Undertake*, faire—*journey*, voyage.

(7.) *Hast brought on thyself*, s'attirer G.

(8.) *Are*, L.—*can*, L.—*give*, faire—*an account*, le détail.

(9.) *Told*, dire G.

(10.) *Shifts from inn to inn*, changer d'auberge—with, chez—*she will lodge*, elle être L.

(11.) *Were talking*, parler S.

(12.) *Triumph over*, triompher de.

(13.) *Is dissatisfied with*, se déplaire.

(14.) *Satisfied with*, content de.

(15.) *Betray*, se trahir.

(17.) *In our power*, dont on être capable—*afford*, procurer à—*comfort*, agrément—*depends upon*, dépendre de.

On the Pronoun soi.

608. *Soi* is generally accompanied by a preposition, and is used in phrases where there is an indeterminate pronoun, either expressed or understood: *on doit rarement parler de soi; il est essentiel de prendre garde à soi*. In this case, it is the regimen indirect, but it may be employed without a preposition.

509. 1.—With the verb *être* ; as, *En cherchant à tromper les autres, c'est souvent soi que l'on trompe*, or *on est souvent trompé soi-même*, in attempting to deceive others, we frequently deceive ourselves. In this situation it is the subject.

610. 2.—After *ne que*, or by apposition ; as,
N'aimer que soi, c'est n'être bon à rien, To love only ourselves is being good for very little.
Penser ainsi, c'est s'aveugler soi-même, To think in this manner, is to blind one's-self.

611. It is in these examples the regimen ; but when *de soi* and *en soi* are used in a definitive sense in speaking of things, they mean *de sa nature* and *dans sa nature*.

EXERCISE ON THE PRONOUN *SOI*.

1. To excuse in *one's-self* the follies which one cannot excuse in others is to prefer being a fool *one's-self* to seeing others so.

2. To be too much dissatisfied with *ourselves* is a weakness ; but to be too much satisfied (*with ourselves*) is (*a*) folly.

3. We ought to despise no one : how often have we needed the assistance of one more insignificant than *ourselves* ?

4. If we did not attend so much to *ourselves*, there would be less egotism in the world.

5. Vice is odious in *itself*.

6. The loadstone attracts iron (to *itself*).

(1.) *Follies, sottises*—others, autrui—to prefer, aimer mieux—fool, sot—to seeing, que de voir—so, tel.

(3.) *We ought*, il falloir F.—how often, combien de fois—we, on—needed the assistance, n'avoir pas besoin—insignificant, petit.

(4.) *We*, on—attend to, s'occuper de—egotism, égoïsme.

(6.) *Loadstone*, aimant.

Cases where the Pronouns ELLE, ELLES, EUX, LUI, LEUR may apply to things.

612. The personal pronouns *elle* and *elles*, when the regimen, generally apply to persons only. Thus, in speaking of a woman, we must say, *Je m'approchai d'elle, je m'assis près d'elle* ; but, in speaking of a table, *Je m'en approchai, je m'assis auprès*.

613. However, with the prepositions *avec*, *après*, *à*, *de*, *pour*, *en*, &c. they may be applied to things. Thus, it is correct to say—of a river,

Cette rivière est si rapide, quand elle déborde, qu'elle entraîne avec elle tout ce qu'elle rencontre ; elle ne laisse après elle que du sable et des cailloux, That river is so rapid when it overflows that it carries away every thing it meets with in its course ; it leaves nothing behind but sand and pebbles.

614. —Of an enemy's army,
Nous marchâmes à elle, We marched up to it.

615. —Of things, reasons, truth, &c. ; as,

Ces choses sont bonnes d'elles-mêmes, These things are good in themselves.
J'aime la vérité au point que je I love truth to that degree, that I
sacrifierais tout pour elle, would sacrifice every thing for it.
Ces raisons sont solides en elles-mêmes, Those reasons are solid in themselves.

616. After the verb *être*, they are applied only to persons, and likewise when they are followed by the relatives *qui* and *que*; as, *C'est à elle, c'est d'elles que je parle, c'est elle-même qui vient.*

617. The same may be said of the pronoun *eux*, which is also generally applied to persons only, yet custom allows us to say,

Ce chien et ces oiseaux font tout This dog and these birds are my only
mon plaisir ; je n'aime qu'eux ; pleasure ; I love nothing but them ;
eux seuls sont mon amusement ; they alone are my diversion ; I
je ne songe qu'à eux, think of nothing else.

618. *Lui* and *leur* are generally applied to persons, but are sometimes used in speaking of animals, plants, and even inanimate objects ; as,

Ces chevaux sont rendus, faites- Those horses are exhausted ; give
leur donner un peu de vin, them a little wine.
Ces orangers vont périr, si on ne Those orange-trees will die unless
leur donne de l'eau, they have a little water.
Ces murs sont mal faits, on ne Those walls are not skilfully built ;
leur a pas donné assez de talus, they are not sufficiently sloped
upward.

619. Upon these previous observations, then, may be founded the following

620. RULE.—The pronouns *elle*, *elles*, *eux*, *lui*, and *leur*, ought never to be applied to things, except when custom does not allow them to be replaced by the pronouns *y* and *en*.

EXERCISE.

1. Virtue is the first of blessings ; it is *from it* alone we are to expect happiness.

2. The labyrinth had been built upon the lake Mæris, and they had given *it* a prospect proportioned to its grandeur.

3. Mountains are frequented on account of the air one breathes on them : how many people are indebted *to them* for the recovery of their health ?

4. War brings in its train numberless evils.

5. It is a delicate affair which must not be too deeply investigated, it must be lightly passed over.

(1.) *Blessings*, bien—*are*, *devoir*.

(2.) *Had been built*, on bâtir I.—*prospect*, vue.

[*recovery*, rétablissement.

(3.) *On account*, à cause—*breathes*, respirer—*on them*, y—*are indebted for*, *devoir*—

(4.) *Brings*, entraîner—*in its train*, avec elle—*numberless*, bien de.

(5.) *Affair*, matière—*must*, il faut—*be deeply investigated*, approfondir A.—*be passed*, glisser—*over* dessus.

6. I have had my house repaired, and have given *it* quite* a new appearance.

7. Those trees are too much loaded; strip *them* of part of their fruit.

8. This book cost me a great deal, but I am indebted *to it* for my knowledge.

9. Self-love is captious; we, however, take *it* for our* guide; *to it* are all our actions directed, and *from it* we take counsel.

10. These arguments, although very solid *in themselves*, yet made no impression upon him, so powerful a chain is habit.

11. These reasons convinced me, and *by them* I formed my decision.

12. I leave you the care of that bird; do not forget to give *it* water.

(6.) *Have had*, faire G.—*appearance*, air.

(7.) *Strip*, ôter—*of part*, une partie.

(8.) *A great deal*, cher—*knowledge*, instruction.

(9.) *We*, (it is *it* that we)—*to it*, (it is *to it* that we direct all, &c.)—*direct*, rapporter *from it*, (and it is *from it* that, &c.)

(10.) *No*, ne aucun—*so strong*, &c., (so much habit is a, &c.)—*habit*, habitude.

(11.) *And by*, d'après (and it is from them that)—*formed my decision*, se décider.

Difficulty respecting the Pronoun LE explained.

621. *Le, la, les*, are sometimes pronouns and sometimes articles. The article is always followed by a noun—*le roi, la reine, les hommes*—whereas the pronoun is always joined to a verb, *je le connais, je la respecte, je les estime*.

622. The pronoun *le* may supply the place of a substantive or an adjective, or even of a member of a sentence.

623. There is no difficulty when it relates to a whole member of a sentence; it is then always put in the masculine singular; as,

On doit s'accommoder à l'humeur des autres autant qu'on le peut, We ought to accommodate ourselves to the temper of others as much as we can.

EXERCISE.

1. The laws of nature and decency oblige us equally to defend the honor and interest of our parents when we can do *it* without injustice.

2. We ought not to condemn, after their death, those who have not been *condemned* during their life.

(1.) *Decency*, bienséance.—(2.) *We ought*, falloir—*condemned*, le.

624. Nor is there any difficulty when *le* supplies the place of a substantive; it then always takes the gender and number of that substantive; as, *Madame, êtes-vous la mère de cet enfant?—Oui, je la suis.* Madame, are you the mother of that child?—Yes, I am. *Mesdames, êtes-vous les parentes dont Monsieur m'a parlé?—Oui, nous les sommes.*

625. REMARK.—Though the word relating to the following questions is not expressed in English, yet it must always be so in French; this word is *le*, which takes either gender or number, according to its relation.

EXERCISE.

1. Is that your idea?—Can you doubt that it is?
2. Are you Mrs. Such-a-one?—Yes, I am.
3. Are those your servants?—Yes, they are.

-
- (1.) *Idea, pensée—that it is, ce être Q.*
 (2.) *Mrs., Madame—such-a-one, un tel.*
 (3.) *Those, ce là—they, ce.*

626. It only remains therefore to lay down the following

627. RULE.—The pronoun *le* takes neither gender nor number when occupying the place of an adjective.

EXAMPLES.

Madame, êtes-vous enrhumée?—Oui, je le suis.

Mesdames, êtes-vous contentes de ce discours?—Oui, nous le sommes.

Fut-il jamais une femme plus malheureuse que je le suis?

628. REMARK.—This rule is observed when the substantives are used adjectively; as,

Madame, êtes-vous mère?—Oui, je le suis.

Mesdames, êtes-vous parentes?—Oui, nous le sommes.

Elle est fille, et le sera toute sa vie.

629. But not if the adjectives be used substantively; as,

Madame, êtes-vous la malade?—Oui, je la suis.

630. Therefore this question—*Etes-vous fille de M. le duc?*—is to be answered, *Oui, je le suis*; but this—*Etes-vous la fille de M. le duc?*—*Oui, je la suis.*

EXERCISE.

1. Ladies, are you glad to have seen the new piece?—Yes, we are.
2. I, a* slave! I, born to command! Alas! it is but too true that I am *so*.
3. She was jealous of her authority, and she ought to be *so*.
4. Was there ever a girl more unhappy, and treated with more ridicule than I am.
5. You have found me amiable: why have I ceased to appear *so* to you?
6. Have we ever been so quiet as we are?
7. Madam, are you married?—Yes, I am.
8. Madam, are you the bride?—Yes, I am.

-
- (1.) *Ladies, Mesdames.*
 (2.) *Slave, esclave—but, ne que.*
 (3.) *Ought, devoir H.*
 (4.) *With more ridicule, plus ridiculement.*

631. The same rule is likewise observed with the article placed before *plus* or *moins* and an adjective. It takes neither gender nor number when there is no comparison; as,

La lune ne nous éclaire pas autant que le soleil, même quand elle est le plus brillante, The moon does not give us so much light as the sun, even when it shines brightest.

632. But it takes them when there is comparison, as,
De toutes les planètes, la lune est la plus brillante pour nous, Of all the planets, the moon is the most brilliant to us.

EXERCISE.

1. This father could not bring himself to condemn his children, even when they were most guilty.
2. This woman has the art of shedding tears, even when she is least afflicted.
3. Out* of so many criminals, only the most guilty should be punished.
4. Although that woman displays more fortitude than the others, she is not, on that account, the least distressed.

- (1.) *Could, H.—bring himself, se résoudre.*
 (2.) *Shedding, répandre de—even when, dans le temps même que.*
 (3.) *Only the most, &c. (one must punish only the most guilty)—only, ne que.*
 (4.) *Displays, montrer—fortitude, fermeté—on that account, pour cela—distressed, affligé.*

Repetition of the Personal Pronouns.

633. RULE I.—Pronouns expressing the first and second persons, when the subject, must be repeated before all the verbs, if those verbs are in different tenses; it is always even better to repeat them when the verbs are in the same tense.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Je soutiens et je soutiendrai tous jours,</i>	I maintain, and (I) will always maintain.
<i>Vous dites, et vous avez toujours dit,</i>	You say, and (you) have always said.
<i>Accablé de douleur, je m'écriai et je dis,</i>	Overwhelmed with sorrow, I exclaimed and (I) said.
<i>Nous nous promenions sur le haut du rocher, et nous voyions sous nos pieds, &c.</i>	We were walking upon the summit of the rock, when we saw under our feet, &c.

634. In all cases these pronouns must be repeated, though the tenses of the verbs do not change if the first of these is followed by a regimen; as,

<i>Vous aimerez le Seigneur votre Dieu, et vous observerez sa loi,</i>	You shall love the Lord your God, and (you shall) observe his law.
--	---

EXERCISE ON THE REPETITION OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUN.

1. My dear child, *I* love you, and *I* shall never cease to love you: but it is that very love that I have for you which obliges me to correct you for your faults, and to punish you when you deserve it.
2. *I* heard and admired these words, which comforted me a little; but my mind was not sufficiently at liberty to make him a reply.
3. *Thou* art young, and doubtless *thou* aimest at the glory of surpassing thy comrades.
4. God has said, *you* shall love your enemies, bless those that curse you, do good to those that persecute you, and pray for those who slander you. What a difference between this morality and that of philosophers!

- (1.) *Correct for, reprendre de.*
 (2.) *Heard, écouter H.—words, discours, sing.—my mind, &c. (I had not the mind, &c.)—sufficiently at liberty, assez libre—to make a reply, répondre à.*
 (3.) *Aimest at, aspirer à—surpassing, l'emporter sur.*
 (4.) *Slander, calomnier—between, de—and that, à celle.*

635. RULE II.—The pronouns of the third person, when they form the subject, are hardly ever repeated before verbs, except when those verbs are in different tenses.

EXAMPLES.

<i>La bonne grâce ne gâte rien; elle</i>	A graceful manner spoils nothing :
<i>ajoute à la beauté, relève la modestie, et y donne du lustre,</i>	it adds to beauty, heightens modesty, and gives it lustre.
<i>Il n'a jamais rien valu, et ne vaudra jamais rien,</i>	He never was good for any thing, and never will be.
<i>Il est arrivé ce matin, et il repartira ce soir,</i>	He arrived this morning, and (he) will set off again this evening.

636. However, perspicuity requires the repetition of the pronoun when the second verb is preceded by a long incidental phrase; as, *Il fond sur son ennemi, et après l'avoir saisi d'une main victorieuse, il le renverse, comme le cruel aquilon abat les tendres moissons qui dorent la campagne.*

EXERCISE.

1. *He* took the strongest cities, conquered the most considerable provinces, and overturned the most powerful empires.

2. *He* takes a hatchet, completely cuts down the mast, which was already broken, throws it into the sea, jumps upon it amidst the furious billows, calls me by my name, and encourages me to follow him.

3. *He* marshals the soldiers, marches at their head, advances in good order towards the enemy, attacks and breaks them, and, after having entirely routed them, (he) cuts them to pieces.

(1.) *Overturned*, renverser J.

[*lows, onde.*

(2.) *Completely cuts down*, achever de couper—*jumps upon it*, s'élancer dessus—*billows*, ranger en bataille—*breaks*, renverser—*entirely routed*, achever de mettre en désordre—*cuts*, tailler.

637. RULE III.—Any personal pronoun, when the *subject*, must be repeated before verbs when passing from an affirmation to a negative, and *vice versâ*, or when the verbs are joined by any conjunction except *et* and *ni*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Il veut et ne veut pas,</i>	He will and he will not.
<i>Il donne d'excellens principes, parce qu'il sait que les progrès, ultérieurs en dépendent,</i>	He lays down excellent principles, because he knows that upon them depends all further progress.
<i>Il donne et reçoit,</i>	He gives and receives.
<i>Il ne donne ni ne reçoit,</i>	He neither gives nor receives.

EXERCISE.

1. It is inconceivable how whimsical she is; from one moment to another, *she* will and *she* will not.

2. The Jews are forbidden to work on the sabbath; *they* are, as it were,* locked in slumber; *they* light no fire and carry no water.

(1.) (She is of a whimsical cast inconceivable) *whimsical cast*, bizarrerie, f.

(2.) (It is forbidden to) *forbidden*, défendre—*sabbath*, jour du sabbat—*locked*, en chaîné—*slumber*, repos—*light*, allumer.

3. For nearly a week *she* has neither eaten nor drunk.

4. The soldier was not repressed by authority, but stopped from satiety and shame.

(3.) *For, depuis—nearly, près de—a week, huit jours—has eaten....drunk, F.*

(4.) *Repressed, réprimer—stopped, s'arrêter J.—from, par.*

638. RULE IV.—Pronouns, when they form the regimen, must be repeated before any verb.

EXAMPLES.

L'idée de ses malheurs le poursuit, The idea of his misfortunes pursues
le tourmente et l'accable, (him), torments (him), and
overwhelms him.

Il nous ennuie et nous obsède sans He wearies (us) and besets us
cesse, unceasingly.

639. EXCEPTION.—It is not repeated before such compound verbs as express the repetition of the same action, when the verbs are in the same tense; as,

Je vous le dis et redis, il le fait et refait sans cesse.

EXERCISE.

1. It is taste that selects the expressions—that combines, arranges, and varies *them*—so as to produce the greatest effect.

2. Horace answered his stupid critics not so much to instruct *them*, as to expose their ignorance, and let *them* see that they did not even know what poetry was.

3. Man embellishes nature itself; he cultivates, extends, and polishes it.

(1.) *So as to, de manière à ce qu'elles Q.*

(2.) *Stupid, sot—not so much to, moins pour—as to, pour—show their, (show to them)—let see, faire entendre—was, c'était que.*

Relation of the Pronouns of the Third Person to a Noun as expressed before.

640. RULE.—The pronouns of the third person—*il, ils, elle, elles, le, la, les*—must always relate to a noun, whether subject or regimen, taken only in a definite sense, before expressed in the same tense; but they must not be applied to a subject and regimen at the same time.

EXAMPLES.

La rose est la reine des fleurs, The rose is the queen of flowers;
aussi est-elle l'emblème de la therefore it is the emblem of
beauté, beauty.

J'aime l'ananas; il est exquis, I like the pine-apple; it is delicious.

641. But the two following sentences would be equivocal:

Racine a imité Euripide, en tout Racine has imitated Euripides in all
ce qu'il a de plus beau dans sa that he has most beautiful in his
Phèdre, Phædra.

Le légat publia une sentence d'interdit ; il dura trois mois, The legate published a sentence of interdiction ; it lasted three months.

642. As in the first of these two sentences *il* may relate either to *Racine* or to *Euripides*, and from the construction of the second sentence, *il* cannot, as it should, relate to *interdit*. Again, it is not altogether correct to say,

Nulle paix pour l'impie ; il la cherche, elle fuit, No peace for the wicked ; he seeks it, it flies.

643. Because, from the construction, the pronouns *la* and *elle* seem to be used for *nulle paix*, whereas the meaning requires that they should supply the place of the substantive *paix*, in the affirmative.

EXERCISE.

1. Poetry embraces all sorts of subjects ; *it* takes in every thing that is most brilliant in history ; *it* enters the fields of philosophy ; *it* soars to the skies ; *it* plunges into the abyss ; *it* penetrates to the dead ; *it* makes the universe its domain ; and if this world be not sufficient, *it* creates new ones, which *it* embellishes with enchanting abodes, which *it* peoples with a thousand various inhabitants.

2. Egypt aimed at greatness ; and wished to* strike the eye at a distance, always pleasing *it* by the justness of proportion.

3. Egypt, satisfied with its own territory, where every thing was in abundance, thought not of conquests ; *it* extended itself in another manner, by sending colonies to every part of the globe, and with *them* civilization and laws.

4. The Messiah is expected by the Hebrews ; *he* comes and calls the Gentiles, as it had been announced by the prophecies ; the people that acknowledge *him* as come are incorporated with the people that expected *him*, without a single moment of interruption.

(1.) *Subjects, matière*—takes in, se charger de—that is, y avoir de—(in) the fields, soars to, s'élancer dans—plunges, s'enfoncer—to, chez—(its domain of the universe)—be sufficient, suffire—ones, monde—enchanting, enchanter—abodes, demeure—various, divers.

(2.) *Greatness, grand*—wished, vouloir—eye, pl.—at a distance, dans l'éloignement—(in) pleasing, contenter.

(3.) *Was in abundance*, abonder—thought of, songer à—in, de—by, en—to, par—every part of the globe, toute la terre.

(4.) *Gentiles, Gentil*—(the prophecies had announced it)—acknowledges, reconnaître—with, à—without, sans qu'il y ait—single, seul.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

Explanation of some Difficulties attendant on the use of the Possessive Pronouns.

644. The possessive pronouns *son, sa, ses, leur, leurs* relate either to persons, to things personified, or simply to things or to pronouns. If they relate to persons, or things

personified, their place can never be supplied by others ; but if they relate to things, the following rules must be observed :

645. The possessive pronouns are always employed,

646. 1.—When the object to which they relate is either named, or designated by a personal pronoun in the same member of a phrase.

EXAMPLES.

L'Amérique étend son commerce par toute la terre, America extends her commerce over the whole globe.

Elle envoie ses flottes dans toutes les mers, She sends her fleets into every part of the ocean.

647. 2.—Before a noun, when qualified even by a single adjective, unless the noun form the regimen.

EXAMPLE.

Ses ressources immenses sont inépuisables, Her immense resources are inexhaustible.

648. 3.—After every preposition.

EXAMPLE.

C'est par sa position, jointe à la sagesse de son gouvernement, qu'elle réunit dans son sein de si grands avantages, It is by her situation, joined to the wisdom of her government, that she unites such vast advantages within herself.

649. 4.—Before all words which can govern the preposition *de*.

EXAMPLES.

Son congrès est le sanctuaire de la plus sage politique, Her congress is the seat of the wisest policy.

Son président n'a de pouvoir que pour faire le bien, Her president possesses power only to do good.

650. On all other occasions, the article, with the pronoun *en*, placed immediately before the verb, must be substituted.

EXAMPLE.

Tout enfin contribue à m'en faire aimer le séjour ; j'en admire surtout l'exacte police, en même temps que les lois m'en paraissent extrêmement sages, In short, every thing conspires to make me love that residence : I particularly admire the strictness of her police, at the same time when her laws appear to me extremely wise.

EXERCISE ON POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

1. A new custom was a phenomenon in Egypt: for which reason, there never was a people that preserved so long *its* customs, *its* laws, and even *its* ceremonies.

2. Solomon abandons himself to the love of women : *his* understanding declines, *his* heart weakens, and *his* piety degenerates into idolatry.

3. That superb temple was upon the summit of a hill : *its* columns were of Parian marble, and *its* gates of gold.

1.) *Phenomenon*, prodige—for which reason, aussi—a, de—preserved, S. *Understanding*, esprit—declines, baisser—weakens, s'affaiblir. *Summit*, haut—hill, colline—*Parian*, de Paros.

4. Laocoon is one of the finest statues in France: not only the whole, but all *its* features, even the least, are admirable.

5. The Thames is a magnificent river: *its* channel is so wide and so deep below London-bridge, that several thousands of vessels lie at their ease in it.

6. This fine country is justly admired by foreigners: *its* climate is delightful, *its* soil fruitful, *its* laws wise, and *its* government just and moderate.

7. The trees of that orchard have sun enough, yet *its* fruits are but indifferent.

8. The Seine has *its* source in Burgundy, *its* mouth is at Havre-de-Grace.

9. The pyramids of Egypt astonish, both by the enormity of *their* bulk and the justness of *their* proportions.

10. Egypt alone could erect monuments for posterity: *its* obelisks are to this day, as well for *their* beauty as for *their* height, the principal ornament of Rome.

11. History and geography throw mutual light on each other: a* perfect knowledge of *them* ought to enter into the plan of a good education.

- (4.) *In*, qu'il y ait en—the whole, l'ensemble—even, jusqu'à. [le—in it, y.
 (5.) *Magnificent*, superbe—channel, lit—below, au dessous de—lie at, être à—their,
 (6.) *Justly*, avec raison—soil, sol.
 (7.) *Have sun enough*, être bien exposé—but indifferent, assez mauvais.
 (8.) *Mouth*, embouchure—Havre, le Havre.
 (9.) *Both*, également et—bulk, masse—and, et par.
 (10.) *Egypt alone could*, il n'appartenait qu'à l'Égypte de—erect, élever—to this day, encore aujourd'hui—as well for, autant par—height, hauteur.
 (11.) *Throw mutual light*, &c., s'éclairer l'une par l'autre—of them, (their).

651. Again, when there exists any doubt whether the possessive pronoun ought to be used or not before a noun that is the regimen, the following is the

652. RULE.—This article, not the possessive pronoun, must be put before a noun forming the regimen, when a pronoun which is either subject or regimen sufficiently supplies the place of that possessive, or when there is no sort of ambiguity.

EXAMPLES.

J'ai mal à la tête, I have the head-ache. [leg.
Il faudra lui couper la jambe, It will be necessary to take off his
Ce cheval a pris le mors aux dents, That horse has run away.

EXERCISE.

1. During the whole winter he has had bad eyes.
2. I had a fall yesterday, and hurt *my* back and head.
3. It would be better for a man to lose *his* life than forfeit* his honor by a criminal action.
4. In this bloody battle he received a wound by a shot in *his* right arm and another in *his* left leg: by dint of care, *his* arm was saved, but it was necessary to amputate *his* leg.

- (1.) *Has had bad*, avoir mal à.
 (2.) *Had a fall*, se laisser tomber—hurt, se faire mal à—back, reins, pl.
 (3.) *Would be better*, valoir mieux N.
 (4.) *A wound by a shot*, un coup de feu—in, à—by dint, à force—his arm, &c. (they saved the arm to him)—was necessary, falloir J.—to amputate, to him.

653. But should either the personal pronouns or circumstances not remove all ambiguity, then the possessive pronoun must be joined to the noun ; as,

<i>Je vois que ma jambe s'enfle,</i>	I see that my leg is swelling.
<i>Il lui donna sa main à baiser,</i>	He gave him his hand to kiss.
<i>Elle a donné hardiment son bras</i> <i>au chirurgien,</i>	She courageously presented her arm to the surgeon.

654. *Ma*, not *la*, because I may also see the leg of another person swelling, &c.

EXERCISE.

1. In this interview they made each other presents: she gave him *her* portrait and he gave her *his* finest diamond.

2. A young surgeon preparing to bleed the great Condé, this prince said to him, smiling, "Do you not tremble to bleed me?" "I, my lord? no, certainly: it is not I, it is you who ought to tremble." The prince, charmed with the reply, immediately gave him *his* arm.

(1.) *Interview*, entrevue—*made each other*, se faire mutuellement.

(2.) *Preparing*, se disposer—*bleed*, saigner—*smiling*, d'un air riant—*it is not I*, (it is not to me)—*it is you*, (it is to you)—*who ought to*, de—*reply*, repartie.

655. REMARK I.—Although verbs which are conjugated with two pronouns of the same person generally remove every kind of amphibology, yet custom authorizes some familiar expressions, in which the possessive pronoun seems to be redundant ; as,

<i>Il se tient ferme sur ses pieds,</i>	He stands firm upon his feet.
<i>Je l'ai vu, de mes propres yeux,</i>	I have seen it with my own eyes.

656. II.—When speaking of an habitual complaint, the possessive pronoun is properly used ; as,

<i>Sa migraine l'a repris,</i>	His head-ache is returned.
--------------------------------	----------------------------

657. The possessive pronouns are subject to the same rules as the article ; they must therefore be repeated before all substantives which are either subject or regimen, and before all adjectives which express different qualities, although this is seldom observed in English ; as,

<i>Son père, sa mère, et ses frères</i> <i>sont de retour,</i>	His father, mother, and brothers are come back.
<i>Je lui ai montré mes plus beaux</i> <i>et mes plus vilains habits,</i>	I have shewn him my finest and my ugliest dresses.

EXERCISE.

1. Whatever he may do, he always finds himself safe

2. Can you still doubt the truth of what I tell you? Would you ask a stronger proof than that I give you, it is that I heard it—yes, heard it—with my own ears.

(1.) *Finds himself*, se retrouver—*safe*, sur ses jambes.

(2.) *Can*, N.—*doubt*, douter de—*ask*, exiger.

3. *My* gout does not allow me a moment's repose.

4. It is in vain that I exhort you to work and study: *your* idleness, that cruel disease under* which you labor, renders useless all the exhortations of friendship.

5. If you wish to be beloved, fail not to perform the promises you have just made.

6. In the retreat that I have chosen for myself, *my* study and my garden are my greatest delight.

7. He brought me into his laboratory, and showed me *his* large and small vessels.

(3.) *Allow*, laisser.

(4.) *It is in vain that I*, je ai beau—*exhort*, A.—*you labor*, vous travaillez.

(5.) *Fail not*, ne pas manquer—*perform*, remplir—*have just made*, venir de faire.

(6.) *For myself*, (to me)—*study*, cabinet—*are*, faire—*greatest*, plus cher.

(7.) *Brought*, mener—*laboratory*, laboratoire—*vessels*, vaisseau.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

658. *Qui*, when it is the subject, may very properly relate both to persons and things.

EXAMPLES.

L'homme qui joue perd son temps, The man who games loses his time.
Le livre, qui plaît le plus, n'est The book which pleases most is not
pas toujours le plus utile, always the most useful.

659. But when it is the regimen, it can only be used of persons or of things personified, whether the regimen be direct or indirect.

EXAMPLES.

Quand on est délicat et sage dans He who is wise, and discriminates in
ses goûts, on ne s'attache pas, his choice, does not form an attach-
sans savoir qui l'on aime, ment without knowing the person
 he loves.
L'homme à qui appartient ce beau The man to whom this fine garden
jardin est très-riche, belongs is very rich. [ing.
La femme de qui vous parlez, The woman of whom you are speak-

660. REMARK.—When the regimen indirect is expressed by the preposition *de*, then *dont* should be preferred to *de qui*. It is better to say, *La femme dont vous parlez*; however, when the verb expresses a kind of transfer or conveyance, *de qui* must be used; as,

Celui de qui je tiens cette nouvelle, The person from whom I had that intelligence.

661. RULE I.—*Qui* must not be separated from its antecedent when that antecedent is a noun.

EXAMPLE.

Un jeune homme qui est docile A young man who is obedient to the
aux conseils qu'on lui donne, advice that is given him, and who
et qui aime à en recevoir, aura loves to receive it, will infallibly
infailliblement du mérite, have merit.

662. REMARK.—In some phrases, *qui* may be separated from the substantive by several words—that is, when the sense obliges us to refer it to that substantive; as,

Il a fallu, avant toute chose, vous faire lire dans l'écriture sainte,
l'histoire du peuple de Dieu, *qui* fait le fondement de la religion.

663. This sentence is very correct; because, as *du peuple* determines the kind of history, and *de Dieu* the kind of people, the mind necessarily goes back to the substantive *histoire*, to which it refers.

664. *Qui* may likewise be separated from its antecedent, when this antecedent is a pronoun used as the regimen direct; as,

Il la trouva *qui* pleurait à chaudes larmes, He found her crying bitterly.
Je le vois *qui* joue, I see him playing.

665. Because, in this case, the true place of the pronoun is before the verb, and it is the same as saying, *Il trouva elle qui pleurait, &c. je vois lui qui joue.* Also in these kinds of sentences, which are real gallicisms:

Ceux-là ne sont pas les plus mal- Those are not the most unhappy
heureux, *qui* se plaignent le plus, who complain the most.

EXERCISE.

1. A young man *who* loves vanity of dress, like a woman, is unworthy of wisdom and glory; glory is only due to a heart *that* knows how* to* suffer pain and trample upon pleasure.

2. Thyself, O my son, my dear son, thou* thyself *that* now enjoyest a youth so cheerful and so full of pleasure, remember that this delightful age is but a flower, *which* will be withered almost as soon as blown.

3. Men pass away like flowers, *which* open in* the morning, and at night are withered and trampled under foot.

4. You must have a man *that* loves nothing but truth and you, *that* will speak the truth in spite of you, *that* will force all your entrenchments; and this necessary character is the very man whom you have sent into exile.

5. We perceived him waiting for us, quietly seated under the shade of a tree.

(1.) *Vanity of dress*, à se parer vainement—trample upon, fouler aux pieds.

(2.) *Cheerful*, vif—full of, seconde en—remember, se souvenir—delightful, bel—withered, sécher—blown, éclore.

(3.) *Open*, s'épanouir—and, (which)—at night, le soir—withered, flétrir—under, à—foot, les pieds.

(4.) *You must have*, il vous faut—nothing but, ne que—will speak, Q.—will force, Q.—entrenchments, retranchement—character, homme—man, même—sent into exile, exiler.

(5.) *Waiting for*, (who waited) attendre—under, à.

666. RULE II.—The relative *qui* must always have a reference to a noun taken in a determinate sense

EXAMPLES.

L'homme est un animal raisonnable, *qui*, &c.

Il me reçut avec une politesse, *qui*, &c.

667. But we cannot say,

L'homme est animal raisonnable, qui, &c.

Il me reçut avec politesse, qui, &c.

668. REMARK.—Though in many phrases the determinate nature of the nouns is not expressed, yet it is clearly understood. Thus, all these phrases are correct :

Il n'a point de livre, qui ne soit de son choix, He has not *a book* that is not of his own selecting.

Y a-t-il ville dans le royaume qui soit plus favorisée ? Is there *a city* in the kingdom that is more favored ?

Il se conduit en homme qui connaît le monde, He behaves himself like a man who knows the world.

Il est accablé de maux qui ne lui laissent pas un instant de repos, He is overwhelmed with *misfortunes* that do not allow him a moment's rest.

C'est une sorte de fruit, qui ne mûrit pas en Europe, It is a sort of *fruit* that does not ripen in Europe.

669. From the translation of all the above examples it is evident that *livre, ville, maux*, are really determinate, the meaning being, *il n'a pas, un livre qui, &c. ; y a-t-il une ville qui, &c.*

EXERCISE.

1. He received us with such *goodness, civility, and grace*, as charmed us, and made us forget all we had suffered.

2. There is no *city* in the world *where* there are more riches and a greater population.

3. Is there a *man* who can say, "I shall live till to-morrow?"

4. He has no *friend* but would make for him every kind of sacrifice.

5. He is surrounded by *enemies, who* are continually observing him, and would be very glad to detect him in a fault.

6. In his retreat, he lives like a *philosopher, who* knows men and mistrusts them.

7. The pine-apple is *a sort of fruit that* in Europe ripens only in hot-houses.

8. That man is *a sort of pedant who* takes words for ideas, and facts confusedly heaped together for knowledge.

(1.) *Such as, un...qui—civility, politesse.*—(2.) *There are, Q.*

(3.) *Can, Q.*—(4.) *But, qui ne—would make, S.*

(6.) *Like a, en—philosopher, sage—mistrusts, se défier de.*

(7.) *Pine-apple, ananas—hot-houses, serre chaude.*

(8.) *Heaped together, entasser—knowledge, savoir.*

670. *Que* relates both to persons and things. It is always the regimen direct, and cannot subsist without an antecedent expressed, which it generally follows. *L'homme que je vois, la pêche que je mange.* We say *generally*, because in some instances it may be separated from the antecedent by several words—that is, when the mind necessarily goes back to that antecedent, as in this sentence of Fléchier's :

Qu'est-ce qu'une armée ?—c'est un corps animé d'une infinité de passions différentes, qu'un homme habile fait mouvoir pour la défense de la patrie.

671. REMARK.—There are instances where *que* is apparently used as regimen indirect for *à qui* or *dont*; as, *C'est à vous que je parle*; *c'est de lui que je parle*; *de la façon que j'ai dit la chose*. But in this case, *que* is a conjunction.

EXERCISE.

1. The *God whom* the Hebrews and Christians have always served, has nothing in common with the deities full of imperfection, and even of vice, worshipped by the rest of the world.

2. The Epic poem is not the panegyric of a *hero who* is proposed as a* pattern, but the recital of great and illustrious *actions, which* are exhibited for imitation.

3. The *good which* we hope for* presents itself to us, and disappears like an empty *dream, which* vanishes when we awake: to teach us that the very *things which* we think we* hold fast in* our* hands,* may slip away in an instant.

4. Plato says that, in writing, we ought to hide ourselves, to disappear, to make the world forget us, that we may present nothing but the *truths* we wish to impress.

(1.) (That the rest of the world worshipped).

(2.) *Is proposed*, on propose—as, pour—*pattern*, modèle—is exhibited, on donne—*imitation*, exemple.

(3.) *Good*, bien—*disappears*, s'envoler—*empty*, vain—*vanishes*, &c., le réveil fait évanouir—*hold fast*, tenir F. le mieux—*slip away*, nous échappent.

(4.) *We*, on—to make the world forget, se faire oublier—that we may present but, pour ne produire que—*wish*, vouloir—*impress*, persuader.

672. *Lequel m.*, *laquelle f.*, *lesquels m. pl.*, *lesquelles f. pl.*, and *dont*, relate both to persons and things. But *lequel*, &c. ought never to be used, either as a subject or object, except to avoid ambiguity; for whenever the sense is evident, *qui* or *que* must be used.

673. *Lequel*, *laquelle*, *lesquels*, *lesquelles*, with the preposition *de*, is either followed or preceded by a noun, which it unites to the principal sentence. If it be followed, *dont* is preferable to *duquel m.*, *de laquelle f.*, *desquels m. pl.*, *desquelles f. pl.*, both for persons and things. Thus:

La Tamise dont le lit, and not *de laquelle*

Le prince dont la protection, and not *duquel*.

674. If *lequel*, *laquelle*, *lesquels*, *lesquelles*, be preceded by the noun, we can only make use of *duquel*, *de laquelle*, *desquels*, *desquelles*, when speaking of things; as, *La Tamise, dans le lit de laquelle*: and it is always better to use it when speaking of persons; as, *Le prince à la protection duquel*: *de qui* would not be so well.

675. *Lequel*, *laquelle*, *lesquels*, *lesquelles*, with the preposition *à*, when speaking of things, requires *auquel m.*, *à laquelle f.*, *auxquels m. pl.*, *auxquelles f. pl.*; as, *Les places auxquelles il aspire*: but we ought to prefer *à qui* when

speaking of persons ; as, *Les rois à qui on doit obéir. Aux-
quels* would not do so well.

676. So the relative *qui*, preceded by a preposition, never relates to things, but to persons only.

EXERCISE.

1. The grand principle *on which* the whole turns is, that all* the world is but one republic, *of which* God is the common father, and in *which* every nation forms, as it were, one great family.

2. Homer, *whose* genius is grand and sublime like nature, is the greatest poet, and perhaps the most profound moralist of antiquity.

3. The celebrated Zenobia, *whose* noble firmness you have admired, preferred dying with the title of queen, rather than accept the advantageous offers which Aurelian made her.

4. The Alps, on the summit *of which* the astonished eye discovers perpetual snow and ice, present at sunset the most striking and most magnificent spectacle.

5. A king, *to whose* care we owe a good law, has done more for his own glory than if he had conquered the universe.

6. The ambitious man* sees nothing but pleasure in the possession of the offices *to which* he aspires with so much eagerness, instead of seeing the trouble that is inseparable from them.

7. Kings, *whom* religion makes it our duty to obey, are, upon earth, the true representation of the providence of God.

(1.) *Turns, rouler—every, chaque—as it were, comme.*

(3.) *Preferred, aimer mieux—than, que de.*

(4.) *Perpetual, éternel—snow, ice, pl.—sunset, soleil couchant—striking, imposant.*

(5.) *Care, sollicitude.*

(7.) *Whom, (to whom)—makes it our duty to, nous fait un devoir de—representation,*

677. *Quoi* only relates to things. It is placed after the word to which it relates, but is always preceded by a preposition, and is generally followed by the subject of the phrase with which it is connected ; as,

La chose à quoi on pense ; voilà les conditions sans quoi la chose ne peut se faire.

678. To this mode of expression are to be preferred *lequel, duquel, auquel*, as being much better ; for *quoi* is never used with any degree of propriety but when it relates to a vague and indefinite subject, such as *ce* or *rien* ; as,

C'est de quoi je m'occupe sans cesse.

Il n'y a rien à quoi je sois plus disposé.

679. *Où, d'où, par où*, relate only to things. They are never used but when the nouns to which they refer express some kind of motion or rest, at least metaphorically ; as,

Voilà le but où il tend,

That is the end he aims at.

*C'est une chose d'où dépend le
bonheur public,*

It is a thing upon which the public
happiness depends.

Les lieux par où il a passé,

The places through which he has passed.

EXERCISE.

1. *What* a young man, who begins the world, ought principally to attend *to*, is not to give it a high opinion of his understanding, but to gain numerous friends by the qualities of his heart.

2. A youth passed in idleness, effeminacy, and pleasure, lays up for* us nothing but sorrow and disgust in old age; this, however, is *what* we little think of when we are young.

3. There is nothing *by which* we are more affected than the loss of fortune, although, being frail and perishable in its nature, it cannot contribute to our happiness.

4. A grove, *in which* I defy the burning heat of the dog-star, a retired valley, *where* I can meditate in peace, a high hill, *whence* my eye extends over immense plains, are the places *where* I spend the happiest moments of my life.

(1.) *To what*, ce à quoi—*begins*, entrer dans—to attend, s'attacher—*it*, y—*opinion*, idée—*understanding*, esprit—to gain, se faire—*numerous*, beaucoup de.

(2.) *Idleness*, inutilité—*effeminacy*, mollesse—*pleasure*, volupté—*lays up*, préparer—*of*, à—we, on.

(3.) *By*, à—we, on—*affected*, sensible—*frail*, frêle—*by*, de—*cannot*, Q.—*our*, the.

(4.) *Grove*, bosquet—*defy*, braver—*burning heats*, ardeur—*dog-star*, canicule—*spend*, passer.

ABSOLUTE PRONOUNS.

680. *Qui* relates only to persons presenting but a vague, indeterminate idea; as,

Qui sera assez hardi pour l'attaquer ? Who will be bold enough to attack him.

681. It is likewise used in the feminine and in the plural; as,

Qui est cette personne-là ? Who is that person ?

Qui sont ces femmes-là ? Who are those women ?

682. *Que* and *quoi* relate to things only; as,

Que pouvait la valeur en ce combat funeste ? What could valor do in that fatal combat ?

A quoi pensez-vous ? What are you thinking of ?

683. *Que* is sometimes used for *à quoi*, *de quoi*; as,

Que sert la science sans la vertu ? What avails learning without virtue ?

Que sert à l'avare d'avoir des trésors ? What use is it to the miser to possess treasures ?

that is, *à quoi sert*, &c. *de quoi sert*, &c.

684. *Quoi*, when relating to a whole sentence, is the only authorized expression that can be used; as,

La vie passe comme un songe; c'est cependant *à quoi* on ne pense guères.

685. REMARK.—*Que* and *quoi* require the preposition *de* before the adjective or substantive that follows them; as.

Que dit-on de nouveau ? quoi de plus agréable !

Que d'inconséquences dans sa conduite !

686. *Quel m., quelle f., quels m. pl., quelles f. pl.*, relate both to persons and things ; as,

Quel homme peut se promettre un bonheur constant ?
Quelle grâce ! quelle beauté ! mais quelle modestie !

687. *Où, d'où, par où*, relate but to things.

EXERCISE ON ABSOLUTE PRONOUNS.

1. *Who* could ever persuade himself, did not daily experience convince us of it, that, out of a hundred persons, there are ninety who sacrifice to the enjoyment of the present all the best-founded hopes of the future ?

2. *Who* would not love virtue for its own sake could he see it in all its beauty ?

3. He who does not know how to apply himself in his youth, does not know *what* to do when arrived at maturity.

4. He was a wise legislator who, having given to his countrymen laws calculated to make them good and happy, made them swear not to violate any of those laws during his absence : after *which*, he went away, exiled himself from his country, and died poor in a foreign land.

5. *What* people of antiquity ever had better laws than the Egyptians ? *What* other nation ever undertook to erect monuments calculated to triumph over both time and barbarism ?

6. *What* more instructive and entertaining than to read celebrated authors in their own language ? *What* beauty, *what* delicacy, and *grace*, which cannot be transcribed into a translation are discovered in them !

7. When *Ménage* had published his book on the Origin of the French Language, Christina, queen of Sweden, said :—" *Ménage* is ³(the most troublesome) ¹man ²(in the world) : he cannot let ²one word ¹go without its passport ; he must know *whence* it comes, *where* it has passed through, and *whither* it is going."

(1.) *Did*, si—out of, sur—future, avenir.

(2.) *Its own sake*, elle même—could he, si on pouvoir H. [dans l'âge mûr.

(3.) *How*, (to what)—*what*, (to what)—to do, s'occuper—when arrived at maturity,

(4.) *He*, ce—calculated, propre—not to, (that they would not)—went away, partir.

(5.) *Calculated to*, fait pour—both, également—over, de.

(6.) *Language*, langue—delicacy, finesse—which cannot, qu'on ne peut—be transcribed, faire passer—translation, traduction—are, &c. n'y découvre-t-on pas.

(7.) *When*, après que—Christina, Christine—troublesome, incommode—in the, du—cannot, ne saurait—go, passer—must, vouloir.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

688. *Ce*, joined to the verb *être*, always governs this verb in the singular, except when it is followed by the third person plural.

C'est moi, c'est toi, c'est lui, c'est nous, c'est vous.

689. But in different cases we must say,

Ce sont eux, *ce* sont elles,

Ce furent vos ancêtres qui,

Fut-ce nos propres fils qui,

Sont-ce les Anglais, qui ont fait cela ?

Est-ce les Anglais que vous aimez ?

Fut-ce nos propres fils que.

690. *Ce*, when relating to a person or thing mentioned before, supplies the place of *il* or *elle*

691. *Ce* must always be used when the verb *être* is followed by a substantive, accompanied by the indefinite article or the numerical adjective *un*.

EXAMPLES.

Lisez Homère et Virgile : ce sont les plus grands poètes de l'antiquité,

La douceur, l'affabilité, et une certaine urbanité, distinguent l'homme qui vit dans le grand monde ; ce sont là les marques auxquelles on le reconnaît,

Avez-vous lu Platon ? c'est un des plus beaux génies de l'antiquité,

Read Homer and Virgil : they are the best poets of antiquity.

Gentleness, affability, and a certain urbanity, distinguish the man who frequents polite company ; these are marks by which he may be known.

Have you read Plato ? he is one of the greatest geniuses of antiquity.

692. But when the verb *être* is followed by an adjective, or by a substantive taken adjectively, *il* or *elle* must be used.

EXAMPLES.

Lisez Démosthène et Cicéron ; ils sont très-éloquens,

J'ai vu l'hôpital de Greenwich ; il est magnifique et digne d'une grande nation,

Compteriez-vous sur Valère ? ignorez-vous qu'il est homme à ne jamais revenir de ses premières idées ?

Read Demosthenes and Cicero ; they are very eloquent.

I have seen Greenwich Hospital ; it is superb, and worthy of a great nation.

Would you rely upon Valère ? do you not know that he is a man who will never abandon his first opinions ?

EXERCISE ON DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

1. It is *we* who have drawn that misfortune upon* ourselves* through our thoughtlessness and imprudence.

2. *It was* the Egyptians that first observed the course of the stars, regulated the year, and invented arithmetic.

3. Peruse attentively Plato and Cicero : *they are* the two philosophers of antiquity who have given us the most sound and luminous ideas upon morality.

4. If you are intended for the pulpit, read over and over again Bourdaloue and Massillon : *they are* both very eloquent ; but the aim of the former is to convince, and that of the latter to persuade.

(1.) *Have drawn*, s'attirer—*thoughtlessness*, légèreté.

(2.) *First*, les premiers—*stars*, astres.

(3.) *Peruse*, lire—*sound*, sain—*morality*, morale.

(4.) *Are intended for*, se destiner à—*pulpit*, chaire—*read over and over again*, lire et relire sans cesse—*aim*, but.

693. *Ce*, followed by a relative pronoun, relates to things only. It is always masculine singular, as it only denotes a vague object, which is not sufficiently specified to know its gender and number.

EXAMPLE.

Ce qui flatte est plus dangereux que ce qui offense,

What flatters is more dangerous than what offends.

694. *Ce*, joined to the relative pronouns *qui*, *que*, *dont*, and *quoi*, has in some instances a construction peculiar to itself. Both *ce* and the relative pronoun that follows it form, with the verb which they precede, the subject of another phrase, of which the verb is always *être*. Now, *être* may be followed by another verb, an adjective, or a noun.

695. When *être*, then, is followed by another verb, the demonstrative *ce* must be repeated ; as,

Ce que j'aime le plus, c'est d'être seul, What I like most, is to be alone.

696. When followed by an adjective, the demonstrative is not repeated ; as,

Ce dont vous venez de me parler est horrible, What you have been mentioning to me is horrid.

697. When it is followed by a substantive, the demonstrative may either be repeated or not, at pleasure, except in the case of a plural or a personal pronoun. Thus, we may say,

Ce que je dis, est la vérité, or, *c'est la vérité*, What I say is the truth,

698. Though the former is best. But we must say,

Ce qui m'indigne, ce sont les injures, What provokes me, are the injuries
tiques, qu'on ne cesse de faire, which are continually committed.

Ce qui m'arrache au sentiment What alleviates the grief that op-
qui m'accable, c'est vous, presses me, is you.

699. Most of these rules contribute to the elegance of the language.

EXERCISE.

1. *What* is astonishing *is* not always *what* is pleasing.
2. *What* the miser thinks least of, *is* to enjoy his riches.
3. *What* pleases us in the writings of the ancients *is* to see that they have taken nature as a model, and that they have painted her with a noble simplicity.
4. *What* that good king has done for the happiness of his people deserves to be handed down to the latest posterity.
5. *What* constitutes poetry *is not* the exact number and regular cadence of syllables ; but *it is* the sentiment which animates every thing, the lively fictions, bold figures, and* beauty and variety of the imagery : *it is* the enthusiasm, fire, impetuosity, force—a something in the words and thoughts which nature alone can impart.
6. *What* we justly admire in Shakspeare *are* those characters always natural and always well* sustained.
7. *What* keeps me attached to life *is you*, my son, whose tender age has still need of my care and advice.

(1.) *Is astonishing*, étonner—*is pleasing*, plaire.

(2.) *What*, (that to which)—*miser*, avare.

(3.) *As a*, pour.

(4.) *Deserves*, être digne—to be handed down, être transmis—*latest*, la plus reculée.

(5.) *Constitutes*, faire—*exact*, fixe—*lively*, vif—*imagery*, image, pl.—*a something*, un je ne sais quoi—*words*, paroles—*impart*, donner.

(6.) *We*, on—*justly*, avec justice—*natural*, dans la nature—*sustained*, soutenu.

(7.) *Keeps attached*, attacher—*care*, pl.—*advice*, pl.

700. There are two ways of employing *celui* m., *celle* f., *ceux* m. pl., *celles* f. pl. In the first, they are followed by a noun, or pronoun preceded by the preposition *de*.

EXAMPLES.

Celui de vous qui, &c.

Whichever of you that, &c.

Cette montre ressemble à celle de votre frère,

That watch is like that of your brother.

701. In the second, they are followed by *qui*, *que*, or *dont*; as,
Celui qui ne pense qu'à lui seul He who thinks of nobody but himself
dispense les autres d'y penser, excuses others from thinking of him.
Votre nouvelle est plus sûre que Your intelligence is more authentic
celle qu'on débitait hier, than that which was circulated yesterday.

702. In these two cases, they are applied both to persons and things.

703. In the latter of these instances, *celui*, &c. are sometimes omitted, and this turn gives strength and elegance to the expression; as,

Qui veut trop se faire craindre,
se fait rarement aimer,

He who wishes to make himself too much feared, seldom makes himself beloved.

704. *Ceci* and *cela* apply only to things: however, in the familiar style, custom authorizes us to say, in speaking of one person individually, or of many collectively, *Cela est heureux! cela croupit dans la fange; cela est gueux et fier, &c.*

EXERCISE.

1. *Whichever of you* shall be found to excel the others, both in mind and body, shall be acknowledged king of the island.

2. There are admirable pictures: *these* are after the manner of Rubens and *those* after the manner of Van-Huysum.

3. Why are the statues of the most celebrated modern sculptors, notwithstanding the perfection to which the arts have been carried, so much inferior to *those* of the ancients?

4. *He* whose soul, glowing, as it were, with divine fire, shall represent to himself the whole of nature, and shall breathe into objects that spirit of life which animates them, those affecting traits which delight and ravish us, will be a man of real genius.

5. *He that* judges of others by himself is liable to many mistakes.

6. *He that* is easily offended discovers his weak side, and affords his enemies an opportunity of taking advantage of it.

7. *He who* loves none but himself deserves not to be loved by others.

(1.) *Be found to excel the others*, on jugera vainqueur—both in, et pour—and, et pour.

(2.) *There are*, voilà de—pictures, tableau—are after, être dans—manner, genre.

(3.) *Are*, (to be placed before so much inferior)—have been carried, on a porté—*inferior*, au-dessous.

(4.) *Glowing with*, enflammé de—as it were, pour ainsi dire—the whole of, tout—shall breathe into, répandre sur—affecting, touchant—delight, séduire—real, vrai.

(5.) *By*, d'après—liable, exposé—mistakes, méprises.

(6.) *Is offended*, s'offenser—weak side, faible—affords, fournir à—of taking advantage, profiter.

CHAPTER V.

PRONOUNS INDEFINITE.

705. *THOUGH* *on* may generally be considered as a masculine pronoun, as in the phrase *on n'est pas toujours maître de ses passions*, there are, however, occasions in which it is evidently feminine; as, *on n'est pas toujours jeune et jolie*: it may likewise be followed by a plural; as, *on se battit en désespérés; est-on des traîtres?*

706. This pronoun must be repeated before all the verbs of a sentence, and refer to one and the same subject. Thus, the sentence

On croit être aimé et on ne nous aime pas
is incorrect: it should be,

On croit être aimé et l'on ne l'est pas.

707. *Quiconque* is generally masculine: however, it is feminine when speaking of or to females; as, *quiconque de vous, Mesdames, &c.*: though, perhaps, *celle de vous, &c.*, is preferable.

EXERCISE ON PRONOUNS INDEFINITE.

1. Do you sincerely think, said Emily to Lucilla, that when women are sensible and pretty, *they* are ignorant of* it? No, *they* know it very well: but if *they* are watchful over their character, *they* are not proud of these advantages.

2. *We* are not slaves, to receive such treatment.

3. Do you know what *they* do here? *They* eat, *they* drink, *they* dance, *they* play, *they* walk—in a word, *they* kill time in the gayest manner possible.

4. *Whoever* of you is bold enough to slander me, I will make him repent it.

5. *Whoever* of you is attentive and discreet shall receive a reward that will flatter her.

(1.) *Sincerely*, de bonne foi—*Emily*, Emilie—*women*, on—*they*, on—*know*, savoir—*watchful over*, jaloux de—*character*, réputation—are proud, s'enorgueillir.

(2.) *We*, on—*slaves*, des esclaves—to receive, pour essuyer de.

(3.) *They*, on—in the gayest manner, le plus gaiement—possible, (that they can).

(4.) *Is*, L.—to slander, pour médire de—it, (of it).

(5.) *Is*, L.—that will, fait pour.

708. *Chacun* m., *chacune* f., though always singular, may be followed sometimes by *son*, *sa*, *ses*, and sometimes by *leur*, *leurs*, which, in many instances, is embarrassing.

709. There is no difficulty in those phrases where *chacun* is not contrasted with a plural number: for then *son*, *sa*, *ses*, must be used; as,

Donnez à chacun sa part,

Give to each his share.

Que chacun songe à ses affaires,

Let every one mind his own business.

710. RULE.—In phrases where *chacun* is contrasted with a plural to which it refers, *son*, *sa*, *ses*, must be employed when *chacun* is placed after the regimen; but *leur*, *leurs*, must be used when *chacun* is placed before the regimen.

EXAMPLES OF *SON*, *SA*, *SES*.

<i>Remettez ces médailles chacune en sa place,</i>	Return those medals each into its proper place.
<i>Les hommes devraient s'aimer chacun pour son propre intérêt,</i>	Men ought to love one another, each for his own interest.

EXAMPLE OF *LEUR*, *LEURS*.

<i>Les hommes devraient avoir, chacun pour leur propre intérêt, de l'amour les uns pour les autres,</i>	Men ought, for their own interest, to have an affection for each other.
---	---

711. REMARK.—In phrases where *chacun* is contrasted with a plural there are two senses, the *collective* and the *distributive*. When *chacun* is placed after the regimen, the collective sense expressed by the plural is finished; and the distributive *chacun* acts separately the part of each individual: but when *chacun* precedes the regimen, the collective sense remaining incomplete, must be carried on to the end; and then the pronoun which follows *chacun* is put in the plural; as,

La reine dit elle-même aux députés, qu'il était temps qu'ils s'en retournassent chacun chez eux.

EXERCISE.

1. Go into my library, and put the books which have been sent back to me *each* into *its* place.
2. They have all brought offerings to the temple, *every one* according to *his* means and devotion.
3. Thierry charged Uncelanus to carry his orders to the mutineers, and to make them retire, *each* under *his* colors.
4. *Each* of them has brought *his* offering, and fulfilled his religious duty.
5. Had Ronsard and Balzac, *each* in his manner of writing, a sufficient degree of merit to form *after them* any very great man in verse and in prose?
6. After a day so usefully spent, we went back *each* to *our* own home.
7. Minds that possess any correctness examine things with attention, in order to give a fair judgment of them; and they place *each* of* them in the rank *it* ought to occupy.

(2.) *Offering*, offrande.

(3.) *To carry*, aller porter—*mutineers*, mutin—*colors*, drapeau, sing.

(4.) (They have brought each their, &c.)—*fulfilled*, remplir.

(5.) *Manner of writing*, genre—*a sufficient degree*, assez—*merit*, bon—*any*, un.

(6.) *Day*, journée—*went back*, retourner—to, chez—*our own home*, nous.

(7.) *Possess any*, avoir de—*correctness*, justesse—*give a fair judgment*, juger avec connaissance—*place*, mettre—to occupy, avoir.

712. *Personne*, used as a pronoun, is always masculine; of course, the adjective relating to it must be of that gender; as,
Personne n'est aussi heureux qu'elle, Nobody is so happy as she.

713. *L'un et l'autre* require the verb they govern to be in the plural. See page 147.

714. *Ni l'un ni l'autre* likewise generally govern the verb in the plural, when both may at the same time receive the action expressed by the verb: however, the two following modes

Ni l'un ni l'autre n'ont fait leur devoir, or
Ni l'un ni l'autre n'a fait son devoir,

are authorized: but whenever this action applies only to a single object, the verb must be in the singular; as,

Ni l'un ni l'autre n'est mon père; ni l'un ni l'autre ne sera nommé à cette ambassade.

715. But when *ni l'un ni l'autre* elegantly stand after the verb, the verb is always in the plural; as,

Ils ne sont morts ni l'un ni l'autre.

EXERCISE.

1. Nobody is so severe, so virtuous in public, as some women who practise the least restraint in private.

2. Nobody could be happier than she; but as a consequence of that levity which you know she has, she has lost all the advantages that she had received from nature and education.

3. Racine and Fénelon will be always the delight of feeling minds: both possessed in the highest degree the art of exciting in us at pleasure the most tender and the most lively emotions.

4. Balzac and Voiture enjoyed in their time great celebrity; but neither has been read since by good taste: the native and simple graces are preferred to the bombast of the former and the affectation of the latter.

(1.) So, aussi—some, certain—practise the least restraint, être le moins retenu.

(2.) Could, H.—that, un—levity, légèreté—know she has, lui connaître.

(3.) Always, dans tous les temps—both, l'un et l'autre—in the, au—pleasure, gré.

(4.) Enjoyed, G.—neither, ni l'un ni l'autre—has been read, (they read them no more)—native, du naturel—simple, de la simplicité—are preferred, depuis que le bon goût a fait préférer les, &c.—bombast, bouffissure.

716. *Tout* and *rien*, when the regimen direct, are placed after the verb in simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle in compound tenses; as, *Il avoue tout; il n'avoue rien; il a tout avoué; il n'a rien avoué.*

717. But when they form the regimen indirect, they are always placed after the verb, both in simple and in compound tenses; as, *Il rit de tout; il ne se mêle de rien; il a pensé à tout; il n'a pensé à rien.*

718. *Tout* is sometimes used as an adverb; as,

Il lui dit tout froidement,

He has told him quite coolly.

719. Sometimes also it represents *quoique, encore que, entièrement, quelque*, in which case the following rule must be observed:

720. RULE.—*Tout* before an adjective, or a substantive which is used adjectively, never takes either gender or number, except when immediately followed by an adjective feminine beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirated; as,

<i>Les enfans, tout aimables qu'ils sont,</i>	Children, amiable as they are.
<i>Ils sont tout interdits,</i>	They are quite disconcerted.
<i>La vertu tout austère qu'elle paraît,</i>	Virtue, austere as it may appear.
<i>Ces images tout amusantes qu'elles sont,</i>	These images, entertaining as they may be.
<i>C'est une tête toute vide,</i>	It is quite a vacant head.
<i>Ces dames, toutes spirituelles qu'elles sont,</i>	These ladies, witty as they may be.
<i>Ces fleurs sont tout aussi fraîches que celles que vous avez,</i>	These flowers are quite as fresh as those which you have.
<i>Ces dames sont, tout ainsi que vous, tout comme vous, belles, jeunes et spirituelles,</i>	These ladies, as well as you, are handsome, young, and ingenious.

721. In this latter sense, *tout* is little more than a mere expletive.

EXERCISE.

1. Children, *amiable* as they are, have nevertheless many faults, which it is of importance to correct.

2. The philosophers of antiquity, *although* very* *enlightened*, have given us but very confused ideas of the Deity, and very vague notions about the principal duties of the law of nature.

3. Those flowers, *inodorous* as they are, are not the less esteemed.

4. Virtue, *austere* as it is, makes us enjoy real pleasures.

5. Fables, *although* very* entertaining, yet truly interest us only when they convey instruction to us, under the disguise of an ingenious allegory.

6. Although that absurd pedant is an incessant scribbler, yet his head is *altogether empty*.

7. Far be from us those maxims of flattery, that kings are born with talents, and that their favored souls come out of God's hands *completely wise and learned*.

8. Those fountains glide *quite* gently through a mead enamelled with flowers.

9. These peaches are *quite* as good as those of the south of France.

(1) *Have nevertheless*, ne laisser pas d'avoir—*faults*, défaut—*of importance*, essentiel.

(2) *Enlightened*, éclairés qu'ils étaient—*of nature*, naturel. [tiel.]

(3) *Inodorous*, inodore—not, n'en.

(4) *Enjoy*, goûter de.

[convey, offrir—*disguise*, voile.]

(5) *Entertaining*, amusantes qu'elles sont—*truly*, véritablement—*only*, ne que—

(6) *Incessant*, infatigable—*scribbler*, écrivain—*his head is*, (he has not less the head)—not, n'en—*altogether*, tout.

(7) *Far be*, loin—*of*, de la—*are born*, naissent—*with talents*, habile—*favored*, privilégié—*come out*, sortir—*learned*, savant.

(8) *Glide*, couler—*gently*, doucement—*through a mead*, sur un gazon.

722. *Quelque*—*que*, sing. m. and f., *quelques*—*que*, pl. m. and f., joined to a substantive, either alone or accompanied by an adjective, take the sign of the plural.

EXAMPLES.

Quelques richesses que vous ayez,	Whatever riches you may possess.
Quelques bonnes œuvres que vous fassiez,	Whatever good actions you may do.
Quelques peines affreuses que vous éprouviez,	However dreadful pains you may suffer.

723. But when joined to an adjective separated from its substantive, it does not take the sign of the plural.

EXAMPLES.

Tous les hommes, quelque opposés qu'ils soient,	All men, however opposite they may be.
Ces actions, quelque belles qu'on les trouve,	Those actions, however brilliant they may be found.

724. *Quelque—que*, sing. m. and f., *quelques—que*, pl. m. and f., *quel que*, m. s., *quelle que*, f. s., *quels que*, m. pl., and *quelles que*, f. pl., joined to a substantive (see page 74), have the same meaning, although they are not used indifferently for each other. If the pronoun stands before the substantive, we must make use of *quelque—que*; as,

Quelques richesses que vous ayez;

725. But if the verb intervene, then we make use of *quel que* in two separate words; as,

Quelles que soient les richesses que vous ayez.

EXERCISE.

1. *Whatever talents* you may possess, *whatever advantages* you may have received from nature and education, with* *whatever perfections* you may be endowed, expect only the suffrage of a small number of men.

2. *However great services* you may have rendered mankind, rather look for their ingratitude than their acknowledgements.

3. *However useful, however well written* the works which you have published, yet think not that you will immediately reap the fruits of your labors: it is but by slow degrees that light introduces itself among men. The course of time is swift; but it seems to lag when it brings reason and truth along with it.

4. *Whatever may be the obstacles* which ignorance, prejudice, and envy oppose to the true principles of an art, yet we ought never to be deterred from propagating them: the sun does not cease to shine because its light hurts the eyes of night-birds.

5. *Whatever be your birth, whatever your riches* and dignities, remember that you are frustrating the views of Providence, if you do not make use of them for the good of mankind.

(1.) *Possess, avoir—have received, tenir—be endowed, posséder—expect, ne s'attendre à—but, que.*

(2.) *Mankind, homme, pl.—rather look for, compter plutôt—acknowledgements, reconnaissance, sing.*

(3.) *Immediately, de suite—reap, recueillir—by slow degrees, avec lenteur—among, chez—swift, rapide—to lag, se trainer—along with it, à sa suite.*

(4.) *We, on—to be deterred, se rebuter—propagating, répandre—shine, éclairer—its, la—hurts, blesser—night-birds, oiseau de nuit.*

(5.) *Are frustrating, frustrer.*

CHAPTER VI.

OF THE VERB.

Agreement of the Verb with its Subject.

726. IT has been observed that the verb which has two subjects, both singular, is put in the plural; but to this rule there are the following

727. EXCEPTIONS.—1, A verb with two subjects in the singular is not put in the plural when the two subjects are only joined together by the conjunctions *ou, comme, aussi-bien que, autant que, &c.*

EXAMPLES.

<i>La séduction ou la terreur l'a entraîné dans le parti des rebelles,</i>	Either persuasion or terror <i>has</i> drawn him into the party of the rebels.
<i>Le roi, aussi-bien que son ministre, veut le bien public,</i>	The king, <i>as well as</i> his ministry, <i>wishes</i> for the public good.
<i>Son honnêteté, autant que son esprit, le fait rechercher,</i>	His honesty, <i>as much as</i> his wit, <i>makes</i> him be courted.
<i>L'envie, comme l'ambition, est une passion aveugle,</i>	Envy, <i>like</i> ambition, <i>is</i> a blind passion.

728. 2.—The verb is likewise put in the singular, though preceded by plurals, either when there is an expression which collects all the substantives into one—such as, *tout, ce, rien, &c.*—or when the conjunction *mais* is placed before the last substantive, and this is in the singular.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Biens, dignités, honneurs, tout disparaît à la mort,</i>	Riches, dignities, honors, <i>every thing,</i> <i>vanishes</i> at death.
<i>Jeux, conversations, spectacles, rien ne la distrait,</i>	Games, conversations, shows, <i>nothing</i> <i>diverts</i> her.
<i>Perfidies, noirceurs, incendies, massacres, ce n'est là qu'une faible image, &c.</i>	Perfidies, enormities, conflagrations, massacres, <i>all this is</i> but a feeble representation, &c.
<i>Non-seulement toutes ses richesses et tous ses honneurs, mais toute sa vertu s'évanouit,</i>	Not only all his riches and honors, <i>but all his virtue vanishes.</i>

EXERCISE ON THE VERB.

1. Either fear *or* inability prevented them from moving. [bosom.
2. The fear of death, *or* rather the love of life, began to revive in his
3. Alcibiades, *as well as* Plato, was among the disciples of Socrates,
4. Lycurgus, *like* Solon, was a wise legislator.

(1.) *Inability, impuissance—moving, remuer.*

(2.) *Began to revive, se réveiller—in, au fond de—bosom, cœur.*

(3.) *Among, au nombre de.*

(4.) *Lycurgus, Lycargue.*

5. Euripides, *as much as* Sophocles, contributed to the glory of the Athenians.

6. Riches, dignities, honors, glory, pleasure, every thing loses its charms from the moment we possess it, because none of those things can fill the heart of man.

7. The gentle zephyrs which preserved in that place, notwithstanding the scorching heat of the sun, a delightful coolness: streams gliding with a sweet murmur through meadows interspersed with amaranths and violets: a thousand springing flowers, which enamelled carpets ever green: a wood of those tufted trees that bear golden apples, and the blossom of which, renewed every season, yields the sweetest of all perfumes: the warbling of birds: the continual prospect of a fruitful country: in a word, nothing of what till then had made him happy, could assuage the feelings of his grief.

(6.) *We, on—none, rien—those things, tout cela.*

(7.) *Preserved, entretenir—scorching heat, ardeur—interspersed with, parsemer de—springing, naissant—carpets, tapis—tufted, touffu—golden, (of gold)—renewed, (which renews) se renouveler—in every season—yields, répandre—prospect, spectacle—made, rendre—assuage, l'arracher à—feeling, sentiment.*

Of the Collective Partitive.

729. The collectives general have nothing to distinguish them from substantives common, with regard to the laws of agreement; but the collectives partitive apparently deviate from those laws in some instances.

730. RULE.—The verb which relates to a collective partitive is put in the plural when that partitive is followed by the preposition *de* and a plural; but it is put in the singular, either when the partitive is followed by a regimen singular, or when it expresses a determinate quantity, or lastly, when it presents an idea independent of the plural which follows it.

EXAMPLES OF THE PLURAL.

La plupart des hommes sont <i>bien</i>	The greatest part of men are very
<i>prompts dans leurs jugemens,</i>	hasty in their judgments.
Bien des philosophes <i>se sont</i>	Many philosophers have been mis-
<i>trompés,</i>	taken.

EXAMPLES OF THE SINGULAR.

Une infinité de peuple est <i>accourue</i>	An immense number of people
(regimen singular),	flocked together.
La moitié des soldats a <i>péri</i> (deter-	One half of the soldiers has
minate quantity),	perished.
Le plus grand nombre des troupes a	The greater number of the troops
<i>péri</i> (idea independent of plural),	has perished.

731. Thus the substantives partitive *la plupart, une infinité, une foule, un nombre, la plus grande partie, une sorte, &c.*, and words signifying quantity—such as *peu, beaucoup, assez, moins, plus, trop, tant, combien*, and *que* used for *combien*, followed by a noun joined to them by the preposition

de—have not the least influence on the verb, and consequently, it is not with them that the verb agrees, but with the noun which follows them.

732. REMARK.—The words *infinité* and *la plupart*, used by themselves, require the verb in the plural; as, *Une infinité pensent, la plupart sont d'avis.*

EXERCISE ON THE COLLECTIVE PARTITIVE.

1. *Many persons* experience that human life is every where a state in which much is to be endured and little to be enjoyed.

2. *Many poets* think that poetry is the art of uniting pleasure with truth, by calling imagination to the help of reason.

3. *Few persons* reflect that time, like money, may be lost by unseasonable avarice.

4. *So many years* of familiarity were chains of iron which linked me to those men who beset me every hour.

5. *How many wise men** have thought that, to seclude one's self from the world was to pull out the teeth of devouring animals, to take away from the wicked the use of his poniard, from calumny its poisons, and from envy its serpents!

6. *A company of young Phœnicians*, of uncommon beauty, clad in fine linen, whiter than snow, danced a* long while the dances of their own* country, then those of Egypt, and lastly those of Greece.

7. *A troop of nymphs*, crowned with flowers, whose lovely tresses flowed over their shoulders, and waved with the wind, swam in shoals behind her car.

8. At the time of the invasion of Spain by the Moors, an *innumerable multitude of people* retired into the Asturias, and there proclaimed Pelagius king.

9. *A third-part of the enemy* were left dead on the field of battle; the rest surrendered at discretion.

10. *The innumerable crowd of carriages* which are to be seen in London during the winter astonishes foreigners.

(1.) *Much is*, &c. (one has a great deal of pains and little of real enjoyments).

(3.) *Unseasonable*, hors de propos.

(4.) *Familiarity*, habitude—*linked*, lié—*beset*, obséder. [take away from, ôter à.

(5.) *How many*, que de—to *seclude one's self*, se retirer—*pull out of*, arracher à—to

(6.) *Company*, troupe—*clad in*, et vêtu de—*linen*, lin.

(7.) *Lovely*, beau—*tresses*, cheveu—*flowed*, pendre—*waved*, flotter—with, au gré de—*swam*, nager H—*shoals*, foule—*car*, char.

(8.) *Moors*, Maure—*retired*, se retirer—*Asturias*, Asturies—*Pelagius*, Pélage.

(9.) *A third-part*, un tiers—*enemy*, pl.—*surrendered*, se rendre.

(10.) *Crowd*, quantité—*which are*, &c. (which one sees).

Place of the Subject with regard to the Verb.

733. It has been seen that the subject of a verb is either a noun or a pronoun, and that this subject must always be expressed in French. It remains to speak of the place of this subject with respect to the verb.

734. RULE.—The subject, whether a noun or pronoun, is generally placed before the verb.

EXAMPLES.

- L'ambition effrénée de quelques hommes, a, dans tous les temps, été la vraie cause des révolutions des états, The boundless ambition of a few men has, in all ages, been the real cause of the revolutions of empires.
- Quand nous nageons dans l'abondance, il est bien rare que nous nous occupions des maux d'autrui, When we roll in plenty, we seldom think of the miseries of others.

EXERCISE.

1. *Youth* is full of presumption; *it* expects every thing from itself: although frail, *it* thinks itself all-sufficient, and that *it* has nothing to fear.
2. *Commerce* is like certain springs: if *you* attempt to* divert their course, *you* dry them up.
3. *It* is enough that falsehood is falsehood, to be unworthy of a man who speaks in the presence of God, and who is to sacrifice every thing to truth.
4. *The ambition* and *avarice* of man are the sources of his unhappiness.
5. *They* punished in Crete three vices which have remained unpunished in all other nations:—ingratitude, dissimulation, and avarice.
6. Like the Numidian lion, goaded by cruel hunger, and rushing upon a flock of feeble sheep, *he* tears, *he* slays, *he* wallows in blood.

(1.) *Full of presumption*, présomptueux—*expects*, se promettre—*itself all-sufficient*, pouvoir tout—that *it* has, avoir.

(2.) *Springs*, source—*attempt*, vouloir—*dry up*, faire tarir.

(3.) *It is enough*, suffire—*falsehood*, mensonge—is, Q.—*in*, en—*is to sacrifice*, doit.

(5.) *Punished*, H.—*have remained*, être—in, chez.

(6.) *Like the*, semblable à un—*Numidian*, de Numidie—*goaded by*, &c., (that cruel hunger goads) dévorer—*rushing*, (which rushes upon) entrer dans—*tears*, déchirer—*slays*, égorger—*wallows*, nager.

735. EXCEPTIONS.—1, In interrogative phrases, the question is made either with a pronoun or a noun, as subject of the verb: if with a pronoun, it is always placed after the verb; as,

Que dit-on ? irai-je à la campagne ? de qui parle-t-on ?

736. If with a noun, the noun is sometimes placed before and sometimes after the verb; it stands before when the pronoun personal which answers to it asks the question; as,

Cette nouvelle est-elle sûre ? les hommes se rendent-ils toujours à la raison ?

737. It stands after when a pronoun absolute or an interrogative adverb, placed at the beginning of the phrase, allow the suppression of the personal pronoun; as,

Que dit votre ami ? à quoi s'occupe votre frère ? où demeure votre cousin ?

738. REMARK.—In interrogative sentences, when the verb which precedes *il*, *elle*, *on*, ends with a vowel, the letter *-t-* is put between that verb and the pronoun; as,

Arrive-t-il ? viendra-t-elle ? aime-t-on les vauriens ?

739. When *je* stands after a verb which ends with *e* mute, that *e* mute is changed into *é* acute; as, *Aimé-je ? puissé-je ?* But when the transposition of *je* after the verb becomes

harsh, euphony then requires another turn; so, instead of *cours-je? dors-je?* which would be intolerable, we must say, *est-ce que je cours? est-ce que je dors?*

EXERCISE.

1. *Have you* forgotten all that Providence has done for you? how *have you* escaped the shafts of your enemies? how *have you* been preserved from the dangers which surrounded you on all sides? *could you be* so blind as not to acknowledge and adore the all-powerful hand that has miraculously saved you?

2. What *will posterity say* of you if, instead of devoting to the happiness of mankind the great talents which you have received from nature, you make use of them only to deceive and corrupt them?

3. Do not the *misfortunes* which we experience often contribute to our* prosperity?

4. Why are the *works of nature* so perfect? Because each work is a whole, and because she labors upon an eternal plan, from which she never deviates. Why, on the contrary, are the *productions* of man so imperfect? It is because the human mind, being unable to create any thing, and incapable of embracing the universe at a single glance, can* produce only after having been enriched by experience and meditation.

(1.) *Escaped*, échapper à—*shafts*, trait—*preserved*, garantir—*on all sides*, de toutes parts—*so as*, assez pour—*saved*, conserver.

(2.) *Devoting*, consacrer—*mankind*, homme pl.—*deceive*, égarer.

(3.) *Experience*, éprouver—*contribute to*, tourner en.

(4.) *Because*, c'est que—and *because*, et que—*being unable*, ne pouvoir—*incapable*, (not being able)—*at*, de—*glance*, vue—*enriched*, fécondé.

740. 2.—The subject is put after the verb in incidental sentences which express that we are quoting somebody's words; as,

Je meurs innocent, a dit Louis XVI. I die innocent, said Louis XVI.
Je le veux bien, dit-il, I am very willing, said he.

741. 3.—The subject is put after the verb if the sentence begins with an impersonal verb, or either of these words, *tel*, *ainsi*, &c.; as,

Tel était l'acharnement du soldat, Such was the fury of the soldier
que, &c. that, &c.
Ainsi finit cette sanglante tragédie, Thus ended that bloody tragedy.

EXERCISE.

1. True glory, *said he*, is founded in humanity: whoever prefers his own glory to the feelings of humanity, is a monster of pride, and not a man.

2. There have happened for these* ten years *so many events* exceeding all probability, that posterity will find it difficult to credit them.

3. *Such was that incorruptible Phocion* who answered the deputies of Alexander, who were telling him that this powerful monarch loved him as the only honest man: Well, then, let him allow me to be and to appear so.

(1.) *Is founded*, ne se trouver pas hors de—*feelings*, sentiment.

(2.) *There have happened for*, il s'est passé depuis—*exceeding*, hors de—*probability*, vraisemblance—*will find very difficult*, avoir bien de la peine—to *credit*, ajouter foi à.

(3.) *Loved*, chérir—*honest man*, homme de bien—*well*, ho!—*to be so*, d'être tel—*appear so*, le paraître.

4. *Thus ended, by the humiliation of Athens, that dreadful war of twenty-seven years, to* which ambition gave rise, which hatred made atrocious, and which was as fatal to the Greeks as their ancient confederation had proved advantageous to them.*

(4.) *Ended, se terminer—gave rise, faire naître—made, rendre—had proved, être I.*

742. 4.—The subject is put after the verb when the subjunctive is used to express a wish, or to take the place of *quand même*, whenever, and a conditional; as,

<i>Puissent tous les peuples se con-</i>	May all nations be convinced of
<i>vaincre de cette vérité,</i>	this truth.
<i>Dussé-je y périr, j'irai,</i>	Should I perish there, I will go.

743. 5.—The subject is put after the verb when that subject is followed by several words which are dependent upon it, and form an incidental sentence which, by its length, might obscure the relation of the verb to the subject; perspicuity then requires that the subject should be displaced.

744. Sometimes, however, this transposition of the subject is only the effect of taste, to avoid an inharmonious cadence; or it is used by an orator who wishes to arouse the attention of his hearers by a bold and unexpected turn.

EXERCISE.

1. The gods grant that you may never experience such misfortunes!

2. May you, O wise old man! in a repose diversified by pleasing occupations, enjoy the past, lay hold of the present, and charm your latter days with the hope of eternal felicity!

3. What is not in the power of the gods! were you at the lowest depths, the power of Jupiter could draw you from thence; were you in Olympus, beholding the stars under your feet, Jupiter could plunge you to the bottom of the abyss, or precipitate you into the flames of gloomy Tartarus.

4. There, through meadows enamelled with flowers, glide a thousand various rivulets, distributing every where their pure (and) limpid waters.

5. Already, for the honor of France, there* had come into administration a man more distinguished for his understanding and virtues than for his dignities.

(1.) *Grant, faire—experience, éprouver de.*

(2.) *Old man, vieillard—lay hold of, saisir—with, de.*

(3.) *Is not in the power of, ne peuvent—were, S.—lowest depths, fond de l'abîme—power, puissance—could, pouvoir N.—Olympus, Olympe—stars, astre—gloomy, noir—Tartarus, Tartare.*

(4.) *Through, au milieu de—with, de—glide, serpenter—rivulets, ruisseau—distributing, (which distribute)—their, une.*

(5.) *Had come, être entré—administration, (of affairs)—for, par—understanding, esprit.*

Government of the Verbs.

745. When the regimen of a verb is a noun, it is generally placed *after* the verb; but to this rule there is one exception, besides those which will hereafter be mentioned.

746. EXCEPTION.—In an interrogative sentence, the regimen is placed before the verb when this regimen is joined to an absolute pronoun.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Quel objet voyez-vous ?</i>	What object do you see
<i>A quelle science vous appliquez-vous ?</i>	To what science do you apply yourself ?
<i>De quelle affaire vous occupez-vous ?</i>	About what business are you employed ?

747. REMARK.—In French, a verb can never have two regimens direct: therefore, when a verb has *two* regimens, *both nouns*, one of them must necessarily be preceded by a preposition.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Donnez ce livre à votre frère,</i>	Give that book to your brother.
<i>On a accusé Cicéron d'imprudence et de faiblesse,</i>	Cicero has been accused of imprudence and weakness.

748. Though the natural order of the ideas seems to require that the regimen direct be placed before the indirect, the perspicuity of the sentence does not allow it in all cases.

749. RULE.—When a verb has two regimens, the shorter is generally placed first; but if they be of equal length, the regimen direct will precede the indirect.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Les hypocrites s'étudient à parer le vice des dehors de la vertu,</i>	Hypocrites make it their study to deck vice with the exterior of virtue.
<i>Les hypocrites s'étudient à parer des dehors de la vertu les vices les plus honteux et les plus décriés,</i>	Hypocrites make it their study to deck with the exterior of virtue the most shameful and most odious vices.
<i>L'ambition sacrifie le présent à l'avenir, mais la volupté sacrifie l'avenir au présent,</i>	Ambition sacrifices the present to the future, but pleasure sacrifices the future to the present.

EXERCISE ON THE GOVERNMENT OF THE VERBS.

1. Illustrious examples teach us that God has hurled *from their thrones princes who contemned his laws*: he reduced *to the condition of a beast the haughty Nebuchadnezzar, who wanted to usurp divine honors*.

2. Wretched is* the man who feeds *his mind with chimeras*.

3. Our interest should prompt us to prefer *virtue to vice, wisdom to pleasure, and modesty to vanity*.

(1.) *Illustrious*, fameux—*teach*, apprendre—*hurled*, renverser—*haughty*, superbe—Nebuchadnezzar, Nabuchodonosor—*wanted to*, vouloir H.

(2.) *Feeds*, repaître—with, de.

(3.) *Should*, devoir F.—*prompt*, porter—*pleasure*, volupté.

750. RULE.—A noun may be governed at once by two verbs, provided those verbs do not require different regimens.

EXAMPLES.

On doit aimer et respecter les rois, We ought to love and respect kings.
Ce général attaqua et prit la ville, That general attacked and took the city.

751. But we must not say,

Cet officier attaqua et se rendit maître de la ville, That officer attacked and made himself master of the city.

752. A different turn should be given to the sentence, by placing the noun after the first verb and adding *en* before the second; as,

Cet officier attaqua la ville, et s'en rendit maître, That officer attacked the city, and made himself master of it.

EXERCISE.

1. Luxury is like a torrent, which *carries away* and *overthrows* every thing it meets.

2. Nothing can* resist the operation of time: it at length *undermines*, *alters*, or *destroys* every thing.

3. Among the Spartans, public education had two objects: the first, to harden their bodies by fatigue; the second, to *excite* and *nourish* in their minds the love of their country and an enthusiasm for what is great.

(1.) *Carries away*, entraîner—*overthrows*, renverser—*every thing*, tout ce que.

(2.) *Operation*, action—at length, à la longue—*undermines*, miner.

(3.) *Among the Spartans*, à Sparte—to, de—*harden*, endurcir—*by*, à—their, les—for what is great, les grandes choses.

On the use, proper or accidental, of Moods and Tenses.

INDICATIVE.

753. The *present* is used to express an existing state; as,

Je suis ici, I am here.

754. An invariable state; as,

Dieu est de toute éternité, God is from all eternity.

755. A future near at hand; as,

Il est demain fête, To-morrow is a holiday.

756. Or even a preterit, when, to give a sort of animated picture, we relate a thing past as passing. Thus, we find in Racine,

J'ai vu votre malheureux fils traîné par ses chevaux, I have seen your unhappy son dragged along by his horses.

757. But suddenly passing from the preterit to the present, the speaker adds,

Il veut les rappeler, et sa voix les effraie, He calls out to stop them, but his voice frightens them.

758. In English, the verb *to be* is frequently used with the participle present; as,

I am reading, I am translating, I shall be writing.

759. This construction is not adopted in French; and, whenever found, it is to be translated in French simply by the verb, put in the tense expressed by the verb *to be*. Thus, *I am reading*, must be expressed by *je lis*; *I shall be writing*, must be rendered *j'écrirai*, &c.

EXERCISE ON THE PROPER USE OF MOODS, &c.

1. *He is* in his chamber, where he *is relaxing* his mind from the fatigue of business by some instructive and agreeable reading.

2. Truth, eternal by its nature, *is* immutable as God himself.

3. I never *let** a day *pass* without devoting an hour or two to reading the ancients.

4. It is this week that the new piece *comes out*.

5. The armies were in sight: nothing was heard on all sides but dreadful cries: the engagement began. Immediately a cloud of arrows *darkens* the air and *covers* the combatants: nothing *is* heard but doleful cries of the dying, or the clattering of the arms of those who *fall* in the conflict; the earth *groans* beneath a heap of dead bodies, and rivers of blood *stream* every where; there *is* nothing in this confused mass of men enraged against one another but slaughter, despair, revenge, and brutal fury.

(1.) *Is relaxing*, délasser—reading, lecture.

(2.) *By*, de—immutable, immuable.

(3.) *Devoting*, consacrer—reading, la lecture de.

(4.) *Come out*, on donne.

(5.) *Sight*, présence—nothing was, &c. on ne que H.—the engagement began, on en vint aux mains—cloud, nuée—arrows, trait—darkens, obscurcir—nothing is, &c. on n'entend plus que—doleful, plaintif—clattering, bruit—conflict, mêlée—groans, gémir—beneath, sous—heap, monceau—rivers, ruisseau—stream, couler—there is nothing in, &c. ce ne être dans—mass, amas—enraged, acharné—but, que—slaughter, massacre.

760. The *imperfect* is used—1, To denote the recurrence of an action at a time which is past; as,

Quand j'étais à Paris, j'allais souvent aux Champs Elysées, When I was at Paris, I often went to the *Champs Elysées*.

761. 2, For a past which has some duration, especially in narrations; as,

Rome était d'abord gouvernée par des rois, Rome was at first governed by kings.

EXERCISE ON THE USE OF THE IMPERFECT.

1. When I *was* at Paris, I *went* every morning to take a walk in the *Champs Elysées* or the *Bois de Boulogne*: afterwards, I *came* home, where I employed myself till dinner either in reading or writing; and in the evening, I generally *went* for amusement to the French Theatre or the Opera.

2. When I *was* in the prime of life, like the light butterfly, I *fluttered* from object to object, without being able to settle to any thing: eager for

(1.) *Take a walk*, se promener—in, à—came home, rentrer chez soi—employed, s'occuper—in reading, (say to read)—for amusement, me délasser—French Theatre, Comédie Française.

(2.) *Prime of life*, fleur de l'âge—butterfly, papillon—fluttered, voler—being able,

pleasure, I *seized* every thing that *had* its appearance : alas ! how far *was* I then from foreseeing that I should deplore with so much bitterness the loss of that precious time.

3. For a short time after Abraham, the knowledge of the true God still *appeared* in Palestine and Egypt. Melchisedec, king of Salem, *was* the priest of the Most High God. Abimelech, king of Gerar, and his successor of the same name, *feared* God, *swore* by his name, and *reverenced* his power. But in Moses' time, the nations *adored* even beasts and reptiles. Every thing *was* God but God himself.

pouvoir—*settle*, me fixer—*eager for*, avide de—*had its appearance*, m'en présentait l'image—*how*, que—*with so much bitterness*, (so bitterly).

(3.) Swore, jurer—*reverenced*, admirer—the nations, on—even, jusqu'à—but, excepté.

762. In French, the *preterit definite* and the *preterit indefinite* are not used indifferently.

763. The *preterit definite* is used when speaking of a time which is entirely past, and of which nothing remains ; as,

<i>Je fis un voyage à Bath le mois</i>	I took a journey to Bath last
<i>dernier,</i>	month.
<i>J'écrivis hier à Rome,</i>	I wrote yesterday to Rome.

764. To authorize the use of this tense, there must be the interval of at least one day. It is the most used in the historic style, and for that reason called *parfait historique*.

765. The *preterit indefinite* is used either for a past indeterminate or for a past of which something still remains ; as,

<i>J'ai voyagé en Italie,</i>	I have travelled in Italy.
<i>J'ai déjeuné ce matin à Londres,</i>	I breakfasted this morning in London
<i>et dîné à Richmond,</i>	and dined at Richmond.

EXERCISE ON THE PROPER USE OF THE PRETERIT.

Amenophis *conceived* the design of making his son a conqueror. He *set about* it after the manner of the Egyptians—that is, with great ideas. All the children who were born on* the same day as Sesostris, *were brought* to court by order of the king : he *had* them educated as his own children, and with the same care as Sesostris. When he *was* grown up, he made him serve his apprenticeship in a war against the Arabs : this young prince *learned* there to bear hunger and thirst, and *subdued* that nation, till then invincible. He afterwards *attacked* Lybia, and *conquered* it. After these successes, he *formed* the project of subduing the whole world. In consequence of* this,* he entered Ethiopia, which he *made* tributary. He *continued* his victories in Asia. Jerusalem *was* the first to feel the force of his arms : the rash Rehoboam *could* not resist him, and Sesostris *carried* away the riches of Solomon. He *penetrated* into the Indies, farther than Hercules and Bacchus, and farther than Alexander did afterward. The Scythians *obeyed* him as far as the Tanais ; Armenia and Cappadocia *were* subject to him. In a word, he *extended* his empire from the Ganges to the Danube.

Making, faire de—*set about it*, s'y prendre—*after*, à—*ideas*, pensée—*brought*, amener—*had educated*, faire élever—*grown up*, grand—*made serve*, fit faire—*apprenticeship*, apprentissage—in, par—*entered*, entrer dans—*made*, rendre—as far as, jusqu'à—*Cappadocia*, Cappadoce.

766. The preterit indefinite is sometimes used instead of a future just approaching ; as,

Avez-vous bientôt fini ?

Have you soon done ?

Oui, j'ai fini dans le moment,

Yes, I shall have done in a moment.

EXERCISE.

1. Enflamed with the desire of knowing mankind, I *have travelled*, not only among the most polished nations, but even among the most barbarous. I *have observed* them in the different degrees of civilization, from the state of simple nature to the most perfect state of society, and wherever I went, the result *was* the same : that is to say, I *have* every where *seen* beings occupied in drying up the different sources of happiness that nature had placed within their reach.

2. I *have travelled* this year in Italy, where I *had* an* opportunity of seeing several masterpieces of antiquity, and where I *made* a valuable collection of scarce medals. I there *admired* the perfection to which they *have brought* architecture, painting, and music ; but what *pleased* me most there, was the beauty of the climate of Naples.

(1.) *With, de—mankind, homme, pl.—among, chez—polished nations, peuple policé—barbarous, nation sauvage—from, depuis—simple, pur—to, jusqu'à—wherever I went, dans tous les pays—the result was the same, (I had the same result)—in drying up, à tarir—within their reach, à leur portée.*

(2.) *Opportunity, occasion—masterpieces, chefs d'œuvre—scarce, rare—pleased me most, faire le plus de plaisir—was, est.*

767. The two preterits anterior differ in the same manner as the two preceding preterits ; but they are always accompanied by a conjunction, or an adverb of time ; as,

Je suis sorti dès que j'ai eu dîné, I went out as soon as I had dined.

J'eus fini hier à midi, I had done yesterday at noon.

768. The *pluperfect* denotes that a thing took place before another which had itself already taken place ; as,

J'avais soupé quand il entra, I had supped when he came in.

EXERCISE.

[causes.

1. As soon as I *had examined* this phenomenon, I tried to find out its

2. As soon as we *had crossed* the river, we found ourselves in a wood where there was not a single foot-path traced.

3. As soon as the great Sesostris *had satisfied* his ambition by the conquest of so many empires, he returned into Egypt, where he devoted the whole of the day to administering strict justice to his people, and in the evening he recreated himself by holding conferences with the learned, or by conversing with the most upright people of his kingdom.

4. I *had only received*, like most of the grandees, an education in which I *had imbibed* nothing but sentiments of pride and insensibility ; that is, they *had done* every thing in their power to stifle in me the happy and benevolent dispositions which I *had received* from nature.

(1.) *As soon as, dès que—tried to find out, en rechercher.*

(2.) *Crossed, traverser—found ourselves, se trouver engagé—foot-path, sentier de.*

(3.) *The whole of the day, jour entier—administering, rendre A.—strict, exact—recreated, délasser—by holding conferences, à s'entretenir—upright, honnête—people, gens.*

(4.) *Grandee, grand—imbibed, puiser—they, on—in their power, ce qu'on pouvoir I.—stifle, étouffer—benevolent, bienfaisant.*

769. As the use of these different preterits is attended with some difficulty, the following analysis is added, in order more clearly to explain the manner in which they are used.

770. We read in Marmontel the following extract :

<i>Célicour, à l'âge de quinze ans, avait été dans le monde ce qu'on appelle un petit prodige.</i>	<i>Célicour, at the age of fifteen, had been in the world what is called a little prodigy.</i>
--	--

771. The author employs the pluperfect, as he speaks of a period of time anterior to all those which he is going to mention.

<i>Il faisait des vers les plus galans du monde ; il n'y avait pas dans le voisinage une jolie femme qu'il n'eût célébrée : c'était dommage de laisser tant de talens enfouis dans une petite ville ; Paris devait en être le théâtre,</i>	<i>He composed the most agreeable love-sonnets imaginable ; there was not a pretty woman in the neighborhood that he had not celebrated : it was a pity to let so many talents be buried in a little town : Paris was the theatre on which they ought to be exhibited.</i>
--	--

772. Here the author makes use of the imperfect, because he speaks of the habitual employment of Célicour.

<i>Et l'on fit si bien, que son père se résolut de l'y envoyer,</i>	<i>And they contrived matters so that his father determined to send him there.</i>
---	--

773. Now, the author passes to the preterit definite, because he is no longer speaking of what Célicour used to do, but what he did at a time past, and of which nothing remains.

<i>Ce père était un honnête homme, qui aimait l'esprit sans en avoir, et qui admirait, sans savoir pourquoi, tout ce qui venait de la capitale. Il avait même des relations littéraires, et du nombre de ses correspondans était un connaisseur nommé M. de Fintac,</i>	<i>This father was a good sort of man, who was fond of wit, without having any, and admired, without knowing why, every thing that came from the metropolis. Nay, he even had some literary connexions, and among his correspondents was a connaisseur of the name of Fintac.</i>
---	---

774. Here, again, the author resumes the form of the imperfect, as he is now speaking of the habitual state of Célicour's father in his little town, and because, in this passage, he merely relates what that father was doing, at a time past, which has no kind of relation to the present.

<i>Ce fut principalement à lui que Célicour fut recommandé,</i>	<i>It was particularly to him that Célicour was recommended.</i>
---	--

775. The form of the preterit definite is now resumed, because this is an action passed, at a time of which nothing is left, &c.

EXERCISE.

1. God, who *had created* his angels in holiness, *would* have their happiness depend upon themselves: they *could* insure their felicity, by giving themselves willingly to their Creator; but they *delighted* in themselves, and not in God: immediately those spirits of light *became* spirits of darkness.

2. There is a letter which Philocles *has written* to a friend of his, about his project of making himself king of Carpathus. I *perused* that letter, and it *seemed* to me to be the hand of Philocles. They *had* perfectly *imitated* his writing. This letter *threw* me into a strange surprise. I *read* it again and again, and *could* not persuade myself that it *was* written* by Philocles, when I recalled to my mind the affecting marks which he *had given* me of his disinterestedness and integrity.

3. Those who *had shewn* the greatest zeal for the state and my person *did not think* themselves obliged to undeceive me after so terrible an example. I myself *was afraid* lest truth should break through the cloud, and reach me in spite of all my flatterers. I *felt* within myself that it would have raised in me bitter remorse. My effeminacy, and the dominion which a treacherous minister *had gained* over me, *threw* me into a kind of despair of ever recovering my* liberty.

(1.) *Have their happiness depend*, (that their happiness) dépendre S.—*could*, pouvoir —*delighted in*, se plaire en—*of light*, lumineux—*darkness*, ténèbres.

(2.) *There is*, voilà—*about*, sur—*Carpathus*, Carpathie—to be, de—they, on—*again and again*, sans cesse—*by*, de—*when I recalled to*, repasser dans J.—*integrity*, bonne foi.

(3.) *Did not think themselves obliged to*, se croire dispensé de—*was afraid lest*, craindre que—*break through*, percer S.—*reach*, parvenir jusqu'à—in spite of, malgré—*raised in*, causer à—*effeminacy*, mollesse—*dominion*, ascendant—*treacherous*, perfide—*gained*, prendre—*threw*, plonger—*recovering*, rentrer en.

776. There is this difference between the two future tenses, that the period of time expressed by the future absolute may or may not be determined; as,

J'irai à la campagne, or j'irai demain à la campagne, while, in the future anterior, the time is necessarily determined; as,

J'aurai fini, quand vous arriverez.

EXERCISE.

1. Remember that youth is but a flower, which *will wither* almost as soon as it* opens. Thou *wilt see thyself* gradually changed. Smiling graces, sweet pleasures, strength, health, and joy, *will vanish* like a pleasing dream; nothing but the sad remembrance will be left thee.

2. I *shall* next year *take* a journey into Greece, and I am preparing myself for it by reading the travels of the young Anacharsis.

3. When you *have read* the celebrated discourse of Bossuet on Universal History, and *studied* in it the causes of the rise and fall of states, you *will be* less astonished at the revolutions, more or less sudden, that modern empires have experienced, which appeared to you in the most flourishing state.

(1.) *Will wither*, (will be almost as soon withered) sécher—*opens*, éclore—*gradually*, insensiblement—*lively*, riant—*pleasing*, beau—*nothing will be left*, il n'en restera L.

(2.) *Take*, faire—for it, y—*reading*, lecture de—the travels, celui.

(3.) *Have read*, M.—*and*, que vous M.—*in it*, y—*rise*, grandeur—*fall*, chute—*sudden*, subite—(that have experienced the modern empires, which, &c.) appeared, H.

CONDITIONAL.

777. The conditional is used—1, To express a wish ; as,

Que je serais, or que j'aurais été How glad I should be, or should
content de réussir dans cette have been, to succeed in that
affaire ! affair !

778. 2, With *si*, if, whether, expressing a doubt ; as,

Demandez-lui s'il serait venu avec Ask him whether he would have
nous supposé qu'il n'eût pas eu come with us, had he not been
affaire, busy.

779. 3, Before or after the imperfect, or pluperfect of the indicative, preceded by *si* ; as,

Nous nous épargnerions bien des We should spare ourselves much
peines, si nous savions modérer pain, did we know how to mode-
nos desirs, rate our desires.

Vous auriez été plus heureux, si You would have been more happy
vous aviez suivi mes conseils, if you had followed my advice.

780. 4, With *quand*, used instead of *si*, *quoique*, or *quand même* ; the verb preceded by *quand* is generally in one of the conditionals ; as,

Quand l'avare posséderait tout l'or Were the miser to possess all the
du monde, il ne serait pas encore gold in the world, still he would
content, not be satisfied.

781. 5, Lastly, for various tenses of the indicative ; as,

Croiriez-vous votre fils ingrat ? Could you think your son ungrateful ?
 which means *croyez-vous*, &c.

L'auriez-vous soupçonné d'un tel Could you have suspected him of
vice ? such a vice ?

which means *l'avez-vous*, &c.

Quelle raison pourrait m'empêcher What cause could prevent me from
d'aller vous voir ? coming to see you ?

which means *quelle cause pourra*, &c.

EXERCISE ON THE CONDITIONAL.

1. If it *were* even possible for men always to act conformably to equity, as it is the multitude that must judge their conduct, the wicked would always blame and contradict them from malignity, and the good sometimes from mistake.

2. What false steps I *should have made*, but for you, at my entrance into the world !

3. But for your counsels, I *should have failed* in this undertaking.

(1.) If even, *quand même—were*, N.—for men, (that men)—to act, S.—judge, juger de—would blame, M.—contradict, croiser M.

(2.) What, *que de—steps, démarche—but for, sans*.

(3.) But for, *sans—failed, échouer*.

4. How satisfied I *should have been* if you had sooner informed me of your happiness!

5. If we gave to infancy none but just and clear notions, *there would not be* by far so many false wits in the world.

6. Had Alexander *conquered* the whole world, his ambition *would not have been* satisfied; he *would still have found* himself straitened in it.

7. *Could you believe* him vain enough to aspire to that high degree of honor?

8. *Could you ever have thought* him capable of deserting the good cause, to go and side with rebels?

9. *Would you renounce* being useful to the present generation because envy fastens on you?

(4.) *How, que.*

(5.) *We, on—there would not be by far so many, il y aurait bien moins de.*

(6.) (When Alexander would have conquered)—*straitened, trop à l'étroit.* [de.]

(8.) *Deserting, abandonner—to go and side with, pour se ranger sous les drapeaux*

(9.) *Renounce, renoncer à—fastens, s'attacher—on you, à vos pas.*

Remark on the use of the Conditional and Future.

782. Foreigners are very apt to use the future or the conditional after *si*, when meaning *supposé que*. They say,

J'irai demain à la campagne, s'il I shall go into the country to-morrow
fera beau, if the weather be fine.

Vous auriez vu le roi, si vous You would have seen the king if you
seriez venu, had come.

783. The impropriety of this construction will be obviated by attending to the following

784. RULE.—When a verb is preceded by *si*, meaning *supposé que*, the present is used instead of the future absolute; the preterit indefinite instead of the future anterior; the imperfect instead of the conditional present; and the pluperfect instead of the conditional past.

EXAMPLES.

J'irai demain à la campagne, s'il I shall go to-morrow into the country,
fait beau, if it be fine weather.

Il aura eu l'avantage, s'il a suivi He will have had the advantage, if
vos conseils, he has followed your advice.

Je serais content, si je vous voyais I should be pleased if I saw you
appliqué, apply to study.

J'aurais été content, si je vous I should have been pleased if I had
avais vu appliqué, seen you attentive to your studies.

785. REMARK.—This rule does not hold good, either when *si* is placed between two verbs, the first of which implies doubt, uncertainty; as,

Je ne sais s'il viendra,

786. Or, with the second conditional past; as,

Vous m'eussiez trouvé, si vous fussiez venu ce matin.

EXERCISE.

1. A young man who is just entering the career of letters *will conciliate* the good will of the public, *if he consider* his first successes only as an encouragement to do better.

2. That absurd criticism *will have amused* only fools or malicious people,* *if attention has been paid* to the spirit that pervades the whole, and the manner in which it is written.

3. Life *would possess* many more sweets and charms, *if men*, instead of tearing one another to pieces, *formed* but one society of brethren.

4. The Athenians *would have found* in the young Alcibiades the only man capable of insuring their superiority in Greece, *had not* that vain, thoughtless people *forced* him, by an unjust, or, at least, imprudent sentence, to banish himself from his country.

5. I know not *whether* reason *will soon triumph* over prejudice and ignorance, but I am certain it will be the case sooner or later.

6. Rome *would have never attained* that high degree of splendor and glory which astonishes us, *had it not extended* its conquests as much by its policy as by its arms.

(1.) *Is just entering*, débiter dans—*career*, carrière—*conciliate*, s'attirer—*good will*, bienveillance—*consider*, regarder.

(2.) *Fools*, sot—*malicious*, méchant—*paid*, faire—*pervades the whole*, régner d'un bout à l'autre—in which, dont.

(3.) *Possess*, avoir—*tearing one another to pieces*, s'entredéchirer.

(4.) *Superiority*, prépondérance—*thoughtless*, léger—*sentence*, condamnation.

(5.) *Know*, savoir—it will be the case, cela être.

(6.) *Attained*, parvenir à—*policy*, politique.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

787. There are conjunctions which govern the indicative (page 172), and others which govern the subjunctive (page 173). We call *principal proposition* the phrase which is followed by the conjunction, and *incidental* or *subordinate proposition* that which is placed after the conjunction. In this sentence,

Je crois que vous aimez à jouer,

je crois is the principal proposition, and *vous aimez à jouer* is the subordinate proposition: *que* is the conjunction which unites the two phrases.

788. GENERAL RULE.—The verb of the *subordinate* proposition must be put in the *indicative* when the verb of the *principal* proposition expresses affirmation, in a direct, positive, and independent manner; but it is put in the *subjunctive* when that of the *principal* proposition expresses doubt, wish, or uncertainty.

Je sais qu'il est surpris,

Je crois qu'il viendra,

Je doute qu'il soit surpris,

Je doute qu'il vienne,

Je souhaite qu'il réussisse,

Je tremble qu'il ne succombe

I know he is surprised.

I believe he will come.

I doubt his being surprised.

I doubt his coming.

I wish he may succeed.

I tremble lest he should fail.

EXERCISE ON THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

1. The glory which has been ascribed to the Egyptians of being the most grateful of all men, *shows* that *they were* likewise the most sociable.

2. In Egypt, when it *was proved* that the conduct of a dead man* *had been* bad, they condemned his memory, and he was denied burial.

3. I *am sure* that by moderation, mildness, and politeness, you *will disarm* even* envy itself.

4. The new philosophers *say* that color *is* a sensation of the soul.

5. I *believe* you are as honest and disinterested as you seem to be.

6. I *doubt* whether the Romans *would* ever *have triumphed* over the Gauls if the different chiefs of this warlike people had not been disunited.

7. I *could wish* that the love which we ought to have for one another, *were* the principle of all our actions, as it is the basis of all virtues.

8. *Fear*, lest it *should be said* that you feed upon chimeras, and that you take the shadow for the reality.

9. The new philosophers *will have* color *to be* a sensation of the soul.

10. I *will have* you *to be* as honest and disinterested as you seem to be.

(1.) Which has, &c. qu'on—*ascribed*, donner—*grateful*, reconnaissant.—*men*, peu-
(2.) Was denied, priver de—*burial*, sépulture. [ple, sing.

(3.) By, avec—*politeness*, honnêteté.

(5.) Seem to be, le paraître.

(6.) Whether, que.

(8.) It, on ne—*feed upon*, se repaître de.

(9.) Will have, vouloir—*color to be*, (that color be).

789. *Do, did, will, would, should, can, could, may, and might*, are sometimes, with respect to the French language, simply signs of tenses, at others they are real verbs.

790. There can be no difficulty about *do* and *did*; these are mere expletives, denoting interrogation, negation, or merely emphasis, when they are joined to a verb.

I do love,

J'aime.

I did love,

J'aimais, or j'aimai.

Do I love?

Aimé-je?

Did I love?

Aimais-je, or aimai-je?

I do not love,

Je n'aime pas.

I did not love,

Je n'aimais pas, or je n'aimai pas.

91. In all these cases they are not expressed in French. But when they are followed by a noun or a pronoun, then they are real verbs, and mean *faire*, to do.

Do me that favor,

Faites-moi ce plaisir.

He did it,

Il le fit.

792. In short, they are expressed by *faire* to do, whenever they are followed by any thing else except by the verb with which they are necessarily connected; as,

He did more than could have been expected, Il fit plus qu'on n'eût pu espérer.

793. *Should* is only a sign of the conditional when it expresses a thing which may happen upon some condition.

I should like a country life if my affairs would permit me to indulge my inclination, J'aimerais la vie champêtre, si mes affaires me permettaient de suivre mon goût.

794. But when it implies duty or obligation, it is a verb, and must be expressed by the verb *devoir* to owe ; as,

We should never swerve from the path of virtue, Nous ne devrions jamais nous écarter du sentier de la vertu.

795. *Can, could, may, and might*, are not so difficult as they appear at first sight ; because, in almost every instance, there is no impropriety in rendering them by the verb *pouvoir*. In general, *can* and *could* imply a power, a possibility, a capability, &c., and *may* and *might* a permission, a probability, &c.

796. *Do, did, shall, will, &c.* in English, are sometimes used elliptically in the answers to interrogative sentences. The French answer with the repetition of the verb, accompanied with a pronoun expressive of the idea of the interrogative sentence ; as,

Will you do your exercise to-day? Ferez-vous votre thème au jour-
Yes, I will. d'hui ?—Oui, je le ferai.

Relations between the Tenses of the Indicative.

797. RULE.—When the first verb is in the imperfect, the preterit, or the pluperfect, and the second denotes a temporary action, this second verb is put in the imperfect, if we mean to express a present.

EXAMPLE.

Je croyais, j'ai cru, j'avais cru I thought, I have thought, I had
que vous étudiez les mathéma- thought that you were studying
tiques, mathematics.

798. The second verb is put in the pluperfect, if we mean to express a past.

EXAMPLE.

Il m'assura qu'il n'avait jamais He assured me that he had never
tant ri, laughed so much.

799. The second verb is put in the present of the conditional, if we mean to express a future absolute.

EXAMPLE.

On m'a dit que votre frère viendrait I was told your brother would
à Londres l'hiver prochain, come to town next winter.

800. But, although the first verb may be in some of these tenses, yet the second is put in the present when this second verb expresses a thing which is true at all times.

EXAMPLE.

Je vous disais, je vous ai dit, je vous avais dit, que la santé fait la félicité du corps, et le savoir celle de l'ame, I told you, I have told you, I had told you, that health constitutes the happiness of the body, and knowledge that of the soul.

801. REMARK.—In phrases where the imperfect is preceded by *que* it denotes sometimes a past, sometimes a present, with respect to the preceding verb. It denotes a past when the verb which is joined to it by the conjunction *que* is in the present or future.

EXAMPLE.

Vous savez, or vous saurez que le peuple Romain était aussi avide qu'ambitieux, You know, or you must know that the Romans were a people as covetous as they were ambitious.

802. But it denotes a present when the verb which precedes it is in the imperfect, one of the preterits, or the pluperfect.

EXAMPLE.

On disait, on a dit, on avait dit que Phocion était le plus grand et le plus honnête homme de son temps, It was said, it has been said, it had been said, that Phocion was the greatest and most upright man of his age.
Dès qu'on eut appris à Athènes qu' Alcibiade était à Lacédémone, on se repentit de la précipitation avec laquelle on l'avait condamné, As soon as it was known at Athens that Alcibiades was at Lacedemon, the Athenians repented of the precipitation with which they had condemned him.

803. Nevertheless, the imperfect denotes the past, in this last instance, when it signifies an action which was past before that which is expressed by the first verb.

EXAMPLE.

En lisant l'histoire des temps héroïques, vous devez avoir remarqué que ces hommes dont on a fait des demi-dieux, étaient des chefs féroces et barbares, dignes à peine du nom d'homme, In reading the history of heroic times, you must have remarked that those men who have been made demi-gods were ferocious and barbarous chiefs, scarcely deserving the name of men.

EXERCISE.

1. I thought you were not ignorant that, to teach others the principles of an art or science, it is necessary to have experience and skill.

2. I have been told that your sweetest occupation was to form your taste, your heart, and your understanding.

3. Darius, in his flight, being* reduced to the necessity of drinking water muddy and infected by dead bodies, affirmed that he never had drunk with so much pleasure.

(1.) Were ignorant, ignorer—teach, instruire dans—it is necessary, avoir besoin—
 (2.) I have, &c. on m'a dit. [skill, habileté.

(3.) Flight, déroute—muddy, bourbeux—affirmed, assurer.

4. Care *has been taken* to inculcate in me, from infancy, that *I should succeed* in the world only in proportion as I should join to the desire of pleasing, a great deal of gentleness and civility.

5. Ovid *has said* that study *softens* the manners and *corrects* every thing that is found in us rude and barbarous.

6. You *know* that those pretended heroes whom pagan antiquity has made gods, *were* only barbarous and ferocious kings, who overran the earth, not so much to conquer as to ravage it, and who left every where traces of their fury and of their vices.

7. It *has been said* of Pericles that his eloquence was like a thunder-bolt, which nothing could resist.

8. As soon as Aristides *had said* that the proposal of Themistocles *was* unjust, the whole people *exclaimed* that they must not think of it any longer.

9. Had you read the history of the early ages, *you would know* that Egypt was the most enlightened country in the universe, and the original spot* whence knowledge *spread* into Greece and the neighboring countries.

(4.) Care *has*, &c. (active voice) on avoir—in me, me—in proportion, autant—

(5.) *Corrects*, effacer—is found, se trouver de. [civility, honnêteté.

(6.) Overran, parcourir—not so much, moins.

(7.) It, on—thunderbolt, foudre—to, which.

(8.) *Exclaimed*, s'écrier—they must, falloir H.—of it, y—any longer, plus.

(9.) *Ages*, temps—the original spot* whence, celui d'ou—neighboring, circonvoisin—countries, lieu.

Relations between the Tenses of the Subjunctive and those of the Indicative.

804. RULE I.—When the verb of the principal proposition is in the present or future, that of the subordinate proposition is put in the present of the subjunctive, to express a present or future, but in the preterit to express a past. We say,

Il faut que celui qui parle se mette à la portée de celui qui l'écoute, He that speaks should accommodate himself to the understanding of him that listens.

Il voudra que votre frère soit de la partie, He will wish your brother to be one of the party.

805. But we must say,

Pour s'être élevé à ce point de grandeur, il faut que Rome ait eu une suite non interrompue de grands hommes, To have risen to that pitch of grandeur, Rome must have had an uninterrupted succession of great men.

806. EXCEPTION.—Though the first verb be in the present or future, yet the second may be put in the imperfect, or pluperfect of the subjunctive, when some conditional expression is introduced into the sentence.

Il n'est point d'homme, quelque mérite qu'il ait, qui ne fût très-mortifié, s'il savait tout ce qu'on pense de lui, There is no man, whatever merit he may have, that would not feel very much mortified were he to know all that is thought of him,

- Où trouvera-t-on un homme qui ne fit la même faute, s'il était exposé aux mêmes tentations ? Where will you find the man who would not have committed the same error, had he been exposed to the same temptations ?
- Je doute que votre frère eût réussi sans votre assistance, I doubt whether your brother would have succeeded, had it not been for your assistance.

EXERCISE.

1. He who wishes to teach an art, must *know it* thoroughly ; he must give none but clear, precise, and well-digested notions of it : he must *instil* them, one by one, into the minds of his pupils ; and, above all, he must not overburden their memory with useless or unimportant rules.

2. He must *yield* to the force of truth when they *shall have suffered* it to appear in its real light.

3. There is no work, however perfect people may suppose it, that would not be liable to criticism, if it were examined with severity and in every point of view.

4. I doubt whether his piece would have had the approbation of *connaisseurs* if he had not determined to make in it the changes you judged necessary.

(1.) *It must*, (that he who, &c. know it)—*he must* (not repeated), *que—instil*, faire entrer—*by*, à—*overburden*, surcharger—*unimportant*, insignifiant.

(2.) (It must L. that he)—*yield*, se rendre—*suffered*, permettre—it to appear, (that it appear)—*real light*, vrai jour.

(3.) *Would be liable*, prêter S.—*with severity*, à la rigueur—in, sous—*point of view*, face.

(4.) *Approbation*, suffrage—*had determined*, se décider—in it, y—*judged*, G.

807. RULE II.—When the first verb is in the imperfect, either of the preterits, the pluperfect, or either of the conditionals, the second is put in the imperfect of the subjunctive, if we mean to express a present or future, but it is put in the pluperfect if we wish to express a past.

Je voulais, j'ai voulu, j'eus voulu, je voudrais, or

J'eusse voulu que vous finissiez cette affaire.

Je ne savais pas, je n'ai pas su, &c. que vous eussiez étudié les mathématiques.

808. REMARK.—With the preterit indefinite the second verb is put in the present if it expresses an action which is or may be done at all times ; as,

Dieu a entouré les yeux de tuniques fort minces, transparentes au dehors, afin qu'on puisse voir à travers, God has surrounded the eyes with very thin tunics, transparent on the outside, that we may see through them.

809. And in the preterit if we mean to express a past ; as,

Il a fallu qu'il ait sollicité ses juges, He must have been obliged to solicit his judges,

EXERCISE.

1. Mr. de Turenne never *would* buy any thing on credit from tradesmen, for fear, he used to say, they *should lose* a great part of their demand, if he happened to be killed. All the workmen who were employed about his house had orders to bring in their bills before he set out for the campaign, and they were regularly paid.

2. It *would be better* for a man who truly loves himself *to lose* his life than to forfeit his honor by some base and shameful action.

3. Lycurgus, in one of his laws, *had forbidden* to light home* those who came from a feast in the evening, that the fear of not being able to reach their houses might *prevent* them from getting intoxicated.

4. People *used* the bark of trees, or skins, to write upon* before paper was known.

5. Go and* ask that old man, "For whom are you planting?" he will answer you, "For the immortal gods, who *have ordered* both that I *should profit* by the labor of those who have preceded me, and that those who should come after me *should profit* by mine."

(1.) *Would*, vouloir H.—*buy on credit*, prendre à crédit—*of*, chez—*happened*, venir—*were employed*, travailler—*about*, pour—*bills*, mémoire—*he*, on—*set out for*, se mettre en.

(2.) *To lose*, (that he *would lose*)—*forfeit*, ternir.

(3.) *In*, par—*to light*, que on éclairer S.—*that*, afin que—*reach their houses*, se rendre chez eux—*getting intoxicated*, s'enivrer.

(4.) *People*, on—*bark*, écorce—*skins*, peau—*known*, en usage.

(5.) *Have ordered*, vouloir—*both*, et—*by*, de.

810. In interrogative and negative sentences, the second verb is generally put in the subjunctive; as,

Quel est l'insensé qui *tienne* pour sûr qu'il vivra demain?

Vous ne vous persuadiez pas que les choses *pussent* tourner si mal.

811. The verb is likewise in the subjunctive after the superlative relative, and frequently after an impersonal verb; as,

Le meilleur cortège qu'un prince *puisse* avoir, c'est le cœur de ses sujets.

812. The subjunctive is elegantly used in elliptical phrases, where the principal proposition is omitted; as

Qu'il vive! (*je souhaite qu'il*),

Qu'il se soit oublié jusqu'à ce point!

(*je suis surpris qu'il*),

Qui m'aime, me suive! (*je veux que celui qui*),

Heureux l'homme qui peut, ne fût-ce que dans sa vieillesse, jouir de toute la force de sa raison! (*quand ce ne serait que*),

May he live!

That he should have so far forgotten himself!

Whoever loves me, let him follow me!

Happy the man that can, were it only in his old age, enjoy the whole strength of his reason!

EXERCISE.

1. *Is there any one* who does not *feel* that nothing is more degrading in a writer than the pains he takes to express ordinary and common things in a singular and pompous style.

1.) *Is degrading in*, dégrader—in, de.

2. *Do you think* that, in forming the republic of bees, God *has not had* in view to teach kings to govern with gentleness and subjects to obey with love?

3. You *will never be* at peace, either with yourself or with others, unless you seriously endeavor to restrain your natural impetuosity.

(2.) *Had in view*, vouloir.

(3.) *Be at peace*, avoir la paix—either, ni—or, ni—endeavor, s'appliquer.

813. REMARK.—The relative pronouns *qui*, *que*, *quel*, *dont*, and *où*, govern the subjunctive in similar circumstances.

EXERCISE.

1. *Who is the writer* that does not sometimes *experience* moments of sterility and languor?

2. *There is not in* the heart of man a good impulse that God does not *produce*.

3. *Choose* a retreat where you *may be* quiet, a post whence you *may defend* yourself.

4. The most flattering reward that a man *can* reap from his labors, is the esteem of an enlightened public.

5. May he live, reign, and long constitute the happiness of a nation which he loves, and by which he is adored!

6. That he should thus degrade himself, is what posterity will find very difficult to believe.

7. A man just and firm is not shaken, either by the clamors of an inconsiderate mob, or by the threats of an imperious tyrant: though* the whole world *were* to fall into ruins, he would be struck by it, but not moved.

(2.) *Impulse*, mouvement.

(3.) *May*, pouvoir.

(5.) *May he*, (repeated before every verb)—constitute, faire—which he loves, chérir.

(6.) *Find difficult*, avoir de la peine—believe, se persuader.

(7.) *Is shaken*, ébranler—inconsiderate, insensé—mob, populace—imperious, fier—were, devoir—to fall into ruins, s'écrouler.

Further Observations upon the Conditional and Subjunctive.

814. We have said the English auxiliaries *should*, *would*, *could*, *may*, and *might*, are not always to be considered as essentially and necessarily appertaining to the conditional and subjunctive. Indeed, it seldom happens that the French tenses are the same as the English; at least, in subordinate, though they may be in the principal propositions. For instance,

I wish you would come to-night
cannot be translated by

Je souhaite que vous viendriez ce soir;

because “when the verb of the principal proposition is in the present, the verb of the subordinate proposition is put in the present of the subjunctive, if we mean to express a future.” Therefore we must say,

Je souhaite que vous veniez.

815. Or, "if the first verb is in either of the conditionals, the second must be in the imperfect of the subjunctive." For which reason we must also say,

Je voudrais que vous vinssiez. (See Rule II., page 245.)

816. Now, in the first example, *que vous veniez* is marked in the conjunction of the verb by, *that you may come*, and in the second—*que vous vinssiez*—by, *that you might come*, neither of which is in the examples given. Again,

Il n'y a personne qui le croie,

cannot be translated by, *there is nobody who may believe it*, although *may* is the sign of the subjunctive in the meaning; but the meaning is,

There is nobody that believes it; or, simply, nobody believes it.

Relations between the Tenses of the different Moods.

817. REMARK.—Our intention is not to give the relations which all the tenses bear to each other, but simply to mention some of the principal.

Relations of the Indicative.

818. To the imperfect are subjoined three tenses :

STANDARD.—*Je lisais* { *quand vous écriviez,*
 quand vous avez écrit,
 quand vous écrivîtes.

819. The preterit anterior requires the preterit definite ; as, *quand j'eus fini, vous entrâtes.*

820. To the pluperfect are subjoined the preterit definite, the preterit indefinite, the preterit anterior, and the imperfect.

STANDARDS.—*J'avais lu* { *quand vous entrâtes,*
 quand vous êtes entré,
 quand vous fûtes entré,
 quand vous entriez.

821. To the preterit anterior indefinite is subjoined the preterit indefinite ; as, *quand j'ai eu diné, vous êtes entré.*

822. In conjunction with *si*, for *supposé que*, the future absolute requires the present, and the future anterior the preterit indefinite.

STANDARD.— { *Vous partirez, si je veux.*
 Il sera parti, si vous l'avez voulu.

Relations to the Conditional and of the Conditional.

823. In conjunction with *si*, for *supposé que*, the conditional present is accompanied by the imperfect, and the first conditional past by the pluperfect or by the second conditional past.

STANDARDS.— $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Vous partiriez, si je le voulais.} \\ \text{Vous seriez parti } \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{si je l'avais voulu,} \\ \text{si je l'eusse voulu.} \end{array} \right. \end{array} \right.$

824. The tenses of the conditional present, and of the two conditionals past, are likewise accompanied by themselves.

STANDARDS.— $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Quand l'avare posséderait tout l'or du monde, il} \\ \text{ne serait pas encore content.} \\ \text{Quand Alexandre aurait conquis tout l'univers,} \\ \text{il n'aurait pas été content.} \\ \text{Vous fussiez parti, si je l'eusse voulu.} \end{array} \right.$

825. It has been observed that when two words are joined by the conjunction *que*, the second verb is put sometimes in the indicative and sometimes in the subjunctive. (See page 170 and following.)

Relations of the Present and Future Absolute, of the Indicative to the Tenses of their own Mood, and of the Conditional.

826. These two tenses may be accompanied by all the tenses of the indicative and conditional,

STANDARD.— $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{On dit,} \\ \text{On dira,} \end{array} \right\} \text{ que, } \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{vous partez aujourd'hui,} \\ \text{vous partirez demain,} \\ \text{vous serez parti, quand, \&c.} \\ \text{vous partiez hier,} \\ \text{vous partîtes hier,} \\ \text{vous êtes parti ce matin,} \\ \text{vous fûtes parti hier, quand, \&c.} \\ \text{vous étiez parti hier, quand, \&c.} \\ \text{vous partiriez aujourd'hui, si, \&c.} \\ \text{vous seriez parti hier, si, \&c.} \\ \text{vous fussiez parti plus tôt, si, \&c.} \end{array} \right.$

827. REMARK.—The same relation subsists when the sentence is negative; except that for the present absolute of the indicative, the present of the subjunctive is substituted. Instead of *on ne dit pas que vous partez aujourd'hui*; the genius of the French language requires that we should say, *on ne dit pas que vous partiez aujourd'hui*.

828. The imperfect, the preterit definite, the preterit indefinite, and the pluperfect, are accompanied either by the imperfect or by the pluperfect.

STANDARDS.— $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{On disait,} \\ \text{On dit hier,} \\ \text{On a dit,} \\ \text{On avait dit,} \end{array} \right\} \text{que, } \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{vous partiez aujourd'hui,} \\ \text{vous étiez parti.} \end{array} \right.$

829. The future anterior requires the preterit indefinite ; as, *on aura dit que vous avez menti.*

830. The conditional present may be accompanied by the present, the imperfect, the preterit indefinite, the pluperfect, the future of the indicative, as well as by the three conditionals.

STANDARDS.—*On croirait,* $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{qu'il se trompe,} \\ \text{qu'il se trompait,} \\ \text{qu'il s'est trompé,} \\ \text{qu'il s'était trompé,} \\ \text{qu'il se trompera,} \\ \text{qu'il se tromperait, si, \&c.} \\ \text{qu'il se serait trompé, si, \&c.} \\ \text{qu'il se fût trompé, si, \&c.} \end{array} \right.$

831. The first conditional past may be accompanied by the imperfect, the pluperfect, as well as the two other conditionals.

STANDARDS.—*On aurait cru,* $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{qu'il tombait,} \\ \text{qu'il était tombé,} \\ \text{qu'il serait tombé,} \\ \text{qu'il fût tombé.} \end{array} \right.$

832. The second conditional past may be accompanied by the same tenses.

Principal Relations with the Subjunctive.

834. To the present, the future absolute, and the future anterior of the indicative, is generally subjoined the present of the subjunctive.

STANDARD.— $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Il veut} \\ \text{Il voudra} \\ \text{Il aura voulu} \end{array} \right\} \text{que vous partiez.}$

834. To the imperfect, the preterit definite, the preterit indefinite, the pluperfect, and the preterit anterior, may be subjoined the imperfect of the subjunctive.

STANDARD.— $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Je voulais,} \\ \text{Je voulus,} \\ \text{J'ai voulu} \\ \text{J'avais voulu,} \\ \text{J'eus voulu,} \end{array} \right\} \text{que vous partissiez.}$

835. To the future anterior, the preterit of the subjunctive ; as, *Il aura voulu qu'il soit parti.*

836. The conditional present is accompanied either by the imperfect, or by the pluperfect of the subjunctive.

STANDARD.—{ Je voudrais que, } vous partissiez,
vous fussiez parti.

837. To the first and second conditionals past is subjoined the pluperfect of the subjunctive.

STANDARD.—{ *J'aurais voulu,*
J'eusse voulu, } *que vous fussiez parti.*

OF THE INFINITIVE.

838. The preposition *to* before an infinitive is, according to circumstances, rendered either by *pour*, by *à*, or by *de*; sometimes it is not even expressed at all.

839. When *to* means *in order to*, it is expressed in French by *pour*; as,

He came to speak to me,

Il vint pour me parler.

840. As for the other two cases, there is hardly any fixed rule to distinguish whether *à* or *de*, is to be used; the regimen which the preceding French verb requires after it is the only guide. Thus,

He likes to play, will be expressed by *il aime à jouer* ; *he told me to go*, by *il me dit d'aller* ; and *he preferred dying*, by *il aimait mieux mourir*.

841. The participle present is used in English both as a substantive and an adjective, and frequently instead of the present of the infinitive.

His ruling passion is hunting,

Sa passion *dominante* est la *chasse*.

He is gone a walking,

Il est allé se promener.

Prevent him from doing mischief,

Empêchez-le de faire le mal.

*There is a pleasure in silencing
great talkers,*

Il y a plaisir à fermer la bouche aux
grands parleurs.

842. It likewise takes almost every other preposition. In the first of the above examples, it is translated by the substantive; in the second, by the verbal adjective; and in the others by the present of the infinitive.

843. Sometimes the participle present must be expressed by the relative *qui*, with the verb in the indicative, especially when a different mode might create any ambiguity in the sense ; as,

I met them riding post,

Je les ai rencontrés qui couraient la poste.

844. Sometimes it must be expressed by the conjunction *que*, with the verb in the indicative or in the subjunctive, as

circumstances may require: this is when the participle present is preceded by a possessive pronoun; as,

The fear of his coming vexed us, La crainte qu'il ne vint nous tourmenter.
I doubt his being faithful, Je doute qu'il soit fidèle, &c. [tait.

845. It may be proper to observe that, in French, the preposition *en* alone is followed by the participle present. All other prepositions require the present of the infinitive.

846. Foreigners are apt to mistake the use of the participle present, because they do not consider that, as it expresses an incidental proposition, it must evidently relate to the word which it restrains and modifies.

847. RULE.—The participle present always forming a phrase incidental and subordinate to another, must necessarily relate to the subject of the principal phrase, when it is not preceded by another noun, as in this sentence:

Je ne puis vous accompagner à la campagne, ayant des affaires qui exigent ma présence, I cannot accompany you into the country, having some business that requires my presence here.

848. The participle present *ayant* relates to the subject *je*, since the subordinate proposition, formed by *ayant*, could have no kind of relation to the principal proposition, if it could not be resolved into this:—*Parce que j'ai des affaires qui,* &c. But in this sentence,

Combien voyons-nous de gens qui, connaissant le prix du temps, le perdent mal-à-propos! How many people do we see who, knowing the value of time, spend it improperly!

connaissant relates to the substantive *gens*, because this is the word which it restrains and modifies, and because the relative *qui*, placed between that substantive as the regimen and the participle present, obviates every kind of ambiguity.

849. REMARKS.—1. Two participles ought never to be used together without being united by a conjunction; as,

C'est un homme aimant et craignant Dieu, He is a man loving and fearing God.

850. The relative *en* ought never to be put either before a participle present or before a gerund. We cannot say,

Je vous ai remis mon fils entre les mains, en voulant faire quelque chose de bon,

because the sense would be ambiguous: for the meaning is not,

As I wish to do something good—or, as I wish to do well—I have put my son into your hands,

but,

I have put my son into your hands, as I wish to make something of him. We should say, *Voulant en faire, &c.*

851. Likewise this sentence would be improper :

Le prince tempère la rigueur du pouvoir, *en en* partageant les fonctions, on account of the repetition of the word *en*, used in two different senses, viz : as a preposition and a relative. Another turn must then be adopted ; as,

C'est *en* partageant les fonctions du pouvoir, qu'un prince *en* tempère la rigueur.

CHAPTER VII.

OF PREPOSITIONS.

852. THE office of prepositions is to bring the two terms between which they are placed into a state of relation, and that relation is generally expressed by their own signification ; as,

Avec, sur, pendant, dans, &c.

853. But *à*, *de*, and *en* express it, either by their primitive and proper meaning, or figuratively and by extension ; so that, in this last case, they are merely prepositions serving to unite the two terms ; whence it happens that they often express either the same relations that others do, or opposite relations. For instance, in these two sentences :

Approchez-vous du feu,
Eloignez-vous du feu,

Come near the fire.
Go from the fire.

854. *De* merely establishes a relation between the two terms, without expressing in the first the relation of approximation, or in the second the relation of distance. In order, therefore, to form a just idea of *these three* prepositions, it is of importance to consider only their primitive and proper signification.

855. *En* and *dans* have nearly the same meaning ; but they differ in this, that the former is used in a more vague, the latter in a more determinate sense ; as,

J'étais *en* Angleterre, *dans* la province de Middlesex.

856. From what has just been said, it follows, then, that *en*, on account of its indeterminate nature, ought not to be followed by the article, except in a small number of phrases sanctioned by usage ; such are,

En la présence de Dieu ; *en la* grand' chambre du parlement ; *en l'*absence d'un tel ; *en l'*année mil huit cent dix-sept, &c.

with respect to the expressions

En l'honneur, en l'âge, *it is better to say, à l'honneur, à l'âge.*

857. *Avant* is a preposition in this phrase :

Avant le jour, Before day-light,

but it is an adverb in this :

N'allez pas si avant, Do not go so forward.

858. Some other prepositions are likewise occasionally adverbs.

859. *Autour* and *alentour* must not be confounded ; *autour* is a preposition and *alentour* an adverb ; thus,

Tous les grands étaient autour du trône, All the grandees stood round the throne.

Le roi était sur son trône, et les grands étaient alentour, The king was upon the throne, and the grandees stood round.

860. *Avant* and *auparavant* are not used indifferently.

861. *Avant* is followed by a regimen ; as,

Avant Pâques, Before Easter.

Avant ce temps, Before that time.

862. *Auparavant* is followed by no regimen ; as,

Si vous partez, venez me voir auparavant, If you set off, come and see me first.

863. *Prêt à* and *près de* are not the same expressions.

Prêt is an adjective :

Je suis prêt à faire ce que vous voudrez, I am ready to do what you please.

864. But *près* is a preposition :

Mon ouvrage est près d'être fini, My work is nearly finished.

865. *Au travers* and *à travers* differ in this : the first is followed by the preposition *de*, the second is not ; as,

Il se fit jour au travers des ennemis, { He fought his way through the
Il se fit jour à travers les ennemis, { enemy.

866. *Avant* denotes priority of time and order ; as,

Il est arrivé avant moi, l'article se met avant le nom.

867. *Devant* is used for *en présence*, *vis-à-vis* ;

Il a paru devant le juge ; il loge devant l'église.

868. REMARK.—*Devant* is likewise a preposition marking order, and is the opposite of *après* ; as,

Il a le pas devant moi, He has precedence of me.

Si vous êtes pressé courez devant, If you are in a hurry, run before.

The use of the Article with Prepositions.

869. Some prepositions require the article before their regimen ; others do not ; and others again sometimes admit, sometimes reject it.

870. RULE I.—The following prepositions generally require the article before the noun which they govern :

avant,	depuis,	envers,	nonobstant,	selon,
après,	devant,	excepté,	parmi,	suivant,
chez,	derrière,	hors,	pendant,	touchant,
dans,	durant,	hormis,	pour,	vers.

avant l'aurore, chez le prince, envers les pauvres,
après la promenade, dans la maison, devant l'église, &c.

871. There are, however, exceptions ; as,

avant terme,	avant dîner,	pour lit une paillasse,
avant midi,	après dîner,	depuis minuit, &c.

872. RULE II.—A noun governed by the preposition *en* is not, in general, preceded by the article ; as,

En ville, en campagne, en extase, en songe, en pièces, &c.

873. REMARK.—*L'armée est entrée en campagne*, means, the army had taken the field ; but *Mr. N. est allé à la campagne*, means, Mr. N. is gone into the country.

874. RULE III.—These eleven prepositions—*à, de, avec, contre, entre, malgré, outre, par, pour, sur, sans*—sometimes admit, sometimes reject the article before their regimen.

875. The article is used in these phrases :

Jouer *sur* le velours,
St. Paul veut de la subordination *entre* la femme et le mari.
Sans les passions, où serait le mérite ?

876. It is suppressed in,

Etre *sur* pied ; un peu de façons ne gâte rien *entre* mari et femme.
Vivre *sans* passions, c'est vivre *sans* plaisirs et *sans* peines

Repetition of the Prepositions.

877. RULE I.—The prepositions *de, à, and en*, must be repeated before all the nouns which they govern ; as,

<i>Voyons qui l'emportera de vous, de lui, ou de moi,</i>	Let us see which of us will excel, you, he, or I.
<i>Elle a de l'honnêteté, de la douceur, des grâces, et de l'esprit,</i>	She has politeness, sweetness, grace, and abilities.
<i>La loi, que Dieu a gravée au fond de mon cœur, m'instruit de tout ce que je dois à l'auteur de mon être, au prochain, à moi-même,</i>	The law which God has deeply engraven on my heart, instructs me in every thing I owe to the author of my being, to my neighbor, and to myself.
<i>En Asie, en Europe, en Afrique, et jusqu'en Amérique, on trouve le même préjugé,</i>	In Asia, in Europe, in Africa, and even in America, we find the same prejudice.

878. RULE II.—The other prepositions, especially those consisting of two syllables, are generally repeated before

nouns which have meanings totally different; but seldom before nouns which are nearly synonymous:

Rien n'est moins selon Dieu et selon le monde, Nothing is less *according* to God and *according* to the world.

Cette action est contre l'honneur et contre toute espèce de principes, That action is *contrary* to honor and to every kind of principle.

879. But we ought to say,

Il perd sa jeunesse dans la mollesse et la volupté, He wastes his youth in effeminacy and pleasure.

Notre loi ne condamne personne sans l'avoir entendu et examiné, Our laws condemn nobody without having heard and examined him.

Of the Government of Prepositions

880. Some prepositions govern nouns without the help of another preposition; as,

Devant la maison,

Before the house.

Hormis son frère,

Except his brother.

Sans son épée,

Without his sword, &c.

881. Others require the help of the preposition *de*; as,

Près de la maison,

Near the house,

A l'insu de son frère,

Unknown to his brother.

Au-dessus du pont,

Above the bridge, &c.

882. These four—*jusque*, *par rapport*, *quant*, and *sauf*—are followed by the preposition *à*; as,

Jusqu'au mois prochain,

Till the next month.

Quant à moi,

As for me, &c.

883. Practice alone can teach these different regimens.

884. RULE.—A noun may be governed by two prepositions, provided they do not require different regimens; thus, we may say with propriety,

Celui qui écrit selon les circonstances, pour et contre un parti, est un homme bien méprisable, He who writes according to circumstances, both for and against a party, is a very contemptible man.

885. But it would be wrong to say,

Celui qui écrit en faveur et contre un parti, &c.

because *en faveur* requires the preposition *de*.

886. RULE.—Prepositions which, with their regimen, express a circumstance, are generally placed as nearly as possible to the word to which that circumstance relates; as,

On voit des personnes qui, avec beaucoup d'esprit, commettent de très-grandes fautes, We see persons who, with a great deal of wit, commit very great faults.

J'ai envoyé à la poste les lettres que vous avez écrites, I have sent to the post office the letters which you have written.
Croyez-vous pouvoir ramener par la douceur ces esprits égarés ? Do you think you can reclaim by gentleness those mistaken people ?

887. If we attempt to alter the place of these prepositions, we shall find that the sentences will become ambiguous.

CHAPTER VIII.

OF THE ADVERB ?

Of the Negative NE.

888. NEGATION is expressed in French by *ne*, either alone or accompanied by *pas* or *point*. On this point the Academy has examined the four following questions :

1. Where is the place of the negatives ? [versâ ?
2. When is *pas* to be used in preference to *point*, and vice
3. When *may* both be omitted ?
4. When *ought* both to be omitted ?

889. As this subject is of very material importance, we shall treat it upon the plan of the Academy, and agreeably to their views.

890. FIRST QUESTION.—Where is the place of the negatives ?

891. *Ne* is always prefixed to the verb ; but the place of *pas* and *point* is variable.

892. When the verb is in the infinitive, these are placed indifferently before or after it ; for we say,

Pour ne point voir, or, pour ne voir point.

893. In the other moods, except the imperative, the tenses are either simple or compound. In the simple tenses, *pas* or *point* is placed after the verb :

Il ne parle pas ; ne parle-t-il pas ?

894. In the compound tenses, it is placed between the auxiliary and the participle :

Il n'a pas parlé ; n'a-t-il pas parlé ?

895. In the imperative, it is placed after the verb :

Ne badinez pas. Ne vous en allez pas.

896. SECOND QUESTION.—When is *pas* to be used in preference to *point*, and vice versâ ?

897. *Point* is a stronger negative than *pas*; besides, it denotes something permanent: *Il ne lit point*, means, he never reads.

898. *Pas* denotes something accidental: *Il ne lit pas*, means, he does not read now, or he is not reading.

899. *Point de* denotes an absolute negation. Thus, *Il n'a point d'esprit*, is to say, he has no wit at all.

900. *Pas de* allows the liberty of a reserve. So, *Il n'a pas d'esprit*, is to say, he has nothing of what can be called wit.

901. Hence, the Academy concludes that *pas* is more proper,

902. 1.—Before *plus*, *moins*, *si*, *autant*, and other words denoting comparison; as,

Milton n'est pas moins sublime qu'Homère, Milton is not less sublime than Homer.

903. 2.—Before nouns of number; as,

Il n'y a pas dix ans, It is not ten years ago.

904. *Point* is elegantly used,

905. 1.—At the end of a sentence; as,

On s'amusait à ses dépens, et il ne s'en apercevait point, They were amusing themselves at his expense, and he did not perceive it.

906. 2.—In elliptical sentences; as,

Je croyais avoir affaire à un honnête homme; mais point, I thought I had to deal with an honest man; but no.

907. In answer to interrogative sentences; as,

Irez-vous ce soir au parc?—Point, Shall you go this evening to the park? —No.

908. The Academy also observes, that when *pas* or *point* is introduced into interrogative sentences, it is with meanings somewhat different. We make use of *point* when we have any doubt on our minds; as,

N'avez-vous point été là? Have you not been there?

909. But we use *pas* when we are persuaded. Thus,

N'avez-vous pas été là? But you have been there, have you not?

910. THIRD QUESTION.—When may both *pas* and *point* be omitted?

911. They may be suppressed,

912. 1.—After the words *cesser*, *oser*, and *pouvoir*; but this omission is only for the sake of elegance; as,

Je ne cesse de m'en occuper, I am incessantly attentive to it.
Je n'ose vous en parler, I dare not speak to you about it.
Je ne puis y penser sans frémir, I cannot think of it without shuddering.

913. We likewise say, but only in familiar conversation,

Né bougez,

Do not stir.

914. 2.—In expressions of this kind :

*Y a-t-il un homme dont elle ne
médisse ?*

Is there a man that she does not
slander ?

*Avez-vous un ami qui ne soit des
miens ?*

Have you a friend that is not like-
wise mine ?

915. FOURTH QUESTION.—When *ought* both *pas* and *point* to be omitted ?

916. They are omitted,

917. 1.—When the extent which we mean to give to the negative is sufficiently expressed, either by the words which restrict it, by words which exclude all restriction, or lastly, by such as denote the smaller parts of a whole, and which are without the article.

918. To exemplify the first part of this remark, we say,

Je ne sors guère,

I go out but seldom.

Je ne sortirai de trois jours,

I shall not go out for three days.

919. To exemplify the second, we say,

Je n'y vais jamais,

I never go there.

Je n'y pense plus,

I think no more of it.

*Nul ne sait s'il est digne d'amour,
ou de haine,*

Nobody knows whether he be de-
serving of love or hatred.

N'employez aucun de ces strata-

Use none of these stratagems.

Il ne plaît à personne, [gêmes,

He pleases nobody.

Rien n'est plus charmant,

Nothing is more charming.

Je n'y pense nullement,

I do not think of it at all.

920. To exemplify the third, we say,

Il n'y voit goutte,

He cannot see at all.

Je n'en ai cueilli brin,

I did not gather a sprig.

Il ne dit mot,

He speaks not a word.

921. But if to *mot* we join an adjective of number, *pas* must be added ; as,

*Il ne dit pas un mot qui n'inté-
resse,*

He speaks not a word but what is
interesting.

*Dans ce discours, il n'y a pas trois
mots à reprendre,*

In that speech, there are not three
words that are exceptionable.

922. *Pas* is likewise used with the preposition *de* ; as,

Il ne fait pas de démarche inutile,

He does not take any useless step.

923. REMARK.—If, after the sentences we have just mentioned, either the conjunction *que* or the relative pronouns

qui or *dont* should introduce a negative sentence, then in this last, *pas* and *point* are omitted ; as,

Je ne fais jamais d'excès, que je n'en sois incommodé, I never commit any excess without being ill after it.

Je ne vois personne qui ne vous loue, I see nobody but what commends you.

924. 2.—When two negatives are joined by *ni* ; as,

Je ne l'aime ni ne l'estime, I neither love nor esteem him.

925. And when the conjunction *ni* is repeated, either in the subject, as,

Ni l'or ni la grandeur ne nous rendent heureux, Neither gold nor greatness can make us happy,

926. Or, in the attribute ; as,

Il n'est ni prudent ni sage, He is neither prudent nor wise,

927. Or, in the regimen ; as,

Il n'a ni dettes ni procès, He has neither debts nor law-suits.

928. REMARK.—*Pas* is preserved when *ni* is not repeated, and when this last serves only to unite two members of a negative sentence ; as,

Je n'aime pas ce vain étalage d'érudition, prodiguée sans choix et sans goût, ni ce luxe de mots qui ne disent rien, I do not like that vain display of erudition, lavished without choice and without taste, nor that pomp of words which have no meaning.

929. 3.—With the verb which follows *que*, used instead of *pourquoi*, and with *à moins que*, or *si*, used instead of it ; as,

Que n'êtes-vous aussi posé que votre frère ? Why are you not as sedate as your brother ?

Je ne sortirai pas, à moins que vous ne veniez me prendre, I shall not go out, unless you come to fetch me.

Je n'irai pas chez lui, s'il ne m'y engage, I shall not go to his house, if he does not invite me.

930. 4.—With *ne—que*, used instead of *seulement* ; as,

Une jeunesse, qui se livre à ses passions, ne transmet à la vieillesse qu'un corps usé, Youth which abandons itself to its passions, transmits to old age nothing but a worn-out body.

931. When before the conjunction *que*, the word *rien* is understood ; as,

Il ne fait que rire, He does nothing but laugh.

932. Or when that conjunction may be changed into *sinon* or *si ce n'est* ; as,

Il ne tient qu'à vous de réussir, Trop de maîtres à la fois ne servent qu'à embrouiller l'esprit, The success wholly depends upon you. Too many masters at once only serve to perplex the mind.

933. 5.—With a verb in the preterit, preceded by the

conjunction *depuis que* or by the verb *il y a*, denoting a certain duration of time ; as,

Comment vous êtes-vous porté depuis que je ne vous ai vu ? How have you been since I saw you ?

Il y a trois mois que je ne vous ai vu, I have not seen you for these three months.

934. But they are not omitted when the verb is in the present ; as,

Comment vit-il depuis que nous ne le voyons point ? How does he live, now we do not see him ?

Il y a six mois que nous ne le voyons point, We have not seen him these six months.

935. 6.—In phrases where the conjunction *que* is preceded by the adverbs of comparison *plus*, *moins*, *mieux*, &c., or some other equivalent term ; as,

On méprise ceux qui parlent autrement qu'ils ne pensent, We despise those who speak differently from what they think.

Il écrit mieux qu'il ne parle, He writes better than he speaks.

C'est pire qu'on ne le disait, It is worse than was said.

C'est autre chose que je ne croyais, It is different from what I thought.

Peu s'en faut qu'on ne m'ait trompé, I have been very near being deceived.

936. 7.—In sentences united by the conjunction *que* to the verbs *douter*, *désespérer*, *nier*, and *disconvenir*, forming a negative member of a sentence ; as,

Je ne doute pas qu'il ne vienne, I doubt not that he will come.

Ne désespérez pas que ce moyen ne vous réussisse, Do not despair of the success of these means.

Je ne nie pas, or je ne disconviens pas que cela ne soit, I do not deny that it is so.

937. The Academy says, that after the last two verbs, *ne* may be omitted ; as,

Je ne nie pas, or je ne disconviens pas que cela soit.

938. 8.—With a verb united by the conjunction *que* to the verbs *empêcher* and *prendre garde*, meaning to take care ; as,

J'empêcherai bien que vous ne soyez du nombre, I shall prevent your being of the number.

Prenez garde qu'on ne vous séduise, Take care that they do not corrupt you.

939. REMARK.—The Academy observes, that in the above acceptation, *prendre garde* is followed by a subjunctive ; but when it means to *reflect*, the indicative is used with *pas* or *point* ; as,

Prenez garde que vous ne m'entendez pas, Mind, you do not understand what I mean.

940. 9.—With a verb united by the conjunction *que* to the

verb *craindre*, and those of the same meaning, when we do not wish the thing expressed by the second verb ; as,

Il craint que son frère ne l'abandonne, He is afraid his brother should forsake him.

Je crains que mon ami ne meure, I fear my friend will die.

941. But *pas* is not omitted when we wish the thing expressed by the second verb ; as,

Je crains que mon père n'arrive pas, I am afraid my father will not come.

942. 10.—With the verb which follows *de peur que, de crainte que*, in similar circumstances with *craindre*. Thus, when we say,

De crainte qu'il ne perde son procès,

we wish that he may gain it ; and when we say,

De crainte qu'il ne soit pas puni,

we wish that he may be punished.

943. REMARK.—In these phrases,

Je crains que mon ami ne meure, I am afraid my friend will die,

Vous empêchez qu'on ne chante, You prevent them from singing,

the expression *ne* is not a negation ; it is the *ne* or *quin* of the Latins, introduced into the French language, as may be seen by the English translation.

944. 11.—After *savoir*, whenever it has the meaning of *pouvoir* ; as,

Je ne saurais en venir à bout, I cannot accomplish it.

945. When it means *être incertain*, it is the best to omit *pas* and *point* ; as,

Je ne sais où le prendre, I do not know where to find him.

Il ne sait ce qu'il dit, He does not know what he says.

946. REMARK.—But *pas* and *point* must be used when *savoir* is taken in its true meaning ; as,

Je ne sais pas le français, I do not know French.

947. 12.—We also say,

Ne vous déplaît, ne vous en déplaît, By your leave, under favor, or let it not displease you.

948. *Plus* and *davantage* must not be used indifferently.

949. *Plus* is followed by the preposition *de* or the conjunction *que* ; as,

Il a plus de brillant que de solide, He has more brilliancy than solidity.

Il se fie plus à ses lumières qu'à celles des autres, He relies more upon his own knowledge than upon that of others.

950. *Davantage* is used alone and at the end of sentences ; as,

La science est estimable, mais la vertu l'est davantage, Learning is estimable, but virtue is still more so.

951. Though *davantage* cannot be followed by the preposition *de*, it may be preceded by the pronoun *en*; as,

Je n'en dirai pas davantage, I shall not say any more about it.

952. It is incorrect to use *davantage* for *le plus*. We must say,

De toutes les fleurs d'un parterre, Of all the flowers of a parterre, the
l'anémone est celle qui me plaît anemone is that which pleases me
le plus, most.

953. *Si*, *aussi*, *tant*, and *autant*, are always followed by the conjunction *que*, expressed or understood.

954. *Si* and *aussi* are joined to adjectives, adverbs, and participles; *tant* and *autant* to substantives and verbs.

L'Angleterre n'est pas si grande England is not so large as
que la France, France. [beloved.]

Il est aussi estimé qu'aimé, He is as much esteemed as he is

Elle a autant de beauté que de vertu, She has as much beauty as virtue.

955. REMARK.—*Autant* may, however, be substituted for *aussi*, when it is preceded by one adjective and followed by *que* and another adjective; as,

Il est modeste autant que sage, He is as modest as wise.

956. *Aussi* and *autant* are used in the affirmative; *si* and *tant* in negative and interrogative sentences. The two last are, however, alone to be used in affirmative sentences, when they are put for *tellement*; as,

Il est devenu si gros, qu'il a de la He is become so bulky that he can
peine à marcher, hardly walk.

Il a tant couru qu'il en est hors He has been running so fast that
d'haleine, he is out of breath.

957. *Jamais* takes sometimes the preposition *à*, and *toujours* the preposition *pour*; as,

Soyez à jamais heureux, Be for ever happy.
C'est pour toujours, It is for ever.

CHAPTER IX.

OF GRAMMATICAL CONSTRUCTION.

958. GRAMMATICAL construction is the order which the genius of a language has assigned, in speech, to the different sorts of words into which it is distinguished. Construction is sometimes mistaken for syntax; but there is this difference, the latter consists in the rules which we are to observe, in order to express the relations of words one to another, whereas

grammatical construction consists in the various arrangements which are allowed while we observe the rules of syntax. Now, this arrangement is irrevocably fixed, not only as phrases may be interrogative, imperative, or expositive, but also as each of these kinds may be affirmative or negative.

959. In sentences simply interrogative, the subject is either a noun or pronoun.

960. If the subject be a noun, the following is the order to be observed: first, the noun, then the verb, then the corresponding personal pronoun, the adverb, if any, and the regimen in the simple tenses: in the compound tenses, the pronoun and the adverb are placed between the auxiliary and the participle:

Les lumières sont-elles un bien pour les peuples ? ont-elles jamais contribué à leur bonheur ? Are sciences an advantage to nations ? Have they ever contributed to their happiness ?

961. If the subject be a pronoun, the verb begins the series, and the other words follow in the order already pointed out; as,

Vous plairez-vous toujours à médire ? Will you always take pleasure in slandering ?

Aurez-vous bientôt fini ? Shall you soon have done ?

962. N. B.—When the verb is reflected, the pronoun forming the regimen begins the series: this pronoun always preserves its place before the verb, except in sentences simply imperative.

963. In interrogative sentences, with negation, the same order is observed; but *ne* is placed before the verb, and *pas* or *point* after the verb in the simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle in the compound tenses; as,

Votre frère ne viendra-t-il pas demain ? Will not your brother come to-morrow ?

N'aurez-vous pas bientôt fini ? Shall you not have soon done ?

964. REMARK.—There are in French several other ways of interrogating.

965. 1.—With an absolute pronoun; as,

Qui vous a dit cela ? or *Qui est-ce qui vous a dit cela ?* } Who told you that ?

966. 2.—With the demonstrative pronoun *ce*; as,
Est-ce vous ? Is it you ? *Est-ce qu'il pleut ?* Does it rain ?

967. With an interrogative adverb; as,
Pourquoi ne vient-il pas ? Why does he not come ?
Comment vous trouvez-vous ? How do you find yourself ?

968. Hence we see that the absolute pronouns and the interrogative adverbs always begin the sentence: but the demonstrative pronoun always follows the verb.

969. In sentences simply imperative, the verb is always placed first, in the first and second persons; but in the third, it comes after the conjunction *que* and the noun or pronoun; as,

<i>Allons là,</i>	Let us go there.
<i>Venez ici,</i>	Come here.
<i>Qu'ils y aillent,</i>	Let them go there.
<i>Que Pierre aille à Londres,</i>	Let Peter go to London.

970. With negation, *ne* and *pas* are placed as in interrogative sentences.

971. For the place of the pronouns, see page 131.

972. Sentences are expositive, when we speak without either interrogating or commanding. The following is the order of the words in those which are affirmative: the subject, the verb, the adverb, the participle, the regimen; as,

<i>Un bon prince mérite l'amour de ses sujets, et l'estime de tous les peuples,</i>	A good prince deserves the love of his subjects, and the esteem of all nations.
<i>César eût inutilement passé le Rubicon, s'il y eût eu de son temps des Fabius,</i>	Cæsar would have crossed the Rubicon to no purpose had there been Fabii in his time.

973. The negative sentences differ from this construction only as *ne* is always placed before the verb, and *pas* or *point* either after the verb, or between the auxiliary and the participle; as,

<i>Un homme riche ne fait pas toujours le bien qu'il pourrait,</i>	A rich man does not always do all the good he might.
<i>Cicéron n'eût peut-être pas été un si grand orateur, si le désir de s'élever aux premières dignités n'eût enflammé son ame,</i>	Cicero would not perhaps have been so great an orator, had not the desire of rising to the first dignities inflamed his soul.

974. Sentences are either simple or compound. They are simple when they contain only one subject and one attribute; as,

<i>Vous lisez,</i>	You read.	<i>Vous êtes jeune,</i>	You are young.
--------------------	-----------	-------------------------	----------------

975. They are compound when they associate several subjects with one attribute, or several attributes with one subject, or several attributes with several subjects, or several subjects with several attributes.

976. This sentence, *Pierre et Paul sont heureux*, is compound by having several subjects; this—*cette femme est jolie, spirituelle et sensible*—is compound by having several attributes; and this—*Pierre et Paul sont spirituels et savans*—is composed at once of several subjects and several attributes.

977. A sentence may be compound in various other ways; by the subject, by the verb, or by the attribute.

978. By the subject, when this is restricted by an incidental proposition ; as,

Dieu, qui est bon.

979. By the verb, when it is modified by some circumstance of time, order, &c. ; as,

Dieu, qui est bon, n'abandonne jamais.

980. By the attribute, when this attribute is modified by a regimen which is itself restricted ; as,

Dieu, qui est bon, n'abandonne jamais les hommes, qui mettent sincèrement leur confiance en lui.

981. These simple or compound sentences may be joined to others by a conjunction ; as,

Quand on aime l'étude, le temps When we love study, time flies without our perceiving it.
passe sans qu'on s'en aperçoive,

The two partial phrases here form but one.

982. RULE.—When a sentence is composed of two partial phrases, joined by a conjunction, harmony and perspicuity generally require the shortest to go first.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Quand les passions nous quittent</i>	When our passions leave us, we
<i>nous nous flattons en vain, que</i>	in vain flatter ourselves that it
<i>c'est nous qui les quittons,</i>	is we that leave them.
<i>On n'est point à plaindre, quand,</i>	He is not to be pitied who, for
<i>au défaut de plaisirs réels, on</i>	want of real pleasure, finds
<i>trouve le moyen de s'occuper de</i>	means to amuse himself with
<i>chimères,</i>	chimeras.

983. Periods result from the union of several partial phrases, the whole of which make a complete sense. Periods, to be clear, require the shortest phrases to be placed first. The following example of this is taken from Fléchier :

N'attendez pas, Messieurs.

1. Que j'ouvre une scène tragique ;
2. Que je représente ce grand homme étendu sur ses propres trophées ;
3. Que je decouvre ce corps pâle et sanglant, auprès duquel fume encore la foudre qui l'a frappé ;
4. Que je fasse crier son sang comme celui d'Abel, et que j'expose à vos yeux les images de la religion et de la patrie éplorée.

984. This admirable period is composed of four members, which go on gradually increasing. It is a rule not to give more than four members to a period, and to avoid multiplying incidental sentences.

985. Obscurity in style is generally owing to those small phrases which divert the attention from the principal sentences, and make us lose sight of them

986. The construction which we have mentioned is called direct or regular, because the words are placed in those sentences according to the order which has been pointed out. But this order may be altered in certain cases, and then the construction is called indirect or irregular. Now, it may be irregular by *inversion*, by *ellipsis*, by *pleonasm*, or by *syllipsis*; these are what are called the four figures of words.

Of Inversion.

987. *Inversion* is the transposition of a word into a place different from that which by usage is properly assigned to it. This ought never to be done except when it introduces more perspicuity, energy, or harmony into the language; for it is a defect in construction whenever the relation subsisting between words is not easily perceived.

988. There are two kinds of inversion: the one, by its boldness, seems to be confined to poetry; the other is frequently employed even in prose.

989. We shall speak here of the latter kind only.

990. The following inversions are authorized by custom.

991. The subject by which a verb is governed may with propriety be placed after it; as,

<i>Tout ce que lui promet l'amitié des Romains,</i>	All that the friendship of the Romans promises him.
---	--

992. REMARK.—This inversion is a rule of the art of speaking and writing whenever the subject is modified by an incidental sentence, long enough to make us lose sight of the relation of the verb governed to the subject governing.

993. The noun governed by the prepositions *de* and *à* may likewise be very properly placed before the verb; as,

<i>D'une voix entrecoupée de sanglots, ils s'écrièrent,</i>	In a voice interrupted by sobs, they exclaimed.
<i>A tant d'injures, qu'a-t-elle ré- pondu ?</i>	To so much abuse, what answer did she give ?

994. The verb is likewise elegantly preceded by the prepositions *après*, *dans*, *par*, *sous*, *contre*, &c. with their dependencies, as well as by the conjunctions *si*, *quand*, *parce que*, *puisque*, *quoique*, *lorsque*, &c.; as,

<i>Par la loi du corps, je tiens à ce monde qui passe,</i>	By the law of the body, I am con- nected with this passing world.
<i>Puisqu'il le veut, qu'il le fasse,</i>	Since he wishes it, let him do it.

Of the Ellipsis.

995. *Ellipsis* is the omission of a word, or even several words, which are necessary to make the construction full and complete. In order to form a good ellipsis, the mind must be able easily to supply the words omitted; as,

J'accepterais les offres de Darius, I would accept the offers of Darius,
si j'étais Alexandre :—et moi if I were Alexander :—and so
aussi, si j'étais Parmenion, would I, if I were Parmenio.

Here the mind easily supplies the words *je les accepterais* in the second number.

996. The ellipsis is very common in answers to interrogative sentences; as,

Quand viendrez-vous ?—Demain, When will you come?—To-morrow.
 —that is, *je viendrai demain.*

997. In order to know whether an ellipsis be good, the words that are understood must be supplied. It is correct whenever the construction completely expresses the sense denoted by the words which are supplied: otherwise, it is not exact.

Of the Pleonasm.

998. *Pleonasm*, in general, is a superfluity of words; in order to constitute this figure good, it must be sanctioned by custom, which never authorizes its use but to give greater energy to language, or to express, in a clearer manner, the internal feeling with which we are affected.

Et que m'a fait à moi cette Troie où je cours !

Je me meurs. S'il ne veut pas vous le dire, je vous le dirai, *moi.*

Je l'ai vu de mes propres yeux.

Je l'ai entendu de mes propres oreilles.

—*A moi*, in the first sentence; *me*, in the second; *moi*, in the third; *de mes propres yeux*, in the fourth; and *de mes propres oreilles*, in the fifth, are employed merely for the sake of energy, or to manifest an internal feeling. But this manner of speaking is sanctioned by custom.

999. REMARK.—Expletives must not be mistaken for pleonasms; as,

C'est une affaire, où il y va du It is an affair in which the safety of
salut de l'état, the state is concerned,

which is better than *c'est une affaire, où il va*, &c. by omitting *y*, which is in reality useless on account of *où*: but *y* here, is a mode of expression from which it is not allowable to deviate

Of the Syllepsis.

1000. The syllepsis is a figure by which a word relates more to our meaning than to the literal expressions ; as in these :

Il est onze heures ; l'an mil sept cent quatre-vingt-dix-neuf.

1001. When using it, the mind, merely intent upon a precise meaning, pays no attention to either the number or the gender of *heures* and *an*.

1002. There is likewise a syllepsis in these sentences :

Je crains qu'il ne vienne.
J'empêcherai qu'il ne vous nuise.
J'ai peur qu'il ne m'oublie, &c.

1003. Full of a wish that the event may not take place, we are willing to do all we can that nothing should present an obstacle to that wish. This is the cause of the introduction of the negative, which, although unnecessary to complete the sense, yet must be preserved for the idiom.

1004. There is again a very elegant syllepsis in sentences like the following from Racine :

Entre le *peuple* et vous, vous prendrez Dieu pour juge ;
Vous souvenant, mon fils, que caché sous ce lin,
Comme *eux* vous fûtes pauvre, et comme *eux*, orphelin.

1005. The poet forgets that he has been using the word *peuple* : nothing remains in his mind but *des pauvres* and *des orphelins*, and it is with that idea of which he is so fully impressed that he makes the pronoun *eux* agree. For the same reason, Bossuet and Mézengui have said,

Quand le *peuple Hébreu* entra dans la terre promise, tout y célébrait *leurs* ancêtres.—BOSSUET.

Moïse eut recours au Seigneur, et lui dit : que ferai-je à ce *peuple* ? bientôt *ils* me lapideront.—MEZENGUI.

1006. *Leurs* and *ils* stand for *les Hébreux*.

CHAPTER X.

OF GRAMMATICAL DISCORDANCES, AMPHIBOLOGIES, AND GALLICISMS.

1007. WE have chiefly to notice two incorrect modes of construction, which are contrary to the principles laid down in the preceding chapters—grammatical discordances and amphibologies.

OF DISCORDANCES.

1008. In general, there is a discordance in language when the words which compose the various members of a sentence or period do not agree with each other, either because their construction is contrary to analogy, or because they bring together dissimilar ideas, between which the mind perceives an opposition, or can see no manner of affinity.

1009. The following examples will serve to illustrate this :

Notre réputation ne dépend pas des louanges qu'on nous donne, mais des actions louables que nous faisons.

1010. This sentence is not correct, because the first member being negative, and the second affirmative, cannot come under the government of the same verb. It ought to be,

<i>Notre réputation dépend, non des louanges qu'on nous donne, mais des actions louables que, &c.</i>	Our reputation depends, not upon the praises which are bestowed on us, but upon the praiseworthy actions which we perform.
---	--

1011. But the most common discordances are those which arise from the wrong use of tenses ; as in this sentence :

Il regarde votre malheur comme une punition du peu de complaisance que *vous avez eue* pour lui, dans le temps qu'il vous *pria*, &c. ;

because the two preterits, definite and indefinite, cannot well agree together ; it should be,

Que vous eûtes pour lui dans le temps qu'il vous pria.

1012. There is discordance in this sentence :

On en ressentit autant de joie que d'une victoire complète dans un autre temps ;

because the verb cannot be understood after the *que* which serves for the comparison when the verb is to be in a different tense : it should be,

On en ressentit autant de joie qu'on en aurait ressenti, &c.

1013. This line of Racine,

Le flot, qui l'apporta, recule épouvanté,

is also incorrect, because the form of the present cannot associate with that of the preterit definite : it should have been, *qui l'a apporté*.

OF AMPHIBOLOGIES.

1014. Amphibology in language is when a sentence is so constructed as to be susceptible of two different interpretations : this must be carefully avoided. As we speak only to be un-

derstood, perspicuity is the first and most essential quality of language ; we should always recollect that *what is not clearly expressed in any language, is no language at all.*

1015. Amphibologies are occasioned, 1.—By the misuse of moods and tenses. 2.—Of the personal pronouns *il, le, la, &c.* 3.—Of the possessive pronouns *son, sa, ses, &c.* 4.—By giving a wrong place to nouns.

Of an Amphibology of the first kind.

Qu'ai-je fait, *pour venir* accabler en ces lieux
Un héros, sur qui seul j'ai pu tourner les yeux ?—RACINE.

1016. *Pour venir* forms an amphibology, because we do not know whether it relates to the person who speaks or to the person spoken to : it should have been, *Pour que vous veniez.*

Of an Amphibology of the second kind.

César voulut premièrement surpasser Pompée ; les grandes richesses de Crassus *lui* firent croire, qu'*il* pourrait partager la gloire de ces deux grands hommes.

1017. This sentence is faulty in its construction, because the pronouns *il* and *lui* seem to relate to *César*, although the sense obliges us to refer them to *Crassus*.

Of an Amphibology of the third kind.

Valère alla chez Léandre ; il y trouva *son* fils.

1018. The pronoun *son* is ambiguous, because we do not know to which it relates, to *Valère* or to *Léandre*.

Of an Amphibology of the fourth kind.

J'ai envoyé les lettres, que j'ai écrites, à la poste.

1019. *À la poste*, thus placed, is equivocal, because we do not know whether it is meant that the letters have been *written* at the post office or *sent to* the post office.

OF GALLICISMS.

1020. We have distinguished in our “Grammaire Philosophique et Littéraire,” four sorts of gallicisms : we shall only mention here those of construction.

1021. The gallicisms of construction are in general irregularities and deviations from the customary rules of syntax :

there are some, however, which are mere ellipses, and others which can only be attributed to the caprice of custom.

1022. GENERAL PRINCIPLE.—Every gallicism of construction which obscures the meaning of the sentence, ought to be condemned. Those only ought to be preserved which do not impair perspicuity by introducing irregularity of construction, and which are at the same time sanctioned by long practice.

1023. According to this principle, this elliptic gallicism is now rejected :

Et qu'ainsi ne soit ; *meaning*, ce que je vous dis est si vrai que, because it obscures the sentence. For instance,

J'étais dans ce jardin, *et qu'ainsi ne soit*, voilà une fleur que j'y ai cueillie ; *that is*, Et pour preuve de cela, voilà une fleur, &c.

Molière and La Fontaine seem to have been the last great writers that have used this expression.

1024. One of the most common gallicisms is that in which the impersonal verb *il y a* is used for *il est*, *il existe*. These expressions,

Il y avait une fois un roi ; il y a cent à parier contre un, are gallicisms. There are two in the following sentence :

Il n'y a pas jusqu'aux enfans, qui ne s'en mêlent, Even children will meddle with it.

1025. The verb *falloir* forms a sort of gallicism with the pronoun *en* when it is conjugated like pronominal verbs with the double pronouns *il se* ; as,

Il s'en faut, il s'en fallait, &c.

It then means, *to be wanting* ; and when preceded by an adverb of quantity, the first pronoun is omitted ; as,

Peu s'en faut, tant s'en faut.

1026. These several manners of using the verb *falloir* will be found in the following sentences :

EXAMPLES.

<i>Il s'en faut bien qu'il soit aussi habile qu'il croit l'être,</i>	He is far from being so clever as he thinks.
<i>Peu s'en est fallu qu'il n'ait succombé dans cette entreprise,</i>	He was very near failing in that undertaking.
<i>Il ne s'en est presque rien fallu qu'il n'ait été tué,</i>	He was as near as possible being killed.
<i>Vous dites qu'il s'en faut vingt livres que la somme entière n'y soit, mais vous vous trompez, il ne peut pas s'en falloir tant,</i>	You say it wants twenty pounds to complete the sum, but you are mistaken, it cannot want so much.

<i>Son rhume est entièrement guéri,</i>	His cold is entirely well, or very
<i>ou peu s'en faut,</i>	nearly so.
<i>Que s'en est-il fallu que ces deux</i>	How near were these two friends
<i>amis ne se soient brouillés ?</i>	quarrelling ?
<i>Je ne suis pas content de votre ap-</i>	I am not satisfied with your appli-
<i>plication à l'étude, tant s'en faut,</i>	cation to study, far from it.
<i>Tant s'en faut que cette comédie</i>	So far from this play pleasing me,
<i>me plaise, elle me semble au con-</i>	I think it insufferable.
<i>traire détestable,</i>	
<i>Il s'en fallait beaucoup que je vous</i>	I was far from approving your
<i>approuvasse dans cette circon-</i>	conduct on that occasion.
<i>stance,</i>	

1027. The sentences,

<i>Il n'est rien moins que généreux,</i>	He is far from being generous,
<i>Vous avez beau dire,</i>	You may say what you please, but,
	&c.
<i>A ce qu'il me semble,</i>	By what I can see. As the matter
	appears to me, &c.
<i>Nous voilà à nous lamenter,</i>	We began to lament. Here we are
	lamenting, crying, &c.
<i>Qu'est-ce que de nous,</i>	What wretched beings we are ! &c.
are also gallicisms.	

1028. The use which is made of the preposition *en*, in many sentences is likewise another source of gallicisms ; some of this kind will be found in the following expressions :

<i>A qui en avez-vous ?</i>	Whom are you angry with ?
<i>Où en veut-il venir ?</i>	What does he aim at ? What would
	he be at ?
<i>Il lui en veut,</i>	He has a quarrel with him, &c.

1029. The preposition *en* changes also sometimes the signification of verbs, and then gives rise to gallicisms.

1030. The conjunction *que* produces also a great number of gallicisms ; as,

<i>C'est une terrible passion que le jeu,</i>	Gaming is a terrible passion.
<i>C'est donc en vain que je travaille,</i>	It is in vain then that I work.
<i>Ce n'est pas trop que cela,</i>	That is not too much.
<i>Il n'est que d'avoir du courage,</i>	There is nothing like having cou-
	rage.

1031. Many others will be found in the use which is made of the prepositions *à*, *de*, *dans*, *après*, &c. ; but enough has been said on the subject

1032. Gallicisms are of very great use in the simple style ; therefore La Fontaine and Madame de Sévigné abound in them. The middling style has not so many, and the solemn oratorical but few, and these even of a peculiar nature. Only

two examples of this kind, both taken from the tragedy of *Iphigenia*, by Racine, will be here inserted.

Avez-vous pu penser qu'au sang d'Agamemnon
Achille préférât une fille sans nom,
Qui de tout son destin ce qu'elle a pu comprendre.
C'est qu'elle sort d'un sang, &c.

And,

Je ne sais qui m'arrête et retient mon courroux,
Que par un prompt avis de tout ce qui se passe.
Je ne coure des dieux divulguer la menace.

1033. In the first instance, *qui* is the subject, though without relating to any verb; and in the second, *je ne sais qui m'arrête que je ne coure*, is contrary to the rules of common construction. "But," says Vaugelas, "these extraordinary phrases, far from being vicious, possess the more beauty, as they belong to a particular kind of language."

FREE EXERCISES.

MADAME DE MAINTENON TO HER BROTHER.

¹WE can only be unhappy by our own fault; this shall always be my text, and my reply to your lamentations. ²Recollect, my dear brother, the voyage to America, ³the misfortunes of our father, of our infancy and our youth; and you will bless Providence instead of murmuring against fortune. Ten years ago we were both very far ⁴(below our present situation); and our hopes were ⁵so feeble that we limited our wishes to an ⁶(income of three thousand livres). At present we have four times ⁷that sum, and our desires are not yet satisfied! we enjoy the happy mediocrity which you ⁸have so often extolled; let us be content. If ⁹possessions come to us, let us receive them from the hand of God, but ¹⁰let not our views be ¹¹too extravagant. We have ¹²(every thing necessary) and ¹³comfortable; all the rest is ¹⁴avarice; all these desires of greatness ¹⁵spring from a restless heart. Your debts are all paid, and you may live ¹⁶elegantly without ¹⁷contracting more. What have you to desire? ¹⁸must ¹⁹schemes of wealth and ambition ²⁰occasion the loss of your repose and your health? Read the Life of St. Louis: you will see how ²¹unequal the greatness of this world is to the desires of the human heart; God only can ²²satisfy them. I repeat it, you are only unhappy by your own fault. Your ²³uneasiness destroys your health, which you ought to preserve ²⁴if it were only because I love you. ²⁵Watch your ²⁶temper: if you can render it less ²⁷splenetic and less gloomy, ²⁸(you will have gained a great advantage). This is not the work of reflection only: exercise, amusement, and a regular life ²⁹(are necessary for the purpose). You cannot think well ³⁰(while your health is affected); when the body is ³¹debilitated, the mind is without vigor. Adieu! write to me more frequently, and in a style less gloomy.

1 On ne être....que—2 songer à—3 the misfortunes of our infancy and those of our, &c.—4 du point où nous sommes au jourd'hui—5 si peu de chose—6 trois mille livres de rente—7 *that sum*, en....plus—8 vantiez si fort—9 biens—10 let us not have views—11 trop vaste—12 le nécessaire—13 le commode—14 cupidité—15 *spring from*, partir du vide de—16 délicieusement—17 *contracting more*, en faire de nouvelles—18 *must*, faut-il que—19 projets—20 coûter Q—21 au-dessous de—22 le rassasier—23 inquiétude pl.—24 quand ce être N—25 travailler sur—26 humeur—27 bilieux—28 ce être un grand point de gagné—29 il y faut de—30 tant que vous se porter mal—31 dans l'abattement.

THE CONVERT.

AN EASTERN TALE.

Divine ¹mercy had brought a vicious man into a society of sages, whose morals were holy and pure. He was affected by their virtues: ²it was not long ³before he imitated them and lost his old habits: he became just, sober, patient, laborious, and benevolent. His deeds nobody could deny, but ⁴they were attributed to odious motives. They praised his good

1 Miséricorde—2 ne pas tarder—3 à *with the A.*—4 On donner des motifs.

actions without loving his person : they would always judge him by what he had been, not by what he had become. This injustice filled him with grief ; he shed tears in the bosom of an ancient sage, more just and more humane than the others. “ O, my son,” said the old man to him, “ thou art better than thy reputation ; be thankful to God for it. Happy the man who can say, my enemies and my rivals censure in me vices of which I am not guilty. ⁵What matters it, if thou art good, that men persecute thee as wicked ? Hast thou not, to comfort thee, the two best witnesses of thy actions, God and thy conscience ?”—*Saint-Lambert*.

⁵ Qu'importe.

Mr. de Montausier has written a letter to Monseigneur upon the taking of Philipsbourg, which very much pleases me. “ Monseigneur, I do not compliment you on the capture of Philipsbourg : you had a good army, bombs, cannon, and Vauban ; neither shall I compliment you upon your valor, for that is an hereditary virtue in your family ; but I rejoice that you are liberal, generous, humane, and that you know how to recompense the services of those who behave well : it is for this that I congratulate you.”—*Sévigé*.

THE GOOD MINISTER.

AN EASTERN TALE.

The great Aaron Raschild began to suspect that his vizier Giafar was not deserving of the confidence which he had reposed in him. The women of Aaron, the inhabitants of Bagdad, the courtiers, the dervises, censured the vizier with bitterness. The caliph loved Giafar ; he would not condemn him upon the clamors of the city and the court : he visited his empire ; every where he saw the land well cultivated, the country smiling, the cottages opulent, the useful arts honored, and youth full of gaiety. He visited his fortified cities and sea-ports, he saw numerous ships, which threatened the coasts of Africa and of Asia ; he saw warriors disciplined and content ; these warriors, the seamen and the peasantry, exclaimed, “ O God, pour thy blessings upon the faithful, by giving them a caliph like Aaron and a vizier like Giafar.” The caliph, affected by these exclamations, enters a mosque, falls upon his knees, and cries out, “ Great God, I return thee thanks ; thou hast given me a vizier of whom my courtiers speak ill and my people speak well.”—*Saint-Lambert*.

Providence conducts us with so much goodness through the different periods of our life, that we ¹(do not perceive our progress). This loss ²takes place gently ; it is imperceptible—it is the shadow of the sun-dial, whose motion we do not see. If, at twenty years of age, ³we could see in a mirror the face we shall have at three-score, we ⁴(should be shocked at the contrast) and terrified at our own figure ; but it is day by day we advance : we are to-day as we were yesterday, and shall be to-morrow as we are to-day ; so we go forward without perceiving it, and this is a miracle of that Providence whom I adore.—*Sévigé*.

¹ Ne le sentons presque pas—² va doucement—³ on nous faisait voir—⁴ tomber à la renverse.

THE MAGNIFICENT PROSPECT.

This beautiful house was on the declivity of a hill, from whence you beheld the sea, sometimes clear and smooth as glass, sometimes 'lidly irritated against the rocks on which it broke, ²bellowing and swelling its waves like mountains. On another side was seen a river, in which were islands bordered with blooming limes, and lofty poplars, which raised their proud heads to the very clouds. The several channels which formed those islands seemed ³sporting in the plain. Some rolled their limpid waters with rapidity; some had a peaceful and still course; others, by long windings, ran back again to reascend as it were to their source, and seemed not to have power to leave these enchanting borders. At a distance were seen hills and mountains which were lost in the clouds, and formed by their fantastic figure as delightful a horizon ⁴(as the eye could wish to behold). The neighboring mountains were covered with verdant ⁵(vine-branches) hanging in festoons; the grapes, brighter than purple, could not conceal themselves under the leaves, and the vine was overloaded with its fruit. The fig, the olive, the pomegranate, and all other trees, overspread the plain, and made it one large garden.—*Fénélon*.

1 Follement—2 en gémir—3 se jouer—4 à souhait pour le plaisir des yeux—5 pampre, m—6 vigne, f.

Long hopes ¹wear out joy, as long illness wears out pain.

All philosophic systems are only good when one ²(has no use for them).—*Sévigné*.

1 User—2 n'en a que faire.

A GENERAL VIEW OF NATURE.

With what magnificence does nature ¹shine upon earth! A pure light, extending from east to west, gilds successively the two hemispheres of this globe; an element transparent and light surrounds it; a gentle fecundating heat animates, ²gives being to the seeds of life; salubrious running streams contribute to their preservation and growth; eminences diversified over the level land arrest the vapors of the air, make these springs inexhaustible and always new; immense cavities, made to receive them, divide the continents. The extent of the sea is as great as that of the earth; it is not a cold, barren element; it is a new empire, as rich, as populous as the first. The finger of God has marked their boundaries.

The earth, rising above the level of the sea, ³is secure from its irruptions; its surface, enamelled with flowers, adorned with ever-springing verdure, peopled with thousands and thousands of species of different animals, is a place of rest, a delightful abode, where man, placed in order to second nature, presides over all beings. The only one among them all capable of knowing and worthy of admiring, God has made him spectator of the universe and a witness of his wonders. The divine spark with which he is animated enables him to participate in the divine mysteries; it is by this light that he thinks and reflects; by it he sees and reads in the book of the universe as in a copy of the Deity.

Nature is the exterior throne of the divine Majesty; the man who contemplates, who studies it, rises by degrees to the interior throne of Omnipotence. Made to adore the Creator, the vassal of Heaven, sovereign of

1 Ne brille-t-elle pas 2 faire éclore—3 à l'abri de.

the earth, he ennobles, peoples, enriches it; he establishes among living beings order, subordination, harmony; he embellishes nature herself; he cultivates, extends, and polishes it; lops off the thistle and the briar, and multiplies the grape and the rose.—*Buffon*.

ANOTHER GENERAL VIEW OF NATURE.

Trees, shrubs, and plants are the ornaments and ¹clothing of the earth. Nothing is so ²melancholy as the prospect of a country naked and ³bare, exhibiting to the eye nothing but stones, mud, and sand. But, vivified by nature, and ⁴clad in its nuptial robe, amidst the course of streams and the singing of birds, the earth presents to man, in the harmony of the three kingdoms, a spectacle full of life, of interest and charms—the only spectacle in the world of which his eyes and heart are never ⁵weary.

The more a ⁶(contemplative man's soul is fraught with sensibility) the more he yields to the ecstasies which this harmony produces in him. A soft and deep melancholy then takes possession of his senses, and in an intoxication of delight he loses himself in the immensity of that beautiful system with which he feels himself identified. Then every particular object escapes him: he sees and feels nothing but in the whole. Some circumstance must contract his ideas, and circumscribe his imagination, ⁷before he can observe by parcels that universe which he was endeavoring to embrace.—*J. J. Rousseau*.

1 Vêtement—2 triste—3 pelé—4 revêtu—5 se laisser—6 contemplateur à l'ame sensible—7 pour qu'il.

CULTIVATED NATURE.

How beautiful is cultivated nature! by the labors of man, how brilliant it is, and how pompously adorned! He himself is its chief ornament, its noblest part; by multiplying himself, he multiplies the most precious germ; she also seems to multiply with him: by his art he ¹(brings forth to view) all that she ²concealed in her bosom. How many unknown treasures! What new riches! Flowers, fruits, seeds, brought to perfection, multiplied to infinity; the useful species of animals transported, propagated, increased without number; the noxious species reduced, confined, banished; gold—and iron, more necessary than gold—extracted from the bowels of the earth; torrents ³confined; rivers directed, ⁴contracted; the sea itself subjected, ⁵explored, crossed from one hemisphere to the other; the earth accessible in every part, and every where rendered equally cheerful and fruitful; in the vallies, delightful meadows; in the plains, rich pastures and still richer harvests; hills covered with vines and fruits; their summits crowned with useful trees and young forests; deserts changed into cities inhabited by an immense population, which, continually circulating, spreads itself from these centres to their extremities; roads opened and frequented; communications established every where, as so many witnesses of the strength and union of society; a thousand other monuments of power and glory sufficiently demonstrate that man, possessing dominion over the earth, has changed, renewed the whole of its surface, and that, at all times, he shares the empire of it with nature.

1 Mettre au jour—2 recéler—3 contenu—4 resserré—5 reconnu.

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

However, man only reigns by right of conquest ; he rather enjoys than possesses, and he can preserve only by means of continual labor. If this ceases, every thing droops, every thing declines, every thing changes, and again 'returns under the hand of nature ; she reassumes her rights, erases the work of man, covers with dust and moss his most pompous monuments, destroys them in time, and leaves him nothing but the regret of having lost through his fault what his ancestors had conquered by their labors. Those times in which man loses his dominion, those ²barbarous ages during which every thing is seen to perish, are always preceded by war, and accompanied by scarcity and depopulation. Man, who can do nothing but by number, who is strong only by union, who can be happy only by peace, is mad enough to arm himself for his misery, and to fight for his ruin. Impelled by an insatiable thirst of having, blinded by ambition still more insatiable, he renounces all the feelings of humanity, turns all his strength against himself, seeks mutual destruction, ³actually destroys himself, and after these periods of blood and carnage, when the smoke of glory has vanished, he contemplates with a sad eye the earth wasted, the arts buried, nations scattered, the people weakened, his own happiness ruined, and his real power annihilated.—*Buffon*.

Rentrer—2 de barbarie—3 en effet.

INVOCATION TO THE GOD OF NATURE.

Almighty God ! whose presence alone supports nature, and maintains the harmony of the laws of the universe : Thou who, from the immovable throne of the empyrean, seest the celestial spheres roll under thy feet without shock or confusion : who, from the bosom of repose, reproducest every moment their immense movements, and alone governest in profound peace that infinite number of heavens and worlds ; restore, restore at length tranquillity to the agitated earth ! let it be silent at thy voice ; let discord and war cease their proud clamors ! God of goodness ! author of all beings ! thy paternal eye ¹takes in all the objects of the creation ; but man is thy chosen being ; thou hast ²illuminated his soul with a ray of thy immortal light : complete the measure of thy kindness by penetrating his heart with a ray of thy love : this divine sentiment, diffusing itself every where, will reconcile opposite natures ; man will no longer dread the sight of man ; his hand will no longer wield the murderous ³steel ; the devouring flames of war will no longer ⁴dry up the sources of population : the human species, now weakened, mutilated, mowed down in the blossom, ⁵will spring anew, and multiply without number ; nature, overwhelmed under the weight of ⁶scourges, will soon reassume with a new life its former fruitfulness ; and we, beneficent God, will second it, we will cultivate it, we will contemplate it incessantly, that we may every moment offer thee a new tribute of gratitude and admiration.—*Buffon*.

¹ Embrasser—² éclairer—³ le fer.....armer sa main—⁴ tarir—⁵ germer de nouveau—⁶ fléau.

Happy they who ¹are disgusted with turbulent pleasures, and know ²how to be contented with the sweets of an innocent life ! Happy they

¹ Se dégoûter de—² se contenter de.

who delight ³in being instructed, and who ⁴take a pleasure in storing their minds with knowledge! Wherever adverse fortune may throw them, they always carry entertainment with them; and the disquiet which preys upon others, even in the midst of pleasures, is unknown to those who can employ themselves in reading. Happy they who love to read, and are not like me deprived of the ability. As these thoughts were passing in my mind, I went into a gloomy forest, where I immediately perceived an old man, holding a book in his hand. The forehead of this sage was broad, bald, and a little wrinkled: a white beard hung down to his girdle; his stature was tall and majestic; his complexion still fresh and ruddy; his eyes lively and piercing; his voice sweet; his words plain and charming. I never saw so venerable an old man. He was a priest of Apollo, and ⁵officiated in a marble temple, which the kings of Egypt had dedicated to that god in this forest. The book which he held in his hand was a collection of hymns in honor of the gods. He accosted me in a friendly manner, and we discoursed together. He related things past so well, that they seemed present; and yet with such brevity, that his account never tired me. He foresaw the future by his profound knowledge, which made him know men, and the designs of which they are capable. With all this wisdom, he was cheerful and complaisant, and the sprightliest youth has not so many graces as this man had at so advanced an age. He accordingly loved young men when they were teachable, and had a taste for study and virtue.—*Fénélon*.

3 S'instruire—4 se plaisir—5 servir—6 docile.

THOUGHTS ON POETRY.

Wherever I went, I found that poetry was considered as the ¹(highest learning), and regarded with a veneration ²(somewhat approaching to) that which men would pay to angelic nature.

It yet fills me with wonder that, in almost all countries, the most ancient poets are considered as the best; whether ³(it be that) every kind of knowledge is an acquisition gradually attained, and poetry is a gift conferred at once; or that the first poetry of every nation surprised them as a novelty, and retained the credit by consent which it received by accident at first; or whether, as the ⁴province of poetry is to describe nature and passion, which are always the same, the first writers ⁵(took possession) of ⁶(the most striking objects for description), and ⁷(the most probable occurrences for fiction), and left nothing to those that followed them but ⁸transcriptions of the same events, and ⁹new combinations of the same images. Whatever be the reason, it is commonly observed that the early writers are in possession of nature, and their ¹⁰followers of art; that the first excel in strength and invention, and the latter in elegance and refinement.

I was desirous to add my name to this illustrious ¹¹fraternity. I read all the poets of Persia and Arabia, and was able to repeat by memory the volumes that are suspended in the mosque at Mecca. But I soon found that no man was ever great by imitation. My desire of ¹²excellence ¹³impelled me ¹⁴to transfer my attention to nature and to ¹⁵life. Nature

1 Partie la plus sublime de la littérature—2 qui tenoit de—3 cela vienne de ce que—4 but—5 s'emparer—6 objets qui fournissaient les plus riches descriptions—7 événements qui prêtaient le plus à la fiction—8 de copier—9 faire de nouvelles combinaisons—10 successeurs—11 famille—12 exceller—13 engager—14 reporter. .sur—15 tableau de la vie.

was to be my subject, and men to be my auditors: I could never describe what I had not seen; I could not hope ¹⁶(to move those with delight or terror) whose interests and opinions I did not ¹⁷understand.

16 réveiller le plaisir ou la terreur dans ceux—17 ne connaître ni.

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

Being now resolved to be a poet, I saw every thing ¹⁸(with a new purpose); my sphere of attention was suddenly magnified: no kind of knowledge ¹⁹(was to be overlooked). I ranged mountains and deserts ²⁰for images and resemblances, and ²¹(pictured upon my mind) every tree of the forest and flower of the valley. I observed with equal care the crags of the rock and the pinnacles of the palace. Sometimes I wandered along the mazes of the rivulet, and sometimes watched the changes of the summer clouds. To a poet nothing can be useless. Whatever is beautiful and whatever is dreadful must be familiar to his imagination: he must ²²(be conversant) with all that ²³(is awfully vast or elegantly little). The plants of the garden, the animals of the wood, the minerals of the earth, and the meteors of the sky, must all concur to store his mind with inexhaustible variety: for every idea is useful for the ²⁴(enforcement or decoration) of moral or religious truth; and he who knows most will have most ²⁵power of diversifying his ²⁶scenes, and gratifying his reader with remote allusions and unexpected instruction.

All the appearances of nature ²⁷I was therefore careful to study, and every country which I have surveyed has contributed something to my poetical powers.

In so wide a survey, interrupted the prince, you must surely have left much unobserved. I have lived till now within the circuit of these mountains, and yet cannot walk abroad without the sight of something which I had never beheld before or never ²⁸heeded.

18 Sous un nouveau jour—19 je ne devais négliger—20 pour recueillir—21 pénétrer mon esprit du tableau de—22 bien connaître—23 étonne par sa grandeur ou charme par son élégante petitesse—24 fortifier, ou embellir—25 ressources pour—26 tableau—27 étudier avec soin toutes les, &c.—28 remarquer.

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

The business of a poet, said Imlac, is to examine, not the individual, but the species; to remark general properties and ²⁹(large appearances): he does not number the streaks of the tulip or describe the different shades in the verdure of the forest. He is to exhibit, in his portraits of nature, ³⁰such prominent and striking features as recal the original to every mind; and must neglect ³¹the minuter discriminations, which one may have remarked and another neglected, ³²for those characteristics which ³³are alike obvious to ³⁴vigilance and ³⁵carelessness.

But the knowledge of nature is only ³⁶half the task of a poet: he must be acquainted likewise with ³⁷all the modes of life. His character requires that he ³⁸estimate the happiness and misery of every condition; observe the power of all the passions, in all their combinations, and ³⁹trace the

29 Considérer les objets en grand—30 de ces traits saillans et frappans qui, &c.—31 ces petits détails—32 pour s'appliquer à caractériser, &c. &c.—33 frappe également—34 œil observateur—35 esprit insouciant—36 the half of—37 tous les différens aspects—38 apprécier—39 suivre les vicissitudes.

changes of the human mind, as they are modified by various institutions and accidental influences of climate or custom, from the sprightliness of infancy to the despondence of decrepitude. He must ⁴⁰divest himself of the prejudices of his age or country; he must consider ⁴¹right and wrong ⁴²in their abstracted and invariable state; he must disregard present laws and opinions, and rise to general and transcendent truths, which will always be the same; he must therefore ⁴³(content himself with the slow progress of his name), condemn the applause of his own time, and commit his claims to the justice of posterity. He must write as the interpreter of nature and the legislator of mankind, and consider himself as ⁴⁴presiding over the thoughts and manners of future generations, as a being superior to time and place.

His labor is not yet at an end: he must know many languages and many sciences; and, that his style may be worthy of his thoughts, he must, by incessant practice, familiarize himself to every delicacy of speech and grace of harmony.—*S. Johnson.*

40 Se dépouiller—41 ce qui est juste ou injuste—42 abstraction faite de ces divers préjugés—43 se résigner à voir son nom percer difficilement—44 influencer.

First follow nature, and your judgment frame
 By her just standard, which is still the same:
 Unerring nature, still divinely bright,
 One clear, unchanged, and universal light,
 Life, force, and beauty must to all impart;¹
 At once the source, and end, and test of art.²
 Art, from that fund, its just supply provides;
 Works without show, and without pomp presides;
 In some fair body thus th' informing soul,
 With spirit feeds, with vigor fills the whole;
 Each motion guides, and every nerve sustains
 Itself unseen, but in th' effect remains.³
 Some, to whom Heav'n in wit has been profuse,
 Want as much more to turn it to its use:
 For wit and judgment often are at strife,
 Though meant each other's aid, like man and wife.⁴
 'Tis more to guide than spur the muse's steed,
 Restrain his fury than provoke his speed:⁵
 The winged courser, like a gen'rous horse,
 Shows most true mettle when you check its course.⁶—*Pope.*

1. Light, clear, immutable, and universal nature, which never errs, and shines always with a divine splendor, must impart to all she does life, force, and beauty.

2. She is at once the source, &c.

3. So in a fair body, unseen itself, but always sensible by its effects, the soul continually acting, feeds the whole with spirit, fills it with vigor, guides every motion of it, and sustains every nerve.

4. Some to whom Heaven has given wit in profusion, want as much yet to know the use they ought to make of it; for wit and judgment, though made, like man and wife, to aid each other, are often in opposition.

5. It is more difficult to guide than spur the courser of the muses, and to restrain its ardor than provoke its impetuosity.

6. The winged courser is like a generous horse: the more we strive to stop it in its rapid course, the more it shows unconquerable vigor.

EXAMPLES OF PHRASES

ON THE

PRINCIPAL DIFFICULTIES OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

Sur les Collectifs Partitifs.

La plupart des fruits verts sont d'un goût austère,
 La plupart des gens ne se conduisent que par intérêt,
 La plupart du monde se trompe,
 Il méprise par philosophie les honneurs que la plupart du monde recherche,
 Il devait me fournir tant d'arbres; mais j'en ai rejeté la moitié qui ne valait rien,
 Un grand nombre de spectateurs ajoutait à la beauté du spectacle,
 Toute sorte de livres ne sont pas également bons,
 Beaucoup de personnes se sont présentées,
 Bien des personnes se font des principes à leur fantaisie,

On the Collective Partitives.

The greater part of green fruit is of a harsh taste.
Most people are guided only by interest.
The greater part of mankind live in error.
As a true philosopher, he despises those honors which mankind in general court.
He was to furnish me so many trees, but I refused half of them, which were good for nothing.
A considerable number of spectators added to the splendor of the scene.
Every kind of books are not equally good.
Many people presented themselves.
Many persons form principles to themselves, according to their fancy.

Sur quelques Verbs qu'on ne peut conjuguer avec Avoir sans faire des barbarismes.

Il lui est échu une succession du chef de sa femme,
 Il est bien déchu de son crédit,
 Ne sommes-nous pas convenus du prix?
 N'est-il pas intervenu dans cette affaire, comme il l'avait promis?
 Il est survenu à l'improviste,
 La neige, qui est tombée ce matin, a adouci le temps,
 Que de neige il est tombé ce matin!
 Toutes les dents lui sont tombées,
 Ce propos n'est pas tombé à terre,
 Etes-vous allé voir votre ami?
 Ils sont arrivés à midi et sont repartis de suite,
 Ces fleurs sont à peine écloses,
 Ils est né de parens vertueux, qui n'ont rien négligé pour son éducation,
 Mademoiselle votre sœur est-elle rentrée?
 Madame votre mère n'est-elle pas encore venue?

On some Verbs which cannot be conjugated with the verb Avoir without making barbarous phrases.

An estate fell to him in right of his wife.
He has lost much of his credit.
Have we not agreed about the price?
Did he not interfere in that affair as he had promised?
He came up unawares.
The snow which fell this morning has softened the weather.
How much snow has fallen this morning!
All his teeth have fallen out.
That remark was not allowed to escape.
Have you been to see your friend?
They arrived at noon, and set out again immediately.
These flowers are scarcely blown.
He was born of virtuous parents, who bestowed on him the best education.
Is your sister returned?
Is not your mother come yet?

Sur les Mots de Quantité.

Il a beaucoup d'esprit, mais encore plus d'amour propre.
 Il a assez d'argent pour ses menus plaisirs,
 Il y avait bien du monde à l'Opéra,
 Il y avait hier au Parc je ne sais combien de gens,
 Il boit autant d'eau que de vin,
 Il a tant d'amis qu'il ne manquera de rien,
 Personne n'y a plus d'intérêt que lui,
 Il n'a pas plus d'esprit qu'il n'en faut,
 Trop de loisir perd souvent la jeunesse,
 J'y ai bien moins d'intérêt que vous,

On words of Quantity.

He has a great deal of sense, but still more vanity.
He has sufficient pocket-money. [Opera.]
There were a great many people at the
There were I do not know how many people in the Park yesterday.
He drinks as much water as wine.
He has so many friends that he will want for nothing.
Nobody has more interest there than he.
He is not overburdened with sense.
Too much leisure time is frequently the destruction of youth.
I am much less concerned in it than you.

*Sur les Pronoms Personnels.**On the Personal Pronouns.*

Sors et te retire,
 Cours vite et ne t'amuse point,
 Il dit aujourd'hui une chose et demain il
 se démentira,
 Il s'est démenti lui-même,
 La jeunesse est naturellement emportée ;
 elle a besoin de quelque entrave qui la
 retienne,
 Il ne peut voir personne dans la prospérité
 sans lui porter envie,
 Ce que vous me dites est une énigme pour
 moi,
 C'est un homme extrême en tout ; il aime
 et il hait avec fureur,

Si vous n'y avez jamais été, je vous y
 mènerai,
 Je l'ai connu doux et modeste ; il s'est
 bien gâté dans le commerce de ses nou-
 veaux amis,
 Elle n'est pas encore revenue du saisisse-
 ment, que lui causa cette nouvelle.

Il menace de l'exterminer, lui et toute sa
 race,
 Si vous n'avez que faire de ce livre-là,
 prêtez-le-moi,
 Je lui avais envoyé un diamant, il l'a
 refusé, je le lui ai renvoyé,
 Il apprend facilement et oublie de même,
 Je lui pardonne facilement d'avoir voulu
 se faire auteur ; mais je ne saurais lui
 pardonner toutes les puérilités dont il a
 farci son livre,
 Je me plains à vous de vous-même,
 Si vous ne voulez pas être pour lui, au
 moins ne soyez pas contre,
 Quand sera-ce que vous viendrez nous
 voir ?

*Go out and retire, withdraw.
 Go quick, and do not loiter.
 He advances a thing to-day, and will con-
 tradict himself to-morrow.
 He has contradicted himself.
 Youth is naturally hasty, it needs some
 check to restrain it.*

*He can see the prosperity of nobody with-
 out envying them.
 What you tell me is a perfect riddle to me.*

*He is a man that carries every thing to
 excess ; he is alike violent in his love
 and in his hatred.*

*If you have never been there, I will take
 you.*

*I knew him when he was mild and modest ;
 he has been much corrupted by asso-
 ciating with his new acquaintances.*

*She is not yet recovered from the con-
 sternation into which that intelligence
 threw her.*

*He threatens to exterminate him and all
 his family.*

*If you have done with this book, lend it
 me.*

*I had sent him a diamond, and he refused
 it, but I sent him it back again.*

He learns easily and forgets the same.

*I can easily pardon him for having at-
 tempted to turn author ; but I cannot
 pardon him all the absurdities with
 which he has filled his book.*

I complain to you of yourself.

*If you will not be for him, at least do not
 be against him.*

When will you come to see us ?

*Sur soi, lui, soi-même, et lui-même.**On soi, lui, soi-même, and lui-même.*

Quand on a pour soi le témoignage de sa
 conscience, on est bien fort,
 L'estime de toute la terre ne sert de rien
 à un homme qui n'a pas le témoignage
 de sa conscience pour lui,
 Un homme fait mille fautes, parce qu'il
 ne fait point de réflexions sur lui,

*The approbation of our conscience imparts
 great courage.*

*The good opinion of the whole world is of
 no use to a man who has not the appro-
 bation of his own conscience.*

*A man commits a thousand faults because
 he does not reflect on future conse-
 quences.*

*We commit a thousand faults when we
 neglect to reflect on ourselves.*

*He had rather speak ill of himself than
 not speak of himself at all.*

*The egotist prefers speaking ill of himself
 rather than not be the subject of his own
 conversation.*

*We frequently want the assistance of one
 who is below ourselves.*

*A prince frequently needs the assistance
 of many persons inferior to himself.*

*It is an excellent method of exalting our-
 selves to exalt our equals, and a man of
 address by this means exalts himself.*

On fait mille fautes, quand on ne fait
 aucune réflexion sur soi,
 Il aime mieux dire du mal de lui, que de
 n'en point parler,
 L'égoïste aimera mieux dire du mal de
 soi, que de n'en point parler,

On a souvent besoin d'un plus petit que
 soi,
 Un prince a souvent besoin de beaucoup
 de gens plus petits que lui,
 C'est un bon moyen de s'élever soi-même,
 que d'exalter ses pareils ; et un homme
 adroit s'élève ainsi lui-même,

*Sur les Pronoms Relatifs.**On the Relative Pronouns.*

Il n'y a rien de si capable d'efféminer le
 courage, que l'oisiveté et les délices,
 Il faut empêcher que la division, qui est
 dans cette famille, n'éclate,

*Nothing is so calculated to enervate the
 mind as idleness and pleasure.*

*The dissension in that family must be
 prevented from becoming public.*

Il y a bien des événemens que l'on suppose
se passer pendant les entr'actes,
Je le trouvai qui s'habillait,
Qui le tirera de cet embarras, le tirera
d'une grande misère,
Ceux-là sont véritablement heureux, qui
croient l'être,
Il n'y a que la vertu, qui puisse rendre un
homme heureux en cette vie,
Il n'y a règle, si générale, qui n'ait son
exception,
C'est un orateur qui se possède et qui ne
se trouble jamais,
Il n'y a pas dans le cœur humain de repli
que Dieu ne connaisse,
On n'a trouvé que quelques fragmens du
grand ouvrage qu'il avait promis,
La faute, que vous avez faite, est plus
importante que vous ne pensez,
Les premières démarches qu'on fait dans
le monde, ont beaucoup d'influence sur
le reste de la vie,
Cette farce est une des plus risibles qu'on
ait encore vues,
Amassez-vous des trésors que les vers et
la rouille ne puissent point gâter, et que
les voleurs ne puissent point dérober,
L'incertitude, où nous sommes de ce qui
doit arriver, fait que nous ne saurions
prendre des mesures justes,
Je m'étonne qu'il ne voie pas le danger
où il est,
L'homme dont vous parlez, n'est plus ici,

Celui de qui je tiens cette nouvelle ne
vous est pas connu,
Celui à qui ce beau château appartient
ne l'habite presque jamais,
Ce sont des événemens auxquels il faut
bien se soumettre,
C'est ce à quoi vous ne pensez guère,

Sur les Pronoms Démonstratifs.

Ne point reconnaître la divinité, c'est
renoncer à toutes les lumières de la
raison.
Mentir, c'est mépriser Dieu et craindre
les hommes,
Il y a des épidémies morales, et ce sont
les plus dangereuses,
Je crois que ce que vous dites est bien
éloigné de ce que vous pensez,
Les hommes n'aiment ordinairement que
ceux qui les flattent,
Celui qui persuade à un autre de faire un
crime, n'est guère moins coupable que
celui qui le commet,
Penser ainsi, c'est s'aveugler soi-même,

Ce qu'on rapporte de lui est inconcevable,

Ce qui m'afflige, c'est de voir le triomphe
du crime,
Connaissez-vous la jeune Emilie ? C'est
une enfant dont tout le monde dit du
bien,
Imitez en tout votre amie : elle est douce,
appliquée, honnête et compatissante,

*There are many events in a piece which
are supposed to happen between the acts.
I found him dressing.
Whoever extricates him from this difficulty
will relieve him from much distress.
Those are really happy who think them-
selves so.
Virtue alone can render a man happy in
this life.
There is no rule so general but it admits
of exceptions.
He is an orator who is master of himself,
and who is never embarrassed.
There is no recess of the human heart but
God perceives it.
Only some fragments of the great work
he had promised have been found.
The error you have committed is of more
consequence than you imagine.
The first steps we take on entering the
world have considerable influence on the
rest of our lives.
That farce is one of the most truly comic
that ever was seen.
Lay up for yourselves treasures which
neither moth nor rust can corrupt, and
which thieves cannot steal.
Our uncertainty as to what shall happen
makes us incapable of properly pro-
viding against it.
I am astonished he does not see the danger
he is in.
The man whom you are speaking of is not
here now.
The person from whom I received the in-
telligence is not known to you.
The proprietor of that beautiful seat sel-
dom resides there.
These are events to which we must submit.
It is what you seldom think of.*

On the Demonstrative Pronouns.

*Not to acknowledge the divinity is totally
to renounce the light of reason.
To lie is to despise God and to fear man.
There are moral contagious disorders,
and these are the most dangerous.
What you advance is, I think, widely dif-
ferent from your sentiments.
Men in general love only those who flatter
them.
He who persuades another to the commis-
sion of a crime is hardly less guilty
than he who commits it.
To think in this manner is to be wilfully
blind.
The reports concerning him are hardly
conceivable.
What distresses me is to see guilt tri-
umphant.
Do you know little Emily ? She is a child
of whom every body speaks well.
Imitate your friend in every thing ; she
is mild, assiduous, polite, and compas-
sionate.*

Sur le verbe Avoir employé à l'Impersonnel. *On the verb Avoir, to have, employed impersonally.*

REMARQUE.—Quand le verbe *avoir* s'emploie à l'impersonnel, c'est dans le sens d'être, et alors il se joint toujours avec *y*.

Il y a un an que je ne vous ai vu,
Y a-t-il des nouvelles?

Non, il n'y en a pas, du moins que je sache,
N'y a-t-il pas cinquante-quatre milles de Londres à Brighton?

Il y avait déjà beaucoup de monde lorsque j'arrivai,

Il n'y avait hier presque personne au parc,

Y avait-il de grands débats?

N'y avait-il pas beaucoup de curieux?

Je l'avais vu il y avait à peine vingt-quatre heures,

Il n'y avait pas deux jours qu'il avait dîné chez moi.

Y avait-il si long-temps que vous ne l'aviez vu?

Il y eut hier un bal chez M. un tel. [vu?]

Il n'y eut pas hier de spectacle.

Y eut-il beaucoup de confusion et de désordre?

N'y eut-il pas un beau feu d'artifice?

Il y a eu aujourd'hui une foule immense à la promenade,

Il n'y a pas eu de bal, comme on l'avait annoncé,

Est-il vrai qu'il y a eu un duel?

N'y a-t-il pas eu dans sa conduite un peu trop d'emportement?

Quand il y eut eu une explication, les esprits se calmèrent,

N'y avait-il pas eu un plus grand nombre de spectateurs?

Il y aura demain un simulacre de combat naval,

Il n'y aura aucun de vous,

Y aura-t-il une bonne récolte cette année?

N'y aura-t-il pas quelqu'un de votre famille?

A coup sûr il y aura eu bien du désordre, Sur cent personnes, il n'y en aura pas eu dix de satisfaites,

Y aura-t-il eu un bon souper?

N'y aura-t-il pas eu de mécontents?

Il y aurait de la malhonnêteté dans ce projet.

Il n'y aurait pas grand mal à cela. [cédé.]

Y aurait-il quelqu'un assez hardi pour l'attaquer?

N'y aurait-il pas quelqu'un assez charitable pour l'avertir de ce qu'on dit de lui?

Il y aurait eu de l'imprudence à cela.

Il n'y aurait pas eu tant de mésintelligence, si l'on m'en avait cru.

Il n'y aurait pas eu dix personnes, Y aurait-il eu de l'inconvénient?

N'y aurait-il pas eu de jaloux pour le traverser dans ses projets?

Je ne crois pas qu'il y ait un spectacle plus magnifique,

Je désirerais qu'il y eût moins de fausseté dans le commerce de la vie,

Je n'ai pas osé dire qu'il y ait eu hier des nouvelles du continent,

Auriez-vous cru qu'il y eût eu tant de personnes compromises dans cette affaire?

When the verb avoir is used impersonally it signifies être, to be, and in this sense it is always accompanied by the adverb y.

It is a twelvemonth since I saw you.

Is there any news?

No, there is none, at least that I know.

Is it not fifty-four miles from London to Brighton?

There were already a great many people when I arrived.

There was hardly any body in the park yesterday.

Were there violent debates?

Were there not many curious people?

I had seen him scarcely four-and-twenty hours before.

He had dined with me not two days before.

Was it so long since you had seen him.

There was yesterday a ball at Mr. A's.

There was no play yesterday.

Was there a great deal of confusion and disorder?

Were there not handsome fireworks?

There was an immense crowd to-day at the public walks.

There has not been any ball, as had been mentioned.

Is it true that there has been a duel?

Was there not rather too much hastiness in his behaviour?

After there had been an explanation, tranquillity was restored.

Was there not a greater number of spectators?

To-morrow there will be the representation of a sea-fight.

There will be none of you.

Will there be a good harvest this year?

Will not there be some of your family?

[order.]

There must certainly have been much disorder.

Out of a hundred persons, there will not have been ten satisfied.

Will there have been a good supper?

Will there not have been some dissatisfied?

Such a step would have been ungentle.

There would be no great harm in that.

Would there be any one bold enough to attack him?

Would there be nobody kind enough to acquaint him with what is said of him?

There would have been some imprudence in that.

There would not have been so great a misunderstanding had I been believed.

There would not have been ten persons.

Would there have been any inconvenience?

Would there not have been some envious person to thwart him in his designs?

I do not think there can be a more superb spectacle.

I wish there were less duplicity in the concerns of life.

I have not heard that there was any news from the continent yesterday.

Could you have thought so many persons would have been exposed in that affair?

Phrases Diverses.

Sa vie, ses actions, ses paroles, son air même et sa démarche, tout prêche, tout édifie en lui,
On craignait qu'il n'arrivât quelque désordre dans l'assemblée, mais toutes choses s'y passèrent fort doucement,
La vigne et le lierre s'entortillent autour des ormes,
On ne disconvient point qu'il ne soit brave, mais il est un peu trop fanfaron,
Le cadet est riche, mais l'aîné l'est encore davantage,
Le ciel est couvert de nuages, et l'orage est prêt à fondre,
Après qu'il eut franchi les Alpes avec ses troupes, il entra en Italie,
La frugalité rend les corps plus sains et plus robustes,
Ce discours est peut-être un des plus beaux morceaux d'éloquence, qu'il y ait jamais eu,
C'est un homme qui aime la liberté; il ne se gêne pour qui que ce soit,
Il est plus haut que moi de deux doigts,
Irez-vous vous exposer à la barbarie et à l'inhospitalité de ces peuples?

A la longue, les erreurs disparaissent, et la vérité surnage,
Si vous le prenez avec moi sur ce ton de fierté, je serai aussi fier que vous,
C'est un homme rigide, qui ne pardonne rien, ni aux autres ni à lui-même,
Les uns montent, les autres descendent, ainsi va la roue de la fortune,
Je ne vois rien de solide dans tout ce que vous me proposez,
L'art n'a jamais rien produit de plus beau, lequel est-ce des deux qui a tort?
On aime quelquefois la trahison, mais on hait toujours les traîtres,

Continuation.

L'éléphant se sert de sa trompe pour prendre et pour enlever tout ce qu'il veut,
Plus j'examine cette personne, plus je crois l'avoir vue quelque part,
La nuit vint, de façon que je fus contraint de me retirer,
Il faut vivre de façon qu'on ne fasse tort à personne,
Elle sut qu'on attaquait son mari et courut aussitôt tout éperdue pour le secourir,
Je trouvai ses parens tout éplorés,
Cet arbre pousse ses branches toutes droites,
J'en ai encore la mémoire toute fraîche,
Il a voulu faire voir par cet essai qu'il pouvait réussir en quelque chose de plus grand,
Il fut blessé au front et mourut de cette blessure,
Ces chevaux prirent le mors aux dents et entraînèrent le carrosse,
C'est un homme qui compose sans chaleur ni imagination; tout ce qu'il écrit est froid et plat,
Ce bâtiment a plus de profondeur que de largeur,

Promiscuous Phrases.

His life, his actions, his very look and deportment, every thing in him instructs and edifies.
It was apprehended some disorder would take place in the assembly, but every thing went off very quietly.
The vine and ivy twist round the elms.
They do not deny that he is brave, but he boasts rather too much.
The youngest is rich, but the eldest is still more so.
The sky is covered with clouds, and the storm is preparing to burst.
After having crossed the Alps with his troops, he entered Italy.
Temperance imparts an increase of health and strength to the body.
This speech is perhaps one of the finest pieces of eloquence that was ever pronounced.
He is a man fond of liberty, he will be restrained by nobody.
He is taller than I by two inches.
Will you go and expose yourself to the barbarity and inhospitality of those nations?
In time errors vanish and truth survives.

If you treat me with that haughtiness, I can be as haughty as you.
He is a strange character, who pardons nothing, either in himself or others.
Some mount, others descend; thus goes the wheel of fortune.
I see nothing certain in all you propose to me.
It is one of the finest productions of art.
Which of the two is in the wrong?
We sometimes love the treason, but we always hate the traitor.

Continuation.

The elephant makes use of his trunk to take and lift whatever he pleases.
The more I look at that person, the more I think I have seen him (or her) somewhere.
Night came on, so that I was obliged to retire.
We must live in such a manner as to injure nobody.
She knew her husband was attacked, and, in a state of distraction, ran to his assistance.
I found his relations all in tears.
The branches of that tree grow quite straight.
It is still quite fresh in my memory.
He wished to show, by that attempt, that he could succeed in an enterprise of more consequence.
He was wounded in the forehead, and died of this wound.
Those horses ran away with the carriage.
He is a man who writes without the least warmth or animation: all his productions are cold and insipid.
That building is deeper than it is broad.

Cet homme est un prodige de savoir, de science, de valeur, d'esprit, et de mémoire,

Il est attaché à l'un et à l'autre, mais plus à l'un qu'à l'autre,

Ils ont bien de l'air l'un de l'autre,

Si l'on ruine cet homme-là, le contre-coup retombera sur vous,

Il serait mort, si on ne l'eût assisté avec soin,

Ce poème serait parfait, si les incidens, qui le font languir, n'interrompaient la continuité de l'action,

That man is a prodigy of knowledge judgment, courage, sense, and memory.

He is attached to both, but to one more than to the other.

They very much resemble each other.

If that man is ruined, his misfortune will recoil upon you.

He would have died, if he had not been kindly assisted.

That would be a perfect poem, if the incidents which give a heaviness to it, did not break the connection of the subject.

Continuation.

Quand je le voudrais, je ne le pourrais pas, Je serai toujours votre ami, quand même vous ne le voudriez pas,

Quand vous auriez réussi, que vous en serait-il revenu ?

Quand on découvrirait votre démarche, on ne pourrait la blâmer,

Quand vous auriez consulté quelqu'un sur votre mariage, vous n'auriez pas mieux réussi,

Le tonnerre et l'éclair ne sont sensibles que par la propagation du bruit et de la lumière jusqu'à l'œil et à l'oreille,

Le langage de la prose est plus simple et moins figuré que celui des vers,

Le commencement de son discours est toujours assez sage ; mais, dans la suite, à force de vouloir s'élever, il se perd dans les nues : on ne sait plus ni ce qu'on voit, ni ce qu'on entend,

C'est une faute excusable dans un autre homme, mais à un homme aussi sage que lui, elle ne se peut pardonner,

Il ne suffit pas de paraître honnête homme, il faut l'être,

Il nous a reçus avec bonté, et nous a écoutés avec patience,

Tout y est si bien peint, qu'on croit voir ce qu'il décrit,

On ne pense rien de vous, qui ne vous soit glorieux,

Les eaux de citernes ne sont que des eaux de pluie ramassées,

S'il n'est pas fort riche, du moins a-t-il de quoi vivre honnêtement,

Quel quantième du mois avons-nous ?

Il lui tarde qu'il ne soit majeur, il compte les jours et les mois,

Des qualités excellentes, jointes à de rares talens, font le parfait mérite,

Il a une mauvaise qualité, c'est qu'il ne saurait garder un secret,

Continuation.

If I were disposed, I could not do it.

I will always be your friend, even though you should not wish it.

Had you even succeeded, what were you to have derived from it ?

Should the steps you have taken be discovered, they could not be blamed.

Had you consulted somebody about your marriage, you could not have succeeded better.

Thunder and lightning are only perceptible by the transmission of sound and light to the ear and eye.

Prose language is much more simple and less figurative than poetic.

The beginning of his speech is always tolerably sensible ; but afterwards, by affecting the sublime, he loses himself, and we no longer understand either what we see or hear.

This fault would be excusable in another man, but in a man of his sense it is unpardonable.

It is not enough to seem an honest man ; we must be so.

He received us with kindness, and heard us patiently.

Every thing in it is so well delineated, you think you see what he describes,

They think nothing of you but what is to your honor.

Cistern-water is only rain-water collected.

If he is not rich, at least he has enough to live upon respectably.

What day of the month is it ?

He longs to be of age, and counts the days and months.

Excellent qualities, joined to distinguished talents, constitute perfect merit.

He has one bad quality, he cannot keep a secret.

Modèles de phrases dans lesquelles, on doit faire usage de l'article.

L'homme est sujet à bien des vicissitudes, Les hommes d'un vrai génie sont rares, Les hommes à imagination sont rarement heureux,

L'homme, dont vous parlez, est un de mes amis,

La vie est un mélange de biens et de maux, La perfection en tout genre est le but auquel on doit tendre,

Examples of Phrases in which the Article is used.

Man is liable to a variety of changes.

Men of real genius are scarce.

Men of a visionary character are seldom happy.

The man you speak of is a friend of mine

Life is a compound of good and evil.

Perfection in every thing ought to be our object.

La beauté, les grâces, et l'esprit sont des avantages bien précieux, quand ils sont relevés par la modestie,
Voilà des tableaux d'une grande beauté,
Faites-vous des principes, dont vous ne vous écartiez jamais,
Cet arbre porte des fruits excellens,
Ces raisons sont des conjectures bien faibles.
Servez-vous des termes établis par l'usage,
On doit éviter l'air de l'affectation,
Le Jupiter de Phidias était d'une grande beauté,

*Beauty, gracefulness, and wit are valuable endowments, when heightened by modesty.
These are very beautiful pictures.
Establish rules for yourself, and never deviate from them.
This tree bears very excellent fruit.
These reasons are very idle conjectures.
Use the expressions established by custom.
We ought to avoid the appearance of affectation.
The Jupiter of Phidias was extremely beautiful.*

Continuation des mêmes Phrases.

La mémoire est le trésor de l'esprit, le fruit de l'attention et de la réflexion,
J'achetai hier des gravures précieuses et rares,
La France est le plus beau pays de l'Europe,
L'intérêt de l'Allemagne était opposé à celui de la Russie.
La longueur de l'Angleterre du nord au sud est de 360 milles, et sa largeur de l'est à l'ouest est de 300.
Il arrive de la Chine, du Japon, et des Indes Orientales, &c.
Il arrive de l'Amérique, de la Barbade, de la Jamaïque, &c.
Il vient de la Flandre française,
Il s'est établi dans la province de Middlesex,
Des petits maîtres sont des êtres insupportables dans la société,
C'est l'opinion des nouveaux philosophes,
Elle a bien de la grâce dans tout ce qu'elle fait,
Cette étoffe se vend une guinée l'aune,
Ce vin coûte 70 livres sterlings la pièce,

The same Phrases continued.

*Memory is the treasure of the mind, the result of attention and reflection.
I yesterday bought some valuable and scarce engravings.
France is the finest country in Europe.
The German interest was contrary to the Russian.
The length of England from north to south is 360 miles, and its breadth from east to west is 300.
He comes from China, Japan, and the East Indies.
He comes from America, Barbadoes, Jamaica, &c.
He comes from French Flanders.
He has settled in the county of Middlesex.
Corcombs are insufferable beings in society.
It is the opinion of the new philosophers.
She does every thing most gracefully.
This stuff sells at a guinea an ell.
This wine costs seventy pounds the pipe.*

Modèles de Phrases dans lesquelles on ne doit pas faire usage de l'article.

Nos connaissances doivent être tirées de principes évidens,
Cet arbre porte d'excellens fruits,
Ces raisons sont de faibles conjectures,
Évitez tout ce qui a un air d'affectation,
Ces exemples peuvent servir de modèles,
Il a une grande présence d'esprit,
La mémoire de raison et d'esprit est plus utile que les autres sortes de mémoire,
Peu de personnes réfléchissent sur la rapidité de la vie,
Que d'événemens inconcevables se sont succédés les uns aux autres!
Il y a plus d'esprit, mais moins de connaissances, dans ce siècle que dans le siècle dernier,
On ne vit jamais autant d'effronterie,
Je pris hier beaucoup de peine pour rien,
Candie est une des îles les plus agréables de la Méditerranée,
Il arrive de Perse, d'Italie, d'Espagne, &c.
Il est revenu de Suisse, d'Allemagne, &c.
Les vins de France seront chers cette année; les vignes ont coulé,

Examples of Phrases in which the Article is omitted.

*Our knowledge ought to be derived from evident principles.
This tree produces excellent fruit.
These reasons are idle conjectures.
Avoid whatever bears the appearance of affectation.
These examples may serve as models.
He has great presence of mind.
The memory of reason and sense is more useful than any other kind of memory.
Few persons reflect on the rapidity of life.
How many inconceivable events have followed in succession!
There is more wit, but less knowledge, in this age than the last.
So much assurance never was met with.
I took a great deal of trouble yesterday about nothing.
Candia is one of the most agreeable islands in the Mediterranean.
He comes from Persia, Italy, Spain, &c.
He is returned from Switzerland, Germany, &c.
French wines will be dear this year; the vines have been blighted.*

L'empire d'Allemagne est composé de grands et de petits états,
Les chevaux d'Angleterre sont excellens,
Après mon départ de Suisse, je me retirai à Rome.

*The German empire is composed of great and small states.
English horses are excellent.
After leaving Switzerland, I retired to Rome.*

Continuation des mêmes Phrases.

Vous trouverez ce passage page 120, livre premier, chapitre dix.
Il s'est retiré en Angleterre,
Il vit dans sa retraite en vrai philosophe,
Quand il réfléchit sur sa conduite, il en eut honte,
C'est un homme qui cherche fortune,
Il entend malice à tout,
Ne portez envie à personne,
Si vous promettez, tenez parole,
Dans les affaires importantes ne vous décidez jamais sans prendre conseil,
Courage, soldats, tenons fermes; la victoire est à nous,
Cette femme n'a ni grâce ni beauté,

Monseigneur le duc de, &c. prince du sang, alla hier à la campagne,
Montrer tant de faiblesse, c'est n'être pas homme,
Cet homme est une espèce de misanthrope, dont les brusqueries sont quelquefois très-plaisantes,
L'ananas est une sorte de fruit très-commun aux Antilles,
C'est un genre de vie qui ne me plaît point,

Continuation of the same Phrases.

*You will find this passage at page 120, book the first, chapter the tenth.
He has retired to England. [pher.
He lives in his retreat like a real philosopher.
When he reflected on his conduct, he was ashamed of it.
He is a man that seeks to make a fortune.
He puts a malicious construction on every thing.
Envy nobody. [thing.
If you promise, keep your word.
In matters of consequence, never decide without advice.
Cheer up, soldiers, let us continue firm; the day is our own.
This woman is destitute both of grace and beauty.
The duke of, &c. a prince of the blood, went yesterday into the country.
To show so much weakness, is not acting like a man,
This man is a kind of misanthropist, whose oddities are sometimes comical.*

*The pine-apple is a kind of fruit very common in the Antilles.
It is a kind of life that is not agreeable to me.*

Continuation des mêmes Phrases.

Cette dame plaît à tout le monde par son honnêteté et sa douceur,
Tout homme a des défauts plus ou moins sensibles,
Cette conduite augmentait chaque jour le nombre de ses amis,
Tous les biens nous viennent de Dieu,
Vénus était la déesse de la beauté, et la mère de l'amour et des grâces,
Selon les païens, Jupiter était le premier des dieux,
Apollon était frère jumeau de Diane,
Rubens a été un grand peintre,
Homère et Virgile sont les deux plus grands poètes épiques,
Londres est la plus belle ville que je connaisse,
L'eau de rivière est douce, et l'eau de mer est salée,
C'est un excellent poisson de mer,
Voilà une superbe table de marbre,
L'eau de Seine est celle qu'on préfère à Paris,
Pauvreté n'est pas vice,
Citoyens, étrangers, grands, peuples, se sont montrés sensibles à cette perte,

The same Sentences continued.

*This lady pleases every one by her good breeding and mildness.
Every one has defects, more or less obvious.
This behaviour daily increased the number of his friends.
Every blessing comes from God.
Venus was the goddess of beauty, and the mother of love and the graces.
According to the heathens, Jupiter was the first of the gods.
Apollo was twin-brother to Diana.
Rubens was a great painter.
Homer and Virgil are the two greatest epic poets.
London is the finest city that I know.
River-water is sweet, and sea-water is salt.
It is an excellent sea-fish.
There is a superb marble table.
The water of the Seine is preferred at Paris.
Poverty is not a vice.
Citizens, strangers, great ones, people, have shown themselves sensible of this loss.*

Modèles de Phrases sur le pronom LE.

Est-ce là votre opinion?—Ne doutez point que ce ne la soit.
Sont-ce là vos domestiques?—Oui, ce les sont.
Mesdames, êtes-vous les étrangères qu'on m'a annoncées?—Oui, nous les sommes.

Forms of Phrases upon the pronoun LE.

*Is that your opinion?—Do not question it.
Are these your servants?—Yes, they are.
Ladies, are you the strangers that have been announced to me?—Yes, we are.*

Madame, êtes-vous la malade pour laquelle on m'a appelé ?—Oui, je la suis.
 Madame, êtes-vous la mère de cet enfant ?—Oui, je la suis.
 Mesdames, êtes-vous contentes de cette musique ?—Oui, nous le sommes.
 Elle est malheureuse, et je crains bien, qu'elle ne le soit toute la vie.
 Madame, êtes-vous mère ?—Oui, je le suis.
 Madame, êtes-vous malade ?—Oui, je le suis.
 Madame, depuis quel temps êtes-vous mariée ?—Je le suis depuis un an,
 Y a-t-il long temps que vous êtes arrivée ?—Je le suis depuis quinze jours,
 Aristote croyait que le monde était de toute éternité ; mais Platon ne le croyait pas,
 Quoique cette femme montre plus de fermeté que les autres, elle n'est pas pour cela la moins affligée,
 Cette femme a l'art de répandre des larmes dans le temps même qu'elle est le moins affligée.

Madam, are you the sick person for whom I have been called?—Yes, I am.
Madam, are you the mother of this child?—Yes, I am.
Ladies, are you pleased with this music?—Yes, we are.
She is unhappy, and I much fear she will continue so for life.
Madam, are you a mother?—Yes, I am.
Madam, are you sick?—Yes, I am.
Madam, how long have you been married?—A year.
Is it long since you arrived?—A fortnight.
Aristotle believed the world to have been from all eternity, but Plato did not.
Although this woman shows more resolution than the others, she is nevertheless not the least afflicted.
This woman has the art of shedding tears, even when she is least afflicted.

Modèles de phrases sur les différentes règles du participe passé.

Forms of Phrases upon the different rules of the participle past.

La nouvelle pièce a-t-elle été applaudie ?
 Vos parens y seront-ils arrivés à temps ?
 Elle s'est donné de belles robes,
 Elles nous ont apporté de superbes œillets,
 Cette ruse ne lui a pas réussi,
 La vie tranquille que j'ai menée depuis dix ans, a beaucoup contribué à me faire oublier mes malheurs,
 Les lettres, qui j'ai reçues, m'ont beaucoup affligé,
 Que de peines vous vous êtes données !
 Quelle tâche vous vous êtes imposée !
 C'est une satire que j'ai retrouvée dans mes papiers,
 Les lettres qu'a écrites Pline le jeune, quelque agréables qu'elles soient, se ressentent néanmoins un peu de la décadence du goût parmi les Romains,
 Je ne serais pas entré avec vous dans tous ces détails de grammaire, si je ne les avais crus nécessaires,
 L'Egypte s'était rendue célèbre par la sagesse de ses lois long-temps avant que la Grèce sortit de la barbarie,
 C'est une des plus grandes merveilles qu'on ait vues,
 L'homme de lettres, dont vous m'avez parlé, a un goût exquis,
 Vous avez très-bien instruit vos élèves,
 Lucrèce s'est donné la mort,
 La sécheresse qu'il y a eu au printemps a fait périr tous les fruits,
 Je n'ai point réussi, malgré les mesures que vous m'avez conseillé de prendre,
 Quelle aventure vous est-il arrivé ?
 Cette femme s'est proposée pour modèle à ses enfans,
 Cette femme s'est proposé d'enseigner la géographie et l'histoire à ses enfans.

Did the new piece meet with applause?
Will your relations have arrived there in time?
She has given herself fine gowns. [time?]
They have brought us beautiful pinks.
He has not succeeded in this stratagem.
The quiet life I have led these ten years has greatly contributed to make me forget my misfortunes.
The letters I have received have afflicted me greatly. [yourself!]
What a deal of trouble you have given
What a task you have imposed on yourself!
It is a satire that I have again met with in my papers.
The letters which the younger Pliny has written, however agreeable they may be, savor nevertheless a little of the decline of taste among the Romans.
I could not have entered into these grammatical details with you, had I not thought them necessary.
Egypt had become celebrated for the wisdom of its laws long before Greece had emerged from barbarism.
It is one of the greatest wonders that has ever been seen.
The man of letters you spoke to me of has an excellent taste.
You have instructed your pupils extremely
Lucretia killed herself. [well.]
The dry weather we had in the spring has destroyed all the fruit.
I have not succeeded, notwithstanding the steps you advised me to take.
What adventures have you met with?
This woman proposed herself as a model for her children.
This woman proposed to teach geography and history to her children.

Modèles de Phrases sur les principaux rapports des modes et des temps.

Forms of Phrases upon the principal relations of moods and tenses.

Je l'attendais depuis long-temps, quand il vint me joindre,
 Il sortit au moment même que j'entrais,

I had waited a long time for him, when he came to me. [ing.]
He was going out at the time I was enter-

Je commençais à avoir des craintes sur la réussite de votre affaire, lorsque j'ai reçu votre lettre,

Dès que j'eus fait quelques visites indispensables, je rentrai chez moi, et je ne sortis plus,

J'avais déjà tout préparé pour mon départ, lorsque des affaires imprévues m'ont forcé à le différer de quelques jours,

Vous étiez déjà sorti, quand je me présentai chez vous,

J'avais déjà livré à l'impression mon ouvrage, lorsque vous me demandiez, si je le donnerais bientôt au public,

Lorsque j'ai eu terminé mon affaire vous avez commencé la vôtre,

Lorsque j'eus déjeuné je montai à cheval, et je fus à Londres,

Lorsque j'aurai lu la nouvelle pièce, je vous dirai avec franchise ce que j'en pense.

Iriez-vous à Rome si vous le pouviez?—Oui, j'irais,

Auriez-vous consenti à ces conditions, si on vous les avait proposées?

Irez-vous demain à Londres, si vous le pouvez?—Oui, j'irai,

Il sera sûrement parti, si vous l'avez voulu,

Vous eussiez laissé échapper une occasion si favorable, si l'on ne vous eût averti à temps,

I was beginning to be apprehensive of the success of your business when I received your letter.

As soon as I had paid some indispensable visits, I went home, and did not go out afterwards.

I had already made every preparation for my departure, when some unexpected business occurred that obliged me to defer it for some days.

You were already gone out when I called upon you.

My work had been sent to be printed when you asked me if I should soon bring it out.

When my business was over, you began yours.

When I had done breakfast, I got on horseback, and went to London.

When I have read the new piece, I will candidly give you my opinion of it.

Would you go to Rome if it were in your power?—Yes, I would.

Would you have agreed to those terms, had they been proposed to you?

Shall you go to London to-morrow, if you can?—Yes, I shall. [wished it.

He will certainly have set out, if you

You would have let so favorable an opportunity slip, had you not been warned in time.

Continuation des mêmes Phrases.

On dit que vous partez aujourd'hui pour Paris,

Tout le monde soutient que vous accepterez la place qu'on vous offre,

On soupçonne que vous aviez hier reçu cette agréable nouvelle quand on vous rencontra,

Beaucoup de vos amis croient que vous partîtes hier pour la campagne,

Le bruit se répand que vous avez fait une grosse perte,

J'apprends dans l'instant que vous fussiez parti il y a trois jours, si des engagements, que vous aviez contractés depuis long-temps, ne vous avaient retenu,

N'est-il pas vrai que vous partiriez aujourd'hui, si vous le pouviez?

Est-il vrai que vous seriez parti depuis long-temps pour la campagne, si votre amour pour les arts ne vous avait retenu à la ville?

Je ne crois pas que vous partiez, quoique tout le monde l'assure,

Je ne croyais pas qu'il fût si-tôt de retour,

Il a fallu qu'il ait eu affaire à bien des personnes,

Je doute que votre ami fût venu à bout de ses projets, s'il n'avait pas été fortement protégé,

Il n'est point d'homme, quelque mérite qu'il ait, qui ne fût très-mortifié, s'il savait tout ce qu'on pense de lui,

Vous ne vous persuadiez pas que les affaires pussent si mal tourner,

The same Phrases continued

It is said that you set off to-day for Paris.

Every one maintains that you will accept of the place that is offered to you.

It is suspected that you had received this agreeable intelligence when you were met yesterday.

Many of your friends believe that you set out yesterday for the country.

There is a report that you have met with a considerable loss.

I have this moment learned that you would have set out three days since, had not engagements which you had formed long ago detained you.

Is it not true that you would set out to-day if you could?

Is it true that you would have set out for the country long since, had not your love for the arts detained you in town?

I do not imagine that you will set out, although every body asserts it.

I did not believe he had gone back so soon.

He must have had business with a great many persons.

I doubt that your friend would have succeeded in his plan, had he not been strongly patronized.

There is not a man, whatever merit he may possess, that would not be very much mortified were he to know every thing that is thought of him.

You never persuaded yourself that matters could have taken so unfortunate a turn.

Modèles de Phrases sur la négative NE.

Il n'y a pas beaucoup d'argent chez ces gens de lettres,

Forms of Phrases upon the negative NE.

There is not much money to be found among men of letters.

Il n'y a point de ressource dans une personne qui n'a point d'esprit,
C'est à tort que vous l'accusez de jouer ; je vous assure qu'il ne joue point,
Entrez dans le salon ; vous pourrez lui parler ; il ne joue pas,
Si pour avoir du bien, il en coûte à la probité, je n'en veux point,
Rien n'est sûr avec les capricieux ; vous croyez être bien en faveur, point du tout ; l'instant de la plus belle humeur est suivi de la plus fâcheuse,
Vous ne cessez de nous répéter les mêmes choses,
Je n'aurais osé vous en parler le premier, Malgré ses protections, il n'a pu réussir dans ses projets,
Cet ouvrage serait fort bon, n'était pour la négligence du style,
Y a-t-il quelqu'un dont elle ne médise, J'ai pris tant de goût pour une vie retirée, que je ne sors presque jamais,
Voilà ce qui s'est passé ; n'en parlez à personne,
Mon parti est pris ; ne m'en parlez plus, N'employez aucun de ces moyens : ils sont indignes de vous,
Rien n'est plus joli,
Je ne dis rien que je ne pense,
Je ne fais jamais d'excès que je n'en sois incommode,

There are no resources in a person without sense.
You accuse him wrongfully of gaming ; I assure you he never games.
Go into the room, you may speak to him ; he is not playing.
I do not wish to make a fortune, if it can only be done at the expense of honesty.
Nothing is certain with capricious people ; you think yourself in favor, by no means ; the moment of the best humor is followed by that of the worst.
You are constantly repeating the same thing to us. [speak to you of it.]
I should not have dared to be the first to
With all his interest, he has not been able to succeed in his plans.
This work would be very good, were it not for the negligence of the style.
Is there any one she does not slander ?
I have acquired so great a taste for retirement that I seldom go abroad.
This is what has passed ; do not speak of it to any one. [of it.]
My resolution is fixed ; talk to me no more
Do not employ any one of these measures ; they are unworthy of you.
Nothing is more beautiful.
I never speak but what I think.
I never commit any excess without suffering by it.

Continuation des mêmes Phrases.

C'est un homme pour qui je n'ai ni amour, ni estime,
Il n'est ni assez prudent ni assez éclairé,
Je vous assure que je ne le fréquente ni ne le vois,
Ne faire que parcourir les différentes branches des connaissances humaines sans s'arrêter à aucune, c'est moins chercher à s'instruire, qu'à tuer le temps,
Que n'êtes-vous toujours aussi complaisant ?
Il ne le fera pas, à moins que vous ne l'y engagiez,
Il n'ira pas, si vous ne l'en priez,
Il nous a menacés de se venger ; nous n'avons fait qu'en rire,
Trop d'insouciance ne peut que nuire,
Que devenez-vous ? il y a trois mois que nous ne vous avons vu ?
Comment vous êtes-vous porté depuis que nous ne vous avons vu ?
C'est bien pire qu'on ne le disait,
Peu s'en faut que je n'aie donné tête baissée dans le piège,
Dites la vérité en toute occasion ; on méprise toujours ceux qui parlent autrement qu'ils ne pensent,
Ne désespérez pas que la vérité ne se fasse jour à la longue, [ainsi,
Je ne disconviens pas que la chose ne soit
Prenez garde qu'on ne vous entraîne dans quelque fausse démarche,
J'empêcherai bien qu'on ne vous nuise dans cette affaire,
Il craint qu'on ne le soupçonne d'avoir trempé dans ce complot,
On lui a donné d'excellens conseils, de crainte qu'il ne manquât l'occasion de faire connaître ce qu'il est en état de faire,

Continuation of the same Phrases.

He is a man for whom I have neither love nor esteem. [lightened.]
He is neither sufficiently prudent nor enlightened.
I assure you I neither associate with him nor see him.
To go through the different branches of human knowledge only, without fixing upon any one of them, is not to seek for instruction, but to kill time.
Why are you not at all times equally complaisant ?
He will not do it unless you persuade him to it. [him.]
He will not go, if you do not request it of him.
He has threatened us with vengeance ; we only laughed at him.
Too great supineness cannot but be hurtful.
What had become of you ? we have not seen you these three months.
How have you been since we saw you ?
It is much worse than was said.
I was near running headlong into the snare.
Tell the truth on all occasions : those who speak what they do not think are always despised.
Do not despair that truth will appear in time.
I admit that it is so.
Take care that you are not led into some false step.
I shall prevent them from doing you any harm in this business.
He is apprehensive that he is suspected of being concerned in this plot.
They have given him excellent advice, lest he should lose the opportunity of showing what he was capable of doing.

J'y ai long-temps travaillé ; je ne saurais
en venir à bout,
Vous feriez mieux de vous taire ; vous ne
savez ce que vous dites, [plaisir,
Vous ne sauriez me faire un plus grand

*I have been long employed about it ; I
cannot accomplish it.
You had better be silent ; you do not know
what you are saying.
You cannot do me a greater favor.*

*Phrases sur quelques Délicatesses
de la Langue Française.*

Irez-vous ce soir à l'opéra ?—Oui, j'irai,
Iriez-vous avec plaisir à Rome ?—Oui,
j'irais,
La justice qui nous est quelquefois refusée
par nos contemporains, la postérité sait
nous la rendre,
Cette grandeur qui vous étonne si fort, il
la doit à votre nonchalance,
Il périt, ce héros, si cher à son pays,
Je l'avais bien prévu que ce haut degré de
grandeur serait la cause de sa ruine,
Citoyens, étrangers, ennemis, peuples, rois,
empereurs, le plaignent et le révèrent,
L'assemblée finie, chacun se retira chez
soi,
Heureux le peuple qu'un sage roi gouverne,
Il refusa les plus grands honneurs, content
de les mériter,
Prières, remontrances, commandemens,
tout est inutile,
Le vent renverse tours, cabanes, palais,
églises,
Notre réputation ne dépend pas du caprice
des hommes ; mais elle dépend des ac-
tions louables que nous faisons,
Il y a beaucoup de choses qu'il n'importe
point du tout de savoir,
La vue de l'esprit a plus d'étendue que la
vue du corps,
Ce qui sert à la vanité, n'est que vanité,
Tout ce qui n'a que le monde pour fonde-
ment, se dissipe et s'évanouit avec le
monde,
C'est le privilège des grands hommes de
vaincre l'envie ; le mérite la fait naître,
le mérite la fait mourir,
L'amour-propre est plus habile que le plus
habile homme du monde,
En quittant le monde, on ne quitte le plus
souvent ni les erreurs, ni les folles pas-
sions du monde.

*Phrases on some Delicacies of the
French Language.*

*Shall you go to the opera this evening ?—
Yes, I shall.
Would you cheerfully go to Rome ?—Yes,
I would.
Posterity knows how to do us that justice
which is sometimes refused us by our
contemporaries.
That greatness which so much astonishes
you, he owes to your indifference.
That hero, so dear to his country, perished.
I foresaw that the greatness of his eleva-
tion would be his ruin.
Citizens, strangers, enemies, nations,
kings, emperors, pity and respect him.
The assembly being over, each returned
home. [by a wise king.
Happy are the people who are governed
He refused the greatest honors, satisfied
with having deserved them.
Entreaties, remonstrances, injunctions,
are all useless.
The wind overturns towers, cottages, pa-
laces, churches.
Our reputation does not depend on the
caprice of men, but on the commendable
actions we perform.
There are many things which it is of no
consequence at all to know.
The eye of the mind reaches much farther
than the bodily eye.
What promotes vanity is only vanity.
All that is confined to this lower world
disperses and vanishes with the world.
It is the prerogative of great men to con-
quer envy ; merit gives it birth and
merit destroys it.
Self-love is more ingenious than the most
ingenious man in the world.
In renouncing the world, we generally
renounce neither the errors nor giddy
passions of the world.*

THE END.

Of Verbs.

1. A verb is a word which expresses what is affirmed of persons, animals, things, etc.

2. *Or, as it is more commonly defined*, a verb is a word, or that part of speech which signifies *to do, to be, or to suffer*.

3. When we say *John is polite*, we affirm that the quality *polite*, belongs to *John*. When we say *John is not polite*, we also affirm that the quality *polite*, does not belong to *John*—in both sentences, the word *is*, which expresses that affirmation, is a verb.

Of the different sorts of French Verbs.

4. There are in French seven sorts of verbs:—the auxiliary verb—the active verb—the neuter verb—the passive verb—the reflected verb—the reciprocal verb—and the unipersonal, or impersonal verb.

Of Auxiliary Verbs.

5. A verb is *auxiliary* when it serves to conjugate some of the tenses of other verbs.

6. In French there are but two auxiliary verbs, *Avoir* to have, and *Etre* to be.

7. *Avoir*, is sometimes an auxiliary verb, and sometimes an irregular active verb of the third conjugation.

8. *Avoir* to have, is an auxiliary verb whenever it is used to conjugate the compound tenses of another verb, as: *vous avez parlé* you have spoken, &c. When auxiliary, it is always followed by the participle past of some other verb.

9. *Avoir* to have, is an active verb, whenever it is used to indicate the possession of any thing—as, *vous avez une pomme* you have an apple, &c.

10. *Avoir* to have, is used as an auxiliary verb—1st, to all the active verbs, and 2d, to upward of six hundred neuter verbs.

11. *Etre* to be, is sometimes an auxiliary verb and sometimes an irregular neuter verb of the fourth conjugation. It is also called substantive verb.

12. *Etre* to be, is an auxiliary verb, whenever it is used to conjugate the compound tenses of another verb—as, *je suis frappé* I am struck, &c. When auxiliary it is always followed by the participle past of some other verb.

13. *Etre* to be, is a neuter verb whenever it is used to indicate the state of any person or thing—as, *je suis ici* I am here—*cette table est ronde* this table is round, &c.

14. *Etre* to be, is used as an auxiliary verb—1st, To a few neuter verbs, the list of which may be found in page 160.—2d, To all the passive verbs—and 3d, To all the reflected and reciprocal verbs, although these two last kinds of verbs are conjugated with *to have* in English.

Of Active Verbs.

15. A verb is *active* in French when it expresses that an agent called nominative, or subject, performs an action on an object, or regimen, without the help of a preposition—as, *Jean frappe Joseph* John strikes Joseph, &c.

Of Neuter Verbs.

16. A verb is *neuter* in French—1st, When it expresses that an agent called nominative, or subject, performs an action, that either is, or can be directed towards an object or regimen, with the help of a preposition—as, *Jean parle à Joseph* John speaks to Joseph. 2d, When it expresses the state, situation, or manner of being, or existing, of the nominative or subject—as, *je dors* I sleep—*Jean est ici* John is here, &c.

17. NOTE—The words *active* and *neuter*, applied to verbs, do not mean that an active verb expresses action, and that a neuter verb expresses inaction. For *chanter* to sing, which is an active verb, does not express so much action as *courir* to run, which is a neuter verb. It means that the verbs called active, are those after which *une personne* a person—or *une chose* a thing; can be put as an object or regimen, without a preposition—as, *frapper une personne* to strike a person—*frapper une chose* to strike a thing; whereas the verbs called *neuter*, are those after which *une personne* a person—or *une chose* a thing; cannot be put as an object or regimen without a preposition, being either expressed or understood—as, *courir à une personne* to run to a person; in English the preposition is often understood—as, *to run an hour* meaning *to run during an hour*. Some neuter verbs, those that express the state of the nominative, or subject, admit of no object or regimen, either with or without a preposition—as, *je dors* I sleep—*je suis* I am. The best division of verbs, I think, is that of Mr. Noah Webster, in his Dictionary, who divides them into transitive and intransitive; but I could not for the French adopt this division, which would confuse the pupil, whose French Dictionary would not be on that plan.

Of Passive Verbs.

18. A verb is *passive* in French, when it indicates that the nominative, or subject, bears the effect of another's action—as, *Jean fut frappé par Joseph* John was struck by Joseph—*Jean fut tué par une balle* John was killed by a ball.

19. The passive verbs in French, as in English, are formed with the help of the different tenses and persons of the auxiliary verb, *Etre* to be; to which is joined the participle past, of the verb to be conjugated—as, *je suis frappé* I am struck—*il sera vendu* it will be sold, &c.

20. All the French active verbs may be employed in the passive voice, except *avoir* to have.

21. In French the passive voice of verbs is but very seldom used, we generally make use of the active voice ; for instance, instead of saying *Jean fut frappé par Joseph* John was struck by Joseph—we would more readily say, *Joseph frappa Jean* Joseph struck John, &c.

22. Properly speaking, there are no passive verbs in French; for *être frappé* to be struck—*je suis frappé* I am struck; is no more a passive verb than *être malade* to be sick—*je suis malade* I am sick, &c.

Of Reflected Verbs.

23. A verb is *reflected* when it expresses an action which falls on the nominative, or subject—as, *je me flatte* I flatter myself, &c.

Of Reciprocal Verbs.

24. A verb is *reciprocal* when it expresses that two or more nominatives, or subjects act upon each other—as, *Jean et Joseph s'aiment* John and Joseph love one another—*Jean, Joseph, et Paul s'aiment* John, Joseph, and Paul love each other, &c.

Of Unipersonal or Impersonal Verbs.

25. A verb is *unipersonal* or *impersonal* when it expresses what happens—as, *il pleut* it rains—*il arriva* it happened, &c.

26. They are called by some *unipersonal*, because they are only used in one person; the third person singular.

27. They are called by others *impersonal*, because the acts indicated by them, are attributed to no person.

Division of the Verbs.

28. The above seven different sorts of verbs, are divided into regular, and irregular, perfect, and defective verbs.

Of Regular Verbs.

29. *Regular Verbs* are those whose tenses are conjugated in a uniform manner, according to some general standard.

Of Irregular Verbs.

30. *Irregular Verbs* are those which deviate, in the conjugation of their tenses, from the general standard, given for the conjugation of regular verbs.

Of Perfect Verbs.

31. *Perfect Verbs* have all their moods, tenses, and persons.

Of Defective Verbs.

32. *Defective Verbs* are those which want some of their moods, tenses, or persons.

Conjugation of Verbs.

33. To *conjugate a verb*, is to write or rehearse it, with all its different inflections, through every *mood, tense, number, and person*.

Of Moods.

34. *Mood*, signifies manner. We call moods the different manners of using a verb, in order to express the different ways in which an action is performed, or suffered.

35. A *verb* may be used in French in five different manners, namely, in an *indefinite, positive, conditional, imperative, and subordinate* manner ; which constitute five moods in verbs, called the *infinitive mood*, the *indicative mood*, the *conditional mood*, the *imperative mood*, and the *subjunctive mood*.

36. The *Infinitive mood*, is so called, because it expresses an action in an *indefinite* manner, without any reference to number or person—as, *chanter* to sing—*punir* to punish.

37. The *Indicative mood*, affirms in a direct, positive, and absolute manner, that a thing is or is not, without depending on any other word, whatever may be the time to which the affirmative relates—as, *je connais ces dames* I know these ladies—*j'ai vu ces dames* I have seen these ladies—*je ne porterai pas ce livre* I will not carry this book, &c.

38. The *Conditional mood*, denotes that a thing or an action would take place, or would have taken place, depending on a condition—as, *je vous rendrais service si je le pouvais* I would render you service if I could—*je vous aurais rendu service si je l'avais pu* I would have rendered you service if I had been able, &c.

39. The *Imperative mood*, is used for either commanding, exhorting, entreating, or permitting—as, *venez ici* come here—*faites cela* do that—*permettez-moi de sortir* allow me to go out, &c.

40. The *Subjunctive mood*, represents a person or a thing, under a condition, motive, wish, or supposition, and is dependant on a conjunction—as, *je souhaite qu'il vienne* I wish (*that*) he may come, &c. In English the conjunction is often understood.

Of Tenses.

41. *Tenses* indicate whether an action, is doing, has been done, or will be done : hence three tenses, the *present*, the

past, and the *future*. These tenses have been subdivided, to mark their difference with accuracy.

42. The tenses of verbs are divided into simple and compound.

43. *Simple tenses* are those which are conjugated without the help of either the auxiliary, *Avoir* to have, or *Etre* to be.

44. *Compound tenses*, (which have also other names, which indicate more clearly their use,) are those which are formed with the help of either the auxiliary, *Avoir* to have, or *Etre* to be; to which the past participle of the verb to be conjugated, is joined.

Names and Number of Tenses in each Mood.

45. The *Infinitive mood* has five tenses;
The present, (*which is the root of the verb*),
The past or perfect, (*or compound of the present*),
The participle present or active,
The compound of the participle present, and
The participle past or passive.

46. The *Indicative mood* has eight tenses;
The present,
The perfect or preterit indefinite, (*or compound of the present*),
The imperfect,
The pluperfect, (*or compound of the imperfect*),
The preterit definite,
The preterit anterior, (*or compound of the preterit definite*),
The future absolute, and
The future anterior, (*or compound of the future absolute*).

47. The *Conditional mood* has two tenses;
The present, and
The past, (*or compound of the present*).

48. The *Imperative mood* has but one tense, which is at once *present* and *future*. *Present* with respect to the action of commanding, and *future* with respect to the thing enjoined.

49. The *Subjunctive mood* has four tenses;
The present or future,
The preterit or past, (*or compound of the present*),
The imperfect, and
The pluperfect, (*or compound of the imperfect*).

Of Numbers.

50. Number, is the form which verbs assume, to denote their agreement with their nominatives.

51. There are *two numbers* in every tense : the *singular*, which is employed when only one thing, or one person is mentioned—as, *la maison tombe* the house is falling—*Joseph parle* Joseph speaks. And the *plural*, which is employed when more than one thing, or more than one person are mentioned—as, *les maisons tombent* the houses are falling—*Joseph et Jean parlent* Joseph and John speak.

Of Persons.

52. Each number has three persons.

First Person.

53. The first person is the *person who speaks*, or the *persons who speak* ; it is designated by *je* I, in the singular—as, *je pense* I think ; and by *nous* we, in the plural—as, *nous pensons* we think.

Second Person.

54. The second person is the *person spoken to*, or the *persons spoken to* ; it is expressed by *tu* thou, for the singular—as, *tu penses* thou thinkest ; and by *vous* you, for the plural—as, *vous pensez* you think.

55. When in speaking to *one* person, we wish to be polite and respectful ; custom has established in modern languages that the second person plural be used instead of the second person singular : thus, for instance, a person speaking to Mr. A..., instead of saying *tu es ici* thou art here—will say *vous êtes ici* you are here ; as he would if he was speaking to several persons.

56. When one person only is spoken to, if an adjective comes after the verb, that adjective is put in the singular, although, through politeness and custom, the verb be in the plural : thus in speaking to Mr. A..., I shall say *vous êtes fort* you are strong—whereas in speaking to several persons, the adjective will be in the plural ; speaking to Messrs A... and B..., I shall say *vous êtes forts* you are strong.

57. When in addressing ourselves to a person, politeness or respect induces us to use a dignifying expression, instead of a personal pronoun of the second person, the verb as well as what relates to that expression, is put in the third person : for instance, instead of saying *Monsieur avez-vous eu la bonté de penser à ce que vous m'avez promis*, we say *Monsieur a-t-il eu la bonté de penser à ce qu'il m'a promis* ? Have you been so kind, Sir, as to think of what you promised me ? The literal translation of the French is : Sir has he had the goodness to think to what he has promised me.

Third Person.

58. The third person, is the *person spoken of* or *the persons spoken of*; it is expressed by *il* he or it; or *elle* she or it, for the singular, or by any noun in the singular—as, *il parle* he speaks—*elle parle* she speaks—*l'homme parle* man speaks. And by *ils* they—*elles* they, or any noun in the plural—as, *ils parlent* they speak—*elles parlent* they speak—*les hommes parlent* men speak.

Different Ways of Conjugating Verbs.

59. There are four ways of conjugating verbs:—1st, *Affirmatively*; 2d, *Negatively*; 3d, *Interrogatively*; 4th, *Negatively and Interrogatively*.

First Way.

60. *Affirmatively*. When verbs are preceded by their nominatives or subjects, and used without any negation, they are said to be conjugated *affirmatively*—as, *je parle* I speak—*tu parles* thou speakest, &c.

Second Way.

61. *Negatively*. Verbs are conjugated *negatively*, by placing *ne* immediately after the nominative or subject of the verb; and *pas* after the verb, in simple tenses—as, *je ne parle pas* I speak not, &c. In compound tenses, *ne* is placed as in the simple tenses, after the nominative or subject of the verb; but *pas* is placed between the auxiliary and the participle past, of the verb—as, *je n'ai pas parlé* I have not spoken. *Ne* and *pas* are generally placed together, before the infinitive present—as, *ne pas parler* not to speak; however a few writers place *ne* before the infinitive present, and *pas* after; *ne parler pas* not to speak.

Third Way.

62. *Interrogatively*. Verbs are conjugated *interrogatively* in French, by placing the pronoun, which is the nominative or subject of the verb, after the verb, in simple tenses; the pronoun must be joined to the verb by a hyphen—as, *parlé-je* do I speak—*parles-tu* dost thou speak—*parle-t-il* does he speak, &c. In compound tenses, the pronoun must be placed after the auxiliary, that is, between the auxiliary and the participle past of the verb; the pronoun must also be joined to the auxiliary by a hyphen—as, *ai-je parlé* have I spoken—*as-tu parlé* hast thou spoken—*a-t-il parlé* has he spoken, &c.

63. When a noun instead of a personal pronoun is the nominative of the verb, in the interrogative sentence, this noun, subject of the question, is placed before the verb; and either of the pronouns *il*, *elle*, *ils*, or *elles*, according to the gender and number of the noun, is added and placed after the verb in simple tenses, joined to it by a hyphen; and in compound tenses, after the auxiliary, joined to it by a hyphen.

Example in Simple Tenses.

Mon frère sait-il ? I I
My brother knows he?

Meaning Does my brother know?

Example in Compound Tenses.

Mes frères avaient-ils chanté? My brothers had they sung?

Meaning Had my brothers sung?

Observations.

64. 1st, The first person of the present of the indicative mood, ending with *e* mute, (see page 44 ,) in all the verbs of the first conjugation, and in about fifteen of the irregular verbs of the second, we are obliged, to avoid a disagreeable sound, to put an *acute accent* on the *e* mute, when used *interrogatively*—as, *je parle* I speak—*parlé-je* do I speak—*j'ouvre* I open—*ouvert-je* do I open, &c.

65. 2d, When the first person singular of the present of the indicative, of any verb, has only one syllable, we cannot use it *interrogatively*; thus, we cannot say, *vends-je* do I sell—*prends-je* do I take, &c. We have recourse to a different expression, we say, *est-ce que je vends* do I sell—*est-ce que je prends* do I take, &c. The only exceptions that custom authorises—are, *fais-je* do I do—*dis-je* do I say—*dois-je* do I owe—*vois-je* do I see—*ai-je* have I—and *vais-je* do I go.

66. 3d, When the third person singular of any tense, ends with *e* or *a*, we are obliged, to avoid a disagreeable sound, to put a *t* between two hyphens: thus, *-t-*, between the verb and the pronoun, *il* or *elle*—as, *a-t-il* has he—*a-t-elle* has she—*parle-t-il* does he speak—*parle-t-elle* does she speak, &c.

67. 4th, The imperative mood, and the subjunctive mood, cannot be used *interrogatively*; we however, can say, in the present of the subjunctive, *puissé-je* may I; and in the imperfect of the subjunctive, *dussé-je* were I obliged to.

Fourth Way.

68. *Negatively and Interrogatively.* Verbs are conjugated negatively and interrogatively, in French, by placing in simple tenses *ne* before the verb, the subject or nominative pronoun, after the verb, joined to it by a hyphen, and *pas* after the pronoun—as, *ne parlé-je pas ?* do I not speak ? &c. And in compound tenses, by placing *ne* before the verb, the subject or nominative pronoun, after the auxiliary ; and *pas* after the pronoun ; then comes the participle past of the verb, to be conjugated, which comes last, *n'ai-je pas parlé ?* have I not spoken ? &c.

69. When a noun instead of a personal pronoun, is the nominative of the verb, in a sentence both negative and interrogative, this noun, subject of the question, is placed before the verb, and either of the pronouns, *il*, *elle*, *ils*, or *elles*, is added, and placed after the verb in simple tenses, joined to it by a hyphen; and in compound tenses, after the auxiliary, joined to it by a hyphen.

Example in Simple Tenses.

Ma sœur ne sait-elle pas ? My sister knows she not ?
Meaning Does not my sister know ?

Meaning Does not my sister know?

Example in Compound Tenses.

Mes sœurs n'avaient-elles pas } *My sisters had they not sung?*
chanté?

Meaning Had not my sisters sung?

70. The four observations made with regard to the conjugation of verbs interrogatively, apply also to verbs conjugated both negatively and interrogatively.

Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verbs.

71. The auxiliary verbs *avoir* to have, and *être* to be, being used in the formation of the compound tenses of all the other verbs, it will be proper to begin by their conjugation.

72. *Avoir* to have, is employed as an auxiliary, to conjugate its own compound tenses—so that any compound tenses of *avoir* to have, is one of its simple tenses, to which the participle past has been added ; thus the preterit indefinite, (*or compound of the present*,) is formed with the present indicative, *j'ai* I have, to which the participle past, *eu* had, is added—*j'ai eu* I have had—*tu as eu* thou hast had, &c.; and so on of the other compound tenses.

73. The compound tenses of *être* to be, are formed with the help of *avoir* to have, so that any compound tense of *être* to be, is composed of a simple tense of *avoir* to have, to which the participle past of *être* to be, is added; thus the preterit indefinite, (or compound of the present,) is formed with the present indicative, *j'ai* I have, of *avoir* to have, to which the participle past, *été* been, of *être* to be, is added; *j'ai été* I have been—*tu as été* thou hast been, &c.; and so on, of the other compound tenses.

74. Observe that the terminations of the imperfects, and of the conditionals, which are now generally spelt *ais, ais, ait, aient*, in all verbs, were formerly, and are still now, by a few writers, spelt *ois, ois, oit, oient*. Both ways are pronounced alike, but the new spelling is nearer the pronunciation than the old one.

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too, fool.

†CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

AVOIR to have. (Affirmatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESSENT.	
avoir	to have	a voir
-B-	PAST or PERFECT, or compound of the present.	
avoir eu	to have had	a voi ru
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT or ACTIVE.	
ayant	having	é yan
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.	
ayant eu	having had	é yan tu
-E-	PARTICIPLE PAST or PERFECT or PASSIVE.	
eu, m. s. eue, f. s. eus, m. p. eues, f. p.	had	u

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESSENT.	
J'ai	I have	jé
tu as	thou hast	tu a
il a	he has	i la
nous avons	we have	nou za von
vous avez	you have	vou za vé
ils ont	they have	il zon
-G-	PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE, or compound of the present.	
J'ai eu	I have had	jé u
tu as eu	thou hast had	tu a zu
il a eu	he has had	i la u
nous avons eu	we have had	nou za von zu
vous avez eu	you have had	vou za vé zu
ils ont eu	they have had	il zon tu
-H-	IMPERFECT.	
J'avais	I had	ja vè
tu avais	thou hadst	tu a vè
il avait	he had	i la vè
nous avions	we had	nou za vi on
vous aviez	you had	vou za vi é
ils avaient	they had	il za vè
-I-	PLUPERFECT, or compound of the imperfect.	
J'avais eu	I had had	ja vè zu
tu avais eu	thou hadst had	tu a vè zu
il avait eu	he had had	i la vè tu
nous avions eu	we had had	nou za vi on zu
vous aviez eu	you had had	vou za vi é zu
ils avaient eu	they had had	il za vè tu

†See page 1, art. 7.

³mur. m^or. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre, ingrat. onde, un, amen.
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

J'eus	<i>I had</i>	ju
tu eus	<i>thou hadst</i>	tu u
il eut	<i>he had</i>	i lu
nous eûmes	<i>we had</i>	nou zum
vous eûtes	<i>you had</i>	vou zut
ils eurent	<i>they had</i>	il zur

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

J'eus eu	<i>I had had</i>	ju zu
tu eus eu	<i>thou hadst had</i>	tu u zu
il eut eu	<i>he had had</i>	i lu tu
nous eûmes eu	<i>we had had</i>	nou zum zu
vous eûtes eu	<i>you had had</i>	vou zut zu
ils eurent eu	<i>they had had</i>	il zur tu

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

J'aurai	<i>I shall or will have</i>	jo ré
tu auras	<i>thou shalt or wilt have</i>	tu o rà
il aura	<i>he shall or will have</i>	i lo ra
nous aurons	<i>we shall or will have</i>	nou zo ron
vous aurez	<i>you shall or will have</i>	vou zo ré
ils auront	<i>they shall or will have</i>	il zo ron

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

J'aurai eu	<i>I shall or will have had</i>	jo ré u
tu auras eu	<i>thou shalt or wilt have had</i>	tu o rà zu
il aura eu	<i>he shall or will have had</i>	i lo ra u
nous aurons eu	<i>we shall or will have had</i>	nou zo ron zu
vous aurez eu	<i>you shall or will have had</i>	vou zo ré zu
ils auront eu	<i>they shall or will have had</i>	il zo ron tu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

J'aurais	<i>I should, would, could, or might have</i>	jo rè
tu aurais	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst have</i>	tu o rè
il aurait	<i>he should, would, could, or might have</i>	i lo rè
nous aurions	<i>we should, would, could, or might have</i>	nou zo ri on
vous auriez	<i>you should, would, could, or might have</i>	vou zo ri é
ils auraient	<i>they should, would, could, or might have</i>	il zo rè

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

J'aurais eu,	<i>I should, would, could,</i>	jo rè zu
or j'eusse eu	<i>or might have had</i>	jus u
tu aurais eu,	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst,</i>	tu o rè zu
or tu eusses eu	<i>couldst, or mightst have had</i>	tu us zu
il aurait eu,	<i>he should, would, could,</i>	i lo rè tu
or il eût eu	<i>or might have had</i>	i lu tu
nous aurions eu,	<i>we should, would, could,</i>	nou zo ri on zu
or nous eussions eu	<i>or might have had</i>	nou zu si on zu
vous auriez eu,	<i>you should, would, could,</i>	vou zo ri é zu
or vous eussiez eu	<i>or might have had</i>	vou zu si é zu
ils auraient eu,	<i>they should, would, could,</i>	il zo rè tu
or ils eussent eu	<i>or might have had</i>	il zus tu

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

aie	<i>have (thou)</i>	è
qu'il ait	<i>let him have</i>	ki lè
ayons	<i>let us have</i>	é yon
ayez	<i>have (you)</i>	é yé
qu'ils aient	<i>let them have</i>	kil zè

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que j'aie	<i>that I may have</i>	ke jè
que tu aies	<i>that thou mayst have</i>	ke tu è
qu'il ait	<i>that he may have</i>	ki lè
que nous ayons	<i>that we may have</i>	ke nou zé yon
que vous ayez	<i>that you may have</i>	ke vou zé yé
qu'ils aient	<i>that they may have</i>	kil zè

-R-

PRETERIT OR PAST,

or compound of the present.

Que j'aie eu	<i>that I may have had</i>	ke jè u
que tu aies eu	<i>that thou mayst have had</i>	ke tu è zu
qu'il ait eu	<i>that he may have had</i>	ki lè tu
que nous ayons eu	<i>that we may have had</i>	ke nou zé yon zu
que vous ayez eu	<i>that you may have had</i>	ke vou zé yé zu
qu'ils aient eu	<i>that they may have had</i>	kil zè tu

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que j'eusse	<i>that I might have</i>	ke jus
que tu eusses	<i>that thou mightst have</i>	ke tu us
qu'il eût	<i>that he might have</i>	ki lu
que nous eussions	<i>that we might have</i>	ke nou zu si on
que vous eussiez	<i>that you might have</i>	ke vou zu si é
qu'ils eussent	<i>that they might have</i>	kil zus

-T-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Que j'eusse eu	<i>that I might have had</i>	ke jus u
que tu eusses eu	<i>that thou mightst have had</i>	ke tu us zu
qu'il eût eu	<i>that he might have had</i>	ki lu tu
que nous eussions eu	<i>that we might have had</i>	ke nou zu si on zu
que vous eussiez eu	<i>that you might have had</i>	ke vou zu si é zu
qu'ils eussent eu	<i>that they might have had</i>	kil zus tu

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîtte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

AVOIR to have (Negatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.	
ne pas avoir	not to have	ne pâ za voir
-B-	PAST or PERFECT, or compound of the present.	
n'avoir pas eu	not to have had	na voir pâ zu
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT or ACTIVE.	
n'ayant pas	not having	né yan pâ
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.	
n'ayant pas eu	having not had	né yan pâ zu

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
Je n'ai pas	I have not	je né pâ
tu n'as pas	thou hast not	tu nâ pâ
il n'a pas	he has not	il na pâ
nous n'avons pas	we have not	nou na von pâ
vous n'avez pas	you have not	vou na vé pâ
ils n'ont pas	they have not	il non pâ
-G-	PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE, or compound of the present.	
Je n'ai pas eu	I have not had	je né pâ zu
tu n'as pas eu	thou hast not had	tu nâ pâ zu
il n'a pas eu	he has not had	il na pâ zu
nous n'avons pas eu	we have not had	nou na von pâ zu
vous n'avez pas eu	you have not had	vou na vé pâ zu
ils n'ont pas eu	they have not had	il non pâ zu
-H-	IMPERFECT.	
Je n'avais pas	I had not	je na vè pâ
tu n'avais pas	thou hadst not	tu na vè pâ
il n'avait pas	he had not	il na vè pâ
nous n'avions pas	we had not	nou na vi on pâ
vous n'aviez pas	you had not	vou na vi é pâ
ils n'avaient pas	they had not	il na vè pâ
-I-	PLUPERFECT, or compound of the imperfect.	
Je n'avais pas eu	I had not had	je na vè pâ zu
tu n'avais pas eu	thou hadst not had	tu na vè pâ zu
il n'avait pas eu	he had not had	il na vè pâ zu
nous n'avions pas eu	we had not had	nou na vi on pâ zu
vous n'aviez pas eu	you had not had	vou na vi é pâ zu
ils n'avaient pas eu	they had not had	il na vè pâ zu

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouîte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too, fool.

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je n'eus pas	<i>I had not</i>	je nu pâ
tu n'eus pas	<i>thou hadst not</i>	tu nu pâ
il n'eut pas	<i>he had not</i>	il nu pâ
nous n'eûmes pas	<i>we had not</i>	nou num pâ
vous n'eûtes pas	<i>you had not</i>	vou nut pâ,
ils n'eurent pas	<i>they had not</i>	il nur pâ

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je n'eus pas eu	<i>I had not had</i>	je nu pâ zu
tu n'eus pas eu	<i>thou hadst not had</i>	tu nu pâ zu
il n'eut pas eu	<i>he had not had</i>	il nu pâ zu
nous n'eûmes pas eu	<i>we had not had</i>	nou num pâ zu
vous n'eûtes pas eu	<i>you had not had</i>	vou nut pâ zu
ils n'eurent pas eu	<i>they had not had</i>	il nur pâ zu

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je n'aurai pas	<i>I shall or will not have</i>	je no ré pâ
tu n'auras pas	<i>thou shalt or wilt not have</i>	tu no râ pâ
il n'aura pas	<i>he shall or will not have</i>	il no ra pâ
nous n'aurons pas	<i>we shall or will not have</i>	nou no ron pâ
vous n'aurez pas	<i>you shall or will not have</i>	vou no ré pâ
ils n'auront pas	<i>they shall or will not have</i>	il no ron pâ

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je n'aurai pas eu	<i>I shall or will not have had</i>	je no ré pâ zu
tu n'auras pas eu	<i>thou shalt or wilt not have had</i>	tu no râ pâ zu
il n'aura pas eu	<i>he shall or will not have had</i>	il no ra pâ zu
nous n'aurons pas eu	<i>we shall or will not have had</i>	nou no ron pâ zu
vous n'aurez pas eu	<i>you shall or will not have had</i>	vou no ré pâ zu
ils n'auront pas eu	<i>they shall or will not have had</i>	il no ron pâ zu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Je n'aurais pas	<i>I should, would, could, or might not have</i>	je no rè pâ
tu n'aurais pas	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst not have</i>	tu no rè pâ
il n'aurait pas	<i>he should, would, could, or might not have</i>	il no rè pâ
nous n'aurions pas	<i>we should, would, could, or might not have</i>	nou no ri on pâ
vous n'auriez pas	<i>you should, would, could, or might not have</i>	vou no ri é pâ
ils n'auraient pas	<i>they should, would, could, or might not have</i>	il no rè pâ

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre, ingrat. onde. un, amen.
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

Je n'aurais pas eu,	<i>I should, would, could,</i>	je no rè pâ zu
or je n'eusse pas eu	<i>or might not have had</i>	je nus pâ zu
tu n'aurais pas eu,	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,</i>	tu no rè pâ zu
or tu n'eusses pas eu	<i>or mightst not have had</i>	tu nus pâ zu
il n'aurait pas eu,	<i>he should, would, could,</i>	il no rè pâ zu
or il n'eût pas eu	<i>or might not have had</i>	il nu pâ zu
nous n'aurions pas eu,	<i>we should, would, could,</i>	nou no ri on pâ zu
or nous n'eussions pas eu	<i>or might not have had</i>	nou nu si on pâ zu
vous n'auriez pas eu,	<i>you should, would, could,</i>	vou no ri é pâ zu
or vous n'eussiez pas eu	<i>or might not have had</i>	vou nu si é pâ zu
ils n'auraient pas eu,	<i>they should, would could,</i>	il no rè pâ zu
or ils n'eussent pas eu	<i>or might not have had</i>	il nus pâ zu

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

n'aie pas	<i>have not (thou)</i>	nè pâ
qu'il n'ait pas	<i>let him not have</i>	kil nè pâ
n'ayons pas	<i>let us not have</i>	né yon pâ
n'ayez pas	<i>have not (you)</i>	né yé pâ
qu'ils n'aient pas	<i>let them not have</i>	kil nè pâ

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je n'aie pas	<i>that I may</i>	} <i>not have</i>	kej nè pâ
que tu n'aies pas	<i>that thou mayst</i>		ke tu nè pâ
qu'il n'ait pas	<i>that he may</i>		kil nè pâ
que nous n'ayons pas	<i>that we may</i>		ke nou né yon pâ
que vous n'ayez pas	<i>that you may</i>		ke vou né yé pâ
qu'ils n'aient pas	<i>that they may</i>		kil nè pâ

-R-

PRETERIT or PAST,

or compound of the present,

Que je n'aie pas eu	<i>that I may</i>	} <i>not have had</i>	kej nè pâ zu
que tu n'aies pas eu	<i>that thou mayst</i>		ke tu nè pâ zu
qu'il n'ait pas eu	<i>that he may</i>		kil nè pâ zu
que nous n'ayons pas eu	<i>that we may</i>		ke nou né yon pâ zu
que vous n'ayez pas eu	<i>that you may</i>		ke vou né yé pâ zu
qu'ils n'aient pas eu	<i>that they may</i>		kil nè pâ zu

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je n'eusse pas	<i>that I might</i>	} <i>not have</i>	kej nus pâ
que tu n'eusses pas	<i>that thou mightst</i>		ke tu nus pâ
qu'il n'eût pas	<i>that he might</i>		kil nu pâ
que nous n'eussions pas	<i>that we might</i>		ke nou nu si on pâ
que vous n'eussiez pas	<i>that you might</i>		ke vou nu si é pâ
qu'ils n'eussent pas	<i>that they might</i>		kil nus pâ

-T-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Que je n'eusse pas eu	<i>that I might</i>	} <i>not have had</i>	kej nus pâ zu
que tu n'eusses pas eu	<i>that thou mightst</i>		ke tu nus pâ zu
qu'il n'eût pas eu	<i>that he might</i>		kil nu pâ zu
que nous n'eussions pas eu	<i>that we might</i>		ke nou nu si on pâ zu
que vous n'eussiez pas eu	<i>that you might</i>		ke vou nu si é pâ zu
qu'ils n'eussent pas eu	<i>that they might</i>		kil nus pâ zu

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

AVOIR *to have.* (Interrogatively.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Ai-je	<i>have I</i>	éj
as-tu	<i>hast thou</i>	â tu
a-t-il	<i>has he</i>	a til
avons-nous	<i>have we</i>	a von nou
avez-vous	<i>have you</i>	a vé vou
ont-ils	<i>have they</i>	on til

-G-

PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present.

Ai-je eu	<i>have I had</i>	éj u
as-tu eu	<i>hast thou had</i>	â tu u
a-t-il eu	<i>has he had</i>	a til u
avons-nous eu	<i>have we had</i>	a von nou zu
avez-vous eu	<i>have you had</i>	a vé vou zu
ont-ils eu	<i>have they had</i>	on til zu

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Avais-je	<i>had I</i>	a vèj
avais-tu	<i>hadst thou</i>	a vè tu
avait-il	<i>had he</i>	a vè til
avions-nous	<i>had we</i>	a vi on nou
aviez-vous	<i>had you</i>	a vi é vou
avaient-ils	<i>had they</i>	a vè til

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Avais-je eu	<i>had I had</i>	a vèj u
avais-tu eu	<i>hadst thou had</i>	a vè tu u
avait-il eu	<i>had he had</i>	a vè til u
avions-nous eu	<i>had we had</i>	a vi on nou zu
aviez-vous eu	<i>had you had</i>	a vi é vou zu
avaient-ils eu	<i>had they had</i>	a vè til zu

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Eus-je	<i>had I</i>	uj
eus-tu	<i>hadst thou</i>	u tu
eut-il	<i>had he</i>	u til
eûmes-nous	<i>had we</i>	um nou
eûtes-vous	<i>had you</i>	ut vou
eurent-ils	<i>had they</i>	ur til

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as li, in William.

-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, or compound of the preterit.	
Eus-je eu	had I had	uj u
eus-tu eu	hadst thou had	u tu u
eut-il eu	had he had	u ti lu
eûmes-nous eu	had we had	um nou zu
eûtes-vous eu	had you had	ut vou zu
eurent-ils eu	had they had	ur til zu

-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.	
Aurai-je	shall or will I have	o réj
auras-tu	shalt or wilt thou have	o rà tu
aura-t-il	shall or will he have	o ra til
aurons-nous	shall or will we have	o ron nou
aurez-vous	shall or will you have	o ré vou
auront-ils	shall or will they have	o ron til

-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, or compound of the future.	
Aurai-je eu	shall or will I have had	o réj u
auras-tu eu	shalt or wilt thou have had	o rà tu u
aura-t-il eu	shall or will he have had	o ra til u
aurons-nous eu	shall or will we have had	o ron nou zu
aurez-vous eu	shall or will you have had	o ré vou zu
auront-ils eu	shall or will they have had	o ron til zu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-	PRESENT.	
Aurais-je	should, would, could, or might I have	o rèj
aurais-tu	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou have	o rè tu
aurait-il	should, would, could, or might he have	o rè til
aurions-nous	should, would, could, or might we have	o ri on nou
auriez-vous	should, would, could, or might you have	o ri é vou
auraient-ils	should, would, could, or might they have	o rè til

-O-	PAST, or compound of the present.	
Aurais-je eu,	should, would, could,	o rèj u
or eussé-je eu	or might I have had	u séj u
aurais-tu eu,	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,	o rè tu u
or eusses-tu eu	or mightst thou have had	us tu u
aurait-il eu,	should, would, could,	o rè til eu
or eût-il eu	or might he have had	u ti lu
aurions-nous eu,	should, would, could,	o ri on nou zu
or eussions-nous eu	or might we have had	u si on nou zu
auriez-vous eu,	should, would, could,	o ri é vou zu
or eussiez-vous eu	or might you have had	u si é vou zu
auraient-ils eu,	should, would, could,	o rè til zu
or eussent-ils eu	or might they have had	us til zu

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

AVOIR to have (Negatively and Interrogatively.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.		
N'ai-je pas	have I not	néj pâ
n'as-tu pas	hast thou not	nâ tu pâ
n'a-t-il pas	has he not	na til pâ
n'avons-nous pas	have we not	na von nou pâ
n'avez-vous pas	have you not	na vé vou pâ
n'ont-ils pas	have they not	non til pâ
-G- PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE, or compound of the present.		
N'ai-je pas eu	have I not had	néj pâ zu
n'as-tu pas eu	hast thou not had	nâ tu pâ zu
n'a-t-il pas eu	has he not had	na til pâ zu
n'avons-nous pas eu	have we not had	na von nou pâ zu
n'avez-vous pas eu	have you not had	na vé vou pâ zu
n'ont-ils pas eu	have they not had	non til pâ zu
-H- IMPERFECT.		
N'avais-je pas	had I not	na vèj pâ
n'avais-tu pas	hadst thou not	na vè tu pâ
n'avait-il pas	had he not	na vè til pâ
n'avions-nous pas	had we not	na vi on nou pâ
n'aviez-vous pas	had you not	na vi é vou pâ
n'avaient-ils pas	had they not	na vè til pâ
-I- PLUPERFECT, or compound of the imperfect.		
N'avais-je pas eu	had I not had	na vèj pâ zu
n'avais-tu pas eu	hadst thou not had	na vè tu pâ zu
n'avait-il pas eu	had he not had	na vè til pâ zu
n'avions-nous pas eu	had we not had	na vi on nou pâ zu
n'aviez-vous pas eu	had you not had	na vi é vou pâ zu
n'avaient-ils pas eu	had they not had	na vè til pâ zu
-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.		
N'eus-je pas	had I not	núj pâ
n'eus-tu pas	hadst thou not	nu tu pâ
n'eut-il pas	had he not	nu til pâ
n'eûmes-nous pas	had we not	num nou pâ
n'eûtes-vous pas	had you not	nut vou pâ
n'eurent-ils pas	had they not	nur til pâ

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre, ingrat. onde. un, amon.
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the preterit.

N'eus-je pas eu	had I not had	nuj pâ zu
n'eus-tu pas eu	hadst thou not had	nu tu pâ zu
n'eut-il pas eu	had he not had	nu til pâ zu
n'eûmes-nous pas eu	had we not had	num nou pâ zu
n'eûtes-vous pas eu	had you not had	nut vou pâ zu
n'eurent-ils pas eu	had they not had	nur til pâ zu

-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.
N'aurai-je pas	shall or will I not have
n'auras-tu pas	shalt or wilt thou not have
n'aura-t-il pas	shall or will he not have
n'aurons-nous pas	shall or will we not have
n'aurez-vous pas	shall or will you not have
n'auront-ils pas	shall or will they not have

no réj pâ
no râ tu pâ
no ra til pâ
no ron nou pâ
no ré vou pâ
no ron til pâ

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the future.

N'aurai-je pas eu	shall or will I not have had	no réj pâ zu
n'auras-tu pas eu	shalt or wilt thou not have had	no râ tu pâ zu
n'aura-t-il pas eu	shall or will he not have had	no ra til pâ zu
n'aurons-nous pas eu	shall or will we not have had	no ron nou pâ zu
n'aurez-vous pas eu	shall or will you not have had	no ré vou pâ zu
n'auront-ils pas eu	shall or will they not have had	no ron til pâ zu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

N'aurais-je pas	should, would, could, or might I not have	no rèj pâ
n'aurais-tu pas	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou not have	no rè tu pâ
n'aurait-il pas	should, would, could, or might he not have	no rè til pâ
n'aurions-nous pas	should, would, could, or might we not have	no ri on nou pâ
n'auriez-vous pas	should, would, could, or might you not have	no ri é vou pâ
n'auraient-ils pas	should, would, could, or might they not have	no rè til pâ

-O- PAST,
 or compound of the present.

N'aurais-je pas eu,	should, would, could,	no rèj pâ zu
or n'eussé-je pas eu	or might I not have had	nu séj pâ zu
n'aurais-tu pas eu,	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,	no rè tu pâ zu
or n'eusses-tu pas eu	or mightst thou not have had	nus tu pâ zu
n'aurait-il pas eu,	should, would, could,	no rè til pâ zu
or n'eût-il pas eu	or might he not have had	nu til pâ zu
n'aurions-nous pas eu,	should, would, could,	no ri on nou pâ zu
or n'eussions-nous pas eu	or might we not have had	nu si on nou pâ zu
n'auriez-vous pas eu,	should, would, could,	no ri é vou pâ zu
or n'eussiez-vous pas eu	or might you not have had	nu si é vou pâ zu
n'auraient-ils pas eu,	should, would could,	no rè til pâ zu
or n'eussent-ils pas eu	or might they not have had	nus til pâ zu

¹amini. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE UNIPERSONAL VERB.

Y AVOIR

there to be

(Affirmatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.	
Y avoir	there to be	i a voir
-B-	PAST or PERFECT, or compound of the present.	
Y avoir eu	there to have been	i a voi ru
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT or ACTIVE.	
Y ayant	there being	i é yan
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.	
Y ayant eu	there having been	i é yan tu

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
Il y a	there is or there are	il ya
-G-	PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE, or compound of the present.	
Il y a eu	there has been or there have been	il ya u
-H-	IMPERFECT.	
Il y avait	there was or there were	il ya vè
-I-	PLUPERFECT, or compound of the imperfect.	
Il y avait eu	there had been	il ya vè tu
-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.	
Il y eut	there was or there were	il yu
-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, or compound of the preterit.	
Il y eut eu	there had been	il yu tu
-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.	
Il y aura	there will be	il yo ra
-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, or compound of the future.	
Il y aura eu	there will have been	il yo ra u

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-	PRESENT.	
Il y aurait	there would be	il yo rè
-O-	PAST, or compound of the present.	
Il y aurait eu	there would have been	il yo rè tu

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-	PRESENT.	
Qu'il y ait	that there may be	kil yè
-R-	PRETERIT or PAST, or compound of the present.	
Qu'il y ait eu	that there may have been	kil yè tu
-S-	IMPERFECT.	
Qu'il y eût	that there might be	kil yû
-T-	PLUPERFECT, or compound of the imperfect.	
Qu'il y eût eu	that there might have been	kil yu tu

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîtte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
 4j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

CONJUGATION OF THE UNIPERSONAL VERB.

Y AVOIR

there to be

(Negatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.	
Ne pas y avoir	<i>not there to be</i>	ne pâ zi a voir
-B-	PAST OR PERFECT, or compound of the present.	
Ne pas y avoir eu	<i>not there to have been</i>	ne pâ zi a voi ru
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE,	
N'y ayant pas	<i>there not being</i>	ni é yan pâ
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT	
N'y ayant pas eu	<i>there not having been</i>	ni é yan pâ zu

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
Il n'y a pas	<i>there is not or there are not</i>	il gna pâ
-G-	PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE, or compound of the present.	
Il n'y a pas eu	<i>there has not been or there have not been</i>	il gna pâ zu
-H-	IMPERFECT.	
Il n'y avait pas	<i>there was not or there were not</i>	il gna vè pâ
-I-	PLUPERFECT, or compound of the imperfect.	
Il n'y avait pas eu	<i>there had not been</i>	il gna vè pâ zu
-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.	
Il n'y eut pas	<i>there was not or there were not</i>	il gnu pâ
-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, or compound of the preterit.	
Il n'y eût pas eu	<i>there had not been</i>	il gnu pâ zu
-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.	
Il n'y aura pas	<i>there will not be</i>	il gno ra pâ
-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, or compound of the future.	
Il n'y aura pas eu	<i>there will not have been</i>	il gno ra pâ zu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-	PRESENT.	
Il n'y aurait pas	<i>there would not be</i>	il gno rè pâ
-O-	PAST, or compound of the present.	
Il n'y aurait pas eu	<i>there would not have been</i>	il gnò rè pâ zu

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-	PRESENT.	
Qu'il n'y ait pas	<i>that there may not be</i>	kil gnè pâ
-R-	PRETERIT OR PAST, or compound of the present,	
Qu'il n'y ait pas eu	<i>that there may not have been</i>	kil gnè pâ zu
-S-	IMPERFECT.	
Qu'il n'y eût pas	<i>that there might not be</i>	kil gnu pâ
-T-	PLUPERFECT, or compound of the imperfect.	
Qu'il n'y eût pas eu	<i>that there might not have been</i>	kil gnu pâ zu

ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voute.
 2at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE UNIPERSONAL VERB.

Y AVOIR

*there to be**(Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Y a-t-il

is there or are there

ya til

-G-

PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Y a-t-il eu

has there been or have there been

ya ti lu

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Y avait-il

was there or were there

ya vè til

-I-

PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Y avait-il eu

had there been

ya vè ti lu

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Y eut-il

was there or were there

yu til

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Y eut-il eu

had there been

yu ti lu

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Y aura-t-il

will there be

yo ra til

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Y aura-t-il eu

will there have been

yo ra ti lu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Y aurait-il

would there be

yo rè til

-O-

PAST,
or compound of the present.

Y aurait-il eu

would there have been

yo rè ti lu

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amex.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

CONJUGATION OF THE UNIPERSONAL VERB.

Y AVOIR there to be (*Negatively and Interrogatively.*)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
N'y a-t-il pas	is there not or are there not	gna til pâ
-G-	PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE, or compound of the present.	
N'y a-t-il pas eu	has there not been or have there not been	gna til pâ zu
-H-	IMPERFECT.	
N'y avait-il pas	was there not or were there not	gna vè til pâ
-I-	PLUPERFECT, or compound of the imperfect.	
N'y avait-il pas eu	had there not been	gna vè til pâ zu
-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.	
N'y eut-il pas	was there not or were there not	gnu til pâ
-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, or compound of the preterit.	
N'y eut-il pas eu	had there not been	gnu til pâ zu
-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.	
N'y aura-t-il pas	will there not be	gno ra til pâ
-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, or compound of the future.	
N'y aura-t-il pas eu	will there not have been	gno ra til pâ zu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-	PRESENT.	
N'y aurait-il pas	would there not be	gno rè til pâ
-O-	PAST, or compound of the present.	
N'y aurait-il pas eu	would there not have been	gno rè til pâ zu

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

†CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

ÊTRE

to be

(Affirmatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.	
être	to be	ê tre
-B-	PAST OR PERFECT, or compound of the present.	
avoir été	to have been	a voi ré té
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE.	
étant	being	é tan
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.	
ayant été	having been	é yan té té
-E-	PARTICIPLE PAST OR PERFECT OR PASSIVE.	
été	been	é té

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
Je suis	I am	je su i
tu es	thou art	tu è
il est	he is	i lè
nous sommes	we are	nou som
vous êtes	you are	vou zêt
ils sont	they are	il son
-G-	PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE, or compound of the present.	
J'ai été	I have been	jé é té
tu as été	thou hast been	tu â zé té
il a été	he has been	i la é té
nous avons été	we have been	nou za von zé té
vous avez été	you have been	vou za vé zé té
ils ont été	they have been	il zon té té
-H-	IMPERFECT.	
J' étais	I was	jé tè
tu étais	thou wast	tu é tè
il était	he was	il é tè
nous étions	we were	nou zé ti on
vous étiez	you were	vou zé ti é
ils étaient	they were	il zé tè
-I-	PLUPERFECT, or compound of the imperfect.	
J'avais été	I had been	ja vè zé té
tu avais été	thou hadst been	tu a vè zé té
il avait été	he had been	i la vè té té
nous avions été	we had been	nou za vi on zé té
vous aviez été	you had been	vou za vi é zé té
ils avaient été	they had been	il za vè té té

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre, ingrat. onde. un, amen.
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je fus	<i>I was</i>	je fu
tu fus	<i>thou wast</i>	tu fu
il fut	<i>he was</i>	il fu
nous fûmes	<i>we were</i>	nou fum
vous fûtes	<i>you were</i>	vou fut
ils furent	<i>they were</i>	il fur

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

J'eus été	<i>I had been</i>	ju zé té
tu eus été	<i>thou hadst been</i>	tu u zé té
il eut été	<i>he had been</i>	i lu té té
nous eûmes été	<i>we had been</i>	nou zum zé té
vous eûtes été	<i>you had been</i>	vou zut zé té
ils eurent été	<i>they had been</i>	il zur té té

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je serai	<i>I shall or will be</i>	je sré
tu seras	<i>thou shalt or wilt be</i>	tu srâ
il sera	<i>he shall or will be</i>	il sra
nous serons	<i>we shall or will be</i>	nou sron
vous serez	<i>you shall or will be</i>	vou sré
ils seront	<i>they shall or will be</i>	il sron

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

J'aurai été	<i>I shall or will have been</i>	jo ré é té
tu auras été	<i>thou shalt or wilt have been</i>	tu o râ zé té
il aura été	<i>he shall or will have been</i>	il o ra é té
nous aurons été	<i>we shall or will have been</i>	nou zo ron zé té
vous aurez été	<i>you shall or will have been</i>	vou zo ré zé té
ils auront été	<i>they shall or will have been</i>	il zo ron té té

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Je serais	<i>I should, would, could,</i> <i>or might be</i>	je srè
tu serais	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,</i> <i>or mightst be</i>	tu srè
il serait	<i>he should, would, could,</i> <i>or might be</i>	il srè
nous serions	<i>we should, would, could,</i> <i>or might be</i>	nou se ri on
vous seriez	<i>you should, would, could,</i> <i>or might be</i>	vou se ri é
ils seraient	<i>they should, would, could,</i> <i>or might be</i>	il srè

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

J'aurais été	<i>I should, would, could,</i>	jo rè zé té
or j'eusse été	<i>or might have been</i>	jus é té
tu aurais été	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,</i>	tu o rè zé té
or tu eusses été	<i>or mightst have been</i>	tu us zé té
il aurait été	<i>he should, would, could,</i>	i lo rè té té
or il eût été	<i>or might have been</i>	i lu té té
nous aurions été	<i>we should, would, could,</i>	nou zo ri on zé té
or nous eussions été	<i>or might have been</i>	nou zu si on zé té
vous auriez été	<i>you should, would, could,</i>	vou zo ri é zé té
or vous eussiez été	<i>or might have been</i>	vou zu si é zé té
ils auraient été	<i>they should, would, could,</i>	il zo rè té té
or ils eussent été	<i>or might have been</i>	il zus té té

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sois	<i>be (thou)</i>	soi
qu'il soit	<i>let him be</i>	kil soi
soyons	<i>let us be</i>	soi yon
soyez	<i>be (you)</i>	soi yé
qu'ils soient	<i>let them be</i>	kil soi

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je sois	<i>that I may be</i>	kej soi
que tu sois	<i>that thou mayst be</i>	ke tu soi
qu'il soit	<i>that he may be</i>	kil soi
que nous soyons	<i>that we may be</i>	ke nou soi yon
que vous soyez	<i>that you may be</i>	ke vou soi yé
qu'ils soient	<i>that they may be</i>	kil soi

-R-

PRETERIT OR PAST,
or compound of the present,

Que j'aie été	<i>that I may have been</i>	ke jè é té
que tu aies été	<i>that thou mayst have been</i>	ke tu è zé té
qu'il ait été	<i>that he may have been</i>	ki lè té té
que nous ayons été	<i>that we may have been</i>	ke nou zé yon zé té
que vous ayez été	<i>that you may have been</i>	ke vou zé yé zé té
qu'ils aient été	<i>that they may have been</i>	kil zè té té

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je fusse	<i>that I might be</i>	kej fus
que tu fusses	<i>that thou mightst be</i>	ke tu fus
qu'il fût	<i>that he might be</i>	kil fu
que nous fussions	<i>that we might be</i>	ke nou fu si on
que vous fussiez	<i>that you might be</i>	ke vou fu si é
qu'ils fussent	<i>that they might be</i>	kil fus

-T-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Que j'eusse été	<i>that I might have been</i>	ke jus é té
que tu eusses été	<i>that thou mightst have been</i>	ke tu us zé té
qu'il eût été	<i>that he might have been</i>	ki lu té té
que nous eussions été	<i>that we might have been</i>	ke nou zu si on zé té
que vous eussiez été	<i>that you might have been</i>	ke vou zu si é zé té
qu'ils eussent été	<i>that they might have been</i>	kil zus té té

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

ÊTRE

to be

(Negatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.	
Ne pas être	not to be	ne pâ zê tre
-B-	PAST or PERFECT, or compound of the present.	
ne pas avoir été	not to have been	ne pâ za voi ré té
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT or ACTIVE,	
n' étant pas	not being	né tan pâ
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.	
n'ayant pas été	not having been	né yan pâ zé té

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
Je ne suis pas	I am not	jen su i pâ
tu n'es pas	thou art not	tu nè pâ
il n'est pas	he is not	il nè pâ
nous ne sommes pas	we are not	noun som pâ
vous n'êtes pas	you are not	vou nêt pâ
ils ne sont pas	they are not	il ne son pâ
-G-	PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE, or compound of the present.	
Je n'ai pas été	I have not been	je né pâ zé té
tu n'as pas été	thou hast not been	tu nâ pâ zé té
il n'a pas été	he has not been	il na pâ zé té
nous n'avons pas été	we have not been	nou na von pâ zé té
vous n'avez pas été	you have not been	vou na vé pâ zé té
ils n'ont pas été	they have not been	il non pâ zé té
-H-	IMPERFECT.	
Je n'étais pas	I was not	je né tè pâ
tu n'étais pas	thou wast not	tu né tè pâ
il n'était pas	he was not	il né tè pâ
nous n'étions pas	we were not	nou né ti on pâ
vous n'étiez pas	you were not	vou né ti é pâ
ils n'étaient pas	they were not	il né tè pâ
-I-	PLUPERFECT, or compound of the imperfect.	
Je n'avais pas été	I had not been	je na vè pâ zé té
tu n'avais pas été	thou hadst not been	tu na vè pâ zé té
il n'avait pas été	he had not been	il na vè pâ zé té
nous n'avions pas été	we had not been	nou na vi on pâ zé té
vous n'aviez pas été	you had not been	vou na vi é pâ zé té
ils n'avaient pas été	they had not been	il na vè pâ zé té

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne fus pas	<i>I was not</i>	jen fu pâ
tu ne fus pas	<i>thou wast not</i>	tun fu pâ
il ne fut pas	<i>he was not</i>	il ne fu pâ
nous ne fûmes pas	<i>we were not</i>	noun fum pâ
vous ne fûtes pas	<i>you were not</i>	voun fut pâ
ils ne furent pas	<i>they were not</i>	il ne fur pâ

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je n'eus pas été	<i>I had not been</i>	je nu pâ zé té
tu n'eus pas été	<i>thou hadst not been</i>	tu nu pâ zé té
il n'eut pas été	<i>he had not been</i>	il nu pâ zé té
nous n'eûmes pas été	<i>we had not been</i>	nou num pâ zé té
vous n'eûtes pas été	<i>you had not been</i>	vou nut pâ zé té
ils n'eurent pas été	<i>they had not been</i>	il nur pâ zé té

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne serai pas	<i>I shall or will not be</i>	jen sré pâ
tu ne seras pas	<i>thou shalt or wilt not be</i>	tun srâ pâ
il ne sera pas	<i>he shall or will not be</i>	il ne sra pâ
nous ne serons pas	<i>we shall or will not be</i>	noun sron pâ
vous ne serez pas	<i>you shall or will not be</i>	voun sré pâ
ils ne seront pas	<i>they shall or will not be</i>	il ne sron pâ

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je n'aurai pas été	<i>I shall or will not have been</i>	jno ré pâ zé té
tu n'auras pas été	<i>thou shalt or wilt not have been</i>	tu no râ pâ zé té
il n'aura pas été	<i>he shall or will not have been</i>	il no ra pâ zé té
nous n'aurons pas été	<i>we shall or will not have been</i>	nou no ron pâ zé té
vous n'aurez pas été	<i>you shall or will not have been</i>	vou no ré pâ zé té
ils n'auront pas été	<i>they shall or will not have been</i>	il no ron pâ zé té

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Je ne serais pas	<i>I should, would, could, or might not be</i>	jen srè pâ
tu ne serais pas	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst not be</i>	tun srè pâ
il ne serait pas	<i>he should, would, could, or might not be</i>	il ne srè pâ
nous ne serions pas	<i>we should, would, could, or might not be</i>	noun se ri on pâ
vous ne seriez pas	<i>you should, would, could, or might not be</i>	voun se ri é pâ
ils ne seraient pas	<i>they should, would, could, or might not be</i>	il ne srè pâ

mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre, ingrat. onde. un, amen.
 4j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in u nion. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

Je n'aurais pas été	<i>I should, would,</i>	} <i>not have been</i>	je no rè pâ zé té
or <i>je n'eusse pas été</i>	<i>could, or might</i>		<i>je nus pâ zé té</i>
tu n'aurais pas été	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst,</i>		tu no rè pâ zé té
or <i>tu n'eusses pas été</i>	<i>couldst, or mightst</i>		<i>tu nus pâ zé té</i>
il n'aurait pas été	<i>he should, would,</i>		il no rè pâ zé té
or <i>il n'eût pas été</i>	<i>could, or might</i>		<i>il nu pâ zé té</i>
nous n'aurions pas été	<i>we should, would,</i>		nou no ri on pâ zé té
or <i>nous n'eussions pas été</i>	<i>could, or might</i>		<i>nou nu si on pâ zé té</i>
vous n'auriez pas été	<i>you should, would,</i>		vou no ri é pâ zé té
or <i>vous n'eussiez pas été</i>	<i>could, or might</i>		<i>vou nu si é pâ zé té</i>
ils n'auraient pas été	<i>they should, would,</i>		il no rè pâ zé té
or <i>ils n'eussent pas été</i>	<i>could, or might</i>		<i>il nus pâ zé té</i>

P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne sois pas	<i>be not (thou)</i>	ne soi pâ
qu'il ne soit pas	<i>let him not be</i>	kil ne soi pâ
ne soyons pas	<i>let us not be</i>	ne soi yon pâ
ne soyez pas	<i>be not (you)</i>	ne soi yé pâ
qu'ils ne soient pas	<i>let them not be</i>	kil ne soi pâ

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Q-

PRESENT.

Que je ne sois pas	<i>that I may</i>	} <i>not be</i>	ke jen soi pâ
que tu ne sois pas	<i>that thou mayst</i>		ke tun soi pâ
qu'il ne soit pas	<i>that he may</i>		kil ne soi pâ
que nous ne soyons pas	<i>that we may</i>		ke noun soi yon pâ
que vous ne soyez pas	<i>that you may</i>		ke voun soi yé pâ
qu'ils ne soient pas	<i>that they may</i>		kil ne soi pâ

-R-

PRETERIT or PAST,

or compound of the present.

Que je n'aie pas été	<i>that I may</i>	} <i>not have been</i>	kej nè pâ zé té
que tu n'aies pas été	<i>that thou mayst</i>		ke tu nè pâ zé té
qu'il n'ait pas été	<i>that he may</i>		kil nè pâ zé té
que nous n'ayons pas été	<i>that we may</i>		ke nou né yon pâ zé té
que vous n'ayez pas été	<i>that you may</i>		ke vou né yé pâ zé té
qu'ils n'aient pas été	<i>that they may</i>		kil nè pâ zé té

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je ne fusse pas	<i>that I might</i>	} <i>not be</i>	ke jen fus pâ
que tu ne fusses pas	<i>that thou mightst</i>		ke tun fus pâ
qu'il ne fût pas	<i>that he might</i>		kil ne fu pâ
que nous ne fussions pas	<i>that we might</i>		ke noun fu si on pâ
que vous ne fussiez pas	<i>that you might</i>		ke voun fu si é pâ
qu'ils ne fussent pas	<i>that they might</i>		kil ne fus pâ

-T-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Que je n'eusse pas été	<i>that I might</i>	} <i>not have been</i>	kej nus pâ zé té
que tu n'eusses pas été	<i>that thou mightst</i>		ke tu nus pâ zé té
qu'il n'eût pas été	<i>that he might</i>		kil nu pâ zé té
que nous n'eussions pas été	<i>that we might</i>		ke nou nu si on pâ zé té
que vous n'eussiez pas été	<i>that you might</i>		ke vou nu si é pâ zé té
qu'ils n'eussent pas été	<i>that they might</i>		kil nus pâ zé té

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

ÊTRE to be (*Interrogatively.*)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Suis-je	<i>am I</i>	su ij
es-tu	<i>art thou</i>	è tu
est-il	<i>is he</i>	è til
sommes-nous	<i>are we</i>	som nou
êtes-vous	<i>are you</i>	èt vou
sont-ils	<i>are they</i>	son til

-G-

PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present.

Ai-je été	<i>have I been</i>	é jé té
as-tu été	<i>hast thou been</i>	à tu é té
a-t-il été	<i>has he been</i>	a ti lé té
avons-nous été	<i>have we been</i>	a von nou zé té
avez-vous été	<i>have you been</i>	a vé vou zé té
ont-ils été	<i>have they been</i>	on til zé té

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Étais-je	<i>was I</i>	é tèj
étais-tu	<i>wast thou</i>	é tè tu
était-il	<i>was he</i>	é tè til
étions-nous	<i>were we</i>	é ti on nou
étiez-vous	<i>were you</i>	é ti é vou
étaient-ils	<i>were they</i>	é tè til

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect

Avais-je été	<i>had I been</i>	a vé jé té
avais-tu été	<i>hadst thou been</i>	a vé tu é té
avait-il été	<i>had he been</i>	a vé ti lé té
avions-nous été	<i>had we been</i>	a vi on nou zé té
aviez-vous été	<i>had you been</i>	a vi é vou zé té
avaient-ils été	<i>had they been</i>	a vé til zé té

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Fus-je	<i>was I</i>	fuj
fus-tu	<i>wast thou</i>	fù tu
fut-il	<i>was he</i>	fù til
fûmes-nous	<i>were we</i>	fum nou
fûtes-vous	<i>were you</i>	fut vou
furent-ils	<i>were they</i>	fur til

smur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
 4j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, or compound of the preterit.	
Eus-je été	had I been	u jé té
eus-tu été	hadst thou been	u tu é té
eut-il été	had he been	u ti lé té
eûmes-nous été	had we been	um nou zé té
eûtes-vous été	had you been	ut vou zé té
eurent-ils été	had they been	ur til zé té

-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.	
Serai-je	shall or will I be	se réj
seras-tu	shalt or wilt thou be	se rà tu
sera-t-il	shall or will he be	se ra til
serons-nous	shall or will we be	se ron nou
serez-vous	shall or will you be	se ré vou
seront-ils	shall or will they be	se ron til

-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, or compound of the future	
Aurai-je été	shall or will I have been	o ré jé té
auras-tu été	shalt or wilt thou have been	o rà tu é té
aura-t-il été	shall or will he have been	o ra til é té
aurons-nous été	shall or will we have been	o ron nou zé té
aurez-vous été	shall or will you have been	o ré vou zé té
auront-ils été	shall or will they have been	o ron til zé té

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-	PRESENT.	
Serais-je	should, would, could, or might I be	se rèj
serais-tu	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou be	se rè tu
serait-il	should, would, could, or might he be	sa rè til
serions-nous	should, would, could, or might we be	se ri on nou
seriez-vous	should, would, could, or might you be	se ri é vou
seraient-ils	should, would, could, or might they be	se rè til

-O-	PAST, or compound of the present.	
Aurais-je été	should, would, could,	o rè jé té
or eussé-je été	or might I have been	u sé jé té
aurais-tu été	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,	o rè tu é té
or eusses-tu été	or mightst thou have been	us tu é té
aurait-il été	should, would, could,	o rè ti lé té
or eût-il été	or might he have been	u ti lé té
aurions-nous été	should, would, could,	o ri on nou zé té
or eussions-nous été	or might we have been	u si on nou zé té
auriez-vous été	should, would, could,	o ri é vou zé té
or eussiez-vous été	or might you have been	u si é vou zé té
auraient-ils été	should, would, could,	o rè til zé té
or eussent-ils été	or might they have been	us til zé té

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. ecl. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

ÊTRE to be (Negatively and Interrogatively.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Ne suis-je pas	<i>am I not</i>	ne su ij pâ
n'es-tu pas	<i>art thou not</i>	nè tu pâ
n'est-il pas	<i>is he not</i>	nè til pâ
ne sommes-nous pas	<i>are we not</i>	ne som nou pâ
n'êtes-vous pas	<i>are you not</i>	nêt vou pâ
ne sont-ils pas	<i>are they not</i>	ne son til pâ

-G-

PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
 or compound of the present.

N'ai-je pas été	<i>have I not been</i>	néj pâ zé té
n'as-tu pas été	<i>hast thou not been</i>	nâ tu pâ zé té
n'a-t-il pas été	<i>has he not been</i>	na til pâ zé té
n'avons-nous pas été	<i>have we not been</i>	na von nou pâ zé té
n'avez-vous pas été	<i>have you not been</i>	na vé vou pâ zé té
n'ont-ils pas été	<i>have they not been</i>	non til pâ zé té

-H-

IMPERFECT.

N'étais-je pas	<i>was I not</i>	né tēj pâ
n'étais-tu pas	<i>wast thou not</i>	né tè tu pâ
n'était-il pas	<i>was he not</i>	né tè til pâ
n'étions-nous pas	<i>were we not</i>	né ti on nou pâ
n'étiez-vous pas	<i>were you not</i>	né ti é vou pâ
n'étaient-ils pas	<i>were they not</i>	né tè til pâ

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

N'avais-je pas été	<i>had I not been</i>	na vèj pâ zé té
n'avais-tu pas été	<i>hadst thou not been</i>	na vè tu pâ zé té
n'avait-il pas été	<i>had he not been</i>	na vè til pâ zé té
n'avions-nous pas été	<i>had we not been</i>	na vi on nou pâ zé té
n'aviez-vous pas été	<i>had you not been</i>	na vi é vou pâ zé té
n'avaient-ils pas été	<i>had they not been</i>	na vè til pâ zé té

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Ne fus-je pas	<i>was I not</i>	ne fuj pâ
ne fus-tu pas	<i>wast thou not</i>	ne fu tu pâ
ne fut-il pas	<i>was he not</i>	ne fu til pâ
ne fûmes-nous pas	<i>were we not</i>	ne fum nou pâ
ne fûtes-vous pas	<i>were you not</i>	ne fut vou pâ
ne furent-ils pas	<i>were they not</i>	ne fur til pâ

mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un, amen.
 4j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the preterit.

N'eus-je pas été	had I not been	núj pâ zé té
n'eus-tu pas été	hadst thou not been	nu tu pâ zé té
n'eut-il pas été	had he not been	nu til pâ zé té
n'eûmes-nous pas été	had we not been	num nou pâ zé té
n'eûtes-vous pas été	had you not been	nut vou pâ zé té
n'eurent-ils pas été	had they not been	nur til pâ zé té

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne serai-je pas	shall or will I not be	ne sréj pâ
ne seras-tu pas	shalt or wilt thou not be	ne srâ tu pâ
ne sera-t-il pas	shall or will he not be	ne sra til pâ
ne serons-nous pas	shall or will we not be	ne sron nou pâ
ne serez-vous pas	shall or will you not be	ne sré vou pâ
ne seront-ils pas	shall or will they not be	ne sron til pâ

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the future.

N'aurai-je pas été	shall or will I not have been	no réj pâ zé té
n'auras-tu pas été	shalt or wilt thou not have been	no râ tu pâ zé té
n'aura-t-il pas été	shall or will he not have been	no ra til pâ zé té
n'aurons-nous pas été	shall or will we not have been	no ron nou pâ zé té
n'aurez-vous pas été	shall or will you not have been	no ré vou pâ zé té
n'auront-ils pas été	shall or will they not have been	no ron til pâ zé té

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Ne serais-je pas	should, would, could, or might I not be	ne srèj pâ
ne serais-tu pas	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou not be	ne srè tu pâ
ne serait-il pas	should, would, could, or might he not be	ne srè til pâ
ne serions-nous pas	should, would, could, or might we not be	ne se ri on nou pâ
ne seriez-vous pas	should, would, could, or might you not be	ne se ri é vou pâ
ne seraient-ils pas	should, would, could, or might they not be	ne srè til pâ

-O-

PAST,
 or compound of the present.

N'aurais-je pas été,	should, would,	} not have been	no rèj pâ zé té
or n'eussé-je pas été	could, or might I		nu séj pâ zé té
n'aurais-tu pas été,	shouldst, wouldst,		no rè tu pâ zé té
or n'eusses-tu pas été	couldst, or mightst thou		nus tu pâ zé té
n'aurait-il pas été,	should, would,		no rè til pâ zé té
or n'eût-il pas été	could, or might he		nu til pâ zé té
n'aurions-nous pas été,	should, would,		no ri on nou pâ zé té
or n'eussions-nous pas été	could, or might we		nu si on nou pâ zé té
n'auriez-vous pas été,	should, would,		no ri é vou pâ zé té
or n'eussiez-vous pas été	could, or might you		nu si é vou pâ zé té
n'auraient-ils pas été,	should, would,		no rè til pâ zé té
or n'eussent-ils pas été	could, or might they		nus til pâ zé té

Of the different kinds of Conjugations.

75. There are in French, four Conjugations, (comprising upwards of 3164 verbs,) which are distinguished from each other by the termination of the present of the Infinitive.

First Conjugation.

76. The present of the Infinitive of the first conjugation, has for termination *er*—as, *parl er*, *donn er*, &c.

Second Conjugation.

77. The present of the Infinitive of the second conjugation, has for termination *ir*—as, *fin ir*, *pun ir*, &c.

Third Conjugation.

78. The present of the Infinitive of the third conjugation, has for termination *oir*—as, *recev oir*, *Sav oir*, &c.

Fourth Conjugation.

79. The present of the Infinitive of the fourth conjugation, has for termination *re*—as, *vend re*, *rend re*, &c.

Of the First Conjugation.

80. All verbs whose present of the Infinitive ends with *er*, (to the number of about 2500) are of the first conjugation, and if regular, are conjugated like *parler* to speak; which is hereafter conjugated, to be used as a model.

81. The only irregular verbs of the first conjugation, are *s'en aller* to go away, page 112—*aller* to go, page 122—*envoyer* to send, page 123—and *renvoyer* to send back; conjugated like *envoyer* to send.

82. Some verbs ending in *er*, although not among the irregular verbs of the first conjugation, are not exactly conjugated like *parler*; these verbs are noticed at page 48.

83. Conjugate in the same manner—as, *parl er* to speak; the following verbs:—

accord <i>er</i>	to grant,	épouvant <i>er</i>	to frighten,
accus <i>er</i>	to accuse,	inspir <i>er</i>	to inspire,
affirm <i>er</i>	to affirm,	lim <i>er</i>	to file,
camp <i>er</i>	to encamp,	patin <i>er</i>	to skate,
donn <i>er</i>	to give,	piqu <i>er</i>	to sting,
port <i>er</i>	to carry,	prépar <i>er</i>	to prepare,
montr <i>er</i>	to show,	priv <i>er</i>	to deprive,
trouv <i>er</i>	to find,	propos <i>er</i>	to propose,
cass <i>er</i>	to break,	imagin <i>er</i>	to imagine,

allum <i>er</i>	to light,	import <i>er</i>	to import,
pleur <i>er</i>	to weep,	improuv <i>er</i>	to disapprove,
vol <i>er</i>	to steal,	irrit <i>er</i>	to irritate,
déjeûn <i>er</i>	to breakfast,	invent <i>er</i>	to invent,
dîn <i>er</i>	to dine,	pens <i>er</i>	to think,
soup <i>er</i>	to sup,	vant <i>er</i>	to praise,

84. To conjugate the above verbs, or any other regular verb, of the first conjugation : observe that in French a regular verb is divided into two parts :—1st, The *radical part*, which is, that portion of the word which is the same in all tenses and persons of the verb ; 2d, The *termination*, which is, that portion of the word that varies at almost every tense and person ; for instance, in *parler* to speak ; *parl* is the radical part, and *er* is the termination : then *parl* will be the same in all tenses and persons ; whereas the termination *er*, will change at every tense and person. Knowing the above, when a verb is to be conjugated on *parler*, the only thing to be done, is to place the terminations of the different tenses and persons of *parler* after the *radical part* of the verb to be conjugated.

85. In the different conjugations throughout this volume, the *radical part*, and the *terminations* have been separated, and the terminations in the model verbs have been besides printed in italics.

Formation of the Compound Tenses.

86. The formation of the compound tenses, in all the verbs of the four conjugations, whether regular or irregular, is the same.

87. When a scholar wants to form a compound tense, he must first ascertain whether the verb in question, takes the auxiliary *avoir* to have, or *être* to be, which he can easily do, by referring to page 1, Art. 10 and 14 ; afterwards he must take from *avoir* to have, or *être* to be, the tense named, and add to it the participle past, of the verb he has to conjugate ; for instance, suppose a scholar wants to form the compound of the future absolute, of *parler* to speak, he must after having ascertained that *parler* to speak, is one of those neuter verbs that takes the auxiliary *avoir* to have, as not being among the neuter verbs, that are put down in page 161 ; take the future absolute of *avoir* to have, which is, *j'aurai* I shall or will have, and add to it the participle past of *parler* to speak, which is, *parlé* spoken ; then he shall have for the compound of the future absolute *j'aurai parlé* I shall or will have spoken—*tu auras parlé* thou shalt or wilt have spoken, &c.

Table of the Terminations of the Regular Verbs.

SIMPLE TENSES.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

parl <i>er</i>	fin <i>ir</i>	reç <i>evoir</i>	vend <i>re</i>
----------------	---------------	------------------	----------------

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

parl <i>ant</i>	fin <i>issant</i>	reç <i>evant</i>	vend <i>ant</i>
-----------------	-------------------	------------------	-----------------

PARTICIPLE PAST OR PASSIVE.

parl <i>é</i>	fin <i>i</i>	reç <i>u</i>	vend <i>u</i>
---------------	--------------	--------------	---------------

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

je	parl <i>e</i>	fin <i>is</i>	reç <i>ois</i>	vend <i>s</i>
tu	<i>es</i>	<i>is</i>	<i>ois</i>	<i>s</i>
il <i>or</i> elle	<i>e</i>	<i>it</i>	<i>oit</i>	vend
nous	<i>ons</i>	<i>issons</i>	<i>evons</i>	<i>ons</i>
vous	<i>ez</i>	<i>issez</i>	<i>eviez</i>	<i>ez</i>
ils <i>or</i> elles	<i>ent</i>	<i>issent</i>	<i>oivent</i>	<i>ent</i>

IMPERFECT.

je	parl <i>ais</i>	fin <i>issais</i>	reç <i>evais</i>	vend <i>ais</i>
tu	<i>ais</i>	<i>issais</i>	<i>evais</i>	<i>ais</i>
il <i>or</i> elle	<i>ait</i>	<i>issait</i>	<i>evait</i>	<i>ait</i>
nous	<i>ions</i>	<i>issions</i>	<i>evions</i>	<i>ions</i>
vous	<i>iez</i>	<i>issiez</i>	<i>eviez</i>	<i>iez</i>
ils <i>or</i> elles	<i>aient</i>	<i>issaient</i>	<i>evaient</i>	<i>aient</i>

PRÆTERIT DEFINITE.

je	parl <i>ai</i>	fin <i>is</i>	reç <i>us</i>	vend <i>is</i>
tu	<i>as</i>	<i>is</i>	<i>us</i>	<i>is</i>
il <i>or</i> elle	<i>a</i>	<i>it</i>	<i>ut</i>	<i>it</i>
nous	<i>âmes</i>	<i>îmes</i>	<i>âmes</i>	<i>îmes</i>
vous	<i>âtes</i>	<i>îtes</i>	<i>ûtes</i>	<i>îtes</i>
ils <i>or</i> elles	<i>èrent</i>	<i>irent</i>	<i>urent</i>	<i>irent</i>

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

je	parl <i>erai</i>	fin <i>irai</i>	reç <i>evrai</i>	vend <i>rai</i>
tu	<i>eras</i>	<i>iras</i>	<i>evras</i>	<i>ras</i>
il <i>or</i> elle	<i>era</i>	<i>ira</i>	<i>evra</i>	<i>ra</i>
nous	<i>erons</i>	<i>irons</i>	<i>evrons</i>	<i>rons</i>
vous	<i>erez</i>	<i>irez</i>	<i>evrez</i>	<i>rez</i>
ils <i>or</i> elles	<i>eront</i>	<i>iront</i>	<i>evront</i>	<i>ront</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

je	parl <i>erais</i>	fin <i>irais</i>	reç <i>evrais</i>	vend <i>rais</i>
tu	<i>erais</i>	<i>irais</i>	<i>evrais</i>	<i>rais</i>
il <i>or</i> elle	<i>erait</i>	<i>irait</i>	<i>evrait</i>	<i>rait</i>
nous	<i>erions</i>	<i>irions</i>	<i>evrions</i>	<i>rions</i>
vous	<i>eriez</i>	<i>iriez</i>	<i>evriez</i>	<i>riez</i>
ils <i>or</i> elles	<i>eraient</i>	<i>iraient</i>	<i>evraient</i>	<i>raient</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

qu'il <i>or</i> qu'elle	parl <i>e</i>	fin <i>is</i>	reç <i>ois</i>	vend <i>s</i>
	<i>e</i>	<i>isse</i>	<i>oive</i>	<i>e</i>
	<i>ons</i>	<i>issons</i>	<i>evons</i>	<i>ons</i>
qu'ils <i>or</i> qu'elles	<i>ez</i>	<i>issez</i>	<i>eviez</i>	<i>ez</i>
	<i>ent</i>	<i>issent</i>	<i>oivent</i>	<i>ent</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

que je	parl <i>e</i>	fin <i>isse</i>	reç <i>oive</i>	vend <i>e</i>
que tu	<i>es</i>	<i>isses</i>	<i>oives</i>	<i>es</i>
qu'il <i>or</i> qu'elle	<i>e</i>	<i>isse</i>	<i>oive</i>	<i>e</i>
que nous	<i>ions</i>	<i>issions</i>	<i>evions</i>	<i>ions</i>
que vous	<i>iez</i>	<i>issiez</i>	<i>eviez</i>	<i>iez</i>
qu'ils <i>or</i> qu'elles	<i>ent</i>	<i>issent</i>	<i>oivent</i>	<i>ent</i>

IMPERFECT.

que je	parl <i>asse</i>	fin <i>isse</i>	reç <i>usse</i>	vend <i>isse</i>
que tu	<i>asses</i>	<i>isses</i>	<i>usses</i>	<i>isses</i>
qu'il <i>or</i> qu'elle	<i>ât</i>	<i>ût</i>	<i>ût</i>	<i>ût</i>
que nous	<i>ussions</i>	<i>ussions</i>	<i>ussions</i>	<i>ussions</i>
que vous	<i>assiez</i>	<i>issiez</i>	<i>ussiez</i>	<i>issiez</i>
qu'ils <i>or</i> qu'elles	<i>assent</i>	<i>issent</i>	<i>ussent</i>	<i>issent</i>

1st Conjugation.

2d Conj.

3d Conj.

4th Conj.

Of the Four Regular Conjugations.

COMPOUND TENSES.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PAST or PERFECT, (*or compound of the present.*)

avoir	parl é	fin i	reç u	vend u
-------	--------	-------	-------	--------

COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

ayant	parl é	fin i	reç u	vend u
-------	--------	-------	-------	--------

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE, (*or compound of the present.*)

j'ai	parl é	fin i	reç u	vend u
tu as	é	i	u	u
il or elle a	é	i	u	u
nous avons	é	i	u	u
vous avez	é	i	u	u
ils or elles ont	é	i	u	u

PLUPERFECT, (*or compound of the Imperfect.*)

j'avais	parl é	fin i	reç u	vend u
tu avais	é	i	u	u
il or elle avait	é	i	u	u
nous avions	é	i	u	u
vous aviez	é	i	u	u
ils or elles avaient	é	i	u	u

PRETERIT ANTERIOR, (*or compound of the preterit definite.*)

j'eus	parl é	fin i	reç u	vend u
tu eus	é	i	u	u
il or elle eut	é	i	u	u
nous eûmes	é	i	u	u
vous eûtes	é	i	u	u
ils or elles eurent	é	i	u	u

FUTURE ANTERIOR, (*or compound of the future absolute.*)

j'aurai	parl é	fin i	reç u	vend u
tu auras	é	i	u	u
il or elle aura	é	i	u	u
nous aurons	é	i	u	u
vous aurez	é	i	u	u
ils or elles auront	é	i	u	u

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PAST, (*or compound of the present.*)

j'aurais	parl é	fin i	reç u	vend u
tu aurais	é	i	u	u
il or elle aurait	é	i	u	u
nous aurions	é	i	u	u
vous auriez	é	i	u	u
ils or elles auraient	é	i	u	u

No Compound of the Imperative.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRETERIT or PAST, (*or compound of the present.*)

que j aie	parl é	fin i	reç u	vend u
que tu aies	é	i	u	u
qu'il or qu'elle ait	é	i	u	u
que nous ayons	é	i	u	u
que vous ayez	é	i	u	u
qu'ils or qu'elles aient	é	i	u	u

PLUPERFECT, (*or compound of the imperfect.*)

que j'eusse	parl é	fin i	reç u	vend u
que tu eusses	é	i	u	u
qu'il or qu'elle eût	é	i	u	u
que nous eussions	é	i	u	u
que vous eussiez	é	i	u	u
qu'ils or qu'elles eussent	é	i	u	u

1st Conjugation.

2d Conj.

3d Conj.

4th Conj.

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

PARLER

*to speak.**(Affirmatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-

Parl *er*

PRESENT.

to speak

-B-

PAST OR PERFECT,

*or compound of the present.*Avoir parl *é**to have spoken*

-C-

PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE.

Parl *ant**speaking*

-D-

COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Ayant parl *é**having spoken*

-E-

PARTICIPLE PAST OR PASSIVE.

Parl *é**spoken*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Je parl *e**I speak, do speak, or am speaking*tu parl *es**thou speakest, dost speak, or art speaking*il parl *e**he speaks, does speak, or is speaking*nous parl *ons**we speak, do speak, or are speaking*vous parl *ez**you speak, do speak, or are speaking*ils parl *ent**they speak, do speak, or are speaking*

-G-

PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

*or compound of the present.*J'ai parl *é**I have spoken, did speak, or have been speaking*tu as parl *é**thou hast spoken, didst speak, or hast been speaking*il a parl *é**he has spoken, did speak, or has been speaking*nous avons parl *é**we have spoken, did speak, or have been speaking*vous avez parl *é**you have spoken, did speak, or have been speaking*ils ont parl *é**they have spoken, did speak, or have been speaking*

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Je parl *ais**I spoke, did speak, or was speaking*tu parl *ais**thou spokest, didst speak, or wast speaking*il parl *ait**he spoke, did speak, or was speaking*nous parl *ions**we spoke, did speak, or were speaking*vous parl *iez**you spoke, did speak, or were speaking*ils parl *aient**they spoke, did speak, or were speaking*

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

*or compound of the imperfect.*J'avais parl *é**I had spoken, or had been speaking*tu avais parl *é**thou hadst spoken, or hadst been speaking*il avait parl *é**he had spoken, or had been speaking*nous avions parl *é**we had spoken, or had been speaking*vous aviez parl *é**you had spoken, or had been speaking*ils avaient parl *é**they had spoken, or had been speaking*

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je parl ai	<i>I spoke, or did speak</i>
tu parl as	<i>thou spokest, or didst speak</i>
il parl a	<i>he spoke, or did speak</i>
nous parl âmes	<i>we spoke, or did speak</i>
vous parl âtes	<i>you spoke, or did speak</i>
il parl èrent	<i>they spoke, or did speak</i>

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

J'eus parl é	<i>I had spoken</i>
tu eus parl é	<i>thou hadst spoken</i>
il eut parl é	<i>he had spoken</i>
nous eûmes parl é	<i>we had spoken</i>
vous eûtes parl é	<i>you had spoken</i>
ils eurent parl é	<i>they had spoken</i>

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je parl erai	<i>I shall, or will speak</i>
tu parl eras	<i>thou shalt, or wilt speak</i>
il parl era	<i>he shall, or will speak</i>
nous parl erons	<i>we shall, or will speak</i>
vous parl erez	<i>you shall, or will speak</i>
ils parl eront	<i>they shall, or will speak</i>

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

J'aurai parl é	<i>I shall, or will have spoken</i>
tu auras parl é	<i>thou shalt, or wilt have spoken</i>
il aura parl é	<i>he shall, or will have spoken</i>
nous aurons parl é	<i>we shall, or will have spoken</i>
vous aurez parl é	<i>you shall, or will have spoken</i>
ils auront parl é	<i>they shall, or will have spoken</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Je parl erais	<i>I should, would, could, or might speak</i>
tu parl erais	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst speak</i>
il parl erait	<i>he should, would, could, or might speak</i>
nous parl erions	<i>we should, would, could, or might speak</i>
vous parl eriez	<i>you should, would, could, or might speak</i>
ils parl eraient	<i>they should, would, could, or might speak</i>

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

J'aurais parl é, or j'eusse parl é	} <i>I should, would, could, or might have spoken</i>
tu aurais parl é, or tu eusses parl é	
il aurait parl é, or il eût parl é	
	} <i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst have spoken</i>
	} <i>he should, would, could, or might have spoken</i>

ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
 2at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

nous aurions parl é,	}	<i>we should, would, could, or might have spoken</i>
or <i>nous eussions parl é</i>		
vous auriez parl é,	}	<i>you should, would, could, or might have spoken</i>
or <i>vous eussiez parl é</i>		
ils auraient parl é,	}	<i>they should, would, could, or might have spoken</i>
or <i>ils eussent parl é</i>		

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Parl e	<i>speak or do speak (thou)</i>
qu'il parl e	<i>let him speak</i>
parl ons	<i>let us speak</i>
parl ez	<i>speak or do speak (you)</i>
qu'ils parl ent	<i>let them speak</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je parl e	<i>that I may speak</i>
que tu parl es	<i>that thou mayst speak</i>
qu'il parl e	<i>that he may speak</i>
que nous parl ions	<i>that we may speak</i>
que vous parl iez	<i>that you may speak</i>
qu'ils parl ent	<i>that they may speak</i>

-R-

PRETERIT or PAST,
or compound of the present,

Que j'aie parl é	<i>that I may have spoken</i>
que tu aies parl é	<i>that thou mayst have spoken</i>
qu'il ait parl é	<i>that he may have spoken</i>
que nous ayons parl é	<i>that we may have spoken</i>
que vous ayez parl é	<i>that you may have spoken</i>
qu'ils aient parl é	<i>that they may have spoken</i>

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je parl asse	<i>that I might speak</i>
que tu parl asses	<i>that thou mightst speak</i>
qu'il parl ât	<i>that he might speak</i>
que nous parl assions	<i>that we might speak</i>
que vous parl assiez	<i>that you might speak</i>
qu'ils parl assent	<i>that they might speak</i>

-T-

PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que j'eusse parl é	<i>that I might have spoken</i>
que tu eusses parl é	<i>that thou mightst have spoken</i>
qu'il eût parl é	<i>that he might have spoken</i>
que nous eussions parl é	<i>that we might have spoken</i>
que vous eussiez parl é	<i>that you might have spoken</i>
qu'ils eussent parl é	<i>that they might have spoken</i>

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boite. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un, amen.
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

PARLER

to speak.

(Negatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.
Ne pas parl er	not to speak
-B-	PAST OR PERFECT,
	or compound of the present.
N'avoir pas parl é	not to have spoken
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE,
Ne parl ant pas	not speaking
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.
N'ayant pas parl é	not having spoken

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
Je ne parl e pas	<i>I speak not, do not speak, or am not</i>	} speaking
tu ne parl es pas	<i>thou speakest not, dost not speak, or art not</i>	
il ne parl e pas	<i>he speaks not, does not speak, or is not</i>	
nous ne parl ons pas	<i>we speak not, do not speak, or are not</i>	
vous ne parl ez pas	<i>you speak not, do not speak, or are not</i>	
ils ne parl ent pas	<i>they speak not, do not speak, or are not</i>	
-G-	PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,	
	or compound of the present.	
Je n'ai pas parl é	<i>I have not spoken, did not speak, or have not</i>	} been speaking
tu n'as pas parl é	<i>thou hast not spoken, didst not speak, or hast not</i>	
il n'a pas parl é	<i>he has not spoken, did not speak, or has not</i>	
nous n'avons pas parl é	<i>we have not spoken, did not speak, or have not</i>	
vous n'avez pas parl é	<i>you have not spoken, did not speak, or have not</i>	
ils n'ont pas parl é	<i>they have not spoken, did not speak, or have not</i>	
-H-	IMPERFECT.	
Je ne parl ais pas	<i>I spoke not, did not speak, or was not</i>	} speaking
tu ne parl ais pas	<i>thou spokest not, didst not speak, or wast not</i>	
il ne parl ait pas	<i>he spoke not, did not speak, or was not</i>	
nous ne parl ions pas	<i>we spoke not, did not speak, or were not</i>	
vous ne parl iez pas	<i>you spoke not, did not speak, or were not</i>	
ils ne parl aient pas	<i>they spoke not, did not speak, or were not</i>	
-I-	PLUPERFECT,	
	or compound of the imperfect.	
Je n'avais pas parl é	<i>I had not spoken, or had not been</i>	} speaking
tu n'avais pas parl é	<i>thou hadst not spoken, or hadst not been</i>	
il n'avait pas parl é	<i>he had not spoken, or had not been</i>	
nous n'avions pas parl é	<i>we had not spoken, or had not been</i>	
vous n'aviez pas parl é	<i>you had not spoken, or had not been</i>	
ils n'avaient pas parl é	<i>they had not spoken, or had not been</i>	

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne parl ai pas
 tu ne parl as pas
 il ne parl a pas
 nous ne parl âmes pas
 vous ne parl âtes pas
 ils ne parl èrent pas

*I spoke not or did not speak
 thou spokest not or didst not speak
 he spoke not or did not speak
 we spoke not or did not speak
 you spoke not or did not speak
 they spoke not or did not speak*

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

Je n'eus pas parl é
 tu n'eus pas parl é
 il n'eut pas parl é
 nous n'eûmes pas parl é
 vous n'eûtes pas parl é
 ils n'eurent pas parl é

*I had not spoken
 thou hadst not spoken
 he had not spoken
 we had not spoken
 you had not spoken
 they had not spoken*

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne parl erai pas
 tu ne parl eras pas
 il ne parl era pas
 nous ne parl erons pas
 vous ne parl erez pas
 ils ne parl eront pas

*I shall or will not speak
 thou shalt or wilt not speak
 he shall or will not speak
 we shall or will not speak
 you shall or will not speak
 they shall or will not speak*

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

Je n'aurai pas parl é
 tu n'auras pas parl é
 il n'aura pas parl é
 nous n'aurons pas parl é
 vous n'aurez pas parl é
 ils n'auront pas parl é

*I shall or will not have spoken
 thou shalt or wilt not have spoken
 he shall or will not have spoken
 we shall or will not have spoken
 you shall or will not have spoken
 they shall or will not have spoken*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Je ne parl erais pas
 tu ne parl erais pas
 il ne parl erait pas
 nous ne parl erions pas
 vous ne parl eriez pas
 ils ne parl eraient pas

*I should, would, could, or might
 thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst
 he should, would, could, or might
 we should, would, could, or might
 you should, would, could, or might
 they should, would, could, or might*

} not speak

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

Je n'aurais pas parl é,
 or je n'eusse pas parl é
 tu n'aurais pas parl é,
 or tu n'eusses pas parl é
 il n'aurait pas parl é,
 or il n'eût pas parl é

*I should, would, could,
 or might not have spoken
 thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
 or mightst not have spoken
 he should, would, could,
 or might not have spoken*

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William

nous n'aurions pas parl é
 or nous n'eussions pas parl é
 vous n'auriez pas parl é
 or vous n'eussiez pas parl é
 ils n'auraient pas parl é
 or ils n'eussent pas parl é

we should, would, could,
 or might not have spoken
 you should, would, could,
 or might not have spoken
 they should, would, could,
 or might not have spoken

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne parl e pas
 qu'il ne parl e pas
 ne parl ons pas
 ne parl ez pas
 qu'ils ne parl ent pas

speak not or do not speak (thou)
 let him not speak
 let us not speak
 speak not or do not speak (you)
 let them not speak

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je ne parl e pas
 que tu ne parl es pas
 qu'il ne parl e pas
 que nous ne parl ions pas
 que vous ne parl iez pas
 qu'ils ne parl ent pas

that I may not speak
 that thou mayst not speak
 that he may not speak
 that we may not speak
 that you may not speak
 that they may not speak

-R-

PRETERIT OR PAST,

or compound of the present.

Que je n'aie pas parl é
 que tu n'aies pas parl é
 qu'il n'ait pas parl é
 que nous n'ayons pas parl é
 que vous n'ayez pas parl é
 qu'ils n'aient pas parl é

that I may not have spoken
 that thou mayst not have spoken
 that he may not have spoken
 that we may not have spoken
 that you may not have spoken
 that they may not have spoken

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je ne parl asse pas
 que tu ne parl asses pas
 qu'il ne parl ât pas
 que nous ne parl assions pas
 que vous ne parl assiez pas
 qu'ils ne parl assent pas

that I might not speak
 that thou mightst not speak
 that he might not speak
 that we might not speak
 that you might not speak
 that they might not speak

-T-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Que je n'eusse pas parl é
 que tu n'eusses pas parl é
 qu'il n'eût pas parl é
 que nous n'eussions pas parl é
 que vous n'eussiez pas parl é
 qu'ils n'eussent pas parl é

that I might not have spoken
 that thou mightst not have spoken
 that he might not have spoken
 that we might not have spoken
 that you might not have spoken
 that they might not have spoken

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

PARLER

*to speak.**(Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Parl é-je
 parl es-tu
 parl e-t-il
 parl ons-vous
 parl ez-vous
 parl ent-ils

do I speak or am I speaking
dost thou speak or art thou speaking
does he speak or is he speaking
do we speak or are we speaking
do you speak or are you speaking
do they speak or are they speaking

-G-

PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present.

Ai-je parl é
 as-tu parl é
 a-t-il parl é
 avons-nous parl é
 avez-vous parl é
 ont-ils parl é

have I spoken or did I speak
hast thou spoken or didst thou speak
has he spoken or did he speak
have we spoken or did we speak
have ybu spoken or did you speak
have they spoken or did they speak

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Parl ais-je
 parl ais-tu
 parl ait-il
 parl ions-nous
 parl iez-vous
 parl aient-ils

did I speak or was I speaking
didst thou speak or wast thou speaking
did he speak or was he speaking
did we speak or were we speaking
did you speak or were you speaking
did they speak or were they speaking

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Avais-je parl é
 avais-tu parl é
 avait-il parl é
 avions-nous parl é
 aviez-vous parl é
 avaient-ils parl é

had I spoken or had I been speaking
hadst thou spoken or hadst thou been speaking
had he spoken or had he been speaking
had we spoken or had we been speaking
had you spoken or had you been speaking
had they spoken or had they been speaking

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Parl ai-je
 parl as-tu
 parl a-t-il
 parl âmes-nous
 parl âtes-vous
 parl èrent-ils

did I speak
didst thou speak
did he speak
did we speak
did you speak
did they speak

†See page 8, art. 67.

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in u nion. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the preterit.

Eus-je parl é	had I spoken
eus-tu parl é	hadst thou spoken
eut-il parl é	had he spoken
eûmes-nous parl é	had we spoken
eûtes-vous parl é	had you spoken
eurent-ils parl é	had they spoken

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Parl erai-je	shall or will I speak
parl eras-tu	shalt or wilt thou speak
parl era-t-il	shall or will he speak
parl erons-nous	shall or will we speak
parl erez-vous	shall or will you speak
parl eront-ils	shall or will they speak

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the future.

Aurai-je parl é	shall or will I have spoken
auras-tu parl é	shalt or wilt thou have spoken
aura-t-il parl é	shall or will he have spoken
aurons-nous parl é	shall or will we have spoken
aurez-vous parl é	shall or will you have spoken
auront-ils parl é	shall or will they have spoken

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Parlerais-je	should, would, could, or might I speak
parlerais-tu	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou speak
parlerait-il	should, would, could, or might he speak
parlerions-nous	should, would, could, or might we speak
parleriez-vous	should, would, could, or might you speak
parleraient-ils	should, would, could, or might they speak

-O-

PAST,
 or compound of the present.

Aurais-je parl é,	should, would, could,
or eussé-je parl é	or might I have spoken
aurais-tu parl é,	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or eusses-tu parl é	or mightst thou have spoken
aurait-il parl é,	should, would, could,
or eût-il parl é	or might he have spoken
aurions-nous parl é,	should, would, could,
or eussions-nous parl é	or might we have spoken
auriez-vous parl é,	should, would, could,
or eussiez-vous parl é	or might you have spoken
auraient-ils parl é,	should, would, could,
or eussent-ils parl é	or might they have spoken

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

PARLER *to speak.* (Negatively and Interrogatively.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

Ne parl é-je pas
 ne parl es-tu pas
 ne parl e-t-il pas
 ne parl ons-nous pas
 ne parl ez-vous pas
 ne parl ent-ils pas

PRESENT.

*do I not speak or am I not speaking
 dost thou not speak or art thou not speaking
 does he not speak or is he not speaking
 do we not speak or are we not speaking
 do you not speak or are you not speaking
 do they not speak or are they not speaking*

-G-

PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present.

N'ai-je pas parl é
 n'as-tu pas parl é
 n'a-t-il pas parl é
 n'avons-nous pas parl é
 n'avez-vous pas parl é
 n'ont-ils pas parl é

*have I not spoken, did I not speak,
 or have I not been speaking
 hast thou not spoken, didst thou not speak,
 or hast thou not been speaking
 has he not spoken, did he not speak,
 or has he not been speaking
 have we not spoken, did we not speak,
 or have we not been speaking
 have you not spoken, did you not speak
 or have you not been speaking
 have they not spoken, did they not speak,
 or have they not been speaking*

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Ne parl ais-je pas
 ne parl ais-tu pas
 ne parl ait-il pas
 ne parl ions-nous pas
 ne parl iez-vous pas
 ne parl aient-ils pas

*did I not speak or was I not speaking
 didst thou not speak or wast thou not speaking
 did he not speak or was he not speaking
 did we not speak or were we not speaking
 did you not speak or were you not speaking
 did they not speak or were they not speaking*

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

N'avais-je pas parl é
 n'avais-tu pas parl é
 n'avait-il pas parl é
 n'avions-nous pas parl é
 n'aviez-vous pas parl é
 n'avaient-ils pas parl é

*had I not spoken or had I not been
 hadst thou not spoken or hadst thou not been
 had he not spoken or had he not been
 had we not spoken or had we not been
 had you not spoken or had you not been
 had they not spoken or had they not been*

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Ne parl ai-je pas
 ne parl as-tu pas
 ne parl a-t-il pas
 ne parl âmes-nous pas
 ne parl âtes-vous pas
 ne parl èrent-ils pas

*did I not speak
 didst thou not speak
 did he not speak
 did we not speak
 did you not speak
 did they not speak*

speaking

mur. mâr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
 3, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

N'eus-je pas parl é	had I not spoken
n'eus-tu pas parl é	hadst thou not spoken
n'eut-il pas parl é	had he not spoken
n'eûmes-nous pas parl é	had we not spoken
n'eûtes-vous pas parl é	had you not spoken
n'eurent-ils pas parl é	had they not spoken

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne parl erai-je pas	shall or will I not speak
ne parl eras-tu pas	shalt or wilt thou not speak
ne parl era-t-il pas	shall or will he not speak
ne parl erons-nous pas	shall or will we not speak
ne parl erez-vous pas	shall or will you not speak
ne parl eront-ils pas	shall or will they not speak

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

N'aurai-je pas parl é	shall or will I not have spoken
n'auras-tu pas parl é	shalt or wilt thou not have spoken
n'aura-t-il pas parl é	shall or will he not have spoken
n'aurons-nous pas parl é	shall or will we not have spoken
n'aurez-vous pas parl é	shall or will you not have spoken
n'auront-ils pas parl é	shall or will they not have spoken

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Ne parl erais-je pas	should, would, could, or might I	} not speak
ne parl erais-tu pas	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou	
ne parl erait-il pas	should, would, could, or might he	
ne parl erions-nous pas	should, would, could, or might we	
ne parl eriez-vous pas	should, would, could, or might you	
ne parl eraient-ils pas	should, would, could, or might they	

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

N'aurais-je pas parl é,	should, would, could,
or n'eussé-je pas parl é	or might I not have spoken
n'aurais-tu pas parl é,	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or n'eusses-tu pas parl é	or mightst thou not have spoken
n'aurait-il pas parl é,	should, would, could,
or n'eût-il pas parl é	or might he not have spoken
n'aurions-nous pas parl é,	should, would, could,
or n'eussions-nous pas parl é	or might we not have spoken
n'auriez-vous pas parl é,	should, would, could,
or n'eussiez-vous pas parl é	or might you not have spoken
n'auraient-ils pas parl é,	should, would, could,
or n'eussent-ils pas parl é	or might they not have spoken

Of Irregularities in some Verbs of the First Conjugation.

N. B. What follows will be better studied after the pupil shall have learned the other three conjugations.

88. Of the verbs of the *first conjugation*; that is, of all the verbs having the termination of the infinitive present, in *er*, (amounting to about 2500,) four only are, properly speaking, irregular; that is, cannot take the terminations of the model verb, *parler* to speak, in all their tenses and persons: these verbs are, *s'en aller*, page 112.—*aller*, page 122.—*envoyer*, page 123,—and *renvoyer*, conjugated like *envoyer*.

89. However, besides these four irregular verbs, there are some, which though generally classed among the regular verbs of the *first conjugation*, undergo some changes in the orthography of some of their tenses and persons; these irregularities deserve so much the more attention, as they are absolutely necessary to a correct pronunciation.

90. This subject has not been clearly explained in any books published for the use of the English pupil. The following directions will supply the deficiency:

91. Some of the verbs ending with *eler*—as, *appeler* to call, generally speaking, take a second *l*, in those tenses and persons only, in which the letter *l* is followed by *e*, *es*, *ent*. Those tenses and persons are the following:—

F	j'appelle	tu appelles	il appelle ils appellent
L	j'appellerai nous appellerons	tu appelleras vous appellerez	il appellera ils appelleront
N	j'appellerais nous appellerions	tu appellerais vous appelleriez	il appellerait ils appelleraient
F		appelle	qu'il appelle qu'ils appellent
Q	que j'appelle	que tu appelles	qu'il appelle qu'ils appellent.

92. Conjugate in the same manner:—*atteler* to put to—*amonceler* to heap—*chanceler* to stagger—*dételer* to unteam—*étinceler* to sparkle—*ficeler* to tie with pack thread—*niveler* to level—*rappeler* to recall—*renouveler* to renew.

93. Some other verbs, ending also with *eler*, instead of taking a second *l* in those tenses and persons, in which the letter *l* is followed by *e*, *es*, *ent*, take a *grave accent* upon the *e*, which precedes the *l*—as, *pêler* to peal.

F	je pèle	tu pèles	il pèle ils pèlent
L	je pèlerai nous pèlerons	tu pèleras vous pèlerez	il pèlera ils pèleront
N	je pèlerais nous pèlerions	tu pèlerais vous pèleriez	il pèlerait ils pèleraient
P		pèle	qu'il pèle qu'ils pèlent
Q	que je pèle	que tu pèles	qu'il pèle qu'ils pèlent.

94. Conjugate in the same manner:—*bourreler* to torment—*congeler* to congeal—*dégeler* to thaw—*geler* to freeze—*harceler* to torment—*regeler* to freeze again.

95. Some of the verbs ending with *eter*—as, *jeter* to throw, take a second *t*, in those tenses and persons only in which the letter *t* is followed by *e, es, ent*.

F	je jette	tu jettes	il jette ils jettent
L	je jetterai	tu jetteras	il jettera ils jetteront
N	nous jetterons	vous jetterez	ils jetteront
N	je jetterais	tu jetterais	il jetterait ils jetteraient
N	nous jetterions	vous jetteriez	ils jetteraient
P		jette	qu'il jette qu'ils jettent
Q	que je jette	que tu jettes	qu'il jette qu'ils jettent.

96. Conjugate in the same manner :—*cacheter* to seal—*décacheter* to unseal—*projeter* to project—*recacheter* to seal again.

97. Some other verbs, also ending with *eter*, instead of taking a second *t* in those tenses and persons in which the *t* is followed by *e, es, ent*, take a grave accent upon the *e* which precedes the *t*—as, *acheter* to buy.

F	j'achète	tu achètes	il achète ils achètent
L	j'achèterai	tu achèteras	il achètera ils achèteront
N	j'achèterons	tu achèterais	il achèterait ils achèteraient
N	j'achèterais	tu achèterais	il achèterait ils achèteraient
P		achète	qu'il achète qu'ils achètent
Q	que j'achète	que tu achètes	qu'il achète qu'ils achètent.

98 Conjugate in the same manner :—*colleter* to collar—*coqueter* to coquet—*décolleter* to uncover the neck—*étiqueter* to label—*suracheter* to overpay—*trompeter* to summon with sound of trumpet.

99. Conjugate also, in the same manner, all verbs ending with

ecer—as, <i>dépecer</i>	to carve,	ever—as, <i>achever</i>	to finish,
emer—as, <i>semer</i>	to sow,	evrer—as, <i>sevrer</i>	to wean.
ener—as, <i>mener</i>	to lead,		

100. All verbs ending with

ébrer—as, <i>célébrer</i>	to celebrate,
écer—as, <i>rapiecer</i>	to piece,
écher—as, <i>lécher</i>	to lick,
éder—as, <i>posséder</i>	to possess,
égler—as, <i>régler</i>	to regulate,
égnier—as, <i>régner</i>	to reign,
égrer—as, <i>réintégrer</i>	to reinstate,
éguer—as, <i>alléguer</i>	to allege,
éler—as, <i>révéler</i>	to reveal,
émer—as, <i>blasphémer</i>	to blaspheme,
éner—as, <i>aliéner</i>	to alienate,
équer—as, <i>hypothéquer</i>	to mortgage,
érer—as, <i>espérer</i>	to hope,
éter—as, <i>inquiéter</i>	to make uneasy,
étrer—as, <i>pénétrer</i>	to penetrate.

change the *acute accent* which is on the *e* of the last syllable but one, (the penultimate,) into a *grave accent*, in those tenses and persons in which that penultimate syllable is followed by *e*, *es*, *ent*—as, *espérer* to hope.

F	j'espère	tu espères	il espère ils espèrent
L	j'espèrerais nous espèrerons	tu espèreras vous espèrerez	il espèrera ils espèreront
N	j'espèrerais nous espèrerions	tu espèrerais vous espèreriez	il espèrerait ils espèreraient
P		espère	qu'il espère qu'ils espèrent
Q	que j'espère	que tu espères	qu'il espère qu'ils espèrent.

101. In verbs ending with *cer*—as, *avancer* to advance, a *cedilla*, that is a small comma, (ç) is put under the *c*, in those tenses and persons in which the *c* is followed by *a*, *o*, in order to preserve the soft sound the *c* has in the infinitive present, and in other tenses and persons. See page 11, Art. 40. *Cedilla*.

102. In verbs ending with *ger*—as, *négliger* to neglect; the *g* having the sound of *j*, an *e* mute must be put after the *g*, in those tenses and persons in which the *g* is followed by *a*, *o*; in order to preserve the sound of *j*, throughout the tenses.

103. In the verbs ending with

ayer—as, <i>essayer</i>	to try,
éyer—as, <i>grasséyer</i>	to speak thick,
oyer—as, <i>employer</i>	to employ,
uyer—as, <i>appuyer</i>	to support,

the *y* is changed into *i*, in those tenses and persons only, in which the *y* is followed by *e*, *es*, *ent*; but *y* is preserved when followed by any other letters, even when followed by *i*—as, *essayer* to try.

The pronunciation of this verb being very difficult, it is figured under every person.

-A- essayer, é-sè-yé,	-C- essayant, é-sè-yan,	-E- essayé, é-sè-yé,
-F- j'essaie, j.é-sè, tu essaies, tu é-sè, il essaie, il é-sè,	nous essayons, nou z.é-sè-yon, vous essayez, vou z.é-sè-yé, ils essaient. il z.é-sè.	
-H- j'essayais, j.é-sè-yè, tu essayais, tu é-se-yè, il essayait, il é-sè-yè,	nous essayions, nou z.é-sè-yion, vous essayiez, vou z.é-sè-yié, ils essayaient. il z.é-sè-yè.	

-J- j'essayai, j.é-sè-yé, tu essayas, tu é-sè-yâ, il essaya, il é-sè-ya,	nous essayâmes, nou z.é-sè-yam, vous essayâtes, vou z.é-sè-yat, ils essayèrent. il z.é-sè-yèr.
-L- j'essaierai, j.é-sè-ré, tu essaieras tu é-sè-râ il essaiera, il é-sè-ra,	nous essaierons, nou z.é-sè-ron, vous essaierez, vou z.é-sè-ré, ils essaieront. il z.é-sè-ron.
-N- j'essaierais, j.é-sè-ré, tu essaierais, tu é-sè-rè, il essaierait, il é-sè-rè,	nous essaierions, nou z.é-sè-rion, vous essaieriez, vou z.é-sè-rié, ils essaieraient. il z.é-sè-rè.
-P- essaie, é-sè, qu'il essaie, k.il é-sè,	essayons, é-sè-yon, essayez, é-sè-yé, qu'ils essaient. k.il z.é-sè.
-Q- que j'essaie, ke j.é-sè, que tu essaies, ke tu é-sè, qu'il essaie, k.il é-sè,	que nous essayions, ke nou z.é-sè-yion, que vous essayiez, ke vou z.é-sè-yié, qu'ils essaient. k.il z.é-sè.
-S- que j'essayasse, ke j.é-sè-yas, que tu essayasses, ke tu é-sè-yas qu'il essayât, k.il é-sè-ya,	que nous essayassions, ke nou z.é-sè-ya-sion, que vous essayassiez, ke vou z.é-sè-ya-sié, qu'ils essayassent. k.il z.é-sè-yas.

104. In verbs whose participle present ends with *uant*—as, *saluant*, from *saluer* to bow; a *diæresis* is put upon the *i*, thus, *ï*, to cause the *u* and *ï* to be pronounced separately in the first and second person plural of the imperfect of the indicative: *nous saluïons* we bowed—*vous saluïez* you bowed; and of the subjunctive present: *que nous saluïons* that we may bow—*que vous saluïez* that you may bow.

105. All the verbs of that kind are found in the first conjugation, except *conclure* to conclude—and *exclure* to exclude, which belong to the fourth conjugation.

Of the Second Conjugation.

106. The verbs of the second conjugation, like those of the first, are known by the termination of the present of the infinitive.

107. The present of the infinitive of the second conjugation, has for termination *ir*—as, *fin ir* to finish.

108. All verbs whose present of the infinitive end with *ir*, to the amount of about 366, are of the second conjugation; and, if regular, are conjugated like *finir* to finish; which is hereafter conjugated to be used as a model.

109. There are in the second conjugation about 294 regular verbs which take the termination of *finir* to finish, and 92 irregular which are all conjugated in this volume, and which are to be found in the alphabetical list of all the irregular verbs, page 162.

110. To diminish the number of the irregular verbs of this conjugation, several schemes have been invented. Among others, Levizac, in his grammar, has divided the verbs of this conjugation into *four*, what he calls *branches*; this plan, which is not in accordance with any of our French grammars, affords no advantage over the old one, as every practical teacher must have found out, to his great annoyance; it is besides erroneous in many instances. I shall here mention some of the errors alluded to: page 151, Levizac's Grammar, *sen tir*, to feel, is there given as the model verb, of all the verbs composing the second *branch*, page 150, among which, are, *dor mir* to sleep—*redor mir* to sleep again—*ser vir* to serve; and several others.

Now taking any tense of the model verb, *sen tir* to feel; the present of the indicative, for instance, we shall have—

je <i>sen s</i> ,	je <i>dor s</i> ,	je <i>ser s</i> ,
tu <i>sen s</i> ,	tu <i>dor s</i> ,	tu <i>ser s</i> ,
il <i>sen t</i> ,	il <i>dor t</i> ,	il <i>ser t</i> ,
nous <i>sen tons</i> ,	nous <i>dor tons</i> ,	nous <i>ser tons</i> ,
vous <i>sen tez</i> ,	vous <i>dor tez</i> ,	vous <i>ser tez</i> ,
ils <i>sen tent</i> ,	ils <i>dor tent</i> ,	ils <i>ser tent</i> .

Taking any other tense, the future, for instance, we shall have—

je <i>sen tirai</i> ,	je <i>dor tirai</i> ,	je <i>ser tirai</i> ,
tu <i>sen tiras</i> ,	tu <i>dor tiras</i> ,	tu <i>ser tiras</i> ,
il <i>sen tira</i> ,	il <i>dor tira</i> ,	il <i>ser tira</i> ,
nous <i>sen tirons</i> ,	nous <i>dor tirons</i> ,	nous <i>ser tirons</i>
vous <i>sen tirez</i> ,	vous <i>dor tirez</i> ,	vous <i>ser tirez</i> ,
ils <i>sen tiront</i> ,	ils <i>dor tiront</i> ,	ils <i>ser tiront</i> ,

and so on for the other tenses, which are by no means correct. The fact is, that Levizac, deceived by the first three persons of the present of the indicative, which happened to be right, concluded, without further inquiry, that the rest would also be right.

These faults, and a great many others, are in the first edition of Levizac's; since that first edition, the grammar has gone through *nine editions* in England, and through *seven* in America, and the same faults are still in it, although the preface of every edition announces that the work has been thoroughly *revised, corrected, and improved*, by the ablest masters.

111. *Hint.* The best way for a pupil to ascertain whether a verb ending in the present of the infinitive, with *ir*, is regular or irregular: he must look for it in the alphabetical list of all the irregular verbs, given at page 162, if met there, the scholar will be referred to the page where it is conjugated; if not to be met in the above mentioned table, it is a regular verb, and is to be conjugated like the model verb, *finir* to finish.

112. Those who have already learned the verbs, will readily ascertain whether a verb of the second conjugation, is regular or irregular, if they remember that *issant* is the *termination* of the participle present, of all the regular verbs of the second conjugation.

113. Conjugate in the same manner—as, *fin ir* to finish, the following verbs:—

adouc <i>ir</i>	to soften,	gém <i>ir</i>	to groan,
compat <i>ir</i>	to sympathise,	noirc <i>ir</i>	to blacken,
démol <i>ir</i>	to pull down,	pér <i>ir</i>	to perish,
éblou <i>ir</i>	to dazzle,	pun <i>ir</i>	to punish,
établ <i>ir</i>	to establish,	rempl <i>ir</i>	to fill,
fourn <i>ir</i>	to furnish,	sais <i>ir</i>	to seize.

114. For the formation of the compound tenses, see page 35, art. 86 and 87.

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

FINIR

to finish.

(Affirmatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-

PRESENT.

Fin *ir*

to finish

-B-

PAST OR PERFECT,

or compound of the present.

Avoir fin *i*

to have finished

-C-

PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE,

Fin *issant*

finishing

-D-

COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Ayant fin *i*

having finished

-E-

PARTICIPLE PAST OR PASSIVE.

Fin *i*

finished

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Je fin *is*

I finish, do finish, or am finishing

tu fin *is*

thou finishest, dost finish, or art finishing

il fin *it*

he finishes, does finish, or is finishing

nous fin *issons*

we finish, do finish, or are finishing

vous fin *issez*

you finish, do finish, or are finishing

ils fin *issent*

they finish, do finish, or are finishing

-G-

PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present.

J'ai fin *i*

I have finished, did finish, or have been

tu as fin *i*

thou hast finished, didst finish, or hast been

il a fin *i*

he has finished, did finish, or has been

nous avons fin *i*

we have finished, did finish, or have been

vous avez fin *i*

you have finished, did finish, or have been

ils ont fin *i*

they have finished, did finish, or have been

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Je fin *issais*

I finished, did finish, or was finishing

tu fin *issais*

thou finishedst, didst finish, or wast finishing

il fin *issait*

he finished, did finish, or was finishing

nous fin *issions*

we finished, did finish, or were finishing

vous fin *issiez*

you finished, did finish, or were finishing

ils fin *issaient*

they finished, did finish, or were finishing

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

J'avais fin *i*

I had finished or had been finishing

tu avais fin *i*

thou hadst finished or hadst been finishing

il avait fin *i*

he had finished or had been finishing

nous avions fin *i*

we had finished or had been finishing

vous aviez fin *i*

you had finished or had been finishing

ils avaient fin *i*

they had finished or had been finishing

finishing

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli in William.

-J-

Je fin *is*
 tu fin *is*
 il fin *it*
 nous fin *îmes*
 vous fin *îtes*
 ils fin *irent*

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

I finished or did finish
thou finishedst or didst finish
he finished or did finish
we finished or did finish
you finished or did finish
they finished or did finish

-K-

J'eus fin *i*
 tu eus fin *i*
 il eut fin *i*
 nous eûmes fin *i*
 vous eûtes fin *i*
 ils eurent fin *i*

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

I had finished
thou hadst finished
he had finished
we had finished
you had finished
they had finished

-L-

Je fin *irai*
 tu fin *iras*
 il fin *ira*
 nous fin *irons*
 vous fin *irez*
 ils fin *iront*

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

I shall or will finish
thou shalt or wilt finish
he shall or will finish
we shall or will finish
you shall or will finish
they shall or will finish

-M-

J'aurai fin *i*
 tu auras fin *i*
 il auras fin *i*
 nous aurons fin *i*
 vous aurez fin *i*
 ils auront fin *i*

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

I shall or will have finished
thou shalt or will have finished
he shall or will have finished
we shall or will have finished
you shall or will have finished
they shall or will have finished

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

Je fin *irais*
 tu fin *irais*
 il fin *irait*
 nous fin *irions*
 vous fin *iriez*
 ils fin *iraient*

PRESENT.

I should, would, could, or might finish
thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst finish
he should, would, could, or might finish
we should, would, could, or might finish
you should, would, could, or might finish
they should, would, could, or might finish

-O-

J'aurais fin *i*,
 or j'eusse fin *i*
 tu aurais fin *i*,
 or tu eusses fin *i*
 il aurait fin *i*,
 or il eût fin *i*

PAST,
or compound of the present.

I should, would, could,
or might have finished
thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or mightst have finished
he should, would, could,
or might have finished

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

nous aurions fin *i*,
 or nous eussions fin *i*
 vous auriez fin *i*,
 or vous eussiez fin *i*
 ils auraient fin *i*,
 or ils eussent fin *i*

we should, would, could,
or might have finished
you should, would, could,
or might have finished
they should, would, could,
or might have finished

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Fin *is*
 qu'il fin *isse*
 fin *issons*
 fin *issez*
 qu'ils fin *issent*

finish (thou)
let him finish
let us finish
finish (you)
let them finish

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je fin *isse*
 que tu fin *isses*
 qu'il fin *isse*
 que nous fin *issions*
 que vous fin *issiez*
 qu'ils fin *issent*

that I may finish
that thou mayst finish
that he may finish
that we may finish
that you may finish
that they may finish

-B-

PRETERIT or PAST,
 or compound of the present,

Que j'aie fin *i*
 que tu aies fin *i*
 qu'il ait fin *i*
 que nous ayons fin *i*
 que vous ayez fin *i*
 qu'ils aient fin *i*

that I may have finished
that thou mayst have finished
that he may have finished
that we may have finished
that you may have finished
that they may have finished

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je fin *isse*
 que tu fin *isses*
 qu'il fin *ît*
 que nous fin *issions*
 que vous fin *issiez*
 qu'ils fin *issent*

that I might finish
that thou mightst finish
that he might finish
that we might finish
that you might finish
that they might finish

-T-

PLUPERFECT,
 or compound of the imperfect.

Que j'eusse fin *i*
 que tu eusses fin *i*
 qu'il eût fin *i*
 que nous eussions fin *i*
 que vous eussiez fin *i*
 qu'ils eussent fin *i*

that I might have finished
that thou mightst have finished
that he might have finished
that we might have finished
that you might have finished
that they might have finished

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Will i am.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

FINIR

to finish.

(Negatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-

Ne pas fin ir

PRESENT.

not to finish

-B-

PAST OR PERFECT,

or compound of the present.

N'avoir pas fin i

not to have finished

-C-

Ne fin issant pas

PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE.

not finishing

-D-

N'ayant pas fin i

COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

not having finished

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

Je ne fin is pas

tu ne fin is pas

il ne fin it pas

nous ne fin issons pas

vous ne fin issez pas

il ne fin issent pas

PRESENT.

*I finish not, do not finish, or am not
 thou finishest not, dost not finish, or art not
 he finishes not, does not finish, or is not
 we finish not, do not finish, or are not
 you finish not, do not finish, or are not
 they finish not, do not finish, or are not*

finishing

-G-

PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present.

Je n'ai pas fin i

tu n'as pas fin i

il n'a pas fin i

nous n'avons pas fin i

vous n'avez pas fin i

ils n'ont pas fin i

*I have not finished, did not finish, or have not
 thou hast not finished, didst not finish, or hast not
 he has not finished, did not finish, or has not
 we have not finished, did not finish, or have not
 you have not finished, did not finish, or have not
 they have not finished, did not finish, or have not*

been finishing

-H-

Je ne fin issais pas

tu ne fin issais pas

il ne fin issait pas

nous ne fin issions pas

vous ne fin issiez pas

ils ne fin issaient pas

IMPERFECT

*I finished not, did not finish, or was
 thou finishedst not, didst not finish, or wast
 he finished not, did not finish, or was
 we finished not, did not finish, or were
 you finished not, did not finish, or were
 they finished not, did not finish, or were*

not finishing

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Je n'avais pas fin i

tu n'avais pas fin i

il n'avait pas fin i

nous n'avions pas fin i

vous n'aviez pas fin i

ils n'avaient pas fin i

*I had not finished or had not been
 thou hadst not finished or hadst not been
 he had not finished or had not been
 we had not finished or had not been
 you had not finished or had not been
 they had not finished or had not been*

finishing

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

-J-

Je ne fin *is* pas
 tu ne fin *is* pas
 il ne fin *it* pas
 nous ne fin *îmes* pas
 vous ne fin *îtes* pas
 ils ne fin *irent* pas

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

I finished not or did not finish
thou finishedst not or didst not finish
he finished not or did not finish
we finished not or did not finish
you finished not or did not finish
they finished not or did not finish

-K-

Je n'eus pas fin *i*
 tu n'eus pas fin *i*
 il n'eût pas fin *i*
 nous n'eûmes pas fin *i*
 vous n'eûtes pas fin *i*
 ils n'eurent pas fin *i*

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

I had not finished
thou hadst not finished
he had not finished
we had not finished
you had not finished
they had not finished

-L-

Je ne fin *irai* pas
 tu ne fin *iras* pas
 il ne fin *ira* pas
 nous ne fin *irons* pas
 vous ne fin *irez* pas
 ils ne fin *iront* pas

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

I shall or will not finish
thou shalt or wilt not finish
he shall or will not finish
we shall or will not finish
you shall or will not finish
they shall or will not finish

-M-

Je n'aurai pas fin *i*
 tu n'auras pas fin *i*
 il n'aura pas fin *i*
 nous n'aurons pas fin *i*
 vous n'aurez pas fin *i*
 ils n'auront pas fin *i*

FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

I shall or will not have finished
thou shalt or wilt not have finished
he shall or will not have finished
we shall or will not have finished
you shall or will not have finished
they shall or will not have finished

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

Je ne fin *irais* pas
 tu ne fin *irais* pas
 il ne fin *irait* pas
 nous ne fin *irions* pas
 vous ne fin *iriez* pas
 ils ne fin *iraient* pas

PRESENT.

I should, would, could, or might
thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst
he should, would, could, or might
we should, would, could, or might
you should, would, could, or might
they should, would, could, or might

} not finish

-O-

Je n'aurais pas fin *i*,
 or je n'eusse pas fin *i*
 tu n'aurais pas fin *i*,
 or tu n'eusses pas fin *i*
 il n'aurait pas fin *i*,
 or il n'eût pas fin *i*

PAST,

or compound of the present.

I should, would, could,
or might not have finished
thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or mightst not have finished,
he should, would, could,
or might not have finished

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. oûde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

nous n'aurions pas fin i,	<i>we should, would, could,</i>
or nous n'eussions pas fin i	<i>or might not have finished</i>
vous n'auriez pas fin i,	<i>you should, would, could,</i>
or vous n'eussiez pas fin i	<i>or might not have finished</i>
ils n'auraient pas fin i,	<i>they should, would, could,</i>
or ils n'eussent pas fin i	<i>or might not have finished</i>

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne fin is pas	<i>finish not or do not finish</i> (thou)
qu'il ne fin isse pas	<i>let him not finish</i>
ne fin issons pas	<i>let us not finish</i>
ne fin issez pas	<i>finish not or do not finish</i> (you)
qu'ils ne fin issent pas	<i>let them not finish</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je ne fin isse pas	<i>that I may not finish</i>
que tu ne fin isses pas	<i>that thou mayst not finish</i>
qu'il ne fin isse pas	<i>that he may not finish</i>
que nous ne fin issions pas	<i>that we may not finish</i>
que vous ne fin issiez pas	<i>that you may not finish</i>
qu'ils ne fin issent pas	<i>that they may not finish</i>

-R-

PRETERIT OR PAST,
or compound of the present.

Que je n'aie pas fin i	<i>that I may not have finished</i>
que tu n'aies pas fin i	<i>that thou mayst not have finished</i>
qu'il n'ait pas fin i	<i>that he may not have finished</i>
que nous n'ayons pas fin i	<i>that we may not have finished</i>
que vous n'ayez pas fin i	<i>that you may not have finished</i>
qu'ils n'aient pas fin i	<i>that they may not have finished</i>

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je ne fin isse pas	<i>that I might not finish</i>
que tu ne fin isses pas	<i>that thou mightst not finish</i>
qu'il ne fin ît pas	<i>that he might not finish</i>
que nous ne fin issions pas	<i>that we might not finish</i>
que vous ne fin issiez pas	<i>that you might not finish</i>
qu'ils ne fin issent pas	<i>that they might not finish</i>

-T-

PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que je n'eusse pas fin i	<i>that I might not have finished</i>
que tu n'eusses pas fin i	<i>that thou mightst not have finished</i>
qu'il n'eût pas fin i	<i>that he might not have finished</i>
que nous n'eussions pas fin i	<i>that we might not have finished</i>
que vous n'eussiez pas fin i	<i>that you might not have finished</i>
qu'ils n'eussent pas fin i	<i>that they might not have finished</i>

ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouëte.
 at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

FINIR

to finish

(Interrogatively.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Fin is-je
 fin is-tu
 fin it-il
 fin issons-nous
 fin issez-vous
 fin issent-ils

do I finish or am I finishing
 dost thou finish or art thou finishing
 does he finish or is he finishing
 do we finish or are we finishing
 do you finish or are you finishing
 do they finish or are they finishing

-G-

PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
 or compound of the present.

Ai-je fin i
 as-tu fin i
 a-t-il fin i
 avons-nous fin i
 avez-vous fin i
 ont-ils fin i

have I finished or did I finish
 hast thou finished or didst thou finish
 has he finished or did he finish
 have we finished or did we finish
 have you finished or did you finish
 have they finished or did they finish

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Fin issais-je
 fin issais-tu
 fin issait-il
 fin issions-nous
 fin issiez-vous
 fin issaient-ils

did I finish or was I finishing
 didst thou finish or wast thou finishing
 did he finish or was he finishing
 did we finish or were we finishing
 did you finish or were you finishing
 did they finish or were they finishing

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

avais-je fin i
 avais-tu fin i
 avait-il fin i
 avions-nous fin i
 aviez-vous fin i
 avaient-ils fin i

had I finished or had I been finishing
 hadst thou finished or hadst thou been finishing
 had he finished or had he been finishing
 had we finished or had we been finishing
 had you finished or had you been finishing
 had they finished or had they been finishing

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Fin is-je
 fin is-tu
 fin it-il
 fin îmes-nous
 fin îtes-vous
 fin îrent-ils

did I finish
 didst thou finish
 did he finish
 did we finish
 did you finish
 did they finish

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the preterit.

Eus-je fin i	had I finished
eus-tu fin i	hadst thou finished
eut-il fin i	had he finished
eûmes-nous fin i	had we finished
eûtes-vous fin i	had you finished
eurent-ils fin i	had they finished

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Fin irai-je	shall or will I finish
fin iras-tu	shalt or wilt thou finish
fin ira-t-il	shall or will he finish
fin irons-nous	shall or will we finish
fin irez-vous	shall or will you finish
fin iront-ils	shall or will they finish

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the future.

Aurai-je fin i	shall or will I have finished
auras-tu fin i	shalt or wilt thou have finished
aura-t-il fin i	shall or will he have finished
aurons-nous fin i	shall or will we have finished
aurez-vous fin i	shall or will you have finished
auront-ils fin i	shall or will they have finished

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Fin irais-je	should, would, could, or might I finish
fin irais-tu	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou finish
fin irait-il	should, would, could, or might he finish
fin irions-nous	should, would, could, or might we finish
fin iriez-vous	should, would, could, or might you finish
fin iraient-ils	should, would, could, or might they finish

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

Aurais-je fin i,	should, would, could,
or eussé-je fin i	or might I have finished
aurais-tu fin i,	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or eusses-tu fin i	or mightst thou have finished
aurait-il fin i,	should, would, could,
or eût-il fin i	or might he have finished
aurions-nous fin i,	should, would, could,
or eussions-nous fin i	or might we have finished
auriez-vous fin i	should, would, could,
or eussiez-vous fin i	or might you have finished
auraient-ils fin i,	should, would, could,
or eussent-ils fin i	or might they have finished

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

FINIR to finish. (Negatively and Interrogatively.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Ne fin <i>is</i> -je pas	do I not finish or am I not finishing
ne fin <i>is</i> -tu pas	dost thou not finish or art thou not finishing
ne fin <i>it</i> -il pas	does he not finish or is he not finishing
re fin <i>issons</i> -nous pas	do we not finish or are we not finishing
ne fin <i>issez</i> -vous pas	do you not finish or are you not finishing
ne fin <i>issent</i> -ils pas	do they not finish or are they not finishing

-G-

PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present.

N'ai-je pas fin <i>i</i>	have I not finished, did I not finish, or have I not been finishing
n'as-tu pas fin <i>i</i>	hast thou not finished, didst thou not finish, or hast thou not been finishing
n'a-t-il pas fin <i>i</i>	has he not finished, did he not finish, or has he not been finishing
n'avons-nous pas fin <i>i</i>	have we not finished, did we not finish, or have we not been finishing
n'avez-vous pas fin <i>i</i>	have you not finished, did you not finish, or have you not been finishing
n'ont-ils pas fin <i>i</i>	have they not finished, did they not finish or have they not been finishing

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Ne fin <i>issais</i> -je pas	did I not finish or was I not finishing
ne fin <i>issais</i> -tu pas	didst thou not finish or wast thou not finishing
ne fin <i>issait</i> -il pas	did he not finish or was he not finishing
ne fin <i>issions</i> -nous pas	did we not finish or were we not finishing
ne fin <i>issiez</i> -vous pas	did you not finish or were you not finishing
ne fin <i>issaient</i> -ils pas	did they not finish or were they not finishing

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

N'avais-je pas fin <i>i</i>	had I not finished or had I not been	} <i>finishing</i>
n'avais-tu pas fin <i>i</i>	hadst thou not finished or hadst thou not been	
n'avait-il pas fin <i>i</i>	had he not finished or had he not been	
n'avions-nous pas fin <i>i</i>	had we not finished or had we not been	
n'aviez-vous pas fin <i>i</i>	had you not finished or had you not been	
n'avaient-ils pas fin <i>i</i>	had they not finished or had they not been	

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Ne fin <i>is</i> -je pas	did I not finish
ne fin <i>is</i> -tu pas	didst thou not finish
ne fin <i>it</i> -il pas	did he not finish
ne fin <i>îmes</i> -nous pas	did we not finish
ne fin <i>îtes</i> -vous pas	did you not finish
ne fin <i>irent</i> -ils pas	did they not finish

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

N'eus-je pas fin i	had I not finished
n'eus-tu pas fin i	hadst thou not finished
n'eut-il pas fin i	had he not finished
n'eûmes-nous pas fin i	had we not finished
n'eûtes-vous pas fin i	had you not finished
n'eurent-ils pas fin i	had they not finished

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne fin irai-je pas	shall or will I not finish
ne fin iras-tu pas	shalt or wilt thou not finish
ne fin ira-t-il pas	shall or will he not finish
ne fin irons-nous pas	shall or will we not finish
ne fin irez-vous pas	shall or will you not finish
ne fin iront-ils pas	shall or will they not finish

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

N'aurai-je pas fin i	shall or will I not have finished
n'auras-tu pas fin i	shalt or wilt thou not have finished
n'aura-t-il pas fin i	shall or will he not have finished
n'aurons-nous pas fin i	shall or will we not have finished
n'aurez-vous pas fin i	shall or will you not have finished
n'auront-ils pas fin i	shall or will they not have finished

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Ne fin irais-je pas	should, would, could, or might I	} not finish
ne fin irais-tu pas	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou	
ne fin irait-il pas	should, would, could, or might he	
ne fin irions-nous pas	should, would, could, or might we	
ne fin iriez-vous pas	should, would, could, or might you	
ne fin iraient-ils pas	should, would, could, or might they	

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

N'aurais-je pas fin i,	should, would, could,
or n'eussé-je pas fin i	or might I not have finished
n'aurais-tu pas fin i,	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or n'eusses-tu pas fin i	or mightst thou not have finished
n'aurait-il pas fin i,	should, would, could,
or n'eût-il pas fin i	or might he not have finished
n'aurions-nous pas fin i,	should, would, could,
or n'eussions-nous pas fin i	or might we not have finished
n'auriez-vous pas fin i,	should, would, could,
or n'eussiez-vous pas fin i	or might you not have finished
n'auraient-ils pas fin i,	should, would, could,
or n'eussent-ils pas fin i	or might they not have finished

Of the Third Conjugation.

115. The verbs of the third conjugation, like those of the first and of the second, are known by the termination of the present of the infinitive.

116. The present of the infinitive, of the third conjugation, has for its termination, *oir*—as, *recevoir* to receive.

117. All verbs whose present of the infinitive ends with *oir*, to the amount of 230, are of the third conjugation; and if regular, are conjugated like *recevoir* to receive; which is hereafter conjugated, to be used as a model.

118. There are in the third conjugation 7 regular verbs only. The regular verbs of this conjugation are easily known, from the irregular ones; they all 7 end with *voir*, in the present of the infinitive.

119. There are about 223 irregular verbs in this conjugation; they are all conjugated in this volume, and are to be found in the alphabetical list of all the irregular verbs, page 162.

120. List of the 7 regular verbs, all conjugated like *rec voir* to receive.

aperç <i>voir</i>	to perceive,
conc <i>voir</i>	to conceive,
déc <i>voir</i>	to deceive,
perc <i>voir</i>	to collect taxes,
rec <i>voir</i>	to receive,
d <i>voir</i>	to owe,
red <i>voir</i>	to owe again.

121. When the termination of any tense or person begins with *a*, *o*, *u*, the *c*, which terminates the *radical part* of the five regular verbs—

aperç <i>voir</i>	to perceive,
conc <i>voir</i>	to conceive,
déc <i>voir</i>	to deceive,
perc <i>voir</i>	to collect taxes,
rec <i>voir</i>	to receive,

take a *cedilla*, thus *ç*, to change the hard sound the *c* would have before *a*, *o*, *u*, into the soft sound it has in the infinitive present, and in other tenses and persons, when before *e*.

122. In conjugating *d voir* to owe, and *red voir* to owe again, on *rec voir*, care must be taken to observe what is the *radical part* of these two verbs.

123. In the participle past *dû* owed, from *devoir* to owe, a circumflex accent is put over the *u* to distinguish *dû* owed, from *du* of the.

124. The circumflex accent is put on *dû* owed, in the masculine singular only.

125. The participle past *redu* owed again, from *redevoir* to owe again, takes no accent.

126. *Apercevoir* to perceive, which is an active verb, is very often used as a reflected verb: thus, *s'apercevoir* (to perceive one's self of) that is, to notice. We say, *apercevoir quelque chose* to perceive something—but we say, *s'apercevoir de quelque chose* (to perceive one's self of something,) that is, to notice something. It must be remembered that the verb *s'apercevoir*, requires the preposition *de* of, before its object; whereas *apercevoir* being an active verb, requires no preposition before its object.

127. *Apercevoir* to perceive, forms its compound tenses with *avoir* to have, like all other active verbs.

128. *S'apercevoir* to notice, is conjugated like *apercevoir* to perceive, with this difference; that, like all other reflected verbs, it forms its compound tenses with *être* to be, and takes two pronouns. See *se lever* to rise, page 92.

129. For the formation of the compound tenses, see page 35, art. 86 and 87.

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

RECEVOIR

to receive.

(Affirmatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-

PRESENT.

Rec evoir

to receive

-B-

PAST OR PERFECT,

or compound of the present.

Avoir reç u

to have received

-C-

PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE.

Rec evant

receiving

-D-

COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Ayant reç u

having received

-E-

PARTICIPLE PAST OR PASSIVE.

Reç u

received

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Je reç ois

I receive, do receive, or am receiving

tu reç ois

thou receivest, dost receive, or art receiving

il reç oit

he receives, does receive, or is receiving

nous rec evons

we receive, do receive, or are receiving

vous rec evez

you receive, do receive, or are receiving

ils reç oivent

they receive, do receive, or are receiving

-G-

PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present.

J'ai reç u

I have received, did receive, or have been

tu as reç u

thou hast received, didst receive, or hast been

il a reç u

he has received, did receive, or has been

nous avons reç u

we have received, did receive, or have been

vous avez reç u

you have received, did receive, or have been

ils ont reç u

they have received, did receive, or have been

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Je rec evais

I received, did receive, or was receiving

tu rec evais

thou receivedst, didst receive, or wast receiving

il rec evait

he received, did receive, or was receiving

nous rec evions

we received, did receive, or were receiving

vous rec eviez

you received, did receive, or were receiving

ils rec evaient

they received, did receive, or were receiving

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

J'avais reç u

I had received or had been receiving

tu avais reç u

thou hadst received or hadst been receiving

il avait reç u

he had received or had been receiving

nous avions reç u

we had received or had been receiving

vous aviez reç u

you had received or had been receiving

ils avaient reç u

they had received or had been receiving

receiving

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli in William.

-J-

Je reç us
 tu reç us
 il reç ut
 nous reç ûmes
 vous reç ûtes
 ils reç urent

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

*I received or did receive
 thou receivedst or didst receive
 he received or did receive
 we received or did receive
 you received or did receive
 they received or did receive*

-K-

J'eus reç u
 tu eus reç u
 il eut reç u
 nous eûmes reç u
 vous eûtes reç u
 ils eurent reç u

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

*I had received
 thou hadst received
 he had received
 we had received
 you had received
 they had received*

-L-

Je reç evrai
 tu rec evras
 il rec evra
 nous rec evrons
 vous rec evrez
 ils rec evront

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

*I shall or will receive
 thou shalt or wilt receive
 he shall or will receive
 we shall or will receive
 you shall or will receive
 they shall or will receive*

-M-

J'aurai reç u
 tu auras reç u
 il aura reç u
 nous aurons reç u
 vous aurez reç u
 ils auront reç u

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

*I shall or will have received
 thou shalt or wilt have received
 he shall or will have received
 we shall or will have received
 you shall or will have received
 they shall or will have received*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

Je rec evrais
 tu rec evrais
 il rec evrait
 nous rec evrions
 vous rec evriez
 ils rec evraient

PRESENT.

*I should, would, could, or might receive
 thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst receive
 he should, would, could, or might receive
 we should, would, could, or might receive
 you should, would, could, or might receive
 they should, would, could, or might receive*

-O-

J'aurais reç u,
 or j'eusse reç u
 tu aurais reç u,
 or tu eusses reç u
 il aurait reç u,
 or il eût reç u

PAST,
or compound of the present.

*I should, would, could,
 or might have received
 thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
 or mightst, have received
 he should, would, could
 or might have received*

ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête
at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

nous aurions reç *u*,
 or nous eussions reç *u*
 vous auriez reç *u*,
 or vous eussiez reç *u*
 ils auraient reç *u*,
 or ils eussent reç *u*

we should, would, could,
or might have received
you should, would, could,
or might have received
they should, would, could
or might have received

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Reç *ois*
 qu'il reç *oive*
 rec *evons*
 rec *evez*
 qu'ils reç *oivent*

receive (thou)
let him receive
let us receive
receive (you)
let them receive

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Q

PRESENT.

Que je reç *oive*
 que tu reç *oives*
 qu'il reç *oive*
 que nous rec *evions*
 que vous rec *eviez*
 qu'ils reç *oivent*

that I may receive
that thou mayst receive
that he may receive
that we may receive
that you may receive
that they may receive

-R-

PRETERIT OR PAST,

or compound of the present.

que j'*ai*e reç *u*
 que tu *aies* reç *u*
 qu'il *ait* reç *u*
 que nous *ayons* reç *u*
 que vous *ayez* reç *u*
 qu'ils *aient* reç *u*

that I may have received
that thou mayst have received
that he may have received
that we may have received
that you may have received
that they may have received

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je reç *usse*
 que tu reç *usses*
 qu'il reç *ût*
 que nous reç *ussions*
 que vous reç *ussiez*
 qu'ils reç *ussent*

that I might receive
that thou mightst receive
that he might receive
that we might receive
that you might receive
that they might receive

-T-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Que j'*eus*se reç *u*
 que tu *eusses* reç *u*
 qu'il *eût* reç *u*
 que nous *eussions* reç *u*
 que vous *eussiez* reç *u*
 qu'ils *eussent* reç *u*

that I might have received
that thou mightst have received
that he might have received
that we might have received
that you might have received
that they might have received

³mur. mâr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

RECEVOIR

to receive.

(Negatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-

PRESENT.

Ne pas rec evoir

not to receive

-B-

PAST OR PERFECT,

or compound of the present.

N'avoir pas reç u

not to have received

-C-

PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE,

Ne rec evant pas

not receiving

-D-

COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

N'ayant pas reç u

not having received

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Je ne reç ois pas
 tu ne reç ois pas
 il ne reç oit pas
 nous ne rec evons pas
 vous ne rec evez pas
 ils ne reç oiv-ent pas

*I receive not, do not receive, or am not
 thou receivest not, dost not receive, or art not
 he receives not, does not receive, or is not
 we receive not, do not receive, or are not
 you receive not, do not receive, or are not
 they receive not, do not receive, or are not*

receiving

-G-

PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present

Je n'ai pas reç u
 tu n'as pas reç u
 il n'a pas reç u
 nous n'avons pas reç u
 vous n'avez pas reç u
 ils n'ont pas reç u

*I have not received, did not receive, or have not
 thou hast not received, didst not receive, or hast not
 he has not received, did not receive, or has not
 we have not received, did not receive, or have not
 you have not received, did not receive, or have not
 they have not received, did not receive, or have not*

been receiving

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Je ne rec evais pas
 tu ne rec evais pas
 il ne rec evait pas
 nous ne recevions pas
 vous ne rec eviez pas
 ils ne rec evaient pas

*I received not, did not receive, or was
 thou receivedst not, didst not receive, or wast
 he received not, did not receive, or was
 we received not, did not receive, or were
 you received not, did not receive, or were
 they received not, did not receive, or were*

not receiving

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Je n'avais pas reç u
 tu n'avais pas reç u
 il n'avait pas reç u
 nous n'avions pas reç u
 vous n'aviez pas reç u
 ils n'avaient pas reç u

*I had not received or had not been
 thou hadst not received or hadst not been
 he had not received or had not been
 we had not received or had not been
 you had not received or had not been
 they had not received or had not been*

receiving

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne reç us pas
 tu ne reç us pas
 il ne reç ut pas
 nous ne reç âmes pas
 vous ne reç âtes pas
 ils ne reç urent pas

*I received not or did not receive
 thou receivedst not or didst not receive
 he received not or did not receive
 we received not or did not receive
 you received not or did not receive
 they received not or did not receive*

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

Je n'eus pas reç u
 tu n'eus pas reç u
 il n'eut pas reç u
 nous n'eûmes pas reç u
 vous n'eûtes pas reç u
 ils n'eurent pas reç u

*I had not received
 thou hadst not received
 he had not received
 we had not received
 you had not received
 they had not received*

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne rec evrai pas
 tu ne rec evras pas
 il ne rec evra pas
 nous ne rec evrons pas
 vous ne rec evrez pas
 ils ne rec evront pas

*I shall or will not receive
 thou shalt or will not receive
 he shall or will not receive
 we shall or will not receive
 you shall or will not receive
 they shall or will not receive*

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

Je n'aurai pas reç u
 tu n'auras pas reç u
 il n'aura pas reç u
 nous n'aurons pas reç u
 vous n'aurez pas reç u
 ils n'auront pas reç u

*I shall or will not have received
 thou shalt or will not have received
 he shall or will not have received
 we shall or will not have received
 you shall or will not have received
 they shall or will not have received*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Je ne rec evrais pas
 tu ne rec evrais pas
 il ne rec evrait pas
 nous ne rec evrions pas
 vous ne rec evriez pas
 ils ne rec evraient pas

*I should, would, could, or might not
 thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst not
 he should, would, could, or might not
 we should, would, could, or might not
 you should, would, could, or might not
 they should, would, could, or might not*

} receive

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

Je n'aurais pas reç u,
 or je n'eusse pas reç u
 tu n'aurais pas reç u,
 or tu n'eusses pas reç u
 il n'aurait pas reç u,
 or il n'eût pas reç u

*I should, would, could,
 or might not have received
 thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
 or mightst not have received
 he should, would, could,
 or might not have received*

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amèn.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

nous n'aurions pas reç u,	<i>we should, would, could,</i>
or nous n'eussions pas reç u	<i>or might not have received</i>
vous n'auriez pas reç u,	<i>you should, would, could,</i>
or vous n'eussiez pas reç u	<i>or might not have received</i>
ils n'auraient pas reç u,	<i>they should, would, could,</i>
or ils n'eussent pas reç u	<i>or might not have received</i>

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne reç ois pas	<i>receive not or do not receive</i>	(thou)
qu'il ne reç oive pas	<i>let him not receive</i>	
ne rec evons pas	<i>let us not receive</i>	
ne rec evez pas	<i>receive not or do not receive</i>	(you)
qu'ils ne reç oivent pas	<i>let them not receive</i>	

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je ne reç oive pas	<i>that I may not receive</i>
que tu ne reç oives pas	<i>that thou mayst not receive</i>
qu'il ne reç oive pas	<i>that he may not receive</i>
que nous ne rec evions pas	<i>that we may not receive</i>
que vous ne rec eviez pas	<i>that you may not receive</i>
qu'ils ne reç oivent pas	<i>that they may not receive</i>

-R-

PRETERIT OR PAST,

or compound of the present,

Que je n'aie pas reç u	<i>that I may not have received</i>
que tu n'aies pas reç u	<i>that thou mayst not have received</i>
qu'il n'ait pas reç u	<i>that he may not have received</i>
que nous n'ayons pas reç u	<i>that we may not have received</i>
que vous n'ayez pas reç u	<i>that you may not have received</i>
qu'ils n'aient pas reç u	<i>that they may not have received</i>

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je ne reç usse pas	<i>that I might not receive</i>
que tu ne reç usses pas	<i>that thou mightst not receive</i>
qu'il ne reçût pas	<i>that he might not receive</i>
que nous ne reç ussions pas	<i>that we might not receive</i>
que vous ne reç ussiez pas	<i>that you might not receive</i>
qu'ils ne reç ussent pas	<i>that they might not receive</i>

-T-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Que je n'eusse pas reç u	<i>that I might not have received</i>
que tu n'eusses pas reç u	<i>that thou mightst not have received</i>
qu'il n'eût pas reç u	<i>that he might not have received</i>
que nous n'eussions pas reç u	<i>that we might not have received</i>
que vous n'eussiez pas reç u	<i>that you might not have received</i>
qu'ils n'eussent pas reç u	<i>that they might not have received</i>

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouë.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

RECEVOIR

*to receive.**(Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Reç ois-je	<i>do I receive or am I receiving</i>
reç ois-tu	<i>dost thou receive or art thou receiving</i>
reç oit-il	<i>does he receive or is he receiving</i>
rec evons-nous	<i>do we receive or are we receiving</i>
rec avez-vous	<i>do you receive or are you receiving</i>
reç oivent-ils	<i>do they receive or are they receiving</i>

G-

PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Ai-je reç u	<i>have I received or did I receive</i>
as-tu reç u	<i>hast thou received or didst thou receive</i>
a-t-il reç u	<i>has he received or did he receive</i>
avons-nous reç u	<i>have we received or did we receive</i>
avez-vous reç u	<i>have you received or did you receive</i>
ont-ils reç u	<i>have they received or did they receive</i>

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Rec evais-je	<i>did I receive or was I receiving</i>
rec evais-tu	<i>didst thou receive or wast thou receiving</i>
rec evait-il	<i>did he receive or was he receiving</i>
rec evions-nous	<i>did we receive or were we receiving</i>
rec eviez-vous	<i>did you receive or were you receiving</i>
rec evaient-ils	<i>did they receive or were they receiving</i>

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Avais-je reç u	<i>had I received or had I been receiving</i>
avais-tu reç u	<i>hadst thou received or hadst thou been receiving</i>
avait-il reç u	<i>had he received or had he been receiving</i>
avions-nous reç u	<i>had we received or had we been receiving</i>
aviez-vous reç u	<i>had you received or had you been receiving</i>
avaient-ils reç u	<i>had they received or had they been receiving</i>

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Reç us-je	<i>did I receive</i>
reç us-tu	<i>didst thou receive</i>
reç ut-il	<i>did he receive</i>
reç âmes-nous	<i>did we receive</i>
reç âtes-vous	<i>did you receive</i>
reç urent-ils	<i>did they receive</i>

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli in William.

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

Eus-je reç u
 eus-tu reç u
 eut-il reç u
 eûmes-nous reç u
 eûtes-vous reç u
 eurent-ils reç u

had I received
hadst thou received
had he received
had we received
had you received
had they received

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Rec *evrai*-je
 rec *evras*-tu
 rec *evra*-t-il
 rec *evrons*-nous
 rec *evrez*-vous
 rec *evront*-ils

shall or will I receive
shalt or wilt thou receive
shall or will he receive
shall or will we receive
shall or will you receive
shall or will they receive

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

Aurai-je reç u
 auras-tu reç u
 aura-t-il reç u
 aurons-nous reç u
 aurez-vous reç u
 auront-ils reç u

shall or will I have received
shalt or wilt thou have received
shall or will he have received
shall or will we have received
shall or will you have received
shall or will they have received

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Rec *evrais*-je
 rec *evrais*-tu
 rec *evrait*-il
 rec *evrions*-nous
 rec *evriez*-vous
 rec *evraient*-ils

should, would, could, or might I receive
shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou receive
should, would, could, or might he receive
should, would, could, or might we receive
should, would, could, or might you receive
should, would, could, or might they receive

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

Aurais-je reç u,
 or *eussé*-je reç u
 aurais-tu reç u,
 or *eusses*-tu reç u
 aurait-il reç u,
 or *eût*-il reç u
 aurions-nous reç u,
 or *eussions*-nous reç u
 auriez-vous reç u,
 or *eussiez*-vous reç u
 auraient-ils reç u,
 or *eussent*-ils reç u

should, would, could,
or might I have received
shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or mightst thou have received
should, would, could,
or might he have received
should, would, could,
or might we have received
should, would, could,
or might you have received
should, would, could,
or might they have received

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouôte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

RECEVOIR *to receive.* (*Negatively and Interrogatively.*)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.
Ne reç ois-je pas	<i>do I not receive or am I not receiving</i>
ne reç ois-tu pas	<i>dost thou not receive or art thou not receiving</i>
ne reç oit-il pas	<i>does he not receive or is he not receiving</i>
ne rec evons-nous pas	<i>do we not receive or are we not receiving</i>
ne rec avez-vous pas	<i>do you not receive or are you not receiving</i>
ne reç oivent-ils pas	<i>do they not receive or are they not receiving</i>
-G-	PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE, or compound of the present.
N'ai-je pas reç u	<i>have I not received, did I not receive, or have I not been receiving</i>
n'as-tu pas reç u	<i>hast thou not received, didst thou not receive or hast thou not been receiving</i>
n'a-t-il pas reç u	<i>has he not received, did he not receive, or has he not been receiving</i>
n'avons-nous pas reç u	<i>have we not received, did we not receive, or have we not been receiving</i>
n'avez-vous pas reç u	<i>have you not received, did you not receive, or have you not been receiving</i>
n'ont-ils pas reç u	<i>have they not received, did they not receive or have they not been receiving</i>
-H-	IMPERFECT.
Ne rec evais-je pas	<i>did I not receive or was I not receiving</i>
ne rec evais-tu pas	<i>didst thou not receive or wast thou not receiving</i>
ne rec evait-il pas	<i>did he not receive or was he not receiving</i>
ne rec evions-nous pas	<i>did we not receive or were we not receiving</i>
ne rec eviez-vous pas	<i>did you not receive or were you not receiving</i>
ne rec evaient-ils pas	<i>did they not receive or were they not receiving</i>
-I-	PLUPERFECT, or compound of the imperfect.
N'avais-je pas reç u	<i>had I not received or had I not been</i>
n'avais-tu pas reç u	<i>hadst thou not received or hadst thou not been</i>
n'avait-il pas reç u	<i>had he not received or had he not been</i>
n'avions-nous pas reç u	<i>had we not received or had we not been</i>
n'aviez-vous pas reç u	<i>had you not received or had you not been</i>
n'avaient-ils pas reç u	<i>had they not received or had they not been</i>
-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.
Ne reç us-je pas	<i>did I not receive</i>
ne reç us-tu pas	<i>didst thou not receive</i>
ne reç ut-il pas	<i>did he not receive</i>
ne reç âmes-nous pas	<i>did we not receive</i>
ne reç âtes-vous pas	<i>did you not receive</i>
ne reç ârent-ils pas	<i>did they not receive</i>

receiving

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boile. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the preterit.

N'eus-je pas reç u	had I not received
n'eus-tu pas reç u	hadst thou not received
n'eut-il pas reç u	had he not received
n'eûmes-nous pas reç u	had we not received
n'eûtes-vous pas reç u	had you not received
n'eurent-ils pas reç u	had they not received

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne rec evrai-je pas	shall or will I not receive
ne rec evras-tu pas	shalt or wilt thou not receive
ne rec evra-t-il pas	shall or will he not receive
ne rec evrons-nous pas	shall or will we not receive
ne rec evrez-vous pas	shall or will you not receive
ne rec evront-ils pas	shall or will they not receive

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the future.

N'aurai-je pas reç u	shall or will I not have received
n'auras-tu pas reç u	shalt or wilt thou not have received
n'aura-t-il pas reç u	shall or will he not have received
n'aurons-nous pas reç u	shall or will we not have received
n'aurez-vous pas reç u	shall or will you not have received
n'auront-ils pas reç u	shall or will they not have received

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Ne rec evrais-je pas	should, would, could, or might I	} not receive
ne rec evrais-tu pas	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou	
ne rec evrait-il pas	should, would, could, or might he	
ne rec evrions-nous pas	should, would, could, or might we	
ne rec evriez-vous pas	should, would, could, or might you	
ne rec evraient-ils pas	should, would, could, or might they	

-O-

PAST,
 or compound of the present.

N'aurais-je pas reç u,	should, would, could,
or n'eusssé-je pas reç u	or might I not have received
n'aurais-tu pas reç u,	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or n'eusses-tu pas reç u	or mightst, thou not have received
n'aurait-il pas reç u,	should, would, could,
or n'eût-il pas reç u	or might he not have received
n'aurions-nous pas reç u,	should, would, could,
or n'eussions-nous pas reç u	or might we not have received
n'auriez-vous pas reç u,	should, would, could,
or n'eussiez-vous pas reç u	or might you not have received
n'auraient-ils pas reç u,	should, would, could,
or n'eussent-ils pas reç u	or might they not have received

Of the Fourth Conjugation.

130. The verbs of the fourth conjugation, like those of the first, second, and third, are known by the termination of the present of the infinitive.

131. The present of the infinitive of the fourth conjugation, has for its termination *re*—as, *vend re* to sell.

132. All verbs, whose present of the infinitive ends with *re*, to the amount of about 240, are of the fourth conjugation; and if regular, are conjugated like *vend re* to sell, which is hereafter conjugated, to be used as a model.

133. There are in the fourth conjugation 40 regular verbs which take the termination of *vend re* to sell.

134. They are—

append <i>re</i>	to hang up,	mord <i>re</i>	to bite,
attend <i>re</i>	to wait, to expect,	morfond <i>re</i>	to make very cold,
	to wait for,	parfond <i>re</i>	to melt equally,
confond <i>re</i>	to confound,	pend <i>re</i>	to hang,
correspond <i>re</i>	to correspond,	perd <i>re</i>	to lose, to destroy,
défend <i>re</i>	to defend,	pond <i>re</i>	to lay eggs,
	to prohibit,	pourfend <i>re</i>	to split, to cut in two,
	to forbid,	prétend <i>re</i>	to pretend,
démord <i>re</i>	to give up,	refend <i>re</i>	to cleave again,
	to cease biting,		to split again,
dépend <i>re</i>	to take down,	refond <i>re</i>	to melt again,
	to depend on or upon,		to cast again,
descend <i>re</i>	to go down,	remord <i>re</i>	to bite again,
	to descend,	rend <i>re</i>	to render, to
	to take down,		return, to give back,
détend <i>re</i>	to unbend,	répand <i>re</i>	to spill, to shed,
	to loosen,	répond <i>re</i>	to answer, to reply,
détord <i>re</i>	to untwist,	retord <i>re</i>	to twist again,
distend <i>re</i>	to distend,	revend <i>re</i>	to sell again,
	to extend,	sous-entend <i>re</i>	to understand,
entend <i>re</i>	to hear,		not to express,
	to understand,	survend <i>re</i>	to sell too dear,
	to comprehend,	suspend <i>re</i>	to suspend,
épand <i>re</i>	to spread,	tend <i>re</i>	to hold out,
étand <i>re</i>	to spread,		to stretch out,
fend <i>re</i>	to cleave,		to bend,
	to split,	tond <i>re</i>	to shear,
fond <i>re</i>	to melt,	tord <i>re</i>	to twist,
mévend <i>re</i>	to undersell,	vend <i>re</i>	to sell.

135. All the other verbs whose present of the infinitive ends with *re*, and not included in the above list, are irregular, and are to be found in the alphabetical list of all the irregular verbs, page 162.

136. Those who have already learned the verbs, will readily ascertain, without having recourse to the above table of the regular verbs, whether a verb, whose present of the infinitive ends with *re*, is regular or irregular, if they remember that *dant* terminates the participle present of all the regular verbs of the fourth conjugation.

137. The third person singular of the present of the indicative of this conjugation, consists of the *radical part* of the verb only, it does not take any termination.

138. Observe, that when *vendre* to sell, like several other verbs, mentioned in page 8, art. 65, is conjugated Interrogatively or Negatively and Interrogatively, the first person singular of the present of the indicative, is not conjugated like other verbs; for the reason of this deviation, see page 8, art. 65.

139. For the formation of the compound tenses, see page 35, art. 86 and 87.

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

VENDRE *to sell.* (Affirmatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

A-	PRESENT.
Vendre	<i>to sell</i>
-B-	PAST OR PERFECT,
	<i>or compound of the present.</i>
Avoir vend u	<i>to have sold</i>
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE,
Vend ant	<i>selling</i>
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.
Ayant vend u	<i>having sold</i>
-E-	PARTICIPLE PAST OR PASSIVE.
Vend u	<i>sold</i>

INDICATIVE MOOD

-F-	PRESENT.
Je vend s	<i>I sell, do sell, or am selling</i>
tu vend s	<i>thou sellest, dost sell, or art selling</i>
il vend	<i>he sells, does sell, or is selling</i>
nous vend ons	<i>we sell, do sell, or are selling</i>
vous vend ez	<i>you sell, do sell, or are selling</i>
ils vend ent	<i>they sell, do sell, or are selling</i>
-G-	PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE
	<i>or compound of the present.</i>
J'ai vend u	<i>I have sold, did sell, or have been selling</i>
tu as vend u	<i>thou hast sold, didst sell, or hast been selling</i>
il a vend u	<i>he has sold, did sell, or has been selling</i>
nous avons vend u	<i>we have sold, did sell, or have been selling</i>
vous avez vend u	<i>you have sold, did sell, or have been selling</i>
ils ont vend u	<i>they have sold, did sell, or have been selling</i>
-H-	IMPERFECT.
Je vend ais	<i>I sold, did sell, or was selling</i>
tu vend ais	<i>thou solddest, didst sell, or wast selling</i>
il vend ait	<i>he sold, did sell, or was selling</i>
nous vend ions	<i>we sold, did sell, or were selling</i>
vous vend iez	<i>you sold, did sell, or were selling</i>
ils vend aient	<i>they sold, did sell, or were selling</i>
-I-	PLUPERFECT,
	<i>or compound of the imperfect.</i>
J'avais vend u	<i>I had sold or had been selling</i>
tu avais vend u	<i>thou hadst sold or hadst been selling</i>
il avait vend u	<i>he had sold or had been selling</i>
nous avions vend u	<i>we had sold or had been selling</i>
vous aviez vend u	<i>you had sold or had been selling</i>
ils avaient vend u	<i>they had sold or had been selling</i>

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

-J-

Je vend *is*
 tu vend *is*
 il vend *it*
 nous vend *îmes*
 vous vend *îtes*
 ils vend *irent*

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

I sold or did sell
thou soldest, or didst sell
he sold or did sell
we sold or did sell
you sold or did sell
they sold or did sell

-K-

J'eus vend *u*
 tu eus vend *u*
 il eut vend *u*
 nous eûmes vend *u*
 vous eûtes vend *u*
 ils eurent vend *u*

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the preterit.

I had sold
thou hadst sold
he had sold
we had sold
you had sold
they had sold

-L-

Je vend *rai*
 tu vend *ras*
 il vend *ra*
 nous vend *rons*
 vous vend *rez*
 ils vend *ront*

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

I shall or will sell
thou shalt or wilt sell
he shall or will sell
we shall or will sell
you shall or will sell
they shall or will sell

-M-

J'aurai vend *u*
 tu auras vend *u*
 il aura vend *u*
 nous aurons vend *u*
 vous aurez vend *u*
 ils auront vend *u*

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the future.

I shall or will have sold
thou shalt or wilt have sold
he shall or will have sold
we shall or will have sold
you shall or will have sold
they shall or will have sold

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

Je vend *rais*
 tu vend *rais*
 il vend *rait*
 nous vend *riens*
 vous vend *riez*
 ils vend *raient*

PRESENT.

I should, would, could, or might sell
thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst sell
he should, would, could, or might sell
we should, would, could, or might sell
you should, would, could, or might sell
they should, would, could, or might sell

-O-

J'aurais vend *u*,
 or *j'eusse vend u*
 tu aurais vend *u*,
 or *tu eusses vend u*
 il aurait vend *u*,
 or *il eût vend u*

PAST,
 or compound of the present.

I should, would, could,
or might have sold
thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or mightst have sold
he should, would, could,
or might have sold

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

nous aurions vend *u*,
 or nous eussions vend *u*
 vous auriez vend *u*,
 or vous eussiez vend *u*
 ils auraient vend *u*,
 or ils eussent vend *u*

we should, would, could,
or might have sold
you should, would, could,
or might have sold
they should, would, could,
or might have sold

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Vend *s*
 qu'il vend *e*
 vend *ons*
 vend *ez*
 qu'ils vend *ent*

sell (thou)
let him sell
let us sell
sell (you)
let them sell

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je vend *e*
 que tu vend *es*
 qu'il vend *e*
 que nous vend *ions*
 que vous vend *iez*
 qu'il vend *ent*

that I may sell
that thou mayst sell
that he may sell
that we may sell
that you may sell
that they may sell

-R-

PRETERIT OR PAST,
 or compound of the present,

Que j'aie vend *u*
 que tu aies vend *u*
 qu'il ait vend *u*
 que nous ayons vend *u*
 que vous ayez vend *u*
 qu'ils aient vend *u*

that I may have sold
that thou mayst have sold
that he may have sold
that we may have sold
that you may have sold
that they may have sold

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je vend *isse*
 que tu vend *isses*
 qu'il vend *ît*
 que nous vend *issions*
 que vous vend *issiez*
 qu'ils vend *issent*

that I might sell
that thou mightst sell
that he might sell
that we might sell
that you might sell
that they might sell

-T-

PLUPERFECT,
 or compound of the imperfect.

Que j'eusse vend *u*
 que tu eusses vend *u*
 qu'il eût vend *u*
 que nous eussions vend *u*
 que vous eussiez vend *u*
 qu'ils eussent vend *u*

that I might have sold
that thou mightst have sold
that he might have sold
that we might have sold
that you might have sold
that they might have sold

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

VENDRE to sell. (Negatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.
Ne pas vend re	not to sell
-B-	PAST OR PERFECT,
	or compound of the present.
N'avoir pas vend u	not to have sold
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE.
Ne vend ant pas	not selling
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.
N'ayant pas vend u	not having sold

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
Je ne vend s pas	<i>I sell not, do not sell, or am not selling</i>	
tu ne vend s pas	<i>thou sellest not, dost not sell, or art not selling</i>	
il ne vend pas	<i>he sells not, does not sell, or is not selling</i>	
nous ne vend ons pas	<i>we sell not, do not sell, or are not selling</i>	
vous ne vend ez pas	<i>you sell not, do not sell, or are not selling</i>	
ils ne vend ent pas	<i>they sell not, do not sell, or are not selling</i>	
-G-	PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,	
	or compound of the present.	
Je n'ai pas vend u	<i>I have not sold, did not sell, or have not</i>	} <i>been selling</i>
tu n'as pas vend u	<i>thou hast not sold, didst not sell, or hast not</i>	
il n'a pas vend u	<i>he has not sold, did not sell, or has not</i>	
nous n'avons pas vend u	<i>we have not sold, did not sell, or have not</i>	
vous n'avez pas vend u	<i>you have not sold, did not sell, or have not</i>	
ils n'ont pas vend u	<i>they have not sold, did not sell, or have not</i>	
-H-	IMPERFECT.	
Je ne vend ais pas	<i>I sold not, did not sell, or was not selling</i>	
tu ne vend ais pas	<i>thou soldest not, didst not sell, or wast not selling</i>	
il ne vend ait pas	<i>he sold not, did not sell, or was not selling</i>	
nous ne vend ions pas	<i>we sold not, did not sell, or were not selling</i>	
vous ne vend iez pas	<i>you sold not, did not sell, or were not selling</i>	
ils ne vend aient pas	<i>they sold not, did not sell, or were not selling</i>	
-I-	PLUPERFECT,	
	or compound of the imperfect.	
Je n'avais pas vend u	<i>I had not sold or had not been selling</i>	
tu n'avais pas vend u	<i>thou hadst not sold or hadst not been selling</i>	
il n'avait pas vend u	<i>he had not sold or had not been selling</i>	
nous n'avions pas vend u	<i>we had not sold or had not been selling</i>	
vous n'aviez pas vend u	<i>you had not sold or had not been selling</i>	
ils n'avaient pas vend u	<i>they had not sold or had not been selling</i>	

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouëte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne vend <i>is</i> pas	<i>I sold not or did not sell</i>
tu ne vend <i>is</i> pas	<i>thou soldest not or didst not sell</i>
il ne vend <i>it</i> pas	<i>he sold not or did not sell</i>
nous ne vend <i>îmes</i> pas	<i>we sold not or did not sell</i>
vous ne vend <i>îtes</i> pas	<i>you sold not or did not sell</i>
ils ne vend <i>irent</i> pas	<i>they sold not or did not sell</i>

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je n'eus pas vend <i>u</i>	<i>I had not sold</i>
tu n'eus pas vend <i>u</i>	<i>thou hadst not sold</i>
il n'eut pas vend <i>u</i>	<i>he had not sold</i>
nous n'eûmes pas vend <i>u</i>	<i>we had not sold</i>
vous n'eûtes pas vend <i>u</i>	<i>you had not sold</i>
ils n'eurent pas vend <i>u</i>	<i>they had not sold</i>

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne vend <i>rai</i> pas	<i>I shall or will not sell</i>
tu ne vend <i>ras</i> pas	<i>thou shalt or wilt not sell</i>
il ne vend <i>ra</i> pas	<i>he shall or will not sell</i>
nous ne vend <i>rons</i> pas	<i>we shall or will not sell</i>
vous ne vend <i>rez</i> pas	<i>you shall or will not sell</i>
ils ne vend <i>ront</i> pas	<i>they shall or will not sell</i>

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je n'aurai pas vend <i>u</i>	<i>I shall or will not have sold</i>
tu n'auras pas vend <i>u</i>	<i>thou shalt or wilt not have sold</i>
il n'aura pas vend <i>u</i>	<i>he shall or will not have sold</i>
nous n'aurons pas vend <i>u</i>	<i>we shall or will not have sold</i>
vous n'aurez pas vend <i>u</i>	<i>you shall or will not have sold</i>
ils n'auront pas vend <i>u</i>	<i>they shall or will not have sold</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Je ne vend <i>rais</i> pas	<i>I should, would, could, or might</i>	} <i>not sell</i>
tu ne vend <i>rais</i> pas	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst</i>	
il ne vend <i>rait</i> pas	<i>he should, would, could, or might</i>	
nous ne vend <i>riens</i> pas	<i>we should, would, could, or might</i>	
vous ne vend <i>riez</i> pas	<i>you should, would, could, or might</i>	
ils ne vend <i>raient</i> pas	<i>they should, would, could, or might</i>	

O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

Je n'aurais pas vend <i>u</i> ,	<i>I should, would, could,</i>
or <i>je n'eusse pas vend u</i>	<i>or might not have sold</i>
tu n'aurais pas vend <i>u</i> ,	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,</i>
or <i>tu n'eusses pas vend u</i>	<i>or mightst not have sold</i>
il n'aurait pas vend <i>u</i> ,	<i>he should, would, could,</i>
or <i>il n'eût pas vend u</i>	<i>or might not have sold</i>

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli in William.

nous n'aurions pas vend u,	we should, would, could.
or nous n'eussions pas vend u	or might not have sold
vous n'auriez pas vend u	you should, would, could,
or vous n'eussiez pas vend u	or might not have sold
ils n'auraient pas vend u,	they should, would, could,
or ils n'eussent pas vend u	or might not have sold

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD

Ne vend s pas	sell not or do not sell (thou)
qu'il ne vend e pas	let him not sell
ne vend ons pas	let us not sell
ne vend ez pas	sell not or do not sell (you)
qu'ils ne vend ent pas	let them not sell

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q

PRESENT.

Que je ne vend e pas	that I may not sell
que tu ne vend es pas	that thou mayst not sell
qu'il ne vende pas	that he may not sell
que nous ne vend ions pas	that we may not sell
que vous ne vend iez pas	that you may not sell
qu'ils ne vend ent pas	that they may not sell

-R-

PRETERIT OR PAST,
or compound of the present.

Que je n'aie pas vend u	that I may not have sold
que tu n'aies pas vend u	that thou mayst not have sold
qu'il n'ait pas vend u	that he may not have sold
que nous n'ayons pas vend u	that we may not have sold
que vous n'ayez pas vend u	that you may not have sold
qu'ils n'aient pas vend u	that they may not have sold

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je ne vend isse pas	that I might not sell
que tu ne vend isses pas	that thou mightst not sell
qu'il ne vend ît pas	that he might not sell
que nous ne vend issions pas	that we might not sell
que vous ne vend issiez pas	that you might not sell
qu'ils ne vend issent pas	that they might not sell

-T-

PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que je n'eusse pas vend u	that I might not have sold
que tu n'eusses pas vend u	that thou mightst not have sold
qu'il n'eût pas vend u	that he might not have sold
que nous n'eussions pas vend u	that we might not have sold
que vous n'eussiez pas vend u	that you might not have sold
qu'ils n'eussent pas vend u	that they might not have sold

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

VENDRE *to sell.* (Interrogatively.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Est-ce que je vend s†	<i>do I sell or am I selling</i>
vend s-tu	<i>dost thou sell or art thou selling</i>
vend-il	<i>does he sell or is he selling</i>
vend ons-nous	<i>do we sell or are we selling</i>
vend ez-vous	<i>do you sell or are you selling</i>
vend ent-ils	<i>do they sell or are they selling</i>

-G-

PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Ai-je vend u	<i>have I sold or did I sell</i>
as-tu vend u	<i>hadst thou sold or didst thou sell</i>
a-t-il vend u	<i>has he sold or did he sell</i>
avons-nous vend u	<i>have we sold or did we sell</i>
avez-vous vend u	<i>have you sold or did you sell</i>
ont-ils vend u	<i>have they sold or did they sell</i>

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Vend ais-je	<i>did I sell or was I selling</i>
vend ais-tu	<i>didst thou sell or wast thou selling</i>
vend ait-il	<i>did he sell or was he selling</i>
vend ions-nous	<i>did we sell or were we selling</i>
vend iez-vous	<i>did you sell or were you selling</i>
vend aient-ils	<i>did they sell or were they selling</i>

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Avais-je vend u	<i>had I sold or had I been selling</i>
avais-tu vend u	<i>hadst thou sold or hadst thou been selling</i>
avait-il vend u	<i>had he sold or had he been selling</i>
avions-nous vend u	<i>had we sold or had we been selling</i>
aviez-vous vend u	<i>had you sold or had you been selling</i>
avaient-ils vend u	<i>had they sold or had they been selling</i>

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Vend is-je	<i>did I sell</i>
vend is-tu	<i>didst thou sell</i>
vend it-il	<i>did he sell</i>
vend imes-nous	<i>did we sell</i>
vend îtes-vous	<i>did you sell</i>
vend îrent-ils	<i>did they sell</i>

†See page 8, art. 65.

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Willi am.

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

Eus-je vend u	had I sold
eus-tu vend u	hadst thou sold
eut-il vend u	had he sold
eûmes-nous vend u	had we sold
eûtes-vous vend u	had you sold
eurent-ils vend u	had they sold

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Vend rai-je	shall or will I sell
vend ras-tu	shalt or wilt thou sell
vend ra-t-il	shall or will he sell
vend rons-nous	shall or will we sell
vend rez-vous	shall or will you sell
vend ront-ils	shall or will they sell

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

Aurai-je vend u	shall or will I have sold
auras-tu vend u	shalt or wilt thou have sold
aura-t-il vend u	shall or will he have sold
aurons-nous vend u	shall or will we have sold
aurez-vous vend u	shall or will you have sold
auront-il vend u	shall or will they have sold

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Vend rais-je	should, would, could, or might I sell
vend rais-tu	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou sell
vend rait-il	should, would, could, or might he sell
vend rions-nous	should, would, could, or might we sell
vend riez-vous	should, would, could, or might you sell
vend raient-ils	should, would, could, or might they sell

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present

Aurais-je vend u,	should, would, could,
or eussé-je vend u	or might I have sold
aurais-tu vend u,	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or eusses-tu vend u	or mightst thou have sold
aurait-il vend u,	should, would, could,
or eût-il vend u	or might he have sold
aurions-nous vend u,	should, would, could,
or eussions-nous vend u	or might we have sold
auriez-vous vend u,	should, would, could,
or eussiez-vous vend u	or might you have sold
auraient-ils vend u,	should, would, could,
or eussent-ils vend u	or might they have sold

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

VENDRE to sell.

(Negatively and Interrogatively.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Est-ce que je ne vend s pas	<i>do I not sell or am I not selling</i>
ne vend s-tu pas	<i>dost thou not sell or art thou not selling</i>
ne vend-il pas	<i>does he not sell or is he not selling</i>
ne vend ons-nous pas	<i>do we not sell or are we not selling</i>
ne vend ez-vous pas	<i>do you not sell or are you not selling</i>
ne vend ent-ils pas	<i>do they not sell or are they not selling</i>

-G-

PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present.

N'ai-je pas vend u	<i>have I not sold, did I not sell, or have I not been selling</i>
n'as-tu pas vend u	<i>hast thou not sold, didst thou not sell, or hast thou not been selling</i>
n'a-t-il pas vend u	<i>has he not sold, did he not sell, or has he not been selling</i>
n'avons-nous pas vend u	<i>have we not sold, did we not sell, or have we not been selling</i>
n'avez-vous pas vend u	<i>have you not sold, did you not sell, or have you not been selling</i>
n'ont-ils pas vend u	<i>have they not sold, did they not sell, or have they not been selling</i>

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Ne vend ais-je pas	<i>did I not sell or was I not selling</i>
ne vend ais-tu pas	<i>didst thou not sell or wast thou not selling</i>
ne vend ait-il pas	<i>did he not sell or was he not selling</i>
ne vend ions-nous pas	<i>did we not sell or were we not selling</i>
ne vend iez-vous pas	<i>did you not sell or were you not selling</i>
ne vend aient-ils pas	<i>did they not sell or were they not selling</i>

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

N'avais-je pas vend u	<i>had I not sold or had I not been</i>	} <i>selling</i>
n'avais-tu pas vend u	<i>hadst thou not sold or hadst thou not been</i>	
n'avait-il pas vend u	<i>had he not sold, or had he not been</i>	
n'avions-nous pas vend u	<i>had we not sold or had we not been</i>	
n'aviez-vous pas vend u	<i>had you not sold or had you not been</i>	
n'avaient-ils pas vend u	<i>had they not sold or had they not been</i>	

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Ne vend is-je pas	<i>did I not sell</i>
ne vend is-tu pas	<i>didst thou not sell</i>
ne vend it-il pas	<i>did he not sell</i>
ne vend îmes-nous pas	<i>did we not sell</i>
ne vend îtes-vous pas	<i>did you not sell</i>
ne vend irent-ils pas	<i>did they not sell</i>

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the preterit.

N'eus-je pas vend u	had I not sold
n'eus-tu pas vend u	hadst thou not sold
n'eut-il pas vend u	had he not sold
n'eûmes-nous pas vend u	had we not sold
n'eûtes-vous pas vend u	had you not sold
n'eurent-ils pas vend u	had they not sold

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne vend rai-je pas	shall or will I not sell
ne vend ras-tu pas	shalt or will thou not sell
ne vend ra-t-il pas	shall or will he not sell
ne vend rons-nous pas	shall or will we not sell
ne vend rez-vous pas	shall or will you not sell
ne vend ront-ils pas	shall or will they not sell

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the future.

N'aurai-je pas vend u	shall or will I not have sold
n'auras-tu pas vend u	shalt or will thou not have sold
n'aura-t-il pas vend u	shall or will he not have sold
n'aurons-nous pas vend u	shall or will we not have sold
n'aurez-vous pas vend u	shall or will you not have sold
n'auront-ils pas vend u	shall or will they not have sold

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Ne vend rais-je pas	should, would, could, or might I	} not sell
ne vend rais-tu pas	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou	
ne vend rait-il pas	should, would, could, or might he	
ne vend rions-nous pas	should, would, could, or might we	
ne vend riez-vous pas	should, would, could, or might you	
ne vend raient-ils pas	should, would, could, or might they	

-O-

PAST,
 or compound of the present.

N'aurais-je pas vend u,	should, would, could,
or n'eussé-je pas vend u	or might I not have sold
n'aurais-tu pas vend u,	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or n'eusses-tu pas vend u	or mightst thou not have sold
n'aurait-il pas vend u,	should, would, could,
or n'eût-il pas vend u	or might he not have sold
n'aurions-nous pas vend u,	should, would, could,
or n'eussions-nous pas vend u	or might we not have sold
n'auriez-vous pas vend u,	should, would, could,
or n'eussiez-vous pas vend u	or might you not have sold
n'auraient-ils pas vend u,	should, would, could,
or n'eussent-ils pas vend u	or might they not have sold

Of Pronominal Verbs.

140. The Pronominal verbs, are those in which each person is conjugated through all the tenses, with two personal pronouns.

141. When the verbs begin with a consonant or an *h* aspirated, the two pronouns are—

Singular.		Plural.	
je me	<i>I myself,</i>	nous nous	<i>we ourselves,</i>
tu te	<i>thou thyself,</i>	*vous vous	<i>you yourselves,</i>
il se	<i>he himself,</i>	ils se	<i>they themselves,</i>
elle se	<i>she herself,</i>	elles se	<i>they themselves.</i>

* Sometimes vous vous *you yourself*, for *thou thyself*: see page 6 art. 55.

142. When the verbs begin with a vowel or an *h* mute, the two pronouns take the following form:—

Singular.		Plural.	
je m'	<i>I myself,</i>	nous nous	<i>we ourselves,</i>
tu t'	<i>thou thyself,</i>	*vous vous	<i>you yourselves,</i>
il s'	<i>he himself,</i>	ils s'	<i>they themselves,</i>
elle s'	<i>she herself,</i>	elles s'	<i>they themselves.</i>

* Sometimes vous vous *you yourself* for *thou thyself*: see page 6, art 55.

143. The pronominal verbs, comprise the *reflected verbs*, and the *reciprocal verbs*.

Of Reflected Verbs.

144. There are active and neuter reflected verbs.

145. A reflected verb is *active*, when the action of the verb falls upon the subject—as, *je me flatte* I flatter myself—*il se loue* he praises himself.

146. Almost all the active verbs are susceptible of being used as reflected verbs.

147. A reflected verb is *neuter*, when it indicates only a state or a disposition of the subject—as, *je me repens* I repent.

148. There are also *unipersonal* or *impersonal reflected verbs*; these are only used in the third person singular; active verbs frequently assume this form, in a passive sense, for the sake of brevity and energy—as, *il se bâtit beaucoup de maisons* for *beaucoup de maisons sont bâties* there are a great many houses building—*il se donnera une grande bataille* for *une grande bataille sera donnée* a great battle will be fought.

149. All the simple tenses of the reflected verbs are conjugated like those of the verbs of the respective conjugations

to which they belong ; for instance, *se lever* to rise, takes the same terminations as *parler* to speak—*s'enrichir* to grow rich, takes the same terminations as *finir* to finish.

149. When a reflected verb is formed with an irregular verb, it is conjugated like the irregular verb would be, if not used as a reflected verb, that is with two pronouns ; for instance, *se servir* to make use of, will be conjugated like *servir* to serve, see page 131.

151. All the compound tenses of all the reflected verbs, without exception, are conjugated with the auxiliary, *être* to be, although they be all conjugated in English with the auxiliary *avoir* to have.

152. In compound tenses, the participle past must agree in gender and number, with the nominative or subject of the verb,

je me	suis levé	(a gentleman,)	<i>I have risen,</i>
je me	suis levée	(a lady,)	<i>I have risen,</i>
nous nous	sommes levés	(gentlemen,)	<i>we have risen,</i>
nous nous	sommes levées	(ladies,)	<i>we have risen.</i>

152. When a reflected verb is governed in the infinitive mood by another verb, the pronoun *se*, which precedes the present of the infinitive, must be made to correspond with the nominative of the first verb, thus—

je veux <i>me</i> moquer de lui	<i>I wish to laugh at him,</i>
tu veux <i>te</i> moquer de lui	<i>thou wishest to laugh at him,</i>
il veut <i>se</i> moquer de lui	<i>he wishes to laugh at him,</i>
elle veut <i>se</i> moquer de lui	<i>she wishes to laugh at him,</i>
nous voulons <i>nous</i> moquer de lui	<i>we wish to laugh at him,</i>
vous voulez <i>vous</i> moquer de lui	<i>you wish to laugh at him,</i>
ils veulent <i>se</i> moquer de lui	<i>they wish to laugh at him,</i>
elles veulent <i>se</i> moquer de lui	<i>they wish to laugh at him,</i>

Pupils are very liable, if not put on their guard, to express themselves thus—*je veux se moquer de lui—tu veux se moquer de lui, &c.*, because *se* is generally put before the infinitive present of all reflected verbs.

Of Reciprocal Verbs.

154. A verb is *reciprocal*, when it expresses that two or more nominatives or subjects act upon each other.

155. Reciprocal verbs are conjugated like reflected verbs, both in their simple and in their compound tenses ; but they have no singular as they express the reciprocal action of persons or of things upon each other ; for instance, *John and Joseph* will say,

1st, nous nous secourons l'un l'autre *we assist one another.*

Mary and Sarah will say,

2d, nous nous secourons l'une l'autre *we assist one another.*

John, Joseph, Paul, and any number of others will say,

3d, nous nous secourons les uns les autres *we assist one another.*

Mary, Sarah, Rebecca, and any number of others will say,

4th, nous nous secourons les unes les autres *we assist one another.*

156. Remark that when two persons only, are the nominatives or subjects of the verb, *one another*, is put in the singular in French; and if both persons, or one only, is of the masculine gender, *one another* is rendered by *l'un l'autre* as in the 1st example; but if both persons are of the feminine gender, *one another* is rendered by *l'une l'autre*, as in the 2d example.

157. When more than two persons are the nominatives or subjects of the verbs, then *one another* is put in the plural in French; and if all the persons, or one only, is of the masculine gender, *one another* is rendered by *les uns les autres*, as in the 3d example; but if all the persons are of the feminine gender, *one another* is rendered by *les unes les autres*, as in the 4th example.

158. A list of Verbs, which, though not admitting in English, the pronouns *one's-self*, *myself*, *thysself*, *himself*, *herself*, *ourselves*, *yourselves*, *themselves*, are nevertheless reflected in French.

<i>to abstain</i>	s'abstenir,	<i>to break loose</i>	se déchaîner,
<i>to agree</i>	s'accorder,	<i>to catch cold</i>	s'enrhumer,
<i>to apply</i>	s'adresser,	<i>to care for</i>	se soucier,
<i>to bathe</i>	se baigner,	<i>to complain</i>	se plaindre,
<i>to bear up against</i>	se raidir,	<i>to come forward</i>	s'avancer,
<i>to be angry</i>	se fâcher,	<i>to confer</i>	s'aboucher,
<i>to be offended</i>	se fâcher,	<i>to congeal</i>	se figer,
<i>to become liquid</i>	se liquéfier,	<i>to creep into</i>	se glisser,
<i>to be dying</i>	se mourir,	<i>to delight in</i>	se plaire,
<i>to be eager</i>	s'empreser,	<i>to delight in</i>	se complaire,
<i>to be eclipsed</i>	s'éclipser,	<i>to diminish</i>	s'apetisser,
<i>to begin to thrive</i>	se remplumer,	<i>to desist</i>	se désister,
<i>to be moved</i>	s'attendrir,	<i>to discharge</i>	s'acquitter,
<i>to be obstinate</i>	s'opiniâtrer,	<i>to discourse with,</i>	s'entretenir,
<i>to be out of conceit with</i>	se dégoûter,	<i>to distrust</i>	se défier,
<i>to be renewed</i>	se renouveler,	<i>to determine</i>	se déterminer,
<i>to be resolved</i>	se résoudre,	<i>to elapse</i>	s'écouler,
<i>to be silent</i>	se taire,	<i>to endeavour</i>	s'efforcer,
<i>to beware</i>	se garder,	<i>to exclaim</i>	se récrier,
<i>to blow</i>	s'épanouir,	<i>to expect</i>	s'attendre,
<i>to boast</i>	se vanter,	<i>to evaporate</i>	s'évaporer,
		<i>to fade away</i>	se flétrir,

<i>to faint away</i>	<i>s'évanouir,</i>	<i>to melt</i>	<i>se fondre,</i>
<i>to fall asleep</i>	<i>s'endormir,</i>	<i>to mistake</i>	<i>se méprendre,</i>
<i>to fall asleep again</i>	<i>se rendormir,</i>	<i>to mistrust</i>	<i>se méfier,</i>
<i>to fall furiously</i>	<i>s'acharner,</i>	<i>to move forward</i>	<i>s'avancer,</i>
<i>upon</i>		<i>to mutiny</i>	<i>se mutiner,</i>
<i>to fall tooth and</i>	<i>s'acharner,</i>	<i>to oppose,</i>	<i>s'opposer,</i>
<i>nail upon</i>		<i>to overflow</i>	<i>se déborder,</i>
<i>to fancy</i>	<i>se figurer,</i>	<i>to paint</i>	<i>se farder,</i>
<i>to fancy</i>	<i>s'imaginer,</i>	<i>to perceive</i>	<i>s'apercevoir,</i>
<i>to new feather</i>	<i>se remplumer,</i>	<i>to persist</i>	<i>s'obstiner,</i>
<i>to flock in crowds</i>	<i>s'attrouper,</i>	<i>to putrefy</i>	<i>se putréfier,</i>
<i>to flow out</i>	<i>s'écouler,</i>	<i>to quit one's country</i>	<i>s'expatrier,</i>
<i>to fly away</i>	<i>s'envoler,</i>	<i>to rebel</i>	<i>se révolter,</i>
<i>to fly into a passion</i>	<i>s'emporter,</i>	<i>to recant</i>	<i>se dédire,</i>
<i>to gangrene</i>	<i>se gangrener,</i>	<i>to rejoice</i>	<i>se réjouir,</i>
<i>to get intoxicated</i>	<i>s'enivrer,</i>	<i>to remember</i>	<i>se souvenir,</i>
<i>to get palsied</i>	<i>se paraliser,</i>	<i>to remember</i>	<i>se ressouvenir,</i>
<i>to get preferment</i>	<i>s'avancer,</i>	<i>to repent</i>	<i>se repantir,</i>
<i>to get up</i>	<i>se lever,</i>	<i>to resign</i>	<i>se démettre,</i>
<i>to get weary</i>	<i>s'ennuyer,</i>	<i>to retract</i>	<i>se rétracter,</i>
<i>to give over</i>	<i>se désister,</i>	<i>to rise</i>	<i>se lever,</i>
<i>to give up</i>	<i>se démettre,</i>	<i>to run into debt</i>	<i>s'endetter,</i>
<i>to go away</i>	<i>s'en aller,</i>	<i>to run away</i>	<i>s'enfuir</i>
<i>to go forward</i>	<i>s'avancer,</i>	<i>to seize</i>	<i>se saisir,</i>
<i>to go to bed</i>	<i>se coucher,</i>	<i>to sell</i>	<i>se vendre,</i>
<i>to grieve</i>	<i>s'attrister,</i>	<i>to set off</i>	<i>s'acheminer,</i>
<i>to grow better</i>	<i>s'amender,</i>	<i>to shrink</i>	<i>s'apetisser,</i>
<i>to grow bold</i>	<i>s'enhardir,</i>	<i>to sit down</i>	<i>s'asseoir,</i>
<i>to grow drowsy</i>	<i>s'assoupir,</i>	<i>to sit down at table</i>	<i>s'attabler,</i>
<i>to grow familiar</i>	<i>se familiariser,</i>	<i>to slip</i>	<i>se glisser,</i>
<i>to grow impatient</i>	<i>s'impatiser,</i>	<i>to stay</i>	<i>s'arrêter,</i>
<i>to grow milder</i>	<i>se radoucir</i>	<i>to steal away</i>	<i>s'esquiver,</i>
<i>to grow poor</i>	<i>s'appauvrir,</i>	<i>to stick to</i>	<i>s'attacher,</i>
<i>to grow proud</i>	<i>s'enorgueillir,</i>	<i>to stiffen</i>	<i>se raidir,</i>
<i>to grow rich</i>	<i>s'enrichir,</i>	<i>to stoop</i>	<i>se baisser,</i>
<i>to grow tired</i>	<i>se lasser,</i>	<i>to stop</i>	<i>s'arrêter,</i>
<i>to heal</i>	<i>se guérir,</i>	<i>to strive</i>	<i>s'efforcer,</i>
<i>to inquire</i>	<i>s'enquérir,</i>	<i>to struggle</i>	<i>se débattre,</i>
<i>to intermeddle</i>	<i>s'entremettre,</i>	<i>to submit</i>	<i>se soumettre,</i>
<i>to intermeddle</i>	<i>s'ingérer,</i>	<i>to subscribe</i>	<i>s'abonner,</i>
<i>to keep from</i>	<i>se garder,</i>	<i>to surrender</i>	<i>se rendre,</i>
<i>to kneel down</i>	<i>s'agenouiller,</i>	<i>to take a strong</i>	<i>s'entêter,</i>
<i>to laugh at</i>	<i>se moquer</i>	<i>fancy</i>	
<i>to lay hold of</i>	<i>se saisir,</i>	<i>to take delight in</i>	<i>se plaire,</i>
<i>to league</i>	<i>se liquer,</i>	<i>to take offence</i>	<i>se formaliser,</i>
<i>to lean on one's</i>	<i>s'accouder,</i>	<i>to take pet</i>	<i>se piquer,</i>
<i>elbow</i>		<i>to take refuge</i>	<i>se réfugier,</i>
<i>to lean upon</i>	<i>s'appuyer,</i>	<i>to take rest</i>	<i>se reposer,</i>
<i>to make haste</i>	<i>se dépêcher,</i>	<i>to take root</i>	<i>s'enraciner,</i>
<i>to make haste</i>	<i>se hâter</i>	<i>to trust</i>	<i>se fier,</i>
<i>to make one's escape</i>	<i>s'évader,</i>	<i>to vanish away</i>	<i>s'éclipser,</i>
<i>to make one's escape</i>	<i>s'échapper,</i>	<i>to walk</i>	<i>se promener,</i>
<i>to make an alliance</i>	<i>s'allier,</i>	<i>to withdraw</i>	<i>se retirer,</i>
<i>to marry</i>	<i>se marier</i>	<i>to wonder</i>	<i>s'étonner,</i>
<i>to meddle with</i>	<i>se mêler,</i>	<i>to wonder</i>	<i>s'émerveiller,</i>

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE LEVER

to rise.

(Affirmatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-

PRESENT.

Se lev *er*

to rise

-B-

PAST OR PERFECT,

or compound of the present.

S'être lev *é*

to have risen

-C-

PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE,

Se lev *ant*

rising

-D-

COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

S'étant lev *é*

having risen

-E-

PARTICIPLE PAST OR PASSIVE.

Lev *é*

risen

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Je me lèv *e*

I rise, do rise, or am rising

tu te lèv *es*

thou risest, dost rise, or art rising

il se lèv *e*

he rises, does rise, or is rising

nous nous lev *ons*

we rise, do rise, or are rising

vous vous lev *ez*

you rise, do rise, or are rising

ils se lèv *ent*

they rise, do rise, or are rising

-G-

PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present.

Je me suis lev *é*

I have risen, did rise, or have been rising

tu t'es lev *é*

thou hast risen, didst rise, or hast been rising

il s'est lev *é*

he has risen, did rise, or has been rising

nous nous sommes lev *és*

we have risen, did rise, or have been rising

vous vous êtes lev *és*

you have risen, did rise, or have been rising

ils se sont lev *és*

they have risen, did rise, or have been rising

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Je me lev *ais*

I rose, did rise, or was rising

tu te lev *ais*

thou rosest, didst rise, or wast rising

il se lev *ait*

he rose, did rise, or was rising

nous nous lev *ions*

we rose, did rise, or were rising

vous vous lev *iez*

you rose, did rise, or were rising

ils se lev *aient*

they rose, did rise, or were rising

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Jem'étais lev *é*

I had risen or had been rising

tu t'étais lev *é*

thou hadst risen or hadst been rising

il s'était lev *é*

he had risen or had been rising

nous nous étions lev *és*

we had risen or had been rising

vous vous étiez lev *és*

you had risen or had been rising

ils s'étaient lev *és*

they had risen or had been rising

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
 4j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli in William.

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je me lev ai	<i>I rose or did rise</i>
tu te lev as	<i>thou rosest or didst rise</i>
il se lev a	<i>he rose or did rise</i>
nous nous lev âmes	<i>we rose or did rise</i>
vous vous lev âtes	<i>you rose or did rise</i>
ils se lev èrent	<i>they rose or did rise</i>

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je me fus lev é	<i>I had risen</i>
tu te fus lev é	<i>thou hadst risen</i>
il se fut lev é	<i>he had risen</i>
nous nous fûmes lev és	<i>we had risen</i>
vous vous fûtes lev és	<i>you had risen</i>
ils se furent lev és	<i>they had risen</i>

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je me lèv erai	<i>I shall or will rise</i>
tu te lèv eras	<i>thou shalt or wilt rise</i>
il se lèv era	<i>he shall or will rise</i>
nous nous lèv erons	<i>we shall or will rise</i>
vous vous lèv erez	<i>you shall or will rise</i>
ils se lèv eront	<i>they shall or will rise</i>

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je me serai lev é	<i>I shall or will have risen</i>
tu te seras lev é	<i>thou shalt or wilt have risen</i>
il se sera lev é	<i>he shall or will have risen</i>
nous nous serons lev és	<i>we shall or will have risen</i>
vous vous serez lev és	<i>you shall or will have risen</i>
ils se seront lev és	<i>they shall or will have risen</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Je me lèv erais	<i>I should, would, could, or might rise</i>
tu te lèv erais	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst rise</i>
il se lèv erait	<i>he should, would, could, or might rise</i>
nous nous lèv erions	<i>we should, would, could, or might rise</i>
vous vous lèv eriez	<i>you should, would, could, or might rise</i>
ils se lèv eraient	<i>they should, would, could, or might rise</i>

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

Je me serais lev é,	<i>I should, would, could,</i>
or je me fusse lev é	<i>or might have risen</i>
tu te serais lev é,	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,</i>
or tu te fusses lev é	<i>or mightst have risen</i>
il se serait lev é,	<i>he should, would, could,</i>
or il se fût lev é	<i>or might have risen</i>

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

nous nous serions lev *és*,
 or nous nous fussions lev *és*
 vous vous seriez lev *és*,
 or vous vous fussiez lev *és*
 ils se seraient lev *és*,
 or ils se fussent lev *és*

we should, would, could,
or might have risen
you should, would, could,
or might have risen
they should, would, could,
or might have risen

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Lèv *e*-toi
 qu'il se lèv *e*
 lev *ons*-nous
 lev *ez*-vous
 qu'ils se lèv *ent*

rise (thou)
let him rise
let us rise
rise (you)
let them rise

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je me lèv *e*
 que tu te lèv *es*
 qu'il se lèv *e*
 que nous nous lev *ions*
 que vous vous lev *iez*
 qu'ils se lèv *ent*

that I may rise
that thou mayst rise
that he may rise
that we may rise
that you may rise
that they may rise

-R-

PRETERIT or PAST,
or compound of the present.

Que je me sois lev *é*
 que tu te sois lev *é*
 qu'il se soit lev *é*
 que nous nous soyons lev *és*
 que vous vous soyez lev *és*
 qu'ils se soient lev *és*

that I may have risen
that thou mayst have risen
that he may have risen
that we may have risen
that you may have risen
that they may have risen

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je me lev *asse*
 que tu te lev *asses*
 qu'il se lev *ât*
 que nous nous lev *assions*
 que vous vous lev *assiez*
 qu'ils se lev *assent*

that I might rise
that thou mightst rise
that he might rise
that we might rise
that you might rise
that they might rise

-T-

PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que je me fusse lev *é*
 que tu te fusses lev *é*
 qu'il se fût lev *é*
 que nous nous fussions lev *és*
 que vous vous fussiez lev *és*
 qu'ils se fussent lev *és*

that I might have risen
that thou mightst have risen
that he might have risen
that we might have risen
that you might have risen
that they might have risen

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Willi am.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE LEVER

to rise.

(Negatively.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.
Ne pas se lev er	not to rise
-B-	PAST or PERFECT, or compound of the present.
Ne pas s'être lev é	not to have risen
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT or ACTIVE.
Ne se lev ant pas	not rising
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.
Ne s'étant pas lev é	not having risen

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
Je ne me lèv e pas	I rise not, do not rise, or am not	} rising
tu ne te lèv es pas	thou risest not, dost not rise, or art not	
il ne se lèv e pas	he rises not, does not rise, or is not	
nous ne nous lev ons pas	we rise not, do not rise, or are not	
vous ne vous lev ez pas	you rise not, do not rise, or are not	
ils ne se lèv ent pas	they rise not, do not rise, or are not	
-G-	PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE, or compound of the present.	
Je ne me suis pas lev é	I have not risen, did not rise, or have not been rising	
tu ne t'es pas lev é	thou hast not risen, didst not rise, or hast not been rising	
il ne s'est pas lev é	he has not risen, did not rise, or has not been rising	
nous ne nous sommes pas lev és	we have not risen, did not rise, or have not been rising	
vous ne vous êtes pas lev és	you have not risen, did not rise, or have not been rising	
ils ne se sont pas lev és	they have not risen, did not rise, or have not been rising	
-H-	IMPERFECT.	
Je ne me lev ais pas	I rose not, did not rise, or was	} not rising
tu ne te lev ais pas	thou rodest not, didst not rise, or wast	
il ne se lev ait pas	he rose not, did not rise, or was	
nous ne nous lev ions pas	we rose not, did not rise, or were	
vous ne vous lev iez pas	you rose not, did not rise, or were	
ils ne se lev aient pas	they rose not, did not rise, or were	
-I-	PLUPERFECT, or compound of the imperfect.	
Je ne m'étais pas lev é	I had not risen or had not been	} rising
tu ne t'étais pas lev é	thou hadst not risen or hadst not been	
il ne s'était pas lev é	he had not risen or had not been	
nous ne nous étions pas lev és	we had not risen or had not been	
vous ne vous étiez pas lev és	you had not risen or had not been	
ils ne s'étaient pas lev és	they had not risen or had not been	

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne me lev <i>ai</i> pas	<i>I rose not or did not rise</i>
tu ne te lev <i>as</i> pas	<i>thou rosest not or didst not rise</i>
il ne se lev <i>a</i> pas	<i>he rose not or did not rise</i>
nous ne nous lev <i>âmes</i> pas	<i>we rose not or did not rise</i>
vous ne vous lev <i>âtes</i> pas	<i>you rose not or did not rise</i>
ils ne se lev <i>èrent</i> pas	<i>they rose not or did not rise</i>

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

Je ne me fus pas lev <i>é</i>	<i>I had not risen</i>
tu ne te fus pas lev <i>é</i>	<i>thou hadst not risen</i>
il ne se fut pas lev <i>é</i>	<i>he had not risen</i>
nous ne nous fûmes pas lev <i>és</i>	<i>we had not risen</i>
vous ne vous fûtes pas lev <i>és</i>	<i>you had not risen</i>
ils ne se furent pas lev <i>és</i>	<i>they had not risen</i>

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne me lèv <i>erai</i> pas	<i>I shall or will not rise</i>
tu ne te lèv <i>eras</i> pas	<i>thou shalt or wilt not rise</i>
il ne se lèv <i>era</i> pas	<i>he shall or will not rise</i>
nous ne nous lèv <i>erons</i> pas	<i>we shall or will not rise</i>
vous ne vous lèv <i>erez</i> pas	<i>you shall or will not rise</i>
ils ne se lev <i>eront</i> pas	<i>they shall or will not rise</i>

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

Je ne me serai pas lev <i>é</i>	<i>I shall or will not have risen</i>
tu ne te seras pas lev <i>é</i>	<i>thou shalt or wilt not have risen</i>
il ne se sera pas lev <i>é</i>	<i>he shall or will not have risen</i>
nous ne nous serons pas lev <i>és</i>	<i>we shall or will not have risen</i>
vous ne vous serez pas lev <i>és</i>	<i>you shall or will not have risen</i>
ils ne se seront pas lev <i>és</i>	<i>they shall or will not have risen</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Je ne me lèv <i>erais</i> pas	<i>I should, would, could, or might</i>	} <i>not rise</i>
tu ne te lèv <i>erais</i> pas	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst</i>	
il ne se lèv <i>erait</i> pas	<i>he should, would, could, or might</i>	
nous ne nous lèv <i>erions</i> pas	<i>we should, would, could, or might</i>	
vous ne vous lèv <i>eriez</i> pas	<i>you should, would, could, or might</i>	
ils ne se lèv <i>eraient</i> pas	<i>they should, would, could, or might</i>	

-O-

PAST

or compound of the present.

Je ne me serais pas lev <i>é</i> ,	<i>I should, would, could,</i>
or <i>je ne me fusse pas lev é</i>	<i>or might not have risen</i>
tu ne te serais pas lev <i>é</i> ,	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,</i>
or <i>tu ne te fusses pas lev é</i>	<i>or mightst not have risen</i>
il ne se serait pas lev <i>é</i> ,	<i>he should, would, could,</i>
or <i>il ne se fût pas lev é</i>	<i>or might not have risen</i>

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

nous ne nous serions pas lev *és*,
 or nous ne nous fussions pas lev *és*
 vous ne vous seriez pas lev *és*,
 or vous ne vous fussiez pas lev *és*
 ils ne se seraient pas lev *és*,
 or ils ne se fussent pas lev *és*

we should, would, could,
 or might not have risen
 you should, would, could,
 or might not have risen
 they should, would, could,
 or might not have risen

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne te lève pas
 qu'il ne se lève pas
 ne nous levons pas
 ne vous levez pas
 qu'ils ne se lèvent pas

rise not or do not rise (thou)
 let him not rise
 let us not rise
 rise not or do not rise (you)
 let them not rise

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je ne me lève pas
 que tu ne te lèves pas
 qu'il ne se lève pas
 que nous ne nous levions pas
 que vous ne vous leviez pas
 qu'ils ne se lèvent pas

that I may not rise
 that thou mayst not rise
 that he may not rise
 that we may not rise
 that you may not rise
 that they may not rise

-R-

PRETERIT OR PAST,

or compound of the present,

Que je ne me sois pas lev *é*
 que tu ne te sois pas lev *é*
 qu'il ne se soit pas lev *é*
 que nous ne nous soyons pas lev *és*
 que vous ne vous soyez pas lev *és*
 qu'ils ne se soient pas lev *és*

that I may not have risen
 that thou mayst not have risen
 that he may not have risen
 that we may not have risen
 that you may not have risen
 that they may not have risen

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je ne me levasse pas
 que tu ne te levasses pas
 qu'il ne se levât pas
 que nous ne nous levassions pas
 que vous ne vous levassiez pas
 qu'ils ne se levassent pas

that I might not rise
 that thou mightst not rise
 that he might not rise
 that we might not rise
 that you might not rise
 that they might not rise

-T-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Que je ne me fusse pas lev *é*
 que tu ne te fusses pas lev *é*
 qu'il ne se fût pas lev *é*
 que nous ne nous fussions pas lev *és*
 que vous ne vous fussiez pas lev *és*
 qu'ils ne se fussent pas lev *és*

that I might not have risen
 that thou mightst not have risen
 that he might not have risen
 that we might not have risen
 that you might not have risen
 that they might not have risen

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE LEVER

to rise.

(Interrogatively.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Me lev é-je	<i>do I rise or am I rising</i>
te lev es-tu	<i>dost thou rise or art thou rising</i>
se lev e-t-il	<i>does he rise or is he rising</i>
nous lev ons-nous	<i>do we rise or are we rising</i>
vous lev ez-vous	<i>do you rise or are you rising</i>
se lev ent-ils	<i>do they rise or are they rising</i>

-G-

PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Me suis-je lev é	<i>have I risen or did I rise</i>
t'es-tu lev é	<i>hadst thou risen or didst thou rise</i>
s'est-il lev é	<i>has he risen or did he rise</i>
nous sommes-nous lev és	<i>have we risen or did we rise</i>
vous êtes-vous lev és	<i>have you risen or did you rise</i>
se sont-ils lev és	<i>have they risen or did they rise</i>

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Me lev ais-je	<i>did I rise or was I rising</i>
te lev ais-tu	<i>didst thou rise or wast thou rising</i>
se lev ait-il	<i>did he rise or was he rising</i>
nous lev ions-nous	<i>did we rise or were we rising</i>
vous lev iez-vous	<i>did you rise or were you rising</i>
se lev aient-ils	<i>did they rise or were they rising</i>

-I-

PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

M'étais-je lev é	<i>had I risen or had I been rising</i>
t'étais-tu lev é	<i>hadst thou risen or hadst thou been rising</i>
s'était-il lev é	<i>had he risen or had he been rising</i>
nous étions-nous lev és	<i>had we risen or had we been rising</i>
vous étiez-vous lev és	<i>had you risen or had you been rising</i>
s'étaient-ils lev és	<i>had they risen or had they been rising</i>

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Me lev ai-je	<i>did I rise</i>
te lev as-tu	<i>didst thou rise</i>
se lev a-t-il	<i>did he rise</i>
nous lev âmes-nous	<i>did we rise</i>
vous lev âtes-vous	<i>did you rise</i>
se lev èrent-ils	<i>did they rise</i>

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli in William.

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the preterit.

Me fus-je lev é	had I risen
te fus-tu lev é	hadst thou risen
se fut-il lev é	had he risen
nous fûmes-nous lev és	had we risen
vous fûtes-vous lev és	had you risen
se furent-ils lev és	had they risen

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Me lèv erai-je	shall or will I rise
te lèv eras-tu	shalt or wilt thou rise
se lèv era-t-il	shall or will he rise
nous lèv erons-nous	shall or will we rise
vous lèv erez-vous	shall or will you rise
se lèv eront-ils	shall or will they rise

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the future.

Me serai-je lev é	shall or will I have risen
te seras-tu lev é	shalt or wilt thou have risen
se sera-t-il lev é	shall or will he have risen
nous serons-nous lev és	shall or will we have risen
vous serez-vous lev és	shall or will you have risen
se seront-ils lev és	shall or will they have risen

CONDITIONAL MOOD

-N-

PRESENT.

Me lèv erais-je	should, would, could, or might I rise
te lèv erais-tu	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou rise
se lèv erait-il	should, would, could, or might he rise
nous lèv erions-nous	should, would, could, or might we rise
vous lèv eriez-vous	should, would, could, or might you rise
se lèv eraient-ils	should, would, could, or might they rise

-O-

PAST,
 or compound of the present.

Me serais-je lev é,	should, would, could,
or me fussé-je lev é	or might I have risen
te serais-tu lev é,	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or te fusses-tu lev é	or mightst thou have risen
se serait-il lev é,	should, would, could,
or se fût-il lev é	or might he have risen
nous serions-nous lev és,	should, would, could,
or nous fussions-nous lev és	or might we have risen
vous seriez-vous lev és,	should, would, could,
or vous fussiez-vous lev és	or might you have risen
se seraient-ils lev és,	should, would, could,
or se fussent-ils lev és	or might they have risen

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE LEVER *to rise.* (*Negatively and Interrogatively.*)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

Ne me lev é-je pas
 ne te lev es-tu pas
 ne se lèv e-t-il pas
 ne nous lev ons-nous pas
 ne vous lev ez-vous pas
 ne se lèv ent-ils pas

PRESENT.

do I not rise or am I not rising
dost thou not rise or art thou not rising
does he not rise or is he not rising
do we not rise or are we not rising
do you not rise or are you not rising
do they not rise or are they not rising

-G-

PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Ne me suis-je pas lev é
 ne t'es-tu pas lev é
 ne s'est-il pas lev é
 ne nous sommes-nous pas lev és
 ne vous êtes-vous pas lev és
 ne se sont-ils pas lev és

have I not risen, did I not rise,
or have I not been rising
hast thou not risen, didst thou not rise,
or hast thou not been rising
has he not risen, did he not rise,
or has he not been rising
have we not risen, did we not rise,
or have we not been rising
have you not risen, did you not rise,
or have you not been rising
have they not risen, did they not rise,
or have they not been rising

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Ne me lev ais-je pas
 ne te lev ais-tu pas
 ne se lev ait-il pas
 ne nous lev ions-nous pas
 ne vous lev iez-vous pas
 ne se lev aient-ils pas

did I not rise or was I not rising
didst thou not rise or wast thou not rising
did he not rise or was he not rising
did we not rise or were we not rising
did you not rise or were you not rising
did they not rise or were they not rising

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Ne m'étais-je pas lev é
 ne t'étais-tu pas lev é
 ne s'était-il pas lev é
 ne nous étions-nous pas lev és
 ne vous étiez-vous pas lev és
 ne s'étaient-ils pas lev és

had I not risen or had I not
hadst thou not risen or hadst thou not
had he not risen or had he not
had we not risen or had we not
had you not risen or had you not
had they not risen or had they not

} *been rising*

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Ne me lev ai-je pas
 ne te lev as-tu pas
 ne se lev a-t-il pas
 ne nous lev âmes-nous pas
 ne vous lev âtes-vous pas
 ne se lev èrent-ils pas

did I not rise
didst thou not rise
did he not rise
did we not rise
did you not rise
did they not rise

³mur. mâr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the preterit.

Ne me fus-je pas lev é	had I not risen
ne te fus-tu pas lev é	hadst thou not risen
ne se fut-il pas lev é	had he not risen
ne nous fûmes-nous pas lev és	had we not risen
ne vous fûtes-vous pas lev és	had you not risen
ne se furent-ils pas lev és	had they not risen

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne me lèv erai-je pas	shall or will I not rise
ne te lèv eras-tu pas	shalt or wilt thou not rise
ne se lèv era-t-il pas	shall or will he not rise
ne nous lèv erons-nous pas	shall or will we not rise
ne vous lèv erez-vous pas	shall or will you not rise
ne se lèv eront-ils pas	shall or will they not rise

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the future.

Ne me serai-je pas lev é	shall or will I not have risen
ne te seras-tu pas lev é	shalt or wilt thou not have risen
ne se sera-t-il pas lev é	shall or will he not have risen
ne nous serons-nous pas lev és	shall or will we not have risen
ne vous serez-vous pas lev és	shall or will you not have risen
ne se seront-ils pas lev és	shall or will they not have risen

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Ne me lèv erais-je pas	should, would, could, or might I	} not rise
ne te lèv erais-tu pas	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou	
ne se lèv erait-il pas	should, would, could, or might he	
ne nous lèv erions-nous pas	should, would, could, or might we	
ne vous lèv eriez-vous pas	should, would, could, or might you	
ne se lèv eraient-ils pas	should, would, could, or might they	

-O-

PAST,
 or compound of the present.

Ne me serais-je pas lev é,	should, would, could,
or ne me fussé-je pas lev é	or might I not have risen
ne te serais-tu pas lev é,	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or ne te fusses-tu pas lev é	or mightst thou not have risen
ne se serait-il pas lev é,	should, would, could,
or ne se fût-il pas lev é	or might he not have risen
ne nous serions-nous pas lev és,	should, would, could,
or ne nous fussions-nous pas lev és	or might we not have risen
ne vous seriez-vous pas lev és,	should, would, could,
or ne vous fussiez-vous pas lev és	or might you not have risen
ne se seraient-ils pas lev és,	should, would, could,
or ne se fussent-ils pas lev és	or might they not have risen

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. âter. tout. voûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE BIEN PORTER *to be well.* (*Affirmatively.*)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.
Se bien port <i>er</i>	<i>to be well</i>
-B-	PAST OR PERFECT,
	<i>or compound of the present.</i>
S'être bien port <i>é</i>	<i>to have been well</i>
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE,
Se port <i>ant</i> bien	<i>being well</i>
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.
S'étant bien port <i>é</i>	<i>having been well</i>
-E-	PARTICIPLE PAST OR PASSIVE.
Bien port <i>é</i>	<i>been well</i>

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.
Je me port <i>e</i> bien	<i>I am well</i>
tu te port <i>es</i> bien	<i>thou art well</i>
il se port <i>e</i> bien	<i>he is well</i>
nous nous port <i>ons</i> bien	<i>we are well</i>
vous vous port <i>ez</i> bien	<i>you are well</i>
ils se port <i>ent</i> bien	<i>they are well</i>
-G-	PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
	<i>or compound of the present.</i>
Je me suis bien port <i>é</i>	<i>I have been well</i>
tu t'es bien port <i>é</i>	<i>thou hast been well</i>
il s'est bien port <i>é</i>	<i>he has been well</i>
nous nous sommes bien port <i>és</i>	<i>we have been well</i>
vous vous êtes bien port <i>és</i>	<i>you have been well</i>
ils se sont bien port <i>és</i>	<i>they have been well</i>
-H-	IMPERFECT.
Je me port <i>ais</i> bien	<i>I was well</i>
tu te port <i>ais</i> bien	<i>thou wast well</i>
il se port <i>ait</i> bien	<i>he was well</i>
nous nous port <i>ions</i> bien	<i>we were well</i>
vous vous port <i>iez</i> bien	<i>you were well</i>
ils se port <i>aient</i> bien	<i>they were well</i>
-I-	PLUPERFECT,
	<i>or compound of the imperfect.</i>
Je m'étais bien port <i>é</i>	<i>I had been well</i>
tu t'étais bien port <i>é</i>	<i>thou hadst been well</i>
il s'était bien port <i>é</i>	<i>he had been well</i>
nous nous étions bien port <i>és</i>	<i>we had been well</i>
vous vous étiez bien port <i>és</i>	<i>you had been well</i>
ils s'étaient bien port <i>és</i>	<i>they had been well</i>

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je me port <i>ai</i> bien	<i>I was well</i>
tu te port <i>as</i> bien	<i>thou wast well</i>
il se port <i>a</i> bien	<i>he was well</i>
nous nous port <i>âmes</i> bien	<i>we were well</i>
vous vous port <i>âtes</i> bien	<i>you were well</i>
ils se port <i>èrent</i> bien	<i>they were well</i>

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je me fus bien port <i>é</i>	<i>I had been well</i>
tu te fus bien port <i>é</i>	<i>thou hadst been well</i>
il se fut bien port <i>é</i>	<i>he had been well</i>
nous nous fûmes bien port <i>és</i>	<i>we had been well</i>
vous vous fûtes bien port <i>és</i>	<i>you had been well</i>
ils se furent bien port <i>és</i>	<i>they had been well</i>

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je me port <i>erai</i> bien	<i>I shall or will be well</i>
tu te port <i>eras</i> bien	<i>thou shalt or wilt be well</i>
il se port <i>era</i> bien	<i>he shall or will be well</i>
nous nous port <i>erons</i> bien	<i>we shall or will be well</i>
vous vous port <i>erez</i> bien	<i>you shall or will be well</i>
ils se port <i>eront</i> bien	<i>they shall or will be well</i>

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je me serai bien port <i>é</i>	<i>I shall or will have been well</i>
tu te seras bien port <i>é</i>	<i>thou shalt or wilt have been well</i>
il se sera bien port <i>é</i>	<i>he shall or will have been well</i>
nous nous serons bien port <i>és</i>	<i>we shall or will have been well</i>
vous vous serez bien port <i>és</i>	<i>you shall or will have been well</i>
ils se seront bien port <i>és</i>	<i>they shall or will have been well</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Je me port <i>erais</i> bien	<i>I should, would, could, or might</i>	} <i>be well</i>
tu te port <i>erais</i> bien	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst</i>	
il se port <i>erait</i> bien	<i>he should, would, could, or might</i>	
nous nous port <i>erions</i> bien	<i>we should, would, could, or might</i>	
vous vous port <i>eriez</i> bien	<i>you should, would, could, or might</i>	
ils se port <i>eraient</i> bien	<i>they should, would, could, or might</i>	

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

Je me serais bien port <i>é</i> ,	<i>I should, would, could,</i>
or <i>je me fusse bien port é</i>	<i>or might have been well</i>
tu te serais bien port <i>é</i> ,	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,</i>
or <i>tu te fusses bien port é</i>	<i>or mightst have been well</i>
il se serait bien port <i>é</i> ,	<i>he should, would, could,</i>
or <i>il se fût bien port é</i>	<i>or might have been well</i>

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

nous nous serions bien port *és*,
 or nous nous fussions bien port *és*
 vous vous seriez bien port *és*,
 or vous vous fussiez bien port *és*
 ils se seraient bien port *és*,
 or ils se fussent bien port *és*

we should, would, could,
or might have been well
you should, would, could,
or might have been well
they should, would, could,
or might have been well

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Port *e*-toi bien
 qu'il se port *e* bien
 port *ons*-nous bien
 port *ez*-vous bien
 qu'ils se port *ent* bien

be well (thou)
let him be well
let us be well
be well (you)
let them be well

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je me port *e* bien
 que tu te port *es* bien
 qu'il se port *e* bien
 que nous nous port *ions* bien
 que vous vous port *iez* bien
 qu'ils se port *ent* bien

that I may be well
that thou mayst be well
that he may be well
that we may be well
that you may be well
that they may be well

-R-

PRETERIT OR PAST,
 or compound of the present.

Que je me sois bien port *é*
 que tu te sois bien port *é*
 qu'il se soit bien port *é*
 que nous nous soyons bien port *és*
 que vous vous soyez bien port *és*
 qu'ils se soient bien port *és*

that I may have been well
that thou mayst have been well
that he may have been well
that we may have been well
that you may have been well
that they may have been well

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je me port *asse* bien
 que tu te port *asses* bien
 qu'il se port *ât* bien
 que nous nous port *assions* bien
 que vous vous port *assiez* bien
 qu'ils se port *assent* bien

that I might be well
that thou mightst be well
that he might be well
that we might be well
that you might be well
that they might be well

-T-

PLUPERFECT,
 or compound of the imperfect.

Que je me fusse bien port *é*
 que tu te fusses bien port *é*
 qu'il se fût bien port *é*
 que nous nous fussions bien port *és*
 que vous vous fussiez bien port *és*
 qu'ils se fussent bien port *és*

that I might have been well
that thou mightst have been well
that he might have been well
that we might have been well
that you might have been well
that they might have been well

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli in William.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE BIEN PORTER *to be well.* (*Negatively.*)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.
Ne se pas bien port <i>er</i>	<i>not to be well</i>
-B-	PAST OR PERFECT,
	<i>or compound of the present.</i>
Ne s'être pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>not to have been well</i>
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE.
Ne se port <i>ant</i> pas bien	<i>not being well</i>
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.
Ne s'étant pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>not having been well</i>

INDICATIVE MOOD

-F-	PRESENT.
Je ne me port <i>e</i> pas bien	<i>I am not well</i>
tu ne te port <i>es</i> pas bien	<i>thou art not well</i>
il ne se port <i>e</i> pas bien	<i>he is not well</i>
nous ne nous port <i>ons</i> pas bien	<i>we are not well</i>
vous ne vous port <i>ez</i> pas bien	<i>you are not well</i>
ils ne se port <i>ent</i> pas bien	<i>they are not well</i>
-G-	PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
	<i>or compound of the present.</i>
Je ne me suis pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>I have not been well</i>
tu ne t'es pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>thou hast not been well</i>
il ne s'est pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>he has not been well</i>
nous ne nous sommes pas bien port <i>és</i>	<i>we have not been well</i>
vous ne vous êtes pas bien port <i>és</i>	<i>you have not been well</i>
ils ne se sont pas bien port <i>és</i>	<i>they have not been well</i>
-H-	IMPERFECT.
Je ne me port <i>ais</i> pas bien	<i>I was not well</i>
tu ne te port <i>ais</i> pas bien	<i>thou wast not well</i>
il ne se port <i>ait</i> pas bien	<i>he was not well</i>
nous ne nous port <i>ions</i> pas bien	<i>we were not well</i>
vous ne vous port <i>iez</i> pas bien	<i>you were not well</i>
ils ne se port <i>aient</i> pas bien	<i>they were not well</i>
-I-	PLUPERFECT,
	<i>or compound of the imperfect.</i>
Je ne m'étais pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>I had not been well</i>
tu ne t'étais pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>thou hadst not been well</i>
il ne s'était pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>he had not been well</i>
nous ne nous étions pas bien port <i>és</i>	<i>we had not been well</i>
vous ne vous étiez pas bien port <i>és</i>	<i>you had not been well</i>
ils ne s'étaient pas bien port <i>és</i>	<i>they had not been well</i>

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne me port <i>ai</i> pas bien	<i>I was not well</i>
tu ne te port <i>as</i> pas bien	<i>thou wast not well</i>
il ne se port <i>a</i> pas bien	<i>he was not well</i>
nous ne nous port <i>âmes</i> pas bien	<i>we were not well</i>
vous ne vous port <i>âtes</i> pas bien	<i>you were not well</i>
ils ne se port <i>èrent</i> pas bien	<i>they were not well</i>

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

Je ne me fus pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>I had not been well</i>
tu ne te fus pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>thou hadst not been well</i>
il ne se fut pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>he had not been well</i>
nous ne nous fûmes pas bien port <i>és</i>	<i>we had not been well</i>
vous ne vous fûtes pas bien port <i>és</i>	<i>you had not been well</i>
il ne se furent pas bien port <i>és</i>	<i>they had not been well</i>

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne me port <i>erai</i> pas bien	<i>I shall or will not be well</i>
tu ne te port <i>eras</i> pas bien	<i>thou shalt or wilt not be well</i>
il ne se port <i>era</i> pas bien	<i>he shall or will not be well</i>
nous ne nous port <i>erons</i> pas bien	<i>we shall or will not be well</i>
vous ne vous port <i>erez</i> pas bien	<i>you shall or will not be well</i>
ils ne se port <i>eront</i> pas bien	<i>they shall or will not be well</i>

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

Je ne me serai pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>I shall or will not have</i>	} <i>been well</i>
tu ne te seras pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>thou shalt or wilt not have</i>	
il ne se sera pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>he shall or will not have</i>	
nous ne nous serons pas bien port <i>és</i>	<i>we shall or will not have</i>	
vous ne vous serez pas bien port <i>és</i>	<i>you shall or will not have</i>	
ils ne se seront pas bien port <i>és</i>	<i>they shall or will not have</i>	

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Je ne me port <i>erais</i> pas bien	<i>I should, would, could,</i> <i>or might not be well</i>
tu ne te port <i>erais</i> pas bien	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,</i> <i>or mightst not be well</i>
il ne se port <i>erait</i> pas bien	<i>he should, would, could,</i> <i>or might not be well</i>
nous ne nous port <i>erions</i> pas bien	<i>we should, would, could,</i> <i>or might not be well</i>
vous ne vous port <i>eriez</i> pas bien	<i>you should, would, could,</i> <i>or might not be well</i>
ils ne se port <i>eraient</i> pas bien	<i>they should, would, could,</i> <i>or might not be well</i>

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

Je ne me serais pas bien port <i>é</i> ,	<i>I should, would, could,</i>
or je ne me fusse pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>or might not have been well</i>
tu ne te serais pas bien port <i>é</i> ,	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,</i>
or tu ne te fusses pas bien port <i>é</i>	<i>or mightst not have been well</i>

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as li, in William.

il ne se serait pas bien port é,	<i>he should, would, could,</i>
or <i>il ne se fût pas bien port é</i>	<i>or might not have been well</i>
nous ne nous serions pas bien port és,	<i>we should, would, could,</i>
or <i>nous ne nous fussions pas bien port és</i>	<i>or might not have been well</i>
vous ne vous seriez pas bien port és,	<i>you should, would, could,</i>
or <i>vous ne vous fussiez pas bien port és</i>	<i>or might not have been well</i>
ils ne se seraient pas bien port és,	<i>they should, would, could,</i>
or <i>il ne se fussent pas bien port és</i>	<i>or might not have been well</i>

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne te port e pas bien	<i>be not well or do not be well (thou)</i>
qu'il ne se port e pas bien	<i>let him not be well</i>
ne nous port ons pas bien	<i>let us not be well</i>
ne vous port ez pas bien	<i>be not well or do not be well (you)</i>
qu'ils ne se port ent pas bien	<i>let them not be well</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je ne me port e pas bien	<i>that I may not be well</i>
que tu ne te port es pas bien	<i>that thou mayst not be well</i>
qu'il ne se port e pas bien	<i>that he may not be well</i>
que nous ne nous port ions pas bien	<i>that we may not be well</i>
que vous ne vous port iez pas bien	<i>that you may not be well</i>
qu'ils ne se port ent pas bien	<i>that they may not be well</i>

-R- PRETERIT OR PAST,
or compound of the present,

Que je ne me sois pas bien port é	<i>that I may not have been well</i>
que tu ne te sois pas bien port é	<i>that thou mayst not have been well</i>
qu'il ne se soit pas bien port é	<i>that he may not have been well</i>
que nous ne nous soyons pas bien port és	<i>that we may not have been well</i>
que vous ne vous soyez pas bien port és	<i>that you may not have been well</i>
qu'ils ne se soient pas bien port és	<i>that they may not have been well</i>

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je ne me port asse pas bien	<i>that I might not be well</i>
que tu ne te port asses pas bien	<i>that thou mightst not be well</i>
qu'il ne se port ât pas bien	<i>that he might not be well</i>
que nous ne nous port assions pas bien	<i>that we might not be well</i>
que vous ne vous port assiez pas bien	<i>that you might not be well</i>
qu'ils ne se port assent pas bien	<i>that they might not be well</i>

-T- PLUPERFECT.
or compound of the imperfect

Que je ne me fusse pas bien port é	<i>that I might not have</i>	} <i>been well</i>
que tu ne te fusses pas bien port é	<i>that thou mightst not have</i>	
qu'il ne se fût pas bien port é	<i>that he might not have</i>	
que nous ne nous fussions pas bien port és	<i>that we might not have</i>	
que vous ne vous fussiez pas bien port és	<i>that you might not have</i>	
qu'ils ne se fussent pas bien port és	<i>that they might not have</i>	

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouëte
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE BIEN PORTER *to be well.* (*Interrogatively.*)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Me port é-je bien	<i>am I well</i>
te port es-tu bien	<i>art thou well</i>
se port e-t-il bien	<i>is he well</i>
nous port ons-nous bien	<i>are we well</i>
vous port ez-vous bien	<i>are you well</i>
se port ent-ils bien	<i>are they well</i>

-G-

PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Me suis-je bien port é	<i>have I been well</i>
t'es-tu bien port é	<i>hast thou been well</i>
s'est-il bien port é	<i>has he been well</i>
nous sommes-nous bien port és	<i>have we been well</i>
vous êtes-vous bien port és	<i>have you been well</i>
se sont-ils bien port és	<i>have they been well</i>

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Me port ais-je bien	<i>was I well</i>
te port ais-tu bien	<i>wast thou well</i>
se port ait-il bien	<i>was he well</i>
nous port ions-nous bien	<i>were we well</i>
vous port iez-vous bien	<i>were you well</i>
se port aient-ils bien	<i>were they well</i>

-I-

PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

M'étais-je bien port é	<i>had I been well</i>
t'étais-tu bien port é	<i>hadst thou been well</i>
s'était-il bien port é	<i>had he been well</i>
nous étions-nous bien port és	<i>had we been well</i>
vous étiez-vous bien port és	<i>had you been well</i>
s'étaient-ils bien port és	<i>had they been well</i>

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Me port ai-je bien	<i>was I well</i>
te port as-tu bien	<i>wast thou well</i>
se port a-t-il bien	<i>was he well</i>
nous port âmes-nous bien	<i>were we well</i>
vous port âtes-vous bien	<i>were you well</i>
se port èrent-ils bien	<i>were they well</i>

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the preterit.

Me fus-je bien port é	had I been well
te fus-tu bien port é	hadst thou been well
se fut-il bien port é	had he been well
nous fûmes-nous bien port és	had we been well
vous fûtes-vous bien port és	had you been well
se furent-ils bien port és	had they been well

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Me port erai-je bien	shall or will I be well
te port eras-tu bien	shalt or wilt thou be well
se port era-t-il bien	shall or will he be well
nous port erons-nous bien	shall or will we be well
vous port erez-vous bien	shall or will you be well
se port eront-ils bien	shall or will they be well

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the future.

Me serai-je bien port é	shall or will I have been well
te seras-tu bien port é	shalt or wilt thou have been well
se sera-t-il bien port é	shall or will he have been well
nous serons-nous bien port és	shall or will we have been well
vous serez-vous bien port és	shall or will you have been well
se seront-ils bien port és	shall or will they have been well

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Me port erais-je bien	should, would, could, or might I	} be well
te port erais-tu bien	shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou	
se port erait-il bien	should, would, could, or might he	
nous port erions-nous bien	should, would, could, or might we	
vous port eriez-vous bien	should, would, could, or might you	
se port eraient-ils bien	should, would, could, or might they	

-O-

PAST,
 or compound of the present.

Me serais-je bien port é,	should, would, could,
or me fussé-je bien porté	or might I have been well
te serais-tu bien port é,	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or te fusses-tu bien porté	or mightst thou have been well
se serait-il bien port é,	should, would, could,
or se fût-il bien porté	or might he have been well
nous serions-nous bien port és,	should, would, could,
or nous fussions-nous bien port és	or might we have been well
vous seriez-vous bien port és,	should, would, could,
or vous fussiez-vous bien port és	or might you have been well
se seraient-ils bien port és,	should, would, could,
or se fussent-ils bien port és	or might they have been well

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE BIEN PORTER *to be well. (Negatively and Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Ne me port é-je pas bien	<i>am I not well</i>
ne te port es-tu pas bien	<i>art thou not well</i>
ne se port e-t-il pas bien	<i>is he not well</i>
ne nous port ons-nous pas bien	<i>are we not well</i>
ne vous port ez-vous pas bien	<i>are you not well</i>
ne se port ent-ils pas bien	<i>are they not well</i>

-G-

PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Ne me suis-je pas bien port é	<i>have I not been well</i>
ne t'es-tu pas bien port é	<i>hast thou not been well</i>
ne s'est-il pas bien port é	<i>has he not been well</i>
ne nous sommes-nous pas bien port és	<i>have we not been well</i>
ne vous êtes-vous pas bien port és	<i>have you not been well</i>
ne se sont-ils pas bien port és	<i>have they not been well</i>

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Ne me port ais-je pas bien	<i>was I not well</i>
ne te port ais-tu pas bien	<i>wast thou not well</i>
ne se port ait-il pas bien	<i>was he not well</i>
ne nous port ions-nous pas bien	<i>were we not well</i>
ne vous port iez-vous pas bien	<i>were you not well</i>
ne se port aient-ils pas bien	<i>were they not well</i>

-I-

PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Ne m'étais-je pas bien port é	<i>had I not been well</i>
ne t'étais-tu pas bien port é	<i>hadst thou not been well</i>
ne s'était-il pas bien port é	<i>had he not been well</i>
ne nous étions-nous pas bien port és	<i>had we not been well</i>
ne vous étiez-vous pas bien port és	<i>had you not been well</i>
ne s'étaient-ils pas bien port és	<i>had they not been well</i>

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Ne me port ai-je pas bien	<i>was I not well</i>
ne te port as-tu pas bien	<i>wast thou not well</i>
ne se port a-t-il pas bien	<i>was he not well</i>
ne nous port âmes-nous pas bien	<i>were we not well</i>
ne vous port âtes-vous pas bien	<i>were you not well</i>
ne se port èrent-ils pas bien	<i>were they not well</i>

³mur. mâr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
 4j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

Ne me fus-je pas bien port é	had I not been well
ne te fus-tu pas bien port é	hadst thou not been well
ne se fut-il pas bien port é	had he not been well
ne nous fûmes-nous pas bien port és	had we not been well
ne vous fûtes-vous pas bien port és	had you not been well
ne se furent-ils pas bien port és	had they not been well

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne me port erai-je pas bien	shall or will I not be well
ne te port eras-tu pas bien	shalt or wilt thou not be well
ne se port era-t-il pas bien	shall or will he not be well
ne nous port erons-nous pas bien	shall or will we not be well
ne vous port erez-vous pas bien	shall or will you not be well
ne se port eront-ils pas bien	shall or will they not be well

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

Ne me serai-je pas bien port é	shall or will I not have	} been well
ne te seras-tu pas bien port é	shalt or wilt thou not have	
ne se sera-t-il pas bien port é	shall or will he not have	
ne nous serons-nous pas bien port és	shall or will we not have	
ne vous serez-vous pas bien port és	shall or will you not have	
ne se seront-ils pas bien port és	shall or will they not have	

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Ne me port erais-je pas bien	should, would, could,
	or might I not be well
ne te port erais-tu pas bien	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
	or mightst thou not be well
ne se port erait-il pas bien	should, would, could,
	or might he not be well
ne nous port erions-nous pas bien	should, would, could,
	or might we not be well
ne vous port eriez-vous pas bien	should, would, could,
	or might you not be well
ne se port eraient-ils pas bien	should, would, could,
	or might they not be well

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

Ne me serais-je pas bien port é,	should, would, could,
or ne me fussé-je pas bien port é	or might I not have been well
ne te serais-tu pas bien port é,	shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
or ne te fusses-tu pas bien port é	or mightst thou not have been well
ne se serait-il pas bien port é,	should, would, could,
or ne se fût-il pas bien port é	or might he not have been well
ne nous serions-nous pas bien port és,	should, would, could,
or ne nous fussions-nous pas bien port és	or might we not have been well
ne vous seriez-vous pas bien port és,	should, would, could,
or ne vous fussiez-vous pas bien port és	or might you not have been well
ne se seraient-ils pas bien port és,	should, would, could,
or ne se fussent-ils pas bien port és	or might they not have been well

ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouûte.
 2at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

S'EN ALLER *to go away.* (*Affirmatively.*)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.
S'en aller	<i>to go away</i>
-B-	PAST OR PERFECT,
	<i>or compound of the present.</i>
S'en être allé	<i>to have gone away</i>
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE,
S'en allant	<i>going away</i>
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.
S'en étant allé	<i>having gone away</i>
-E-	PARTICIPLE PAST OR PASSIVE.
En allé	<i>gone away</i>

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
Je m'en vais†	<i>I go away, do go away, or am</i>	} <i>going away</i>
tu t'en vas	<i>thou goest away, dost go away, or art</i>	
il s'en va	<i>he goes away, does go away, or is</i>	
nous nous en allons	<i>we go away, do go away, or are</i>	
vous vous en allez	<i>you go away, do go away, or are</i>	
ils s'en vont	<i>they go away, do go away, or are</i>	
-G-	PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE,	
	<i>or compound of the present.</i>	
Je m'en suis allé	<i>I went away, did go away, or have</i>	} <i>gone away</i>
tu t'en es allé	<i>thou wentest away, didst go away, or hast</i>	
il s'en est allé	<i>he went away, did go away, or has</i>	
nous nous en sommes allés	<i>we went away, did go away, or have</i>	
vous vous en êtes allés	<i>you went away, did go away, or have</i>	
ils s'en sont allés	<i>they went away, did go away, or have</i>	
H-	IMPERFECT.	
Je m'en allais	<i>I went away, did go away, or was</i>	} <i>going away</i>
tu t'en allais	<i>thou wentest away, didst go away, or wast</i>	
il s'en allait	<i>he went away, did go away, or was</i>	
nous nous en allions	<i>we went away, did go away, or were</i>	
vous vous en alliez	<i>you went away, did go away, or were</i>	
ils s'en allaient	<i>they went away, did go away, or were</i>	
-I-	PLUPERFECT,	
	<i>or compound of the imperfect.</i>	
Je m'en étais allé	<i>I had gone away</i>	
tu t'en étais allé	<i>thou hadst gone away</i>	
il s'en était allé	<i>he had gone away</i>	
nous nous en étions allés	<i>we had gone away</i>	
vous vous en étiez allés	<i>you had gone away</i>	
ils s'en étaient allés	<i>they had gone away</i>	

† Or Je m'en vas, *not much used.*

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as li in William

-J

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je m'en allai	<i>I went away or did go away</i>
tu t'en allas	<i>thou wentest away or didst go away</i>
il s'en alla	<i>he went away or did go away</i>
nous nous en allâmes	<i>we went away or did go away</i>
vous vous en allâtes	<i>you went away or did go away</i>
ils s'en allèrent	<i>they went away or did go away</i>

-K-

 RETERIT ANTERIOR,
compound of the preterit.

Je m'en fus allé	<i>I had gone away</i>
tu t'en fus allé	<i>thou hadst gone away</i>
il s'en fut allé	<i>he had gone away</i>
nous nous en fûmes allés	<i>we had gone away</i>
vous vous en fûtes allés	<i>you had gone away</i>
ils s'en furent allés	<i>they had gone away</i>

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je m'en irai	<i>I shall or will go away</i>
tu t'en iras	<i>thou shalt or wilt go away</i>
il s'en ira	<i>he shall or will go away</i>
nous nous en irons	<i>we shall or will go away</i>
vous vous en irez	<i>you shall or will go away</i>
ils s'en iront	<i>they shall or will go away</i>

-M-

 FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je m'en serai allé	<i>I shall or will have gone away</i>
tu t'en seras allé	<i>thou shalt or wilt have gone away</i>
il s'en sera allé	<i>he shall or will have gone away</i>
nous nous en serons allés	<i>we shall or will have gone away</i>
vous vous en serez allés	<i>you shall or will have gone away</i>
ils s'en seront allés	<i>they shall or will have gone away</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Je m'en irais	<i>I should, would, could, or might go away</i>
tu t'en irais	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst go away</i>
il s'en irait	<i>he should, would, could, or might go away</i>
nous nous en irions	<i>we should, would, could, or might go away</i>
vous vous en iriez	<i>you should, would, could, or might go away</i>
ils s'en metaient	<i>they should, would, could, or might go away</i>

-O-

 PAST,
or compound of the present.

Je m'en serais allé,	<i>I should, would, could,</i>
or je m'en fusse allé	<i>or might have gone away</i>
tu t'en serais allé,	<i>thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,</i>
or tu t'en fusses allé	<i>or mightst have gone away</i>
il s'en serait allé,	<i>he should, would, could,</i>
or il s'en fût allé	<i>or might have gone away</i>

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouîte.
²at. arm. tub. alo. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

nous nous en serions allés,
 or *nous nous en fussions allés*
 vous vous en seriez allés,
 or *vous vous en fussiez allés*
 ils s'en seraient allés,
 or *ils s'en fussent allés*

we should, would, could,
or might have gone away
you should, would, could,
or might have gone away
they should, would, could,
or might have gone away

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Va-t'en
 qu'il s'en aille
 allons-nous-en
 allez-vous-en
 qu'ils s'en aillent

go away (thou)
let him go away
let us go away
go away (you)
let them go away

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je m'en aille
 que tu t'en ailles
 qu'il s'en aille
 que nous nous en allions
 que vous vous en alliez
 qu'ils s'en aillent

that I may go away
that thou mayst go away
that he may go away
that we may go away
that you may go away
that they may go away

-R-

PRETERIT or PAST,
 or compound of the present,

Que je m'en sois allé
 que tu t'en sois allé
 qu'il s'en soit allé
 que nous nous en soyons allés
 que vous vous en soyez allés
 qu'ils s'en soient allés

that I may have gone away
that thou mayst have gone away
that he may have gone away
that we may have gone away
that you may have gone away
that they may have gone away

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je m'en allasse
 que tu t'en allasses
 qu'il s'en allât
 que nous nous en allussions
 que vous vous en allassiez
 qu'ils s'en allassent

that I might go away
that thou mightst go away
that he might go away
that we might go away
that you might go away
that they might go away

-T-

PLUPERFECT,
 or compound of the imperfect.

Que je m'en fusse allé
 que tu t'en fusses allé
 qu'il s'en fût allé
 que nous nous en fussions allés
 que vous vous en fussiez allés
 qu'ils s'en fussent allés

that I might have gone away
that thou mightst have gone away
that he might have gone away
that we might have gone away
that you might have gone away
that they might have gone away

³*mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.*
⁴*j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.*

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

S'EN ALLER *to go away.* (*Negatively.*)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.
Ne pas s'en aller	<i>not to go away</i>
-B-	PAST or PERFECT,
	<i>or compound of the present.</i>
Ne pas s'en être allé	<i>not to have gone away</i>
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT or ACTIVE.
Ne s'en allant pas	<i>not going away</i>
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.
Ne s'en étant pas allé	<i>not having gone away</i>

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
Je ne m'en vais pas	<i>I do not go away or am not</i>	} <i>going away</i>
tu ne t'en vas pas	<i>thou dost not go away or art not</i>	
il ne s'en va pas	<i>he does not go away or is not</i>	
nous ne nous en allons pas	<i>we do not go away or are not</i>	
vous ne vous en allez pas	<i>you do not go away or are not</i>	
ils ne s'en vont pas	<i>they do not go away or are not</i>	
-G-	PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE,	
	<i>or compound of the present.</i>	
Je ne m'en suis pas allé	<i>I did not go away or have not</i>	} <i>gone away</i>
tu ne t'en es pas allé	<i>thou didst not go away or hast not</i>	
il ne s'en est pas allé	<i>he did not go away or has not</i>	
nous ne nous en sommes pas allés	<i>we did not go away or have not</i>	
vous ne vous en êtes pas allés	<i>you did not go away or have not</i>	
ils ne s'en sont pas allés	<i>they did not go away or have not</i>	
-H-	IMPERFECT.	
Je ne m'en allais pas	<i>I did not go away or was not</i>	} <i>going away</i>
tu ne t'en allais pas	<i>thou didst not go away or wast not</i>	
il ne s'en allait pas	<i>he did not go away or was not</i>	
nous ne nous en allions pas	<i>we did not go away or were not</i>	
vous ne vous en alliez pas	<i>you did not go away or were not</i>	
ils ne s'en allaient pas	<i>they did not go away or were not</i>	
-I-	PLUPERFECT,	
	<i>or compound of the imperfect.</i>	
Je ne m'en étais pas allé	<i>I had not gone away</i>	
tu ne t'en étais pas allé	<i>thou hadst not gone away</i>	
il ne s'en était pas allé	<i>he had not gone away</i>	
nous ne nous en étions pas allés	<i>we had not gone away</i>	
vous ne vous en étiez pas allés	<i>you had not gone away</i>	
ils ne s'en étaient pas allés	<i>they had not gone away</i>	

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouëte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne m'en allai pas
 tu ne t'en allas pas
 il ne s'en alla pas
 nous ne nous en allâmes pas
 vous ne vous en allâtes pas
 ils ne s'en allèrent pas

*I did not go away
 thou didst not go away
 he did not go away
 we did not go away
 you did not go away
 they did not go away*

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the preterit.

Je ne m'en fus pas allé
 tu ne t'en fus pas allé
 il ne s'en fut pas allé
 nous ne nous en fûmes pas allés
 vous ne vous en fûtes pas allés
 ils ne s'en furent pas allés

*I had not gone away
 thou hadst not gone away
 he had not gone away
 we had not gone away
 you had not gone away
 they had not gone away*

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne m'en irai pas
 tu ne t'en iras pas
 il ne s'en ira pas
 nous ne nous en irons pas
 vous ne vous en irez pas
 ils ne s'en iront pas

*I shall or will not go away
 thou shalt or wilt not go away
 he shall or will not go away
 we shall or will not go away
 you shall or will not go away
 they shall or will not go away*

M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
 or compound of the future.

Je ne m'en serai pas allé
 tu ne t'en seras pas allé
 il ne s'en sera pas allé
 nous ne nous en serons pas allés
 vous ne vous en serez pas allés
 ils ne s'en seront pas allés

*I shall or will not have gone away
 thou shalt or wilt not have gone away
 he shall or will not have gone away
 we shall or will not have gone away
 you shall or will not have gone away
 they shall or will not have gone away*

CONDITIONAL MOOD

-N

PRESENT.

Je ne m'en irais pas
 tu ne t'en irais pas
 il ne s'en irait pas
 nous ne nous en irions pas
 vous ne vous en iriez pas
 ils ne s'en iraient pas

*I should, would, could, or might
 thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst
 he should, would, could, or might
 we should, would, could, or might
 you should, would, could, or might
 they should, would, could, or might*

} not go away

-O-

PAST,
 or compound of the present.

Je ne m'en serais pas allé,
 or *je ne m'en fusse pas allé*
 tu ne t'en serais pas allé,
 or *tu ne t'en fusses pas allé*
 il ne s'en serait pas allé,
 or *il ne s'en fût pas allé*

*I should, would, could,
 or might not have gone away
 thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,
 or mightst not have gone away
 he should, would, could,
 or might not have gone away*

mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
j, as s in plea sure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

nous ne nous en serions pas allés,	<i>we should, would, could,</i>
or <i>nous ne nous en fussions pas allés</i>	<i>or might not have gone away</i>
vous ne vous en seriez pas allés,	<i>you should, would, could,</i>
or <i>vous ne vous en fussiez pas allés</i>	<i>or might not have gone away</i>
ils ne s'en seraient pas allés,	<i>they should, would, could,</i>
or <i>ils ne s'en fussent pas allés</i>	<i>or might not have gone away</i>

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne t'en va pas	<i>do not go away (thou)</i>
qu'il ne s'en aille pas	<i>let him not go away</i>
ne nous en allons pas	<i>let us not go away</i>
ne vous en allez pas	<i>do not go away (you)</i>
qu'ils ne s'en aillent pas	<i>let them not go away</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je ne m'en aille pas	<i>that I may not go away</i>
que tu ne t'en ailles pas	<i>that thou mayst not go away</i>
qu'il ne s'en aille pas	<i>that he may not go away</i>
que nous ne nous en allions pas	<i>that we may not go away</i>
que vous ne vous en alliez pas	<i>that you may not go away</i>
qu'ils ne s'en aillent pas	<i>that they may not go away</i>

-R-

PRETERIT OR PAST,

or compound of the present.

Que je ne m'en sois pas allé	<i>that I may not have gone</i>	} <i>away</i>
que tu ne t'en sois pas allé	<i>that thou mayst not have gone</i>	
qu'il ne s'en soit pas allé	<i>that he may not have gone</i>	
que nous ne nous en soyons pas allés	<i>that we may not have gone</i>	
que vous ne vous en soyez pas allés	<i>that you may not have gone</i>	
qu'ils ne s'en soient pas allés	<i>that they may not have gone</i>	

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je ne m'en allasse pas	<i>that I might not go away</i>
que tu ne t'en allasses pas	<i>that thou mightst not go away</i>
qu'il ne s'en allât pas	<i>that he might not go away</i>
que nous ne nous en allussions pas	<i>that we might not go away</i>
que vous ne vous en allassiez pas	<i>that you might not go away</i>
qu'ils ne s'en allassent pas	<i>that they might not go away</i>

-T-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Que je ne m'en fusse pas allé	<i>that I might not have</i>	} <i>gone away</i>
que tu ne t'en fusses pas allé	<i>that thou mightst not have</i>	
qu'il ne s'en fût pas allé	<i>that he might not have</i>	
que nous ne nous en fussions pas allés	<i>that we might not have</i>	
que vous ne vous en fussiez pas allés	<i>that you might not have</i>	
qu'ils ne s'en fussent pas allés	<i>that they might not have</i>	

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouête.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

S'EN ALLER *to go away.* (Interrogatively.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.
M'en vais-je	<i>do I go away or am I going away</i>
t'en vas-tu	<i>dost thou go away or art thou going away</i>
s'en va-t-il	<i>does he go away or is he going away</i>
nous en allons-nous	<i>do we go away or are we going away</i>
vous en allez-vous	<i>do you go away or are you going away</i>
s'en vont-ils	<i>do they go away or are they going away</i>

-G-	PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE, <i>or compound of the present.</i>	
M'en suis-je allé	<i>did I go away or have I</i>	} <i>gone away</i>
t'en es-tu allé	<i>didst thou go away or hadst thou</i>	
s'en est-il allé	<i>did he go away or has he</i>	
nous en sommes-nous allés	<i>did we go away or have we</i>	
vous en êtes-vous allés	<i>did you go away or have you</i>	
s'en sont-ils allés	<i>did they go away or have they</i>	

-H-	IMPERFECT.	
M'en allais-je	<i>did I go away or was I</i>	} <i>going away</i>
t'en allais-tu	<i>didst thou go away or wast thou</i>	
s'en allait-il	<i>did he go away or was he</i>	
nous en allions-nous	<i>did we go away or were we</i>	
vous en alliez-vous	<i>did you go away or were you</i>	
s'en allaient-ils	<i>did they go away or were they</i>	

-I-	PLUPERFECT, <i>or compound of the imperfect.</i>
M'en étais-je allé	<i>had I gone away</i>
t'en étais-tu allé	<i>hadst thou gone away</i>
s'en était-il allé	<i>had he gone away</i>
nous en étions-nous allés	<i>had we gone away</i>
vous en étiez-vous allés	<i>had you gone away</i>
s'en étaient-ils allés	<i>had they gone away</i>

-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.
M'en allai-je	<i>did I go away</i>
t'en allas-tu	<i>didst thou go away</i>
s'en alla-t-il	<i>did he go away</i>
nous en allâmes-nous	<i>did we go away</i>
vous en allâtes-vous	<i>did you go away</i>
s'en allèrent-ils	<i>did they go away</i>

³*mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.*
⁴*j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.*

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

M'en fus-je allé	<i>had I gone away</i>
t'en fus-tu allé	<i>hadst thou gone away</i>
s'en fut-il allé	<i>had he gone away</i>
nous en fûmes-nous allés	<i>had we gone away</i>
vous en fûtes-vous allés	<i>had you gone away</i>
s'en furent-ils allés	<i>had they gone away</i>

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

M'en irai-je	<i>shall or will I go away</i>
t'en iras-tu	<i>shalt or wilt thou go away</i>
s'en ira-t-il	<i>shall or will he go away</i>
nous en irons-nous	<i>shall or will we go away</i>
vous en irez-vous	<i>shall or will you go away</i>
s'en iront-ils	<i>shall or will they go away</i>

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

M'en serai-je allé	<i>shall or will I have gone away</i>
t'en seras-tu allé	<i>shalt or wilt thou have gone away</i>
s'en sera-t-il allé	<i>shall or will he have gone away</i>
nous en serons-nous allés	<i>shall or will we have gone away</i>
vous en serez-vous allés	<i>shall or will you have gone away</i>
s'en seront-ils allés	<i>shall or will they have gone away</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

M'en irais-je	<i>should, would, could, or might I go away</i>
t'en irais-tu	<i>shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou go away</i>
s'en irait-il	<i>should, would, could, or might he go away</i>
nous en irions-nous	<i>should, would, could, or might we go away</i>
vous en iriez-vous	<i>should, would, could, or might you go away</i>
s'en iraient-ils	<i>should, would, could, or might they go away</i>

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

M'en serais-je allé,	<i>should, would, could,</i>
or <i>m'en fussé-je allé</i>	<i>or might I have gone away</i>
t'en serais-tu allé,	<i>shouldst, wouldst, couldst,</i>
or <i>t'en fusses-tu allé</i>	<i>or mightst thou have gone away</i>
s'en serait-il allé,	<i>should, would, could,</i>
or <i>s'en fût-il allé</i>	<i>or might he have gone away</i>
nous en serions-nous allés,	<i>should, would, could,</i>
or <i>nous en fussions-nous allés</i>	<i>or might we have gone away</i>
vous en seriez-vous allés,	<i>should, would, could,</i>
or <i>vous en fussiez-vous allés</i>	<i>or might you have gone away</i>
s'en seraient-ils allés,	<i>should, would, could,</i>
or <i>s'en fussent-ils allés</i>	<i>or might they have gone away</i>

¹ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. vouëte.
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

S'EN ALLER *to go away. (Negatively and Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-

PRESENT.

Ne m'en vais-je pas	<i>do I not go away or am I not</i>	} <i>going away</i>
ne t'en vas-tu pas	<i>dost thou not go away or art thou not</i>	
ne s'en va-t-il pas	<i>does he not go away or is he not</i>	
ne nous en allons-nous pas	<i>do we not go away or are we not</i>	
ne vous en allez-vous pas	<i>do you not go away or are you not</i>	
ne s'en vont-ils pas	<i>do they not go away or are they not</i>	

-G-

PERFECT or PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present.

Ne m'en suis-je pas allé	<i>did I not go away</i> <i>or have I not gone away</i>
ne t'en es-tu pas allé	<i>didst thou not go away</i> <i>or hast thou not gone away</i>
ne s'en est-il pas allé	<i>did he not go away</i> <i>or has he not gone away</i>
ne nous en sommes-nous pas allés	<i>did we not go away</i> <i>or have we not gone away</i>
ne vous en êtes-vous pas allés	<i>did you not go away</i> <i>or have you not gone away</i>
ne s'en sont-ils pas allés	<i>did they not go away</i> <i>or have they not gone away</i>

-H-

IMPERFECT.

Ne m'en allais-je pas	<i>did I not go away or was I not</i>	} <i>going away</i>
ne t'en allais-tu pas	<i>didst thou not go away or wast thou not</i>	
ne s'en allait-il pas	<i>did he not go away or was he not</i>	
ne nous en allions-nous pas	<i>did we not go away or were we not</i>	
ne vous en alliez-vous pas	<i>did you not go away or were you not</i>	
ne s'en allaient-ils pas	<i>did they not go away or were they not</i>	

-I-

PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Ne m'en étais-je pas allé	<i>had I not gone away</i>
ne t'en étais-tu pas allé	<i>hadst thou not gone away</i>
ne s'en était-il pas allé	<i>had he not gone away</i>
ne nous en étions-nous pas allés	<i>had we not gone away</i>
ne vous en étiez-vous pas allés	<i>had you not gone away</i>
ne s'en étaient-ils pas allés	<i>had they not gone away</i>

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Ne m'en allai-je pas	<i>did I not go away</i>
ne t'en allas-tu pas	<i>didst thou not go away</i>
ne s'en alla-t-il pas	<i>did he not go away</i>
ne nous en allâmes-nous pas	<i>did we not go away</i>
ne vous en allâtes-vous pas	<i>did you not go away</i>
ne s'en allèrent-ils pas	<i>did they not go away</i>

³mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
⁴j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli in William.

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

Ne m'en fus-je pas allé	<i>had I not gone away</i>
ne t'en fus-tu pas allé	<i>hadst thou not gone away</i>
ne s'en fut-il pas allé	<i>had he not gone away</i>
ne nous en fûmes-nous pas allés	<i>had we not gone away</i>
ne vous en fûtes-vous pas allés	<i>had you not gone away</i>
ne s'en furent-ils pas allés	<i>had they not gone away</i>

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne m'en irai-je pas	<i>shall or will I not go away</i>
ne t'en iras-tu pas	<i>shalt or wilt thou not go away</i>
ne s'en ira-t-il pas	<i>shall or will he not go away</i>
ne nous en irons-nous pas	<i>shall or will we not go away</i>
ne vous en irez-vous pas	<i>shall or will you not go away</i>
ne s'en iront-ils pas	<i>shall or will they not go away</i>

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

Ne m'en serai-je pas allé	<i>shall or will I not have</i>	} <i>Gone away</i>
ne t'en seras-tu pas allé	<i>shalt or wilt thou not have</i>	
ne s'en sera-t-il pas allé	<i>shall or will he not have</i>	
ne nous en serons-nous pas allés	<i>shall or will we not have</i>	
ne vous en serez-vous pas allés	<i>shall or will you not have</i>	
ne s'en seront-ils pas allés	<i>shall or will they not have</i>	

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Ne m'en irais-je pas	<i>should, would, could, or might I</i>	} <i>not go away</i>
ne t'en irais-tu pas	<i>shouldst, wouldst, couldst, or mightst thou</i>	
ne s'en irait-il pas	<i>should, would, could, or might he</i>	
ne nous en irions-nous pas	<i>should, would, could, or might we</i>	
ne vous en iriez-vous pas	<i>should, would, could, or might you</i>	
ne s'en iraient-ils pas	<i>should, would, could, or might they</i>	

-O-

PAST,

or compound of the present.

Ne m'en serais-je pas allé,	<i>should, would, could,</i>
or ne m'en fussé-je pas allé	<i>or might I not have gone away</i>
ne t'en serais-tu pas allé,	<i>shouldst, wouldst, couldst,</i>
or ne t'en fusses-tu pas allé	<i>or mightst thou not have gone away</i>
ne s'en serait-il pas allé,	<i>should, would, could,</i>
or ne s'en fût-il pas allé	<i>or might he not have gone away</i>
ne nous en serions-nous pas allés,	<i>should, would, could,</i>
or ne nous en fussions-nous pas allés	<i>or might we not have gone away</i>
ne vous en seriez-vous pas allés,	<i>should, would, could,</i>
or ne vous en fussiez-vous pas allés	<i>or might you not have gone away</i>
ne s'en seraient-ils pas allés,	<i>should, would, could,</i>
or ne s'en fussent-ils pas allés	<i>or might they not have gone away</i>

IRREGULAR VERBS are those, which differ in the variations of some of their tenses and persons, from the verbs which serve as models to the four regular conjugations.

However great the irregularity of a verb may be, its irregularities never occur but in the simple tenses; the compound are always regular, and consequently conjugated as the compound tenses of the verbs given as models of the four regular conjugations.

DEFECTIVE VERBS, are those, which are not employed in all tenses or persons.

UNIPERSONAL VERBS, or, as commonly called IMPERSONAL VERBS, are those, which are only employed in the third person singular, as *IL IMPORTE, it matters*; *IL PLEUT, it rains, &c.*

ALLER to go.

-A- Aller.	-C- Allant.	-E- Allé.
-F- Je vais, nous allons,	tu vas, vous allez,	il va, ils vont.
-H- J'allais, nous allions,	tu allais, vous alliez,	il allait, ils allaient.
-J- J'allai, nous allâmes,	tu allas, vous allâtes,	il alla, ils allèrent.
-L- J'irai, nous irons,	tu iras, vous irez,	il ira, ils iront.
-N- J'irais, nous irions,	tu irais, vous iriez,	il irait, ils iraient.
-P- allons,	va, allez,	qu'il aille, qu'ils aillent.
-Q- Que j'aille, que nous allions,	que tu aille, que vous alliez,	qu'il aille, qu'ils aillent.
-S- Que j'allasse, que nous allussions,	que tu allasses, que vous allassiez,	qu'il allât, qu'ils allassent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with ÊTRE, to be.

There is a very common error prevalent in France, even among pretty well informed people, in the application of the Compound Tenses of the above verb ALLER, *to go*; people are very liable to use the Compound Tenses *Etre allé, je suis allé, tu es allé, il est allé, &c.* instead of using the Compound Tenses of ÊTRE, *to be*; *avoir été, j'ai été, tu as été, il a été, &c.*

The general rule to follow is, that, whenever the return from the place mentioned, has not taken place, *être allé, je suis allé, tu es allé, il est allé, &c.* must be used; for instance—*Jean est allé à l'école ce matin*, John has gone to school this morning; means that John has gone to school, and has not yet returned.

Whenever the return from the place mentioned, has taken place, *Avoir été, j'ai été, tu as été, il a été, &c.* must be used, for instance—*Jean a été à l'école ce matin*, John has been to school this morning; means that John has been to school and has returned, or at least has left the school.

The following mode of expression, *I will come and see you—Je viendrai vous voir*; is frequently erroneously used in English, instead of *I will go and see you—J'irai vous voir*. VENIR, *to come*, must be used in the sense of coming again to the place where the person speaking is; and ALLER, *to go*, in the sense of going from the place where one is, to any other place; for instance—being at a person's house, I must say, *Je viendrai vous voir demain*—I will come and see you to-morrow; but being at any place out of the house of the person to whom I speak, I must say, *J'irai vous voir demain*—I will go and see you to-morrow. In French this distinction must absolutely be made.

S'EN ALLER, *to go away*, is conjugated, page 112.

ENVOYER *to send.*

A- Envoyer.	-c- Envoyant.	-E- Envoyé.
F- J'envoie, nous envoyons,	tu envoies, vous envoyez,	il envoie, ils envoient.
H- J'envoyais, nous envoyions,	tu envoyais, vous envoyiez,	il envoyait, ils envoyaient.
-J- J'envoyai, nous envoyâmes,	tu envoyas, vous envoyâtes,	il envoya, ils envoyèrent.
-L- J'enverrai, nous enverrons,	tu enverras, vous enverrez,	il enverra, ils enverront.
-N- J'enverrais, nous enverrions,	tu enverrais, vous enverriez,	il enverrait, ils enverraient.
-P- envoyons,	envoie, envoyez,	qu'il envoie, qu'ils envoient.
-Q- Que j'envoie, que nous envoyions,	que tu envoies, que vous envoyiez,	qu'il envoie, qu'ils envoient.
-S- Que j'envoyasse, que nous envoyassions,	que tu envoyasses, que vous envoyassiez,	qu'il envoyât, qu'ils envoyassent.

Conjugate after the same manner—RENOYER, *to send back*.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Defective and Unipersonal Verbs of the First Conjugation.

The following verbs are conjugated as PARLER, *to speak*; but are employed, at the third persons singular only.

NEIGER *to snow.*

-A- Neiger	<i>to snow.</i>	-B- Avoir neigé	<i>to have snowed.</i>
-C- Neigeant	<i>snowing.</i>	-D- Ayant neigé	<i>having snowed.</i>
		-E- Neigé	<i>snowed.</i>
-F- Il neige	<i>it snows, it does snow, it is snowing.</i>		
-G- Il a neigé	<i>it has snowed, it did snow, it has been snowing.</i>		
-H- Il neigeait	<i>it snowed, it did snow, it was snowing.</i>		

-I- Il avait neig é	<i>it had snowed or had been snowing.</i>
-J- Il neige a	<i>it snowed or did snow.</i>
-K- Il eut neig é	<i>it had snowed.</i>
-L- Il neig era	<i>it will snow</i>
-M- Il aura neig é	<i>it will have snowed.</i>
-N- Il neig erait	<i>it should, would, could, or might snow</i>
-O- Il aurait neig é, or il eût neig é	<i>it should, would, could, or might have snowed</i>
-Q- Qu'il neig e	<i>that it may snow.</i>
-R- Qu'il ait neig é	<i>that it may have snowed.</i>
-S- Qu'il neige ât	<i>that it might snow.</i>
-T- Qu'il eût neig é	<i>that it might have snowed.</i>

See the verb *PARLER*, to speak, page 38, and conjugate like it; the above verb *Negatively, Interrogatively, and Negatively and Interrogatively*; in the third person singular of every tense.

Conjugate after the same manner, the following verbs.

Il arriv e	<i>it happens.</i>	Il grêl e	<i>it hails.</i>
Il bruin e	<i>it drizzles.</i>	Il grésill e	<i>it rimes.</i>
Il dégèl e	<i>it thaws.</i>	Il import e	<i>it matters.</i>
Il éclair e	<i>it lightens.</i>	Il résult e	<i>it follows.</i>
Il gèl e	<i>it freezes.</i>	Il tonn e	<i>it thunders.</i>

Irregular, Defective, and Unipersonal Verbs of the Second Conjugation.

ACQUÉRIR to acquire.

-A- Acquérir.	-C- Acquérant.	-E- Acquis.
-F- J'acquires, nous acquérons,	tu acquiers, vous acquérez,	il acquiert, ils acquièrent.
-H- J'acquerais, nous acquérions,	tu acquerais, vous acquériez,	il acquerrait, ils acquerraient.
-J- J'acquis, nous acquîmes,	tu acquis, vous acquîtes,	il acquit, ils acquirent.
-L- J'acquerrai, nous acquerrons,	tu acquerras, vous acquerrez,	il acquerra, ils acquerront.
-N- J'acquerrais, nous acquerrions,	tu acquerrais, vous acqueriez,	il acquerrait, ils acquerraient.
-P- acquérons,	acquiers, acquérez,	qu'il acquière, qu'ils acquièrent.
-Q- Que j'acquière, que nous acquérions,	que tu acquières, que vous acquériez,	qu'il acquière, qu'ils acquièrent.
-S- Que j'acquisse, que nous acquissions,	que tu acquisses, que vous acquissiez,	qu'il acquît, qu'ils acquissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with *AVOIR*, to have.

Conjugated after the same manner—

Requérir	<i>to require.</i>	S'enquérir	<i>to inquire.</i>
Conquérir	<i>to conquer.</i>	Quérir	<i>to fetch.</i>
Reconquérir	<i>to conquer again.</i>		

Conquérir, *to conquer*, (defective) only used in -A- the present of the infinitive, in -J- the preterit definite, in -s- the imperfect of the subjunctive, and in the compound tenses.

Reconquérir, *to conquer again*, (defective) chiefly used in -E- the past participle.

S'enquérir, *to inquire*, (defective) very little used, except in -A- the present of the infinitive, and in the compound tenses.

Quérir, *to fetch*, (defective) is only used in -A- the present of the infinitive, with the verbs VENIR *to come*, ALLER *to go*, and ENVOYER *to send*, as *il est venu quérir Jean*—he has come to fetch John; *allez me quérir Jean*—go and fetch me John; *j'ai envoyé quérir Jean*—I have sent for John; this verb is only used in common conversation.

ASSAILLIR *to assault.*

-A- Assaillir.	-c- Assaillant,	-E- Assailli.
-F- J'assaille, nous assaillons,	tu assailles, vous assaillez,	il assaille, ils assaillent.
-H- J'assailais, nous assaillions,	tu assaillais, vous assailliez,	il assaillait, ils assaillaient.
-J- J'assaillis, nous assaillîmes,	tu assaillis, vous assaillîtes,	il assaillit, ils assaillirent.
-L- J'assaillirai, nous assaillirons,	tu assailliras, vous assaillirez,	il assaillira, ils assailliront.
-N- J'assaillirais, nous assaillirions,	tu assaillirais, vous assailliriez,	il assaillirait, ils assailliraient.
-P- assaillons,	assaille, assaillez,	qu'il assaille, qu'ils assaillent.
-Q- Que j'assaille, que nous assaillions,	que tu assailles que vous assailliez,	qu'il assaille, qu'ils assaillent.
-S- Que j'assaillisse, que nous assaillissions,	que tu assaillisses, que vous assaillissiez,	qu'il assaillît, qu'ils assaillissent.

Conjugated after the same manner, TRESSAILLIR, *to start, to*
[*leap for.*]

The compound tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

BOUILLIR *to boil.*

-A- Bouillir.	-c- Bouillant.	-E- Bouilli.
-F- Je bous, nous bouillons,	tu bous, vous bouillez,	il bout, ils bouillent.
-H- Je bouillais, nous bouillions,	tu bouillais, vous bouilliez,	il bouillait, ils bouillaient.

-J- Je bouillis, nous bouillîmes,	tu bouillis, vous bouillîtes,	il bouillit, ils bouillirent.
-L- Je bouillirai, nous bouillirons,	tu bouilliras, vous bouillirez	il bouillira, ils bouilliront.
-N- Je bouillirais, nous bouillirions,	tu bouillirais, vous bouilliriez,	il bouillirait, ils bouilliraient.
-P- bouillons,	bous, bouillez,	qu'il bouille, qu'ils bouillent.
-Q- Que je bouille, que nous bouillions,	que tu bouilles, que vous bouilliez,	qu'il bouille, qu'ils bouillent.
-S- Que je bouillisse, que nous bouillissions,	que tu bouillisses, que vous bouillissiez,	qu'il bouillît, qu'ils bouillissent.

Conjugate after the same manner, *ÉBOUILLIR*, to boil away;
REBOUILLIR, to boil again.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with *AVOIR*, to have.

The above verbs are but seldom employed in any persons, except the third person singular and plural of their different tenses, simple and compound—as *l'eau bout*—the water boils; *les pois ont bouilli*—the peas have boiled, &c. If any other person of these verbs is wanting, the verb *FAIRE*, to make, is used with the present of the infinitive *BOUILLIR*, *ÉBOUILLIR*, or *REBOUILLIR*, which is put after—thus we say, *je fais bouillir*—I boil; *je ferai bouillir*—I shall boil, &c.

COURIR to run.

-A- Courir.	-C- Courant,	-E- Couru.
-F- Je cours, nous courons,	tu cours, vous courez,	il court, ils courent.
-H- Je courais, nous courions,	tu courais, vous couriez,	il courait, ils couraient.
-J- Je courus, nous courûmes,	tu courus, vous courûtes,	il courut, ils coururent.
-L- Je courrai, nous courrons,	tu courras, vous courrez,	il courra, ils courront.
-N- Je courrais, nous courrions,	tu courrais, vous courriez,	il courrait, ils courraient.
-P- courons,	cours, courez,	qu'il coure, qu'ils courent.
-Q- Que je coure, que nous courions,	que tu coures, que vous couriez,	qu'il coure, qu'ils courent.
-S- Que je courusse, que nous courussions,	que tu courusses, que vous courussiez,	qu'il courût, qu'ils courussent.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Accourir,	<i>to run to.</i>	Parcourir,	<i>to run over.</i>
Concourir,	<i>to concur.</i>	Recourir,	<i>to have recourse.</i>
Discourir,	<i>to discourse.</i>	Secourir,	<i>to succour, to help</i>
Encourir,	<i>to incur.</i>		

The Compound Tenses, of the above verbs, are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*; those of ACCOURIR, *to run to*, are also sometimes conjugated with ETRE, *to be*.

CUEILLIR *to gather.*

-A- Cueillir.	-C- Cueillant,	-E- Cueilli.
-F- Je cueille, nous cueillons,	tu cueilles, vous cueillez.	il cueille, ils cueillent.
-H- Je cueillais, nous cueillions,	tu cueillais, vous cueilliez.	il cueillait, ils cueillaient.
-J- Je cueillis, nous cueillîmes,	tu cueillis, vous cueillîtes.	il cueillit, ils cueillirent.
-L- Je cueillerai, nous cueillerons,	tu cueilleras, vous cueillerez.	il cueillera, ils cueilleront.
-N- Je cueillerais, nous cueillerions,	tu cueillerais, vous cueilleriez.	il cueillerait, ils cueilleraient.
-P- cueillons,	cueille, cueillez.	qu'il cueille, qu'ils cueillent.
-Q- Que je cueille, que nous cueillions,	que tu cueilles, que vous cueilliez.	qu'il cueille, qu'ils cueillent.
-S- Que je cueillisse, que nous cueillissions,	que tu cueillisses, que vous cueillissiez,	qu'il cueillît, qu'ils cueillissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugated after the same manner—

Accueillir, <i>to welcome.</i>	Recueillir, <i>to gather, to reap</i>
--------------------------------	---------------------------------------

DORMIR *to sleep.*

-A- Dormir.	-C- Dormant.	-E- Dormi.
-F- Je dors, nous dormons,	tu dors, vous dormez,	il dort, ils dorment.
-H- Je dormais, nous dormions,	tu dormais, vous dormiez,	il dormait, ils dormaient.
-J- Je dormis, nous dormîmes,	tu dormis, vous dormîtes,	il dormit, ils dormirent.
-L- Je dormirai, nous dormirons,	tu dormiras, vous dormirez,	il dormira, ils dormiront.
-N- Je dormirais, nous dormirions.	tu dormirais, vous dormiriez,	il dormirait, ils dormiraient.

-P-	dormons,	dors, dormez,	qu'il dorme, qu'ils dorment.
-Q-	Que je dorme, que nous dormions,	que tu dormes, que vous dormiez,	qu'il dorme, qu'ils dorment.
-S-	Que je dormisse, que nous dormissions,	que tu dormisses, que vous dormissiez,	qu'il dormît, qu'ils dormissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Endormir, *to lull asleep*. | Redormir, *to sleep again*.
S'endormir, *to fall asleep*. | Se rendormir, *to fall asleep again*.

The Compound Tenses of S'ENDORMIR, and SE RENDORMIR, are conjugated with ETRE, *to be*, as all pronominal verbs are.

FAILLIR *to fail*

-A- Faillir,	-C- Faillant.	-E- Failli.
-J- Je faillis, nous faillîmes,	tu faillis, vous faillîtes,	il faillit, ils faillirent.

This verb is *defective*, and only used in the above tenses, and in all the compound tenses, which are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

FLEURIR *to blossom, to flourish*

This verb is regular and conjugated like FINIR, when speaking of plants and flowers; but when speaking of the prosperity of a kingdom, or of a town, -C- the participle present, is *florissant*; and -H- the imperfect of the indicative, *je florissais, tu florissais, &c.*

REFLEURIR, *to blossom, or flourish again*, follows the same rule.

FUIR *to fly*

-A- Fuir.	-C- Fuyant.	-E- Fui.
-F- Je fuis, nous fuyons,	tu fuis, vous fuyez,	il fuit, ils fuient.
-H- Je fuyais, nous fuyions,	tu fuyais, vous fuyiez,	il fuyait, ils fuyaient.
-J- Je fuis, nous fuîmes,	tu fuis, vous fuîtes,	il fuit, ils fuirent.
-L- Je fuirai, nous fuirons,	tu fuiras, vous fuirez,	il fuira, ils fuiront.
-N- Je fuirais, nous fuirions,	tu fuirais, vous fuiriez,	il fuirait, ils fuiraient.
-P- fuyons,	fuis, fuyez,	qu'il fuie, qu'ils fuient.

-Q- Que je fuie, que nous fuyions,	que tu fuies, que vous fuyiez,	qu'il fuie, qu'ils fuient.
-S- Que je fusse, que nous fuissions,	que tu fusses, que vous fussiez,	qu'il fût, qu'ils fussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.
Conjugated after the same manner, S'ENFUIR, *to run away*.

GÉSIR *to lie.*

This verb, (*defective*) which formerly signified *to be lying down*, is no longer in use; we however, say sometimes, *il git; ci-git*, here lies, is the common form by which an epitaph begins.

HAÏR *to hate.*

This verb is regular, and conjugated like FINIR, except in the first three persons singular of -F- the present of the indicative, *Je hais*, I hate; *tu hais*, thou hatest; *il hait*, he hates; and in the second person singular of -P- the imperative, *hais*, hate.

A diæresis (..) is required over the *i* in all tenses and persons, except in those above mentioned; this diæresis is to cause the *a* and *i* to be pronounced as two syllables.

MOURIR *to die.*

-A- Mourir.	-C- Mourant.	-E- Mort.
-F- Je meurs, nous mourons	tu meurs, vous mourez,	il meurt, ils meurent.
-H- Je mourais, nous mourions,	tu mourais, vous mouriez,	il mourait, ils mouraient.
-J- Je mourus, nous mourûmes,	tu mourus, vous mourûtes,	il mourut, ils moururent.
-L- Je mourrai, nous mourrons,	tu mourras, vous mourrez,	il mourra, ils mourront.
-N- Je mourrais, nous mourrions,	tu mourrais, vous mourriez,	il mourrait, ils mourraient.
-P- mourons,	meurs, mourez,	qu'il meure, qu'ils meurent.
-Q- Que je meure, que nous mourions,	que tu meures, que vous mouriez,	qu'il meure, qu'ils meurent.
-S- Que je mourusse, que nous mourussions,	que tu mourusses, que vous mourussiez,	qu'il mourût, qu'ils mourussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with ETRE, *to be*.
Conjugated after the same manner, SE MOURIR, *to be dying*.

OUIR *to hear.*

This verb, (*defective*) can only be used in -A- the present of the infinitive, *ouïr*, to hear; in -J- the preterit definite, *j'ouïs*, I heard; *il ouït*, he heard; in -S- the imperfect of the subjunctive, *que j'ouïsse*, that I might hear; *qu'il ouït*, that he might hear; and in its compound tenses, which are formed with the simple tenses of AVOIR, *to have*, and its past participle *ouï*, as *j'ai ouï*, I have heard, *tu as ouï*, &c.

OUVRIR *to open.*

-A- Ouvrir.	-C- Ouvrant.	-E- Ouvrant.
-F- J'ouvre, nous ouvrons,	tu ouvres, vous ouvrez,	il ouvre, ils ouvrent.
-H- J'ouvrais, nous ouvriions,	tu ouvrais, vous ouvriez,	il ouvrait, ils ouvraient.
-J- J'ouvris, nous ouvrîmes,	tu ouvris, vous ouvrîtes,	il ouvrit, ils ouvrirent.
-L- J'ouvrirai, nous ouvrirons,	tu ouvriras, vous ouvrirez,	il ouvrira, ils ouvriront.
-N- J'ouvrirais, nous ouvririons,	tu ouvrirais, vous ouvririez,	il ouvrirait, ils ouvriraient.
-P- ouvrons,	ouvre, ouvrez,	qu'il ouvre, qu'ils ouvrent.
-Q- Que j'ouvre, que nous ouvriions,	que tu ouvres, que vous ouvriez,	qu'il ouvre, qu'ils ouvrent.
-S- Que j'ouvrise, que nous ouvrissions,	que tu ouvrisses, que vous ouvrissiez,	qu'il ouvrît, qu'ils ouvrissent.

Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugated after the same manner—

Rouvrir, <i>to open again.</i>	Découvrir, <i>to discover.</i>
Entr'ouvrir, <i>to half open.</i>	Offrir, <i>to offer.</i>
Couvrir, <i>to cover.</i>	Mésoffrir, <i>to underbid.</i>
Recouvrir, <i>to cover again.</i>	Souffrir <i>to suffer.</i>

SENTIR *to feel.*

-A- Sentir.	-C- Sentant.	-F- Sentant.
-F- Je sens, nous sentons,	tu sens, vous sentez.	il sent, ils sentent.
-H- Je sentais, nous sentions,	tu sentais, vous sentiez,	il sentait, ils sentaient.
-J- Je sentis, nous sentîmes,	tu sentis, vous sentîtes,	il sentit, ils sentirent.

-L- Je <i>sen tirai</i> , nous <i>sen tirons</i> ,	tu <i>sen tiras</i> , vous <i>sen tirez</i> ,	il <i>sen tira</i> . ils <i>sen tirent</i> ,
-N- Je <i>sen tirais</i> , nous <i>sen tirions</i> ,	tu <i>sen tirais</i> , vous <i>sen tiriez</i> ,	il <i>sen tirait</i> , ils <i>sen tiraient</i> .
-P- sen <i>tons</i> ,	sen <i>s</i> , sen <i>tez</i> ,	qu'il <i>sen te</i> , qu'ils <i>sen tent</i> .
-Q- Que je <i>sen te</i> , que nous <i>sen tions</i> ,	que tu <i>sen tes</i> , que vous <i>sen tiez</i> ,	qu'il <i>sen te</i> , qu'ils <i>sen tent</i> .
-S- Que je <i>sen tisse</i> , que nous <i>sen tissions</i> ,	que tu <i>sen tisses</i> , que vous <i>sen tissiez</i> ,	qu'il <i>sen tît</i> , qu'ils <i>sen tissent</i> .

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Consen <i>tir</i> , <i>to consent, to agree</i> .	Se ressen <i>tir</i> , <i>to feel, still</i> .
Pressen <i>tir</i> , <i>to foresee</i> .	Se repen <i>tir</i> , <i>to repent</i> .
Ressen <i>tir</i> , <i>to resent, to feel still</i> .	
Men <i>tir</i> , <i>to lie</i> .	Par <i>tir</i> , <i>to set out, to depart</i> .
Démen <i>tir</i> , <i>to give the lie, to be-</i> [<i>lie, to contradict</i>].	Repar <i>tir</i> , <i>to set out again</i> .
Repar <i>tir</i> , <i>to reply</i> .	Sor <i>tir</i> , <i>to go out</i> .
	Ressor <i>tir</i> , <i>to go out again</i> .

The Compound Tenses of the first six of the above verbs, are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Those of SE RESSENTIR and SE REPENTIR, as all other pronominal verbs, are conjugated with ETRE, *to be*.

And those of PARTIR, REPARTIR, SORTIR, and RESSORTIR, sometimes with AVOIR, sometimes with ETRE.

SERVIR *to serve.*

-A- Servir.	-C- Servant.	-E- Servi.
-F- Je <i>ser s</i> , nous <i>ser vons</i> ,	tu <i>ser s</i> , vous <i>ser vez</i> ,	il <i>ser t</i> , ils <i>ser vent</i> .
-H- Je <i>servais</i> , nous <i>servions</i> ,	tu <i>servais</i> , vous <i>serviez</i> ,	il <i>servait</i> , ils <i>servaient</i> .
-J- Je <i>servis</i> , nous <i>servîmes</i> ,	tu <i>servis</i> , vous <i>servîtes</i> ,	il <i>servit</i> , ils <i>servirent</i> .
-L- Je <i>servirai</i> , nous <i>servirons</i> ,	tu <i>serviras</i> , vous <i>servirez</i> ,	il <i>servira</i> , ils <i>serviront</i> .
-N- Je <i>servirais</i> , nous <i>servirions</i> ,	tu <i>servirais</i> , vous <i>serviriez</i> ,	il <i>servirait</i> , ils <i>serviraient</i> .
-P- ser <i>vons</i> ,	ser <i>s</i> , ser <i>vez</i> ,	qu'il <i>ser ve</i> , qu'ils <i>ser vent</i> .

132 IRREGULAR, DEFECTIVE, AND UNIPERSONAL VERBS

-Q- Que je <i>serve</i> , que nous <i>servions</i> ,	que tu <i>ser ves</i> , que vous <i>ser viez</i> ,	qu'il <i>serve</i> , qu'ils <i>ser vent</i> ,
-S- Que je <i>servisse</i> , que nous <i>servissions</i> ,	que tu <i>servisses</i> , que vous <i>servissiez</i> ,	qu'il <i>servît</i> , qu'ils <i>servissent</i> .

Conjugated after the same manner—

Desser *vir*, to clear a table, to do an ill office to somebody.
Se *ser vir*, to make use, to use.

The Compound Tenses of SERVIR and DESSERVIR, are conjugated with AVOIR; those of SE SERVIR, with ETRE.

ASSERVIR, to subject, is regular, and conjugated like FINIR.

TENIR to hold.

-A- Tenir.	-C- Tenant.	-E- Tenu
-F- Je <i>tiens</i> , nous <i>tenons</i> ,	tu <i>tiens</i> , vous <i>tenez</i> ,	il <i>tient</i> , ils <i>tiennent</i> .
-H- Je <i>tenais</i> , nous <i>tenions</i> ,	tu <i>tenais</i> , vous <i>teniez</i> ,	il <i>tenait</i> , ils <i>tenaient</i> .
-J- Je <i>tins</i> , nous <i>tînmes</i> ,	tu <i>tins</i> , vous <i>tîntes</i> ,	il <i>tint</i> , ils <i>tinrent</i> .
-L- Je <i>tiendrai</i> , nous <i>tiendrons</i> ,	tu <i>tiendras</i> , vous <i>tiendrez</i> ,	il <i>tiendra</i> , ils <i>tiendront</i> .
-N- Je <i>tiendrais</i> , nous <i>tiendrions</i> ,	tu <i>tiendrais</i> , vous <i>tiendriez</i> ,	il <i>tiendrait</i> , ils <i>tiendraient</i> .
-P- t <i>enons</i> ,	t <i>iens</i> , t <i>enez</i> ,	qu'il <i>tienne</i> , qu'ils <i>tiennent</i> .
-Q- Que je <i>tienne</i> , que nous <i>tenions</i> ,	que tu <i>tiennes</i> , que vous <i>teniez</i> ,	qu'il <i>tienne</i> , qu'ils <i>tiennent</i> .
-S- Que je <i>tinsse</i> , que nous <i>tinssions</i> ,	que tu <i>tinsses</i> , que vous <i>tinssiez</i> ,	qu'il <i>tînt</i> , qu'ils <i>tinssent</i> .

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, to have.

Conjugate after the same manner—

*Appartenir, to belong.	Disconv enir, to disagree.
Av enir, to happen.	*Entret enir, to entertain.
*Circonv enir, to circumvent.	Interv enir, to intervene.
*Cont enir, to contain.	*Maintenir, to maintain.
*Contrevenir, to contravene.	Mésav enir, to succeed ill.
Conv enir, to agree, to suit.	*Obt enir, to obtain.
*Déprév enir, to unprepossess.	Parv enir, to attain.
*Détenir, to detain.	*Prév enir, to prevent, to inform.
Dev enir, to become.	Prov enir, to proceed from.

Redev <i>enir</i> , to become again.	Se ressouv <i>enir</i> , to recollect.
*Ret <i>enir</i> , to retain.	Se souv <i>enir</i> , to remember.
Rev <i>enir</i> , to come again,	*Subv <i>enir</i> , to relieve.
[to come back.	Surv <i>enir</i> , to come unexpectedly.
S'abst <i>enir</i> , to abstain.	V <i>enir</i> , to come.
*Sout <i>enir</i> , to sustain, to support.	

Those of the above verbs, which are marked with an asterisk (*), are conjugated in their compound tenses, with AVOIR, to have, and the others, with ETRE, to be.

AVENIR, to happen, is only used in the third person singular, of -F- the present of the indicative, as *s'il avient*, if it happens.

PROVENIR, to proceed from, is employed in its third persons singular, and plural; as *cela provient de*, that proceeds from; *Tous ses malheurs proviennent de*, &c. all his misfortunes proceed from, &c.

VÊTIR to clothe.

-A- Vêt <i>ir</i> .	-C- Vêt <i>ant</i> .	-E- Vêt <i>u</i> .
-F- Je vêt <i>s</i> , nous vêt <i>ons</i> ,	tu vêt <i>s</i> , vous vêt <i>ez</i> ,	il vêt, ils vêt <i>ent</i> .
-H- Je vêt <i>ais</i> , nous vêt <i>ions</i> ,	tu vêt <i>ais</i> , vous vêt <i>iez</i> ,	il vêt <i>ait</i> , ils vêt <i>aient</i> .
-J- Je vêt <i>is</i> , nous vêt <i>îmes</i> ,	tu vêt <i>is</i> , vous vêt <i>îtes</i> ,	il vêt <i>it</i> , ils vêt <i>irent</i> .
-L- Je vêt <i>irai</i> , nous vêt <i>irons</i> ,	tu vêt <i>iras</i> , vous vêt <i>irez</i> ,	il vêt <i>ira</i> , ils vêt <i>iront</i> .
-N- Je vêt <i>irais</i> , nous vêt <i>irions</i> ,	tu vêt <i>irais</i> , vous vêt <i>iriez</i> ,	il vêt <i>irait</i> , ils vêt <i>iraient</i> .
-P- vêt <i>ons</i> ,	vêt <i>s</i> , vêt <i>ez</i> ,	qu'il vêt <i>e</i> , qu'ils vêt <i>ent</i> .
-Q- Que je vêt <i>e</i> , que nous vêt <i>ions</i> ,	que tu vêt <i>es</i> , que vous vêt <i>iez</i> ,	qu'il vêt <i>e</i> , qu'ils vêt <i>ent</i> .
-S- Que je vêt <i>isse</i> , que nous vêt <i>issions</i> ,	que tu vêt <i>isses</i> , que vous vêt <i>issiez</i> ,	qu'il vêt <i>ît</i> , qu'il vêt <i>issent</i> .

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, to have.

Conjugated after the same manner—

Revêt <i>ir</i> , to clothe.	Se vêt <i>ir</i> , to dress, or clothe one's
Dévêt <i>ir</i> , to strip, to undress.	[self.
	Se dévêt <i>ir</i> , to divest one's self.

The Compound Tenses of *Se vêtir*, and *Se dévêtir*, are conjugated with ETRE, to be; as all other pronominal verbs are.

Irregular, Defective, and Unipersonal Verbs of the Third Conjugation.

AVOIR to have.

This verb, (*active and auxiliary*) is one of the most irregular. See its conjugation, page 10.

RAVOIR to have again.

This verb, (*active and defective*) is only used in -A- the present of the infinitive.

Y AVOIR there to be.

This verb, (*unipersonal*) is conjugated, page 20.

S'ASSEOIR to sit down.

-A- S'asseoir.	-C- S'asseyant.	-E- Assis
-F- Je m'assieds, nous nous asseyons,	tu t'assieds, vous vous asseyez,	il s'assied, ils s'asseyent, or ils s'asseient.
-H- Je m'asseyais, nous nous asseyions,	tu t'asseyais, vous vous asseyiez,	il s'asseyait, ils s'asseyaient.
-J- Je m'assis, nous nous assîmes,	tu t'assis, vous vous assîtes,	il s'assit, ils s'assirent.
-L- Je m'asseyerai, or je m'asseierai, or je m'assiérai, nous nous asseyerons, or nous nous asseierons, or nous nous assiérons,	tu t'asseyeras, tu t'asseieras, tu t'assiéras, vous vous asseyerez, vous vous asseierez, vous vous assiérez,	il s'asseyera, il s'asseiera, il s'assiéra, ils s'asseyeront, ils s'asseieront, ils s'assiéront.
-N- Je m'asseyerais, or je m'asseieraais, or je m'assiérais, nous nous asseyerions, or nous nous asseierions, or nous nous assiérions,	tu t'asseyerais, tu t'asseieraais, tu t'assiérais, vous vous asseyeriez, vous vous asseieriez, vous vous assiériez,	il s'asseyerait, il s'asseieraait, il s'assiéraait, ils s'asseyeraient, ils s'asseieraient, ils s'assiéraient.
-P- asseyons-nous,	assieds-toi, asseyez-vous,	qu'il s'asseye, or qu'il s'asseie. qu'ils s'asseyent, or qu'ils s'asseient.
-Q- Que je m'asseye, or que je m'asseie, que nous nous asseyions,	que tu t'asseyes, or que tu t'asseies, que vous vous asseyiez,	qu'il s'asseye, or qu'il s'asseie, qu'ils s'asseyent, or qu'ils s'asseient.
-S- Que je m'assisse, que nous nous assissions,	que tu t'assisses, que vous vous assissiez,	qu'il s'assît, qu'ils s'assissent.

Conjugated after the same manner, *SE RASSEOIR*, *to sit down again*.

The Compound Tenses of these two verbs, are conjugated with *ETRE*, *to be*; as all other pronominal verbs are.

Conjugate after the same manner, without the second pronoun, *me, te, se, &c. ASSEOIR*, *to set*, or *to lay something*, or *somebody down*.

The compound tenses are conjugated with *AVOIR*, *to have*.

The different ways of writing and pronouncing some of the tenses and persons of the above verbs, render them very difficult; particular attention must be paid to their conjugations. Of the three ways of writing and pronouncing, -L- the future, and -N- the conditional present; I would recommend the third as being the easiest, and I believe the most used.

Some Grammarians have imagined, to do away with the difficulties these verbs offer, even to French people, to conjugate them as follows—

S'ASSOIR *to sit down.*

-A- S'asseoir.	-C- S'assoyant.	-E- Assis.
-F- Je m'assois, nous nous assoyons,	tu t'assois, vous vous assoyez,	il s'assoit, ils s'assoient.
-H- Je m'assoyais, nous nous assoyions,	tu t'assoyais, vous vous assoyiez,	il s'assoyait, ils s'assoyaient.
-J- Je m'assis, nous nous assîmes,	tu t'assis, vous vous assîtes,	il s'assit, ils s'assirent.
-L- Je m'assoirai, nous nous assoirons,	tu t'assoiras, vous vous assoirez,	il s'assoira, ils s'assoiront.
-N- Je m'assoirais, nous nous assoirions,	tu t'assoirais, vous vous assoiriez,	il s'assoirait, ils s'assoiraient.
-P- assoyons-nous,	assois-toi, assoyez-vous,	qu'il s'assoie, qu'ils s'assoient.
-Q- Que je m'assoie, que nous nous assoyions,	que tu t'assoies, que vous vous assoyiez,	qu'il s'assoie, qu'ils s'assoient.
-S- que je m'assisse, que nous nous assissions,	que tu t'assisses, que vous vous assissiez.	qu'il s'assît, qu'ils s'assissent.

It is certain that this way of conjugating the above, is much more convenient; and I should like to recommend it; but although much used in some parts of France, it is not yet generally received as correct by most of those of the Old School—who in every country seem to be opposed to every thing that can facilitate knowledge, lest we should now acquire in a *short* time, and with *little* trouble, what has cost them *much* time and *great* trouble.

CHOIR *to fall.*

This verb is not used, except in -A- the present of the infinitive.

DÉCHOIR

to decay.

This verb is seldom used, except in -A- the present of the infinitive, and in its compound tenses, which are conjugated sometimes with ETRE, sometimes with AVOIR.

ECHOIR

to fall to, to expire, to be due, to fall due.

This verb is only used in the third person of -F- present of the indicative, *il échoit*, sometimes pronounced *il échet*; in -J- *il échut*; in -L- *il écherra*; in -N- *il écherrait*; in -S- *qu'il échût*, &c. in -A- *échoir*; in -C- *échéant*; in -E- *échu*; and in the compound tenses, which are conjugated sometimes with AVOIR, and sometimes with ETRE.

FALLOIR

to be necessary.

-F- Il faut,	<i>it is necessary.</i>
-H- Il fallait,	<i>it was necessary.</i>
-J- Il fallut,	<i>it was necessary.</i>
-L- Il faudra,	<i>it shall or will be necessary.</i>
-N- Il faudrait,	<i>it should, would, could, or might be necessary</i>
-P- (none)	
-Q- Qu'il faille,	<i>that it may be necessary.</i>
-S- Qu'il fallût,	<i>that it might be necessary.</i>

The Compound Tenses of this verb, (*unipersonal and defective*) are formed by the addition of its participle past, *fallu*, to the third person singular of the verb AVOIR, as *il a fallu*, it has been necessary, &c.

The expressions, *I must, he must, we must, you must, they must*, &c. are rendered by *it must that I—it must that he*, &c. the verb which follows is put in the subjunctive mood, and in the person indicated by the personal pronoun, which is before *must*, in the English; as *I must write—Il faut que j'écrive*; *you must drink—il faut que vous buviez*, &c. we say also, *il me faut écrire, il vous faut boire*.

MOUVOIR

to move.

-A- Mouvoir.	-C- Mouvant.	-E- Mu.
-F- Je meus, nous mouvons,	tu meus, vous mouvez,	il meut, ils meuvent.
-H- Je mouvais, nous mouvions,	tu mouvais, vous mouviez,	il mouvait, ils mouvaient.
-J- Je mus, nous mûmes,	tu mus, vous mûtes,	il mut, ils murent.
-L- Je mouvrai, nous mouvrons,	tu mouvras, vous mouvrez,	il mouvra, ils mouvront.

-N- Je mouvais,	tu mouvais,	il mouvrait,
nous mouvriens,	vous mouvriez,	ils mouvraient.
P-	meus,	qu'il meuve,
mouvons,	mouvez,	qu'ils meuvent.
-Q- Que je meuve,	que tu meuves,	qu'il meuve,
que nous mouvions,	que vous moviez,	qu'ils meuvent.
s- Que je musse,	que tu musses,	qu'il mût,
que nous mussions,	que vous mussiez,	qu'ils mussent.

This verb is very little used, except in -A- the present of the infinitive.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

The object in giving, here, all its tenses, is to have a model, for—

Emouvoir, <i>to move.</i>		S'émouvoir, <i>to be concerned.</i>
Promouvoir, <i>to promote.</i>		

which are conjugated like it. The compound tenses of *S'émouvoir*, are conjugated with ETRE.

Promouvoir, is only used in -A- the present of the infinitive, and in the compound tenses.

PLEUVOIR *to rain.*

-A- Pleuvoir,	<i>to rain.</i>
-C- Pleuvant,	<i>raining.</i>
-E- Plu,	<i>rained.</i>
-F- Il pleut,	<i>it rains, does rain, or is raining.</i>
-H- Il pleuvait,	<i>it rained, did rain, or was raining.</i>
-J- Il plut,	<i>it rained or did rain.</i>
-L- Il pleuvra,	<i>it will rain.</i>
-N- Il pleuvrait,	<i>it would rain.</i>
-P- (<i>none.</i>)	
-Q- Qu'il pleuve,	<i>that it may rain.</i>
-S- Qu'il plût,	<i>that it might rain.</i>

The compound tenses, of the above *unipersonal* verb, are formed by the addition of -E- its participle passive, *plu*, to the third person singular of the simple tenses of AVOIR; as *il a plu*, it has rained, &c.

POURVOIR *to provide.*

-A- Pourvoir.	-C- Pourvoyant.	-E- Pourvu.
-F- Je pourvois,	tu pourvois,	il pourvoit,
nous pourvoyons,	vous pourvoyez,	ils pourvoient.
-H- Je pourvoyais,	tu pourvoyais,	il pourvoyait,
nous pourvoyions,	vous pourvoyiez,	ils pourvoyaient.

138 IRREGULAR, DEFECTIVE, AND UNIPERSONAL VERBS

-J- Je pourvus, nous pourvûmes,	tu pourvus, vous pourvûtes,	il pourvut, ils pourvurent.
-L- Je pourvoirai, nous pourvoirons,	tu pourvoiras, vous pourvoirez,	il pourvoira, ils pourvoiront.
-N- Je pourvoirais, nous pourvoirions,	tu pourvoirais, vous pourvoiriez,	il pourvoirait, ils pourvoiraient.
-P- pourvoyons,	pourvois, pourvoyez,	qu'il pourvoie, qu'ils pourvoient.
-Q- Que je pourvoie, que nous pourvoyions,	que tu pourvoies, que vous pourvoyiez,	qu'il pourvoie, qu'ils pourvoient.
-S- Que je pourvusse, que nous pourvussions,	que tu pourvusses, que vous pourvussiez,	qu'il pourvût, qu'ils pourvussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

POUVOIR *to be able.*

-A- Pouvoir.	-C- Pouvant.	-E- Pu.
-F- Je puis <i>or</i> je peux, nous pouvons,	tu peux, vous pouvez,	il peut, ils peuvent.
-H- Je pouvais, nous pouvions,	tu pouvais, vous pouviez,	il pouvait, ils pouvaient.
-J- Je pus, nous pûmes,	tu pus, vous pûtes,	il put, ils purent.
-L- Je pourrai, nous pourrons,	tu pourras, vous pourrez,	il pourra, ils pourront.
-N- Je pourrais, nous pourrions,	tu pourrais, vous pourriez,	il pourrait, ils pourraient.
-P- (none)		
-Q- Que je puisse, que nous puissions,	que tu puisse, que vous puissiez,	qu'il puisse, qu'ils puissent.
-S- Que je pusse, que nous pussions,	que tu pusses, que vous pussiez,	qu'il pût, qu'ils pussent.

Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

SAVOIR *to know.*

-A- Savoir.	-C- Sachant.	-E- Su.
-F- Je sais, nous savons,	tu sais, vous savez,	il sait, ils savent.
-H- Je savais, nous savions,	tu savais, vous saviez,	il savait, ils savaient
-J- Je sus, nous sûmes,	tu sus, vous sûtes,	il sut, ils surent.

-L- Je saurai, nous saurons,	tu sauras, vous saurez,	il saura, ils sauront.
-N- Je saurais, nous saurions,	tu saurais, vous sauriez,	il saurait, ils sauraient.
-P- sachons,	sache, sachez,	qu'il sache, qu'ils sachent.
-Q- Que je sache, que nous sachions,	que tu saches, que vous sachiez,	qu'il sache, qu'ils sachent.
-S- Que je susse, que nous sussions,	que tu susses, que vous sussiez,	qu'il sût, qu'ils sussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with *Avoir*, *to have*.

Savoir, to know ; must not be confounded with *Connaître*, to know. *Connaître*, is mostly used, in the sense of, *to be acquainted with* ; and *Savoir*, in other circumstances.

SEOIR

to fit, to become, to fit well.

A- Seoir.	-C- Seyant.	-E- Sis.
-E- Il sied,	<i>it fits.</i>	ils siéent, <i>they fit.</i>
-H- Il seyait,	<i>it fitted.</i>	ils seyaient, <i>they fitted.</i>
-J-	<i>(none)</i>	
-L- Il siéra,	<i>it will fit.</i>	ils siéront, <i>they will fit.</i>
-N- Il siérait,	<i>it would fit.</i>	ils siéraient, <i>they would fit.</i>
-P-	<i>(none)</i>	
-Q- Qu'il siée,	<i>that it may fit.</i>	qu'ils siéent, <i>that they may fit.</i>
-S-	<i>(none)</i>	

This verb, which is only employed in the third person of the singular, and of the plural, of some tenses, has no compound tenses.

SURSEOIR

to reprieve, to put off.

This verb is seldom used, except in -A- the present of the infinitive.

VALOIR

to be worth.

-A- Valoir.	-C- Valant.	-E- Valu.
-F- Je vaux, nous valons,	tu vaux, vous valez,	il vaut, ils valent.
-H- Je valais, nous valions,	tu valais, vous valiez,	il valait, ils valaient.
-J- Je valus, nous valûmes,	tu valus, vous valûtes,	il valut, ils valurent.

-L- Je vaudrai, nous vaudrons,	tu vaudras, vous vaudrez,	il vaudra, ils vaudront.
-N- Je vaudrais, nous vaudrions,	tu vaudrais, vous vaudriez,	il vaudrait, ils vaudraient.
-P- valons,	vaux, valez,	qu'il vaille, qu'ils vaillent.
-Q- Que je vaille, que nous valions,	que tu vailles, que vous valiez,	qu'il vaille, qu'ils vaillent.
-S- Que je valusse, que nous valussions,	que tu valusses, que vous valussiez,	qu'il valût, qu'ils valussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugated after the same manner—

Re valoir, *to return like for like*. | Pré valoir, *to prevail*.
 Equi valoir, *to be equivalent*.

This last, makes in -Q- the subjunctive, *que je prévale, que tu prévalues, qu'il prévale, que nous prévalions, que vous prévaliez, qu'ils prévalent*.

VOIR *to see*.

-A- Voir.	-C- Voyant.	-E- Vu.
-F- Je vois, nous voyons,	tu vois, vous voyez,	il voit, ils voient.
-H- Je voyais, nous voyions,	tu voyais, vous voyiez,	il voyait, ils voyaient.
-J- Je vis, nous vîmes,	tu vis, vous vîtes,	il vit. ils virent.
-L- Je verrai, nous verrons,	tu verras, vous verrez,	il verra, ils verront.
-N- Je verrais, nous verrions,	tu verrais, vous verriez,	il verrait, ils verraient.
P- voyons,	vois, voyez,	qu'il voie, qu'ils voient.
Q- Que je voie, que nous voyions,	que tu voies, que vous voyiez,	qu'il voie, qu'ils voient.
-S- Que je visse, que nous vissions,	que tu visses, que vous vissiez,	qu'il vît, qu'ils vissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Re voir, *to see again*. | Entre voir, *to have a glimpse of*.

PRÉ VOIR

to foresee.

This verb is conjugated like VOIR, *to see*, except in -L- the future, and in -N- the present of the conditional.

-L- Je prévoirai,	tu prévoiras,	il prévoira,
nous préverions,	vous préveriez,	ils préveront.
-N- Je préverais,	tu préverais,	il préverait,
nous préverions,	vous préveriez,	ils préveraient.

VOULOIR

to be willing.

-A- Vouloir	-C- Voulant,	-E- Voulu,
-F- Je veux,	tu veux,	il veut,
nous voulons,	vous voulez,	ils veulent.
-H- Je voulais,	tu voulais,	il voulait,
nous voulions,	vous vouliez,	ils voulaient.
-J- Je voulus,	tu voulus,	il voulut,
nous voulûmes,	vous voulûtes,	ils voulurent.
-L- Je voudrai,	tu voudras,	il voudra,
nous voudrons,	vous voudrez,	ils voudront.
-N- Je voudrais,	tu voudrais,	il voudrait,
nous voudrions,	vous voudriez,	ils voudraient.
-P-	veuillez,	(<i>is the only person</i>)
-Q- Que je veuille,	que tu veuilles,	qu'il veuille,
que nous voulions,	que vous vouliez,	qu'ils veuillent.
-S- Que je voulusse,	que tu voulusses,	qu'il voulût,
que nous voulussions,	que vous voulussiez,	qu'ils voulussent.
	with avoir.	

Irregular, Defective, and Unpersonal Verbs of the Fourth Conjugation.

BATTRE

to beat.

-B- Battre.	-C- Battant.	-E- Battu.
-F- Je bats,	tu bats,	il bat,
nous battons,	vous battez,	ils battent.
-H- Je battais,	tu battais,	il battait,
nous battions,	vous battiez,	ils battaient.
-J- Je battis,	tu battis,	il battit,
nous battîmes,	vous battîtes,	ils battirent.
-L- Je battrai,	tu battras,	il battrà,
nous battons,	vous battrez,	ils battront.

-N- Je battrais, nous battrions,	tu battrais, vous battriez,	il battrait, ils battraient.
-P- battons, battez,	bats, battez,	qu'il batte, qu'ils battent.
-Q- Que je batte, que nous battions,	que tu battes, que vous battiez,	qu'il batte, qu'ils battent.
-S- Que je battisse, que nous battissions,	que tu batisses, que vous battissiez,	qu'il battît, qu'ils battissent.

The compound tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

A battre, *to pull down*.

Com battre, *to fight*.

Dé battre, *to debate*.

Ra battre, *to pull down again*,

[*to abate*.]

Re battre, *to beat again*.

S'é battre, *to make or be merry*.

Se dé battre, *to struggle*.

The compound tenses of *S'ébattre*, and *Se débattre*, are conjugated with ETRE, *to be*.

BOIRE *to drink*.

-A- Boire.	C- Buvant.	-E- Bu.
-F- Je bois, nous buvons,	tu bois, vous buvez,	il boit, ils boivent.
-H- Je buvais, nous buvions,	tu buvais, vous buviez,	il buvait, ils buvaient.
-J- Je bus, nous bûmes,	tu bus, vous bûtes,	il but, ils burent.
-L- Je boirai, nous boirons,	tu boiras, vous boirez,	il boira, ils boiront.
-N- Je boirais, nous boirions,	tu boirais, vous boiriez,	il boirait, ils boiraient.
-P- buvons,	bois, buvez,	qu'il boive, qu'ils boivent.
-Q- Que je boive, que nous buvions,	que tu boive, que vous buviez,	qu'il boive, qu'ils boivent.
-S- Que je busse, que nous bussions,	que tu bussess, que vous bussiez,	qu'il bût, qu'ils bussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner, RE BOIRE, *to drink again*.

CLORE *to close.*

-A- Clore.	(none)	-E- Clos.
-F- Je clos,	tu clos,	il clot.
-L- Je clorai,	tu cloras,	il clora,
nous clorons,	vous clorez,	ils cloront.
-N- Je clorais,	tu clorais,	il clorait,
nous clorions,	vous cloriez,	ils cloraient.

This verb, (*defective*) is only used in the above few tenses, and persons, and in all the compound tenses, which are formed with AVOIR, *to have*. Some write this verb with double r.

Conjugated after the same manner, EN CLORE, *to enclose*.

CONCLURE *to conclude*

-A- Conclure.	-C- Concluant.	-E- Conclu.
-F- Je conclus,	tu conclus,	il conclut,
nous concluons,	vous concluez,	ils concluent.
-H- Je concluais,	tu concluais,	il concluait,
nous concluions,	vous concluïez,	ils concluiaient.
-J- Je conclus,	tu conclus,	il conclut,
nous conclûmes,	vous conclûtes,	ils conclurent.
-L- Je conclurai,	tu concluras,	il conclura,
nous conclurons,	vous conclurez,	ils concluront.
-N- Je conclurais,	tu conclurais,	il conclurait,
nous conclurions,	vous concluriez,	ils concluraient.
-P- conclus,	concluez,	qu'il conclue,
concluons,		qu'ils concluent.
-Q- Que je conclue,	que tu conclues,	qu'il conclue,
que nous concluions,	que vous concluïez,	qu'ils concluent.
-S- Que je conclusse,	que tu conclusses,	qu'il conclût,
que nous conclussions,	que vous conclussiez,	qu'ils conclussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugated after the same manner, EXCLURE, *to exclude*.

CONFIRE *to pickle.*

-A- Confire.	-C- Confisant.	-E- Conf it.
-F- Je confis,	tu confis,	il conf it,
nous conf isons,	vous conf isez,	ils conf isent.
-H- Je conf isais,	tu conf isais,	il conf isait,
nous conf isions,	vous conf isiez,	ils conf isaient.

-J- Je confis, nous confimes,	tu confis, vous confîtes,	il confit, ils confirent.
-L- Je confirai, nous confirons,	tu confiras, vous confirez,	il confira, ils confiront.
-N- Je confirais, nous confirions,	tu confirais, vous confiriez,	il confirait, ils confiraient.
-P- confisons,	confis, confisez,	qu'il confise, qu'ils confisent.
-Q- Que je confise, que nous confisions,	que tu confises, que vous confissiez,	qu'il confise, qu'ils confisent.
-S- Que je confisse, que nous confissions,	que tu confisses, que vous confissiez,	qu'il confît, qu'ils confissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Suffire, *to suffice*. | Circoncire, *to circumcise*.

Coudre *to sew*.

-A- Coudre.	-C- Cousant.	-E- Cousu.
-F- Je couds, nous cousons,	tu couds, vous cousez,	il coud, ils cousent.
-H- Je cousais, nous cousions,	tu cousais, vous cousiez,	il cousait, ils cousaient.
-J- Je cousis, nous cousîmes,	tu cousis, vous cousîtes,	il cousit, ils cousirent.
-L- Je coudrai, nous coudrons,	tu coudras, vous coudrez,	il coudra, ils coudront.
-N- Je coudrais, nous coudrions,	tu coudrais, vous coudriez,	il coudrait, ils coudraient.
-P- cousons,	couds, cousez,	qu'il couse, qu'ils cousent.
-Q- Que je couse, que nous cousions,	que tu couses, que vous cousiez,	qu'il couse, qu'ils cousent.
-S- Que je cousisse, que nous cousissions	que tu cousisses, que vous cousissiez,	qu'il cousît, qu'ils cousissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Dé coudre, *to rip*. | Re coudre, *to sew again*.

CROIRE *to believe.*

-A- Croire.	-C- Croyant.	-E- Cru.
-F- Je crois, nous croyons,	tu crois, vous croyez,	il croit, ils croient.
-H- Je croyais, nous croyions,	tu croyais, vous croyiez,	il croyait, ils croyaient.
-J- Je crus, nous crûmes,	tu crus, vous crûtes,	il crut, ils crurent.
-L- Je croirai, nous croirons,	tu croiras, vous croirez,	il croira, ils croiront.
-N- Je croirais, nous croirions,	tu croirais, vous croiriez,	il croirait, ils croiraient.
-P- croyons,	crois, croyez,	qu'il croie, qu'ils croient.
-Q- Que je croie, que nous croyions,	que tu croies, que vous croyiez,	qu'il croie, qu'ils croient.
-S- Que je crusse, que nous crussions,	que tu crusses, que vous crussiez,	qu'il crût, qu'ils crussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Accroire, *to make one believe, to impose upon one,*

Is only used in -A- the present of the infinitive with the verb *Faire*, which serves as an auxiliary.

CROÎTRE *to grow.*

-A- Croître.	-C- Croissant.	-E- Crû.
-F- Je crois, nous croissons,	tu crois, vous croissez,	il croît, ils croissent.
-H- Je croissais, nous croissions,	tu croissais, vous croissiez,	il croissait, ils croissaient.
-J- Je crûs, nous crûmes,	tu crûs, vous crûtes,	il crût, ils crurent.
-L- Je croîtrai, nous croîtrons,	tu croîtras, vous croîtrez,	il croîtra, ils croîtront.
-N- Je croîtrais, nous croîtrions,	tu croîtrais, vous croîtriez,	il croîtrait, ils croîtraient.
-P- croissons,	crois, croissez,	qu'il croisse, qu'ils croissent.
-Q- Que je croisse, que nous croissions,	que tu croisses, que vous croissiez,	qu'il croisse, qu'ils croissent.
-S- Que je crûsse, que nous crûssions,	que tu crûsses, que vous crûssiez,	qu'il crût, qu'ils crûssent.

The compound tenses are conjugated sometimes, with AVOIR, sometimes with ETRE; with AVOIR, when it expresses the action of growing, and with ETRE, when it denotes the state in which one is.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Ac croître, *to increase.* | Dé croître, *to decrease.*

DIRE *to say*

-A- Dire.	-C- Disant.	-E- Dit.
-F- Je dis, nous disons,	tu dis, vous dites,	il dit, ils disent.
-H- Je disais, nous disions,	tu disais, vous disiez,	il disait, ils disaient.
-J- Je dis, nous dûmes,	tu dis, vous dîtes,	il dit, ils dirent.
-L- Je dirai, nous dirons,	tu diras, vous direz,	il dira, ils diront.
-N- Je dirais, nous dirions,	tu dirais, vous diriez,	il dirait, ils diraient.
-P- disons,	dis, dites,	qu'il dise, qu'ils disent.
-Q- Que je dise, que nous disions,	que tu dises, que vous disiez,	qu'il dise, qu'ils disent.
-S- Que je disse, que nous dissions,	que tu disses, que vous dissiez,	qu'il dît, qu'ils dissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner, RE DIRE, *to say again*.

The following verbs—

Contre dire, <i>to contradict.</i>	Mé dire, <i>to slander.</i>
Dé dire, <i>to disown.</i>	Pré dire, <i>to foretell.</i>
Inter dire, <i>to interdict.</i>	Se dé dire, <i>to recant.</i>
Mau dire, <i>to curse.</i>	

are also conjugated like DIRE, except in the second person plural of -F- the indicative present, and of -P- the imperative, in which they make

Contre disez	Mau dissez. Mé disez.
Dé disez.	Pré disez.
Inter disez.	Dé disez.

Mau dire, takes two s's in -C-, *maudissant*; in the three persons plural of -F-, *nous maudissons, vous maudissez, ils maudissent*; in all the persons of -H-, *je maudissais, &c.*; in the third person singular, and in the three persons plural, of -R-, *qu'il maudisse, que nous maudissons &c.*; and also in the three persons plural, of -Q-, *que nous maudissions, &c.*; in its other persons and tenses it is conjugated like DIRE.

ÉCLORE

to hatch, to blow, to open.

-A- Éclore.	(none)	-E- Éclos.
-F- Il écлот,		ils éclosent.
-H-	(none)	
-J-	(none)	
-L- Il éclora,		ils éclosent.
-N- Il éclosait,		ils éclosaient.
-P-	(none)	
-Q- Qu'il éclore,		qu'ils éclosent.
-S-	(none)	

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

ÉCRIRE

to write.

-A- Écr ire.	-C- Écr ivant	-E- Écr it.
-F- J'écr is, nous écr ivons,	tu écr it, vous écr iver,	il écr it, ils écr ivent.
-H- J'écr ivais, nous écr ivions,	tu écr ivais, vous écr iviez,	il écr ivait, ils écr ivaient.
-J- J'écr ivis, nous écr ivimes.	tu écr ivis, vous écr ivîtes,	il écr ivit, ils écr ivirent.
-L- J'écr irai, nous écr irons,	tu écr iras, vous écr irez,	il écr ira. ils écr iront.
-N- J'écr irais, nous écr irions,	tu écr irais, vous écr iriez,	il écr irait, ils écr iraient.
-P- . écr ivons,	écr is, écr iver,	qu'il écr ive, qu'ils écr ivent.
-Q- Que j'écr ive, que nous écr ivions,	que tu écr ives, que vous écr iviez,	qu'il écr ive, qu'ils écr ivent.
-S- Que j'écr ivisse, que nous écr ivissions,	que tu écr ivisses, que vous écr ivissiez,	qu'il écr ivît, qu'ils écr ivissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Circonscrire, <i>to circumscribe.</i>	Proscrire, <i>to proscribe.</i>
Décrire, <i>to describe.</i>	Récrire, <i>to write again.</i>
Inscrire, <i>to inscribe.</i>	Souscrire, <i>to subscribe.</i>
Prescrire, <i>to prescribe.</i>	Transcrire, <i>to transcribe.</i>

ÊTRE

to be.

See its conjugation, page 24.

FAIRE *to make, to do, to cause.*

-A- Faire.	-C- Fesant.	-E- Fait.
-F- Je fais, nous fesons,	tu fais, vous faites,	il fait, ils font.
-H- Je fesais, nous fesions,	tu fesais, vous fesiez,	il fesait, ils fesaient.
-J- Je fis, nous fîmes,	tu fis, vous fîtes,	il fit, ils firent
-L- Je ferai, nous ferons,	tu feras, vous ferez,	il fera, ils feront.
-N- Je ferais, nous ferions,	tu ferais, vous feriez,	il ferait, ils feraient
-P- fesons,	fais, faites,	qu'il fasse, qu'ils fassent.
-Q- Que je fasse, que nous fassions,	que tu fasses, que vous fassiez,	qu'il fasse, qu'ils fassent.
-S- Que je fisse, que nous fissions,	que tu fisses, que vous fissiez,	qu'il fît, qu'ils fissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Contre faire, <i>to counterfeit</i> , [<i>to mimic</i> .]	Re faire, <i>to do again</i> . Satis faire, <i>to satisfy</i> . Sur faire, <i>to ask to much</i> .
Dé faire, <i>to undo</i> . Redé faire, <i>to undo again</i> .	

Observe, that in the spelling of this verb, I have adopted the orthography of most modern writers.

FRIRE *to fry.*

-A- Frire.	(none)	-E- Frit.
-F- Je fris,	tu fris,	il frit.
-L- Je frirai, nous frirons,	tu friras, vous frirez,	il frira, ils friront.
-N- Je frirais, nous fririons,	tu frirais, vous fririez,	il frirait, ils friraient.
-P-	fris.	

This verb, (*defective*) is only used in the above few persons and tenses, and in all the compound tenses, which are formed with AVOIR.

To supply the persons and tenses which are wanting, we use the different tenses of FAIRE, *to make*, with the infinitive present of FRIRE; as *nous fesons frire, vous faites frire, ils font frire, &c.*

JOINDRE

to join.

-A- Joi ndre.	-C- Joi gnant.	-E- Joi nt.
-F- Je joi ns, nous joi gnons,	tu joi ns, vous joi gnez,	il joi nt, ils joi gnent.
-H- Je joi gnais, nous joi gnions,	tu joi gnais, vous joi gniez,	il joi gnait, ils joi gnaient.
-J- Je joi gnis, nous joi gnîmes,	tu joi gnis, vous joi gnîtes,	il joi gnit, ils joi gnirent.
-L- Je joi ndrai, nous joi ndrions,	tu joi ndras, vous joi ndrez,	il joi ndra, ils joi ndront.
-N- Je joi ndrais, nous joi ndrions,	tu joi ndrais, vous joi ndriez,	il joi ndrait, ils joi ndraient.
-P- joi gnons,	joi ns, joi gnez,	qu'il joi gne, qu'ils joi gnent.
-Q- Que je joi gne, que nous joi gnions,	que tu joi gnes, que vous joi gniez,	qu'il joi gne, qu'ils joi gnent.
-S- Que je joi gnisse, que nous joi gnissions,	que tu joi gnisses, que vous joi gnissiez,	qu'il joi gnît, qu'ils joi gnissent.

Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—all verbs, whose present of the infinitive ends

in { aindre	as	Crai ndre,	<i>to fear.</i>
{ eindre	as	Pei ndre,	<i>to paint.</i>
{ oindre	as	Poi ndre,	<i>to dawn.</i>

also.

Astrei ndre, <i>to subject, to com-</i>	Etei ndre, <i>to put out, to extin-</i>
[pel.]	[guish.]
Attei ndre, <i>to reach, to overtake.</i>	Fei ndre, <i>to feign, to pretend.</i>
Cei ndre, <i>to gird.</i>	Plai ndre, <i>to pity.</i>
Contra i ndre, <i>to constrain, to</i>	Restrei ndre, <i>to restrain.</i>
[force.]	Tei ndre, <i>to dye.</i>
Enfrei ndre, <i>to infringe.</i>	

LIRE

to read.

-A- Lire.	-C- Lisant.	-E- Lu.
-F- Je lis, nous lisons,	tu lis, vous lisez,	il lit, ils lisent.
-H- Je lisais, nous lisions,	tu lisais, vous lisiez,	il lisait, ils lisaient.
-J- Je lus, nous lûmes,	tu lus, vous lûtes,	il lut, ils lurent.

150 IRREGULAR, DEFECTIVE, AND UNIPERSONAL VERBS

-L- Je lirai, nous lirons,	tu liras, vous lirez,	il lira, ils liront.
-N- Je lirais, nous lirions,	tu lirais, vous liriez,	il lirait, ils liraient.
-P- lisons,	lis, lisez,	qu'il lise, qu'ils lisent.
-Q- Que je lise, que nous lisions,	que tu lises, que vous lisiez,	qu'il lise, qu'ils lisent.
-S- Que je lusse, que nous lussions,	que tu lusses, que vous lussiez,	qu'il lût, qu'ils lussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Re lire, *to read again.* | É lire, *to elect.*

METTRE *to put.*

-A- Mettre.	-C- Mettant.	-E- Mis.
-F- Je mets, nous mettons,	tu mets, vous mettez,	il met, ils mettent.
-H- Je mettais, nous mettions,	tu mettais, vous mettiez,	il mettait, ils mettaient.
-J- Je mis, nous mîmes,	tu mis, vous mîtes,	il mit, ils mirent.
-L- Je mettrai, nous mettrons,	tu mettras, vous mettrez,	il mettra, ils mettront.
-N- Je mettrais, nous mettrions,	tu mettrais, vous mettriez,	il mettrait, ils mettraient.
-P- mettons,	mets, mettez,	qu'il mette, qu'ils mettent.
-Q- Que je mette, que nous mettions,	que tu mettes, que vous mettiez,	qu'il mette, qu'ils mettent.
-S- Que je misse, que nous missions,	que tu misses, que vous missiez,	qu'il mît, qu'ils missent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Ad mettre, <i>to admit.</i>	Pro mettre, <i>to promise.</i>
Com mettre, <i>to commit.</i>	Re mettre, <i>to put again, to set</i>
Compro mettre, <i>to compromise.</i>	[<i>again, to replace.</i>
De mettre, <i>to disjoint, to put</i>	Sou mettre, <i>to submit.</i>
[<i>out.</i>	Trans mettre, <i>to transmit.</i>
O mettre, <i>to omit.</i>	Se dé mettre, <i>to resign.</i>
Per mettre, <i>to permit.</i>	S'entre mettre, <i>to interpose.</i>

The two last have their compound tenses conjugated with ETRE.

MOUDRE

to grind.

-A- Moudre.	-C- Moulant.	-E- Moulu.
-F- Je mouds, nous moulons,	tu mouds, vous moulez,	il moud, ils moulent.
-H- Je moulais, nous moulions,	tu moulais, vous mouliez,	il moulait, ils moulaient.
-J- Je moulus, nous moulûmes,	tu moulus, vous moulûtes,	il moulut, ils moulurent.
-L- Je moudrai, nous moudrons,	tu moudras, vous moudrez,	il moudra, ils moudront.
-N- Je moudrais, nous moudrions,	tu moudrais, vous moudriez,	il moudrait, ils moudraient.
-P- moulons,	mouds, moulez,	qu'il moule, qu'ils moulent.
-Q- Que je moule, que nous moulions,	que tu moules, que vous mouliez,	qu'il moule, qu'ils moulent.
-S- Que je moulusse, que nous moulussions,	que tu moulusses, que vous moulussiez,	qu'il moulût, qu'ils moulussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugated after the same manner—

Re moudre, *to grind again*. | É moudre, *to grind, to whet*.

NAÎTRE

to be born.

-A- Naître.	-C- Naissant.	-E- Né.
-F- Je nais, nous naissons,	tu nais, vous naissez,	il naît, ils naissent.
-H- Je naissais, nous naissions,	tu naissais, vous naissiez,	il naissait, ils naissaient.
-J- Je naquis, nous naquîmes,	tu naquis, vous naquîtes,	il naquit, ils naquirent.
-L- Je naîtrai, nous naîtrons,	tu naîtras, vous naîtrez,	il naîtra, ils naîtront.
-N- Je naîtrais, nous naîtrions,	tu naîtrais, vous naîtriez,	il naîtrait, ils naîtraient.
-P- naissions,	nais, naissiez,	qu'il naisse, qu'ils naissent.
-Q- Que je naisse, que nous naissions,	que tu naisse, que vous naissiez,	qu'il naisse, qu'ils naissent.
-S- Que je naquisse, que nous naquissions,	que tu naquisse, que vous naquissiez,	qu'il naquît, qu'ils naquissent.

152 IRREGULAR, DEFECTIVE, AND UNIPERSONAL VERBS

The Compound tenses are conjugated with *ETRE*, *to be*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Re naître, *to revive*.

PAÎTRE *to graze*.

-A- Paître.	-C- Paissant.	-E- Pu.
-F- Je pais, nous paissions,	tu pais, vous paissez,	il paît, ils paissent.
-H- Je paissais, nous paissions,	tu paissais, vous paissiez,	il paissait, ils paissaient.
-J- (none)		
-L- Je paîtrai, nous paîtrons,	tu paîtras, vous paîtrez,	il paîtra, ils paîtront.
-N- Je paîtrais, nous paîtrions,	tu paîtrais, vous paîtriez,	il paîtrait, ils paîtraient.
-P- paissions,	pais, paissez,	qu'il paise, qu'ils paissent.
-Q- Que je paise, que nous paissions,	que tu paisses, que vous paissiez,	qu'il paise, qu'ils paissent.
-S- (none)		

This verb is very little used ; it has no compound tenses.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Re paître, *to feed*. | *Se re paître*, *to feed one's self*.

These last two verbs, have a preterit definite, and an imperfect of the subjunctive.

-J- Je repus, nous repûmes,	tu repus, vous repûtes,	il reput, ils repurent.
-S- Que je repusse, que nous repussions,	que tu repusses, que vous repussiez,	qu'il repût, qu'ils repussent.

The compound tenses of *Repaître*, are conjugated with *Avoir*, and those of *Se repaître*, with *ETRE*.

PARAÎTRE *to appear*.

-A- Par aître.	-G- Par aissant.	-E- Par u.
-F- Je par ais, nous par aissons,	tu par ais, vous par aissez,	il par aît, ils par aissent.
-H- Je par aissais, nous par aissions,	tu par aissais, vous par aissiez,	il par aissait, ils par aissaient.

-J- Je par <i>us</i> , nous par <i>ûmes</i> ,	tu par <i>us</i> , vous par <i>ûtes</i> ,	il par <i>ut</i> , ils par <i>urent</i> .
-L- Je par <i>aîtrai</i> , nous par <i>aîtrons</i> ,	tu par <i>aîtras</i> , vous par <i>aîtrez</i> ,	il par <i>aîtra</i> , ils par <i>aîtront</i> .
-N- Je par <i>aîtrais</i> , nous par <i>aîtrions</i> ,	tu par <i>aîtrais</i> , vous par <i>aîtriez</i> ,	il par <i>aîtrait</i> , ils par <i>aîtraient</i> .
-P- par <i>aissons</i> ,	par <i>ais</i> , par <i>aissez</i> ,	qu'il par <i>aise</i> , qu'ils par <i>aissent</i> .
-Q- Que je par <i>aise</i> , que nous par <i>aissions</i> ,	que tu par <i>aisses</i> , que vous par <i>aissiez</i> ,	qu'il par <i>aise</i> , qu'ils par <i>aissent</i> ,
-S- Que je par <i>usse</i> , que nous par <i>ussions</i> ,	que tu par <i>usses</i> , que vous par <i>ussiez</i> ,	qu'il par <i>ût</i> , qu'ils par <i>ussent</i> .

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugated after the same manner—

Appar *aître*, *to appear*.

Compar *aître*, *to appear*.

Conn *aître*, *to know*.

Dispar *aître*, *to disappear*.

Méconn *aître*, *to mistake, to*
[*forget, to neglect*.]

Reconn *aître*, *to recognize, to*
[*to know again*.]

Repar *aître*, *to appear again*.

Se méconn *aître*, *to forget one's*
[*self*.]

The compound tenses of the last verb, are conjugated with ETRE.

PLAIRE

to please.

-A- Pl <i>aire</i> .	-C- Pl <i>aisant</i> .	-E- Pl <i>u</i> .
-F- Je pl <i>ais</i> , nous pl <i>aisons</i> ,	tu pl <i>ais</i> , vous pl <i>aisez</i> ,	il pl <i>aît</i> , ils pl <i>aisent</i> .
-H- Je pl <i>aisais</i> , nous pl <i>aisions</i> ,	tu pl <i>aisais</i> , vous pl <i>aisiez</i> ,	il pl <i>aisait</i> , ils pl <i>aisaient</i> .
-J- Je plus, nous pl <i>ûmes</i> ,	tu pl <i>us</i> , vous pl <i>ûtes</i> ,	il pl <i>ut</i> , ils pl <i>urent</i> .
-L- Je pl <i>airai</i> , nous pl <i>airons</i> ,	tu pl <i>airas</i> , vous pl <i>airez</i> ,	il pl <i>aira</i> , ils pl <i>airont</i> .
-N- Je pl <i>airais</i> , nous pl <i>airions</i> ,	tu pl <i>airais</i> , vous pl <i>airiez</i> ,	il pl <i>airait</i> , ils pl <i>airaient</i> .
-P- pl <i>aisons</i> ,	pl <i>ais</i> , pl <i>aisez</i> ,	qu'il pl <i>aise</i> , qu'ils pl <i>aissent</i> .
-Q- Que je pl <i>aise</i> , que nous pl <i>aisions</i> ,	que tu pl <i>aises</i> , que vous pl <i>aisiez</i> ,	qu'il pl <i>aise</i> , qu'ils pl <i>aissent</i> .
-S- Que je pl <i>usse</i> , que nous pl <i>ussions</i> ,	que tu pl <i>usses</i> , que vous pl <i>ussiez</i> ,	qu'il pl <i>ût</i> , qu'ils pl <i>ussent</i> .

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugated after the same manner—

Compl*a*ire, to humour, to please. Se T*a*ire, to forbear talking, to
Dépl*a*ire, to displease. [be silent, to hold one's tongue.
T*a*ire, to conceal, to keep secret.

The compound tenses of *Se Taire*, are conjugated with ETRE, *to be*.

POINDRE *to shoot forth, to dawn.*

-A- Poindre. -F- Il point. -L- Il poindra.

Are the only tenses and persons used.

PRENDRE *to take.*

-A- Prendre,	-C- Prenant.	-E- Pris.
-F- Je prends, nous prenons,	tu prends, vous prenez,	il prend, ils prennent.
-H- Je prenais, nous prenions,	tu prenais, vous preniez,	il prenait, ils prenaient.
-J- Je pris, nous prîmes,	tu pris, vous prîtes,	il prit, ils prirent.
-L- Je prendrai, nous prendrons,	tu prendras, vous prendrez,	il prendra, ils prendront.
-N- Je prendrais, nous prendrions,	tu prendrais, vous prendriez,	il prendrait, ils prendraient.
-P- prenons,	prends, prenez,	qu'il prenne, qu'ils prennent.
-Q- Que je prenne, que nous prenions,	que tu prennes, que vous preniez,	qu'il prenne, qu'ils prennent.
-S- Que je prisse, que nous prissions,	que tu prisse, que vous prissiez,	qu'il prit, qu'ils prissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Ap prendre, <i>to learn.</i>	Rap prendre, <i>to learn again.</i>
Com prendre, <i>to comprehend,</i> [<i>to understand.</i>	Re prendre, <i>to take again, to</i> [<i>resume.</i>
Dé prendre, <i>to loosen, to dis-</i> [<i>engage.</i>	Sur prendre, <i>to surprise, to</i> [<i>deceive.</i>
Désap prendre, <i>to unlearn.</i>	Se mé prendre, <i>to mistake.</i>
Entre prendre, <i>to undertake.</i>	S'é prendre, <i>to be smitten.</i>

The compound tenses of *Se méprendre*, and *S'éprendre*, are conjugated with *ETRE*, *to be*; *S'éprendre*, is used only in -E- the participle past, and in all the compound tenses.

RÉDUIRE

to reduce.

-A- Rédui <i>re.</i>	-C- Rédui <i>sant.</i>	-E- Rédui <i>t.</i>
-F- Je rédui <i>s,</i> nous rédui <i>sons,</i>	tu rédui <i>s,</i> vous rédui <i>sez,</i>	il rédui <i>t,</i> ils rédui <i>sent.</i>
-H- Je rédui <i>sais,</i> nous rédui <i>sions,</i>	tu rédui <i>sais,</i> vous rédui <i>siez,</i>	il rédui <i>sait,</i> ils rédui <i>saient.</i>
-J- Je rédui <i>sis,</i> nous rédui <i>sîmes,</i>	tu rédui <i>sis,</i> vous rédui <i>sîtes,</i>	il rédui <i>sit,</i> ils rédui <i>sirent</i>
-L- Je rédui <i>rai,</i> nous rédui <i>rons,</i>	tu rédui <i>ras,</i> vous rédui <i>rez,</i>	il rédui <i>ra,</i> ils rédui <i>ront.</i>
-N- Je rédui <i>rais,</i> nous rédui <i>rions,</i>	tu rédui <i>rais,</i> vous rédui <i>riez,</i>	il rédui <i>rait,</i> ils rédui <i>raient.</i>
-P- rédui <i>sons,</i>	rédui <i>s,</i> rédui <i>sez,</i>	qu'il rédui <i>se,</i> qu'ils rédui <i>sent.</i>
-Q- Que je rédui <i>se,</i> que nous rédui <i>sions,</i>	que tu rédui <i>ses,</i> que vous rédui <i>siez,</i>	qu'il rédui <i>se,</i> qu'ils rédui <i>sent.</i>
-S- Que je rédui <i>sisse,</i> que nous rédui <i>sissions,</i>	que tu rédui <i>sisses,</i> que vous rédui <i>sissiez,</i>	qu'il rédui <i>sît,</i> qu'ils rédui <i>sissent.</i>

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Condui <i>re, to conduct, to lead.</i>	Lui <i>re, to shine, to glow</i>
Construi <i>re, to construct.</i>	Nui <i>re, to hurt.</i>
Cui <i>re, to bake.</i>	Produi <i>re, to produce.</i>
Dédui <i>re, to deduct, to take from.</i>	Recondui <i>re, to reconduct, to</i>
Détrui <i>re, to destroy.</i>	<i>[lead back.]</i>
Econdui <i>re, to discard in a po-</i>	Reconstrui <i>re, to construct</i>
<i>[lite manner.]</i>	<i>[again.]</i>
Endui <i>re, to plaster.</i>	Recui <i>re, to bake again.</i>
Entre-lui <i>re, to shine a little, to</i>	Relui <i>re, to shine, to glow.</i>
<i>[glow a little.]</i>	Rendui <i>re, to plaster again.</i>
Indui <i>re, to induce.</i>	Reprodui <i>re, to reproduce.</i>
Instrui <i>re, to instruct.</i>	Sédui <i>re, to seduce.</i>
Introdui <i>re, to introduce.</i>	Tradui <i>re, to translate.</i>

RESOUDRE

to dissolve, to resolve.

-A- Ré soudre.	-C- Ré solvant.	-E- Ré solu or résous.
-F- Je ré sous, nous ré solvons,	tu ré sous, vous ré solvez,	il ré sout, ils ré solvent.
-H- Je ré solvais, nous ré solvions,	tu ré solvais, vous ré solviez,	il ré solvait, ils ré solvaient.

-J- Je ré solus, nous ré solûmes,	tu ré solus, vous ré solûtes,	il ré solut, ils ré solurent.
-L- Je ré soudrai, nous ré soudrons,	tu ré soudras, vous ré soudrez,	il ré soudra, ils ré soudront.
-N- Je ré soudrais, nous ré soudrions,	tu ré soudrais, vous ré soudriez,	il ré soudrait, ils ré soudraient.
-P- ré solvons,	ré sous, ré solvez,	qu'il ré solve, qu'ils ré solvent.
-Q- Que je ré solve, que nous ré solvions,	que tu ré solve, que vous ré solviez,	qu'il ré solve, qu'ils ré solvent.
-S- Que je ré solusse, que nous ré solussions,	que tu ré solusses, que vous ré solussiez,	qu'il ré solût, qu'ils ré solussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

The above verb has two -E- participles past. *Résolu*, is used when *Résoudre*, is employed to express, *to resolve*; and *Résous*, is used when employed to express, *to dissolve*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Se ré soudre, *to be dissolved, to melt*.

Compound tenses with ETRE, *to be*.

Ab soudre, *to absolve*, | Dis soudre, *to dissolve*.

These two last verbs, have no -J- preterit definite, nor -S- imperfect of the subjunctive.

Their compound tenses are conjugated with the simple tenses of AVOIR, *to have*; to which is added the -E- participle past, *Absous*.

RIRE *to laugh*.

-A- Rire.	-C- Riant.	-E- Ri.
-F- Je ris, nous rions,	tu ris, vous riez,	il rit, ils rient
-H- Je riaais, nous riions,	tu riaais, vous riiez,	il riait, ils riaient.
-J- Je ris, nous rîmes,	tu ris, vous rîtes,	il rit, ils rient.
-L- Je rirai, nous rirons,	tu riras, vous rirez,	il rira, ils riront.
-N- Je rirais, nous ririons,	tu rirais, vous ririez,	il rirait, ils riraient.
-P- rions,	ris, riez,	qu'il rie, qu'ils rient.
-Q- Que je rie, que nous riions,	que tu ries, que vous riez,	qu'il rie, qu'ils rient.

-S- Que je risse, que nous rissions,	que tu risses, que vous rissiez,	qu'il rît, qu'ils rissent.
---	-------------------------------------	-------------------------------

Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Sou rire, *to smile*. | Se rire de, *to laugh at*.

The compound tenses of *Se rire de*, are conjugated with ETRE.

ROMPRE *to break.*

-A- Rompre.	Rompant.	-E- Rompu.
-F- Je romps, nous rompons,	tu romps, vous rompez,	il rompt, ils rompent.
-H- Je rompais, nous rompions,	tu rompais, vous rompiez,	il rompait, ils rompaient.
-J- Je rompis, nous rompîmes,	tu rompis, vous rompîtes,	il rompit, ils rompirent.
-L- Je romprai, nous romprons,	tu rompras, vous romprez,	il rompra, ils rompront.
-N- Je romprais, nous romprions,	tu romprais, vous rompiez,	il romprait, ils rompraient.
-P- rompons,	romps, rompez,	qu'il rompe, qu'ils rompent.
-Q- Que je rompe, que nous rompions,	que tu rompes, que vous rompiez,	qu'il rompe, qu'ils rompent.
-S- Que je rompisse, que nous rompiissions,	que tu rompisses, que vous rompiez,	qu'il rompît, qu'ils rompirent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Cor rompre, *to corrupt*. | Inter rompre, *to interrupt*.

SUIVRE *to follow.*

-A- Suivre.	-C- Suivant.	-E- Suivi.
-F- Je suis, nous suivons,	tu suis, vous suivez,	il suit, ils suivent.
-H- Je suivais, nous suivions,	tu suivais, vous suiviez,	il suivait, ils suivaient.
-J- Je suivis, nous suivîmes,	tu suivis, vous suivites,	il suivit, ils suivirent.

-L- Je suivrai, nous suivrons,	tu suivras, vous suivrez,	il suivra, ils suivront.
-N- Je suivrais, nous suivrions,	tu suivrais, vous suivriez,	il suivrait, ils suivraient.
-P- suivons,	suis, suivez,	qu'il suive, qu'ils suivent.
-Q- Que je suive, que nous suivions,	que tu suives, que vous suiviez,	qu'il suive, qu'ils suivent.
-S- Que je suivisse, que nous suivissions,	que tu suivisses, que vous suivissiez,	qu'il suivît, qu'ils suivissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Pour suivre, *to pursue, to prose-* | S'en suivre, *to follow, to*
[*cute.*] | [*result.*]

This last verb is only used in the third person singular of every tense.

TRAIRE *to milk.*

-A- Traire.	-C- Trayant.	-E- Trait.
-F- Je traie, nous trayons,	tu traie, vous trayez,	il traite, ils traitent.
-H- Je trayais, nous trayions,	tu trayais, vous trayiez,	il trayait, ils trayaient.
-J- (none)		
-L- Je trairai, nous trairons,	tu trairas, vous trairez,	il traira, ils trairont.
-N- Je trairais, nous trairions,	tu trairais, vous trairiez,	il trairait, ils trairaient.
-P- trayons,	traie, trayez,	qu'il traie, qu'ils traitent.
-Q- Que je traie, que nous trayions,	que tu traies, que vous trayiez,	qu'il traie, qu'ils traitent.
-S- (none)		

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Abs traire, <i>to abstract.</i>	Sous traire, <i>to subtract, to hide,</i>
At traire, <i>to attract, to entice.</i>	[<i>to conceal, to take away.</i>]
Dis traire, <i>to distract, to divert.</i>	Se sous traire à, <i>to avoid, to</i>
Ex traire, <i>to extract.</i>	[<i>escape, to withdraw one's</i>
Ren traire, <i>to fine draw.</i>	[<i>self from.</i>]
Re traire, <i>to redeem an estate.</i>	

Se soustraire à, is conjugated with ETRE, *to be*.

VAINCRE

to vanquish, to conquer.

-A- Vaincre.	-C- Vainquant.	-E- Vaincu.
-F- Je vaines, nous vainquons,	tu vaines, vous vainquez,	il vaine, ils vainquent.
-H- Je vainquais, nous vainquions,	tu vainquais, vous vainquiez,	il vainquait, ils vainquaient.
-J- Je vainquis, nous vainquîmes,	tu vainquis, vous vainquîtes,	il vainquit, ils vainquirent.
-L- Je vaincrai, nous vaincrons,	tu vaincra, vous vaincrez,	il vaincra, ils vaincront.
-N- Je vaincrais, nous vaincristions,	tu vaincrais, vous vaincriez,	il vaincrait, ils vaincraient.
-P- vainquons,	vaines, vainquez	qu'il vainque, qu'ils vainquent.
-Q- que je vainque, que nous vainquions,	que tu vainques, que vous vainquiez,	qu'il vainque, qu'ils vainquent.
-S- Que je vainquisse, que nous vainquissions,	que tu vainquisses, que vous vainquissiez,	qu'il vainquît, qu'ils vainquissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.
Conjugate after the same manner—

Con vaincre, *to convince*.

VIVRE

to live.

-A- Vivre.	-C- Vivant.	-E- Vécu.
-F- Je vis, nous vivons,	tu vis, vous vivez,	il vit, ils vivent.
-H- Je vivais, nous vivions,	tu vivais, vous viviez,	il vivait, ils vivaient.
-J- Je vécus, nous vécûmes,	tu vécus, vous vécûtes,	il vécut, ils vécurent.
-L- Je vivrai, nous vivrons,	tu vivras, vous vivrez,	il vivra, ils vivront.
-N- Je vivrais, nous vivrions,	tu vivrais, vous vivriez,	il vivrait, ils vivraient.
-P- vivons,	vis, vivez,	qu'il vive, qu'ils vivent.

-q. Que je vive,	que tu vives,	qu'il vive,
que nous vivions,	que vous viviez,	qu'ils vivent.
-s. Que je vécusse,	que tu vécusses,	qu'il vécût,
que nous vécussions,	que vous vécussiez,	qu'ils vécussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with *Avoir*, *to have*.
Conjugate after the same manner—

Re vivre, *to revive.* | Sur vivre, *to survive.*

Alphabetical List of Verbs, that form the Compound Tenses with être; or sometimes with avoir, and sometimes with être.

1. There are in the French language about six hundred neuter verbs, which, like the active verbs, take the auxiliary verb *avoir* to have, to form their compound tenses. The only exceptions are the following: of which some take *être*, and some take either *être* or *avoir*, according to the sense in which the verb is to be employed.

2. *ê* put after some of the following verbs indicates that they form their compound tenses in French, with *être* to be, although, perhaps, conjugated with *avoir* to have, in English: *a, ê*, put after some of the following verbs, indicate that they sometimes form their compound tenses with *avoir* to have, and sometimes with *être* to be.

3. Those verbs marked *a, ê*, take *avoir* when they are meant to express the action, thus:

Monsieur A... a demeuré à Paris.

Mr. A... has lived in Paris.

4. They take *être* when they are meant to express the state, thus:

Monsieur A... est demeuré à Paris pour ses affaires.

Mr. A... has remained in Paris for his business.

Aborder, <i>a, ê</i> , <i>to land.</i>	apparaître, <i>a, ê</i> , <i>to appear.</i>
accoucher, <i>a, ê</i> , <i>to bring forth.</i>	arriver, <i>ê</i> , <i>to arrive, to happen</i>
accourir, <i>a, ê</i> , <i>to run to.</i>	avenir, <i>ê</i> , <i>to happen, to chance</i>
accroître, <i>a, ê</i> , <i>to increase.</i>	cesser, <i>a, ê</i> , <i>to cease, to leave off.</i>
aller, <i>ê</i> , <i>to go.</i>	changer, <i>a, ê</i> , <i>to change.</i>

choir, <i>ê</i> ,	to fall.	naître, <i>ê</i> ,	to be born.
convenir, <i>a, ê *</i> ,	to agree, to suit, to	partir, <i>ê</i> ,	to depart, to set off
croître, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to grow. [<i>become.</i>	parvenir, <i>ê</i> ,	to attain, to reach.
décamper, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to decamp, to run	passer, <i>a, ê, †</i>	to pass.
	away.	périr, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to perish.
lécéder, <i>ê</i> ,	to die, to de cease.	provenir, <i>ê</i> ,	to proceed, to come
léchoir, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to decay.		from.
lécroître, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to decrease.	rajeunir, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to become young.
lемеurer, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to remain, to stay.	redescendre, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to come down again,
descendre, <i>a, ê, †</i>	to come down, to go		to go down again.
	down, to descend.	redevenir, <i>ê</i> ,	to become again.
levenir, <i>ê</i> ,	to become.	remonter, <i>a, ê, †</i>	to ascend again, to
disconvenir, <i>ê</i> ,	to deny, to disown.		go up again, to
disparaître, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to disappear.		come up again.
échapper, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to escape.	rentrer, <i>a, ê, †</i>	to re-enter, to go in
échoir, <i>ê</i> ,	to become due, to fall		again.
	to the lot of.	repartir, <i>ê, **</i>	to set off again.
échouer, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to run aground, to	repasser, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to pass again, to re-
	miscarry.		pass.
éclore, <i>ê</i> ,	to be hatched, to blow,	ressortir, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to go out again.
	to blossom.	rester, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to remain, to stay.
embellir, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to embellish.	résulter, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to result, to follow.
empirer, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to make worse, to	retomber, <i>ê</i> ,	to fall again.
	grow worse.	retourner, <i>ê</i> ,	to return, to go back.
entrer, <i>a, ê, †</i>	to enter, to go in, to	revenir, <i>ê</i> ,	to come again, to
	come in.		come back again.
expirer, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to expire.	sortir, <i>a, ê, †</i>	to go out.
intervenir, <i>ê</i> ,	to intervene.	survenir, <i>ê</i> ,	to befall, to happen.
mésavenir, <i>ê</i> ,	to succeed ill.	tomber, <i>ê</i> ,	to fall.
monter, <i>a, ê, †</i>	to ascend, to go up,	vieillir, <i>a, ê</i> ,	to become old.
	to come up.	venir, <i>ê</i> ,	to come.
mourir, <i>ê</i> ,	to die.		

* *Convenir to agree*, takes *avoir* to have, and *convenir to suit, to be come, to fit, to be expedient, to be proper*, takes *être* to be.

† Several grammarians conjugate with *avoir* to have, the verbs which are marked thus † in the above list, only when they have a *direct object*: † thus, *nous avons passé le fleuve* we have crossed the river. They conjugate the same verbs with *être* to be, when they have no direct object, thus: *La procession est passée* the procession has past.

However, most of the grammarians use these verbs as they do any other marked *a, ê*, that is, they conjugate them with *avoir* to have, whether they have a *direct object*† or not, if they are meant to express an *action*, and they conjugate them with *être* to be, when they are meant to express the *state*.

** *Repartir to set off again*, is conjugated with *être* to be, but *repartir to reply*, is conjugated with *avoir* to have.

† By *direct object* we understand, in French, the noun or pronoun which is governed in the objective case by the verb, and not by any preposition.

Alphabetical List of all the Irregular, Defective, and Unipersonal Verbs, of the four conjugations, with reference to the pages where they are to be found conjugated.

However numerous the irregularities of an irregular verb may be, they never occur but in the simple tenses; the compound tenses of all the verbs *regular* or *irregular*, *defective* or *unipersonal*, are all formed in the same manner; that is, with the addition of *avoir* to have, or *être* to be, to the participle past of the verb to be conjugated.

Some verbs have the compound tenses conjugated with *avoir*, others with *être*, others sometimes with *avoir*, sometimes with *être*, according to the sense in which the verb is to be employed. In the following list the letter *ê* put after a verb indicates that the compound tenses of that verb are to be conjugated in French with *être*, although perhaps conjugated with *avoir* to have, in English. And the letters *a*, *ê*, indicate that the compound tenses of that verb are to be conjugated sometimes with *être*, sometimes with *avoir*. Those verbs after which neither *ê* nor *a*, *ê*, are put, have, of course, their compound tenses conjugated with *avoir*.

A list of all the verbs, whose compound tenses are to be conjugated with *être*, or sometimes with *être* and sometimes with *avoir*, is given, page 160.

N. B. Any verb not found in this list, is regular, and must be conjugated on *parler* if the present of the infinitive ends with *er*; on *finir* if it ends with *ir*; on *recevoir* if it ends with *voir*; and on *rendre* if it ends with *re*.

* * * Some verbs, although regular, have been put in this list of irregular verbs, in order to call the attention of the learner to some peculiarities concerning these verbs.

A

Abattre	to pull down, to throw down, to fell .	battre	141
s'abattre, ê	to fall down	battre	141
aborder, a, ê	to land (see page 160)	parler	38
absoudre	to absolve	résoudre	155
s'abstenir, ê	to abstain, to refrain	tenir	132
abstraire	to abstract	traire	158
accoucher, a, ê	to bring forth (see page 160)	parler	38
accourir, a, ê	to run to, to hasten to (see page 160.)	courir	126
accroire	to make one believe	croire	145
accroître, a, ê	to increase, to accrue, to augment (see page 160)	croître	145
s'accroître, ê	to increase	croître	155
accueillir	to welcome, to receive well, to receive kindly	cueillir	127
acheter	to buy, to purchase (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler	38

achever	to finish, to accomplish (see page 49, art. 97 & 99).	parler	38
acquérir	to acquire	acquérir	124
adjoindre	to associate, to adjoin, to give an assistant, to give a colleague	joindre	149
admettre	to admit, to allow of	mettre	150
aliéner	to alienate (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler	38
alléguer	to allege (see page 49, art. 100)	parler	38
aller, é	to go	aller	122
s'en aller, é	to go away	s'en aller	112
amener	to bring (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler	38
amonceler	to heap (see page 48, art. 91)	parler	38
apparaître, a, é	to appear, to make one's appearance (see page 160)	paraître	152
appartenir	to belong to, to become well	tenir	132
appeler	to call (see page 48, art. 91)	parler	38
apprendre	to learn, to hear of	prendre	154
appuyer	to support (see page 50, art. 103)	parler	38
arriver, é	to happen, to chance, to fall out, to come to pass (see page 160)	neiger	123
arriver, é	to arrive (see page 160)	parler	38
assaillir	to assault	assaillir	125
asseoir	to set something or somebody down, to lay some thing or some body down	s'asseoir	134
asseoir	idem	s'asseoir	135
s'asseoir, é	to sit down (one's self)	s'asseoir	134
s'asseoir, é	to sit down (one's self)	s'asseoir	135
astreindre,	to subject, to oblige, to compel, to force, to constrain	joindre	149
s'astreindre, é	to confine one's self	joindre	149
atteindre	to overtake, to reach, to catch	joindre	149
atteler	to put to (see page 48, art. 91)	parler	38
attirer	to allure, to attract, to entice	traire	158
avancer	to advance (see page 50, art. 101)	parler	38
aveindre	to take out, to fetch out	joindre	149
avenir, é	to happen, to chance, to come to pass, to fall out (see page 160)	tenir	132
avoir	to have	avoir	10
y avoir	there to be	y avoir	20

B

battre	to beat, to strike	battre	141
se battre, é	to fight, to combat	battre	141
blasphémer	to blaspheme (see page 49, art. 100)	parler	38
boire	to drink	boire	142
bouillir	to boil	bouillir	125
bourreler	to torment (see page 48, art. 93)	parler	38
braire	to bray	traire	158
bruiner	to drizzle	neiger	123
bruire	to roar, to make a great noise, to rustle, to rattle	réduire	155

C

cacheter	to seal (see page 49, art. 95)	parler	38
ceindre	to gird, to encompass	joindre	149
céler	to conceal (see page 49, art. 100)	parler	38
célébrer	to celebrate (see page 49, art. 100)	parler	38

164 IRREGULAR, DEFECTIVE, AND UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

cesser, a, ê . . .	to cease, to leave off, to discontinue, (see page 160)	parler . . .	38
chanceler . . .	to stagger (see page 48, art. 91) . . .	parler . . .	38
changer, a, ê . . .	to change (see p. 160 & 59, art. 102) . . .	parler . . .	38
choir, ê . . .	to fall (see page 160)	choir . . .	135
circonscrire . . .	to circumscribe	écrire . . .	147
circonvenir . . .	to circumvent, to deceive, to delude, to cozen	tenir . . .	132
clore	to shut, to close	clore . . .	143
colleter	to collar (see page 49, art. 97 & 99) . . .	parler . . .	38
combattre	to fight, to combat	battre . . .	141
commettre	to commit	mettre . . .	150
comparaître	to appear, to give evidence	paraître . . .	152
complaindre	to complain to	joindre . . .	149
complaire	to humour, to please, to comply	plaire . . .	153
se complaire, ê	to delight, to take delight in	plaire . . .	153
comprendre	to understand, to include, to compre- hend, to contain, to inclose	prendre . . .	154
compromettre	to compromise, to expose	mettre . . .	150
se compromettre, ê	to expose one's self	mettre . . .	150
conclure	to conclude (see page 51, art. 104)	conclure . . .	143
concourir	to concur	courir . . .	126
conduire	to conduct, to lead, to carry, to take a person to a place	réduire . . .	155
confire	to preserve, to pickle	confire . . .	143
congeler	to congeal (see page 48, art. 93)	parler . . .	38
conjoindre	to conjoin	joindre . . .	149
connaître	to know, to be acquainted with	paraître . . .	152
conquérir	to conquer, to vanquish	acquérir . . .	124
consentir	to consent, to agree	sentir . . .	130
construire	to construct, to build	réduire . . .	155
contenir	to contain, to hold	tenir . . .	132
se contenir, ê	to refrain	tenir . . .	132
contraindre	to constrain, to force, to compel, to oblige	joindre . . .	149
contredire	to contradict	dire . . .	146
contrefaire	to counterfeit, to imitate, to mimic, to forge,	faire . . .	148
contrevenir	to infringe, to act contrary to	tenir . . .	132
convaincre	to convince, to persuade	vaincre . . .	159
convenir, a, ê	to suit, to fit, to become, to agree, to be expedient, to be proper (see page 160)	tenir . . .	132
coqueter	to coquet (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler . . .	38
corrompre	to corrupt	rompre . . .	157
coudre	to sew, to stitch	coudre . . .	144
courir	to run, to hunt	courir . . .	126
couvrir	to cover, to shelter	ouvrir . . .	130
craindre	to fear, to be apprehensive, to be afraid	joindre . . .	149
croire	to believe, to think	croire . . .	145
se croire, ê	to rely upon one's own judgment	croire . . .	145
croître, a, ê	to grow, to increase, to augment (see page 160)	croître . . .	145
cueillir	to gather, to pick up, to collect	cueillir . . .	127
cuire	to cook, to bake, to smart	réduire . . .	155

D

débattre	to debate	battre . . .	141
se débattre, ê	to struggle	battre . . .	141

décacheter . . .	to unseal (see page 49, art. 95)	parler . . .	38
décamper, a, ê,	to decamp, to run away (see page 160)	parler . . .	38
décéder, ê,	to die (see page 160 & p. 49, art. 100)	parler . . .	38
décéler . . .	to betray, to detect (see p. 49, art. 100)	parler . . .	38
déchoir, ê,	to decay, to have fallen from, to have abated from	déchoir . . .	136
déclore . . .	to uncloze	clore . . .	143
décolleter . . .	to uncover the neck (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler . . .	38
déconfire . . .	to defeat totally	confire . . .	143
déconstruire . . .	to take to pieces, to disunite, to analyze	réduire . . .	155
découdre . . .	to rip	coudre . . .	144
découvrir . . .	to discover, to uncover	ouvrir . . .	130
décrire . . .	to describe, to depict	écrire . . .	147
décroire . . .	to disbelieve	croire . . .	145
décroître, a, ê,	to decrease, to become less, (p. 160)	croître . . .	145
décuire . . .	to render syrup more liquid	réduire . . .	155
dédire . . .	to disown, to unsay	dire . . .	146
se dédire, ê,	to recant, to retract	dire . . .	146
déduire . . .	to deduct, to take from	réduire . . .	155
défaillir . . .	to fail, to faint, to swoon, to decay	faillir . . .	128
défaire . . .	to undo, to defeat	faire . . .	148
se défaire, ê . . .	to part with, to get rid of, to rid one's self of	faire . . .	148
dégeler . . .	to thaw (see page 48, art. 93)	neiger . . .	123
déjoindre . . .	to disjoin	joindre . . .	149
démentir . . .	to contradict, to belie, to give the lie	sentir . . .	130
se démentir, ê . . .	to belie one's self, to contradict one's self	sentir . . .	130
démettre . . .	to disjoint, to put out of joint	mettre . . .	150
se démettre, ê . . .	to resign, to have put out of joint one's wrist or ankle	mettre . . .	150
demeurer, a, ê . . .	to dwell, to live, to inhabit (p. 160)	parler . . .	38
démouvoir . . .	to cause one to desist	mouvoir . . .	136
départir . . .	to distribute, to divide, to share, to allot	sentir . . .	130
se départir, ê . . .	to desist, to give up, to swerve	sentir . . .	130
dépecer . . .	to carve (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler . . .	38
dépeindre . . .	to describe	joindre . . .	149
déplaître . . .	to displease	plaître . . .	153
se déplaître, ê . . .	to be displeased with	plaître . . .	153
dépourvoir . . .	to deprive, to leave destitute	pourvoir . . .	137
déprendre . . .	to loosen, to disengage	prendre . . .	154
déprévenir . . .	to unprepossess	tenir . . .	132
dérompre . . .	to break down	rompre . . .	157
désapprendre . . .	to unlearn	prendre . . .	154
descendre, a, ê . . .	to descend, to come down, to go down (see page 160)	vendre . . .	78
desservir . . .	to clear a table, to take away, to do an ill office to	servir . . .	131
déteindre . . .	to discolour	joindre . . .	149
dételer . . .	to unteam, to unyoke (p. 48, art. 91)	parler . . .	38
détenir . . .	to detain, to keep	tenir . . .	132
détruire . . .	to destroy, to annihilate	réduire . . .	155
se détruire, ê . . .	to kill one's self, to decay, to fall to ruin	réduire . . .	155
devenir ê . . .	to become, to become of (see page 160)	tenir . . .	132

166 IRREGULAR, DEFECTIVE, AND UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

dévêtir	<i>to strip, to undress</i>	vêtir	133
se dévêtir, ê . . .	<i>to divest one's self, to leave off part of one's clothes</i>	vêtir	133
dire	<i>to say, to tell</i>	dire	146
disconvenir, ê . . .	<i>to deny, to disown</i> (see page 160)	tenir	132
discourir	<i>to discourse, to talk about</i>	courir	126
disjoindre	<i>to disjoin</i>	joindre	149
disparaître, a, ê . .	<i>to disappear</i> (see page 160)	paraître	152
dissoudre	<i>to dissolve, to melt, to break up</i>	résoudre	155
se dissoudre, ê . . .	<i>to dissolve, to be dissolved</i>	résoudre	155
distraindre	<i>to distract, to divert, to amuse, to take from</i>	traire	158
dormir	<i>to sleep</i>	dormir	127

E

s'ébattre, ê	<i>to take one's pleasure, to make merry, to be merry</i>	battre	141
ébouillir	<i>to boil away</i>	bouillir	125
échapper, a, ê . . .	<i>to escape</i> (see page 160)	parler	38
échoir, ê	<i>to chance, to happen, to fall out, to fall to, to expire, to be due, to fall due</i> (see page 160)	échoir	136
éclairer	<i>to lighten</i>	neiger	123
échouer, a, ê	<i>to run aground, to miscarry,</i> (see page 160)	parler	38
éclore, ê	<i>to come to life, to be hatched, to blossom, to open, to blow</i> (see page 160)	éclore	147
éconduire	<i>to refuse, to discard in a polite manner, to refuse delicately</i>	réduire	155
écrire	<i>to write</i>	écrire	147
élire	<i>to elect, to choose</i>	lire	149
embattre	<i>to lay the tire of a wheel</i>	battre	141
embellir, a, ê	<i>to embellish</i> (see page 160)	finir	54
s'emboire, ê	<i>to imbibe, to soak in</i>	boire	142
émettre	<i>to express, to set forth</i>	mettre	150
emmener	<i>to take away</i> (see p. 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler	38
émoudre	<i>to whet, to sharpen, to grind knives</i>	moudre	151
émouvoir	<i>to move, to stir up, to excite</i>	mouvoir	136
s'émouvoir	<i>to be moved, to be concerned</i>	mouvoir	136
empirer, a, ê	<i>to make worse, to grow worse</i> (p. 160)	parler	38
employer	<i>to employ,</i> (see p. 50, art. 103)	parler	38
empreindre	<i>to imprint, to stamp</i>	joindre	149
enceindre	<i>to enclose, to encompass</i>	joindre	149
enclovre	<i>to surround, to enclose</i>	clore	143
encourir	<i>to incur</i>	courir	126
endormir	<i>to cause to sleep, to lull asleep</i>	dormir	127
s'endormir, ê	<i>to fall asleep</i>	dormir	127
enduire	<i>to plaster, to do over</i>	réduire	155
enfriendre	<i>to transgress, to infringe, to violate</i>	joindre	149
s'enfuir, ê	<i>to run away</i>	fuir	128
enjoindre	<i>to enjoin</i>	joindre	149
s'enquérir, ê	<i>to inquire</i>	acquérir	124
entreuire	<i>to shine a little</i>	réduire	155
s'entremettre, ê . . .	<i>to interpose, to meddle</i>	mettre	150
entrer, a, ê	<i>to enter, to come in, to go in</i> (p. 160)	parler	38
entreprendre	<i>to undertake</i>	prendre	154
entretenir	<i>to entertain, to maintain, to keep up</i>	tenir	132

s'entretenir, ê	to discourse with	tenir	132
entr'ouir	to hear imperfectly	ouir	130
entrevoir	to glimpse at, to have a glimpse of	voir	140
s'entrevoir, ê	to see each other	voir	140
entr'ouvrir	to open a little	ouvrir	130
envoyer	to send	envoyer	123
épreindre	to squeeze out, to wring	joindre	149
s'éprendre, ê	to be smitten	prendre	154
équivaloir	to be equivalent	valoir	139
espérer	to hope (see page 49, art. 100)	parler	38
essayer	to try (see page 50, art. 103)	parler	38
éteindre	to extinguish, to put out	joindre	149
étinceler	to sparkle (see page 48, art. 91)	parler	38
étiqueter	to label (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler	38
être	to be	être	24
étreindre	to bend close, to tie close	joindre	149
exclure	to exclude (see page 51, art. 104)	conclure	143
expirer, a, ê	to expire (see page 160)	parler	38
extraire	to extract	traire	158

F

faillir	to fail, to have like to	faillir	128
faire	to do, to make, to cause	faire	148
falloir	to be necessary (must)	falloir	136
feindre	to feign, to dissemble, to pretend	joindre	149
ficeler	to tie with pack thread (p. 48, art. 91)	parler	38
fleurir	to bloom, to blossom to be prosperous, to flourish	fleurir	128
forclorre	to debar	clorre	143
forfaire	to fail, to trespass	faire	148
frire	to fry	frire	148
fuir	to run away, to fly, to flee, to avoid, to shun	fuir	128

G

geindre	to whine, to moan	joindre	149
geler	to freeze (see page 48, art. 93)	neiger	123
gésir	to lie	gésir	129
grasséyer	to lisp (see page 50, art. 103)	parler	38
gréler	to hail (see page 49, art. 100)	neiger	123
grésiller	to rime	neiger	123

H

haïr	to hate	haïr	129
harceler	to torment (see page 48, art. 93)	parler	38
hypothéquer	to mortgage (see page 49, art. 100)	parler	38

I

importer	to matter	neiger	123
induire	to induce, to engage	réduire	155
inquiéter	to make uneasy (see p. 49, art. 100)	parler	38
inscrire	to inscribe, to write down	écrire	147
s'inscrire, ê	to enter one's name in a register	écrire	147
instruire	to instruct, to teach	réduire	155
interdire	to interdict, to forbid	dire	146
interrompre	to interrupt	rompre	157
intervenir, ê	to intervene (see page 160)	tenir	132
introduire	to introduce	réduire	155

J

jeter	<i>to throw, to cast</i> (see page 49, art. 95)	parler	38
se jeter, ê	<i>to cast one's self</i> (see page 49, art. 95)	parler	38
joindre	<i>to join, to unite</i>	joindre	149
se joindre, ê	<i>to unite</i>	joindre	149

L

lécher	<i>to lick</i> (see p. 49, art. 100)	parler	38
lire	<i>to read</i>	lire	149
luire	<i>to shine, to glitter, to sparkle</i>	réduire	155

M

maintenir	<i>to maintain, to keep up</i>	tenir	132
se maintenir, ê	<i>to keep up</i>	tenir	132
malfaire	<i>to do mischief</i>	faire	148
maudire	<i>to curse</i>	dire	146
méconnaître	<i>to disown, to mistake, to neglect, to forget, not to know</i>	paraître	152
se méconnaître, ê	<i>to forget one's self</i>	paraître	152
mécroire	<i>to disbelieve</i>	croire	145
médire	<i>to slander, to speak ill of</i>	dire	146
méfaire	<i>to misdo, to do wrong</i>	faire	148
mener	<i>to lead, to take to</i> (p. 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler	38
mentir	<i>to lie, to tell a lie</i>	sentir	130
se méprendre, ê	<i>to mistake</i>	prendre	154
mésavenir, ê	<i>to succeed ill</i> (see page 160)	tenir	132
mésoffrir	<i>to underbid</i>	ouvrir	130
messeoir	<i>to be unbecoming</i>	seoir	139
mettre	<i>to put, to place</i>	mettre	150
monter, a, ê	<i>to mount, to ascend, to go up</i> (p. 160)	parler	38
moudre	<i>to grind (grain)</i>	moudre	151
mourir, ê	<i>to die</i> (see page 160)	mourir	129
se mourir, ê	<i>to be dying</i>	mourir	129
mouvoir	<i>to move, to stir</i>	mouvoir	136
se mouvoir, ê	<i>to move</i>	mouvoir	136

N

naître, ê	<i>to be born</i> (see page 160)	naître	151
négliger	<i>to neglect</i> (see page 50, art. 102)	parler	38
neiger	<i>to snow</i>	neiger	123
niveler	<i>to level</i> (see page 48, art. 91)	parler	38
nuire	<i>to hurt, to do an ill office</i>	réduire	155

O

obtenir	<i>to obtain</i>	tenir	132
offrir	<i>to offer, to propose, to present a person with</i>	ouvrir	130
s'offrir, ê	<i>to offer one's self, or itself</i>	ouvrir	130
oindre	<i>to anoint</i>	joindre	149
omettre	<i>to omit</i>	mettre	150
ouïr	<i>to hear</i>	ouïr	130
ouvrir	<i>to open</i>	ouvrir	130

P

pâitre	<i>to graze, to feed</i>	pâitre	152
se pâitre	<i>to feed upon</i>	pâitre	152
parfaire	<i>to perfect, to complete</i>	faire	148

paraître	<i>to appear, to seem</i>	paraître	152
parcourir	<i>to run over, to go through</i>	courir	126
partir, a, ê	<i>to set out, to go away, to depart (see page 160)</i>		
parvenir, ê	<i>to arrive, to attain, to reach (p. 160)</i>	sentir	130
passer, a, ê	<i>to pass (see page 160)</i>	tenir	132
payer	<i>to pay (see page 50, art. 103)</i>	parler	38
peindre	<i>to paint, to describe</i>	parler	38
peler	<i>to peel (see page 48, art. 93)</i>	joindre	149
pénétrer	<i>to penetrate (see p. 49, art. 100)</i>	parler	38
périr, a, ê	<i>to perish (see page 160)</i>	parler	38
permettre	<i>to permit, to allow</i>	finir	54
plaindre	<i>to pity</i>	mettre	150
se plaindre, ê	<i>to complain</i>	joindre	149
plaire	<i>to please</i>	joindre	149
pleuvoir	<i>to rain</i>	plaire	153
poindre	<i>to dawn, to shoot forth, to peep</i>	pleuvoir	137
posséder	<i>to possess (see page 49, art. 100)</i>	poindre	154
poursuivre	<i>to pursue, to prosecute</i>	parler	38
pourvoir	<i>to provide, to furnish with, to supply with.</i>	suivre	157
se pourvoir, ê	<i>to provide one's self</i>	pourvoir	137
pouvoir	<i>to be able, to can, to be at liberty to, may</i>	pourvoir	137
prédire	<i>to foretell, to predict</i>	pouvoir	138
prélire	<i>to read over previously</i>	dire	146
prendre	<i>to take</i>	lire	149
prescrire	<i>to prescribe, to order, to command</i>	prendre	154
se prescrire, ê	<i>to lose by prescription</i>	écrire	147
pressentir	<i>to foresee, to have a foresight of</i>	écrire	147
prévaloir	<i>to prevail, to predominate, to be prevalent</i>	sentir	130
se prévaloir, ê	<i>to take advantage, to glory in, to pride in</i>	valoir	139
prévenir	<i>to anticipate, to prevent, to prejudice, to prepossess, to forewarn</i>	valoir	139
prévoir	<i>to foresee</i>	tenir	132
produire	<i>to produce, to bring forth</i>	prévoir	141
se produire, ê	<i>to put one's self forward</i>	réduire	155
projeter	<i>to project (see page 49, art. 95)</i>	réduire	155
promettre	<i>to promise</i>	parler	38
se promettre, ê	<i>to hope for</i>	mettre	150
promouvoir	<i>to promote, to advance</i>	mettre	150
proscrire	<i>to proscribe, to banish, to outlaw</i>	mouvoir	136
provenir, ê	<i>to proceed from, to come from (p. 160)</i>	écrire	147
		tenir	132

Q

quérir	<i>to go and fetch, to send for, to come for</i>	acquérir	124
------------------	--	------------------	-----

R

rabattre	<i>to abate, to beat down again, to bring down</i>	batire	141
se rabattre, ê	<i>to turn about</i>	battre	141
racheter	<i>to buy again (see p. 49, art. 97 & 99)</i>	parler	38
rajeunir, a, ê	<i>to become young</i>	finir	54
rapiécer	<i>to piece (see page 49, art. 100)</i>	parler	38

170 IRREGULAR, DEFECTIVE, AND UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

rappeler	to recall (see page 48, art. 91) . . .	parler . . .	38
rapprendre . . .	to learn again	prendre . .	154
rasseoir	to set down again some body or some thing at his or its place	s'asseoir . .	134
se rasseoir, ê . .	to sit down again	s'asseoir . .	134
ratteindre . . .	to catch again, to overtake again . .	joindre . .	149
ravoir	to have again	ravoir . . .	134
rebattre	to beat again	battre . . .	141
reboire	to drink again	boire . . .	142
rebouillir . . .	to boil again	bouillir . .	125
recacheter . . .	to seal again (see p. 49, art. 95) . .	parler . . .	38
recéler	to secrete, to receive stolen goods (see page 49, art. 100)	parler . . .	38
rechoir	to fall again	choir . . .	135
reclure	to shut up	conclure . .	143
reconduire . . .	to conduct back again	réduire . .	155
reconnaître . . .	to recognize, to know again, to ac- knowledge, to confess, to be thank- ful, to reconnoiter	paraître . .	152
se reconnaître, ê	to recognize one's self	paraître . .	152
reconquérir . . .	to reconquer	acquérir . .	124
reconstruire . .	to construct again, to rebuild, to build again	réduire . .	155
recoudre	to sew again	coudre . . .	144
recourir	to have recourse, to run again . . .	courir . . .	126
recouvrir	to cover again	ouvrir . . .	130
récrire	to write again, to write anew . . .	écrire . . .	147
recroître	to grow again	croître . . .	145
recueillir	to gather, to reap	cueillir . .	127
se recueillir, ê .	to recollect one's self,	cueillir . .	127
recuire	to bake again, to boil again, to roast again, to do again	réduire . .	155
redéfaire	to undo again	faire	148
redescendre, a, ê	to come down again (see page 160) .	vendre . . .	132
redevenir, ê . .	to become again (see page 160) . .	tenir . . .	132
redire	to say again, to repeat, to tell again	dire	146
redormir	to sleep again	dormir . . .	127
réduire	to reduce	réduire . .	155
se réduire, ê . .	to amount to, to be reduced to . . .	réduire . .	155
refaire	to make again, to do over again . .	faire	148
se refaire, ê . .	to recover	faire	148
refleurir	to blossom again, to flourish again .	fleurir . . .	128
refrire	to fry again	frire	148
regeler	to freeze again (see page 48, art. 93)	neiger . . .	123
régler	to regulate (see page 49, art. 100) .	parler . . .	38
régner	to reign (see page 49, art. 100) . .	parler . . .	38
réintégrer . . .	to reinstate (see page 49, art. 100) .	parler . . .	38
rejoindre	to join again, to rejoin	joindre . . .	149
relire	to read over again	lire	149
reluire	to glitter, to shine, to sparkle . . .	réduire . .	155
remettre	to remit, to set again, to replace, to deliver up, to put back, to put again, to recognise a person	mettre . . .	150
se remettre, ê . .	to recollect, to recover	mettre . . .	150
s'en remettre, ê	to refer a thing to somebody	mettre . . .	150
remoudre	to grind over again	moudre . . .	151

remonter, a, ê . . .	to ascend again, to mount again (see page 160) . . .	parler . . .	38
renaître	to revive, to be born again, to spring up again, to become alive again . . .	naître . . .	151
rendormir	to lull to sleep again	dormir . . .	127
se rendormir, ê . . .	to fall asleep again	dormir . . .	127
renduire	to plaster anew	réduire . . .	155
renouveler	to renew (see page 48, art. 91) . . .	parler . . .	38
rentraire	to darn	traire . . .	158
rentrer, a, ê	to reenter (see page 160)	parler . . .	38
renvoyer	to send back, to return	envoyer . . .	123
repâître	to feed	paître . . .	152
se repâître, ê	to thirst after, to delight in	paître . . .	152
reparaître	to reappear, to appear again	paraître . . .	152
repartir, ê	to set off again (see page 161) . . .	sentir . . .	130
repartir	to reply, to answer (see page 161) . .	sentir . . .	130
repasser, a, ê	to pass again, to repass (see p. 160)	parler . . .	38
repeindre	to paint again	joindre . . .	149
se repentir, ê	to repent	sentir . . .	130
reprandre	to retake, to take again, to correct, to chide, to resume	prendre . . .	154
se reprendre	to recollect one's self, to correct one's self	prendre . . .	154
reproduire	to reproduce	réduire . . .	155
requérir	to request, to beg, to require, to exact	acquérir . . .	124
résoudre	to resolve, to solve, to decide, to unriddle	résoudre . . .	155
se résoudre, ê	to resolve, to be resolved, to change, to turn into	résoudre . . .	155
ressentir	to resent, to be sensible of, to feel still, to have a deep sense of	sentir . . .	130
se ressentir, ê	to feel still, to have remains of, to have suffered by	sentir . . .	130
ressortir, a, ê	to go out again (see page 160) . . .	sentir . . .	130
se ressouvenir, ê . . .	to remember, to recollect	tenir . . .	132
rester, a, ê	to remain, to stay (see page 160) . .	parler . . .	38
restreindre	to restrain, to confine	joindre . . .	149
résulter, a, ê	to follow, to result (see page 160) . .	neiger . . .	123
retenir	to retain, to detain, to hold back . .	tenir . . .	132
se retenir, ê	to forbear, to stop	tenir . . .	132
retomber, ê	to fall again (see page 160)	parler . . .	38
retourner, ê	to return, to go back (see page 160) .	parler . . .	38
retraire	to redeem an estate	traire . . .	158
revaloir	to return like for like, to repay . . .	valoir . . .	139
révéler	to reveal, to disclose (p. 49, art. 100)	parler . . .	38
revenir, ê	to come back, to return, to come again (see page 160)	tenir . . .	132
revêtir	to give other clothes, to clothe, to dress, to invest	vêtir . . .	133
se revêtir, ê	to put on one's clothes	vêtir . . .	133
revivre	to revive	vivre . . .	159
revoir	to see again	voir . . .	140
rire	to laugh	rire . . .	156
se rire, ê	to laugh at	rire . . .	156
rompre	to break	rompre . . .	157
se rompre, ê	to break	rompre . . .	157
rouvrir	to reopen, to open again	ouvrir . . .	130

S

saillir	<i>to project, to jut out, to gush out, to leap</i>	assaillir	125
saluer	<i>to salute, to bow (see p. 51, art. 104)</i>	parler	38
satisfaire	<i>to satisfy, to content, to comply with</i>	faire	148
savoir	<i>to know</i>	savoir	138
secourir	<i>to succour, to assist, to help</i>	courir	126
se secourir, ê	<i>to help one another</i>	courir	126
séduire	<i>to seduce, to bribe</i>	réduire	155
semer	<i>to sow (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)</i>	parler	38
sentir	<i>to feel, to smell</i>	sentir	130
seoir	<i>to fit, to fit well, to become</i>	seoir	139
servir	<i>to serve, to wait upon, to be of use</i>	servir	131
se servir, ê	<i>to use, to make use, to avail one's self</i>	servir	131
severer	<i>to wean (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)</i>	parler	38
sortir, a, ê	<i>to go out (see page 160)</i>	sentir	130
soudre	<i>to solve, to resolve</i>	résoudre	155
souffrir	<i>to suffer, to allow, to undergo</i>	ouvrir	130
soumettre	<i>to submit, to subdue, to conquer</i>	mettre	150
se soumettre, ê	<i>to submit, to yield, to give up</i>	mettre	150
sourire	<i>to smile</i>	rire	156
souscrire	<i>to subscribe</i>	écrire	147
se souscrire, ê	<i>to subscribe one's self</i>	écrire	147
soustraire	<i>to subtract, to deduct, to hide, to conceal, to take away, to withdraw</i>	traire	158
se soustraire, ê	<i>to avoid, to escape, to withdraw one's self</i>	traire	158
soutenir	<i>to maintain, to sustain, to support, to bear</i>	tenir	132
se soutenir, ê	<i>to stand up, to hold out</i>	tenir	132
se souvenir, ê	<i>to recollect, to remember, to remind</i>	tenir	132
subvenir	<i>to relieve, to assist</i>	tenir	132
suffire	<i>to suffice, to be sufficient</i>	confire	143
suivre	<i>to follow</i>	suivre	157
s'en suivre, ê	<i>to follow from, to result</i>	suivre	157
suracheter	<i>to overpay (see p. 49, art. 97 & 99)</i>	parler	38
surcroître	<i>to grow out</i>	croître	145
surfaire	<i>to exact, to ask too much</i>	faire	148
surprendre	<i>to surprize, to astonish, to deceive</i>	prendre	154
surseoir	<i>to supersede, to put off, to suspend</i>	surseoir	139
survenir, ê	<i>to befall, to happen, to come in unexpectedly, to come upon (see p. 160)</i>	tenir	132
survivre	<i>to survive, to outlive</i>	vivre	159

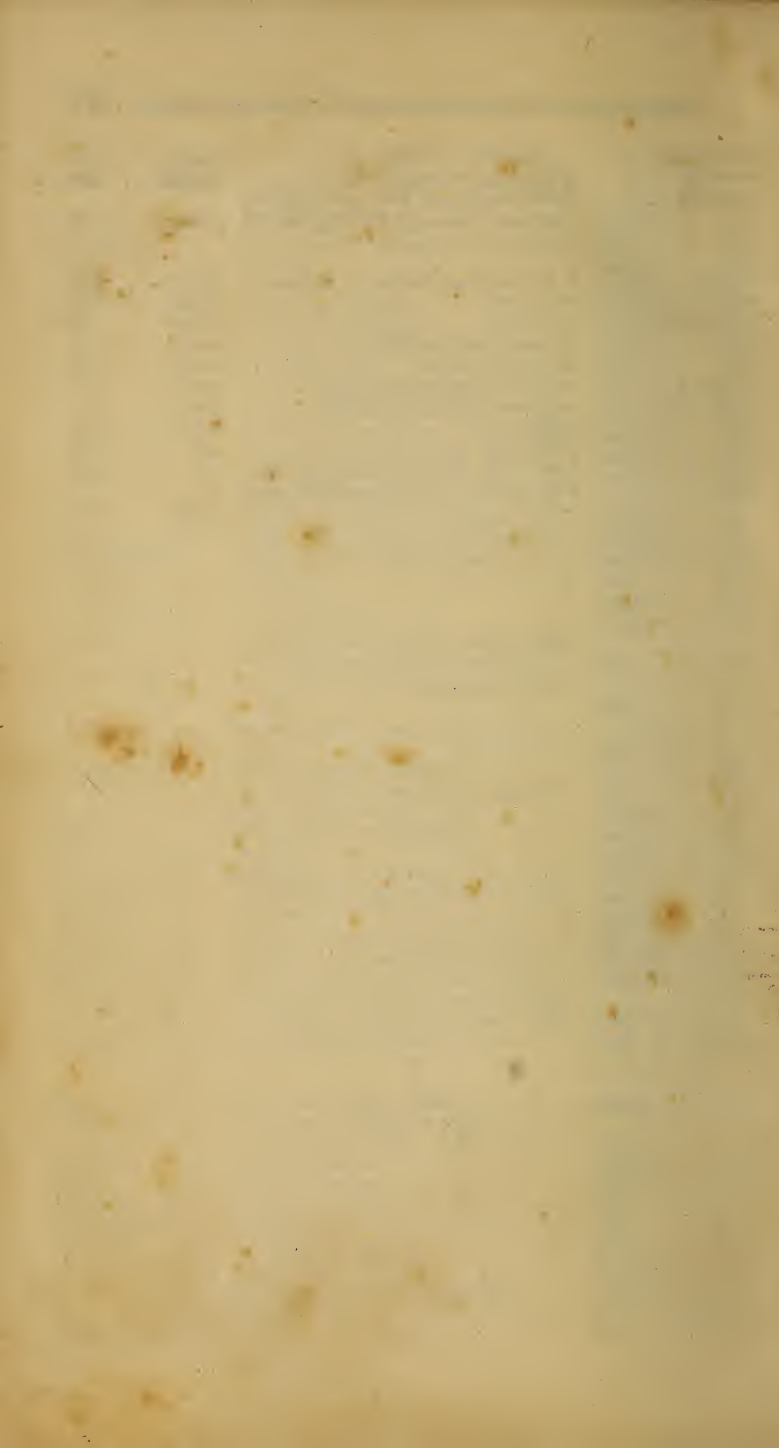
T

taire	<i>to conceal, to keep secret</i>	plaire	153
se taire, ê	<i>to forbear talking, to keep silent, to hold one's tongue</i>	plaire	153
teindre	<i>to die, to colour</i>	joindre	149
tenir	<i>to hold, to keep</i>	tenir	132
se tenir, ê	<i>to stand, to hold one's self</i>	tenir	132
s'en tenir, ê	<i>to abide by</i>	tenir	132
tomber, ê	<i>to fall (see page 160)</i>	parler	38
tonner	<i>to thunder</i>	neiger	123
traduire	<i>to translate, to bring to justice</i>	réduire	155
traire	<i>to milk</i>	traire	158
transcrire	<i>to transcribe</i>	écrire	147

transmettre . . .	<i>to transmit, to convey</i>	mettre . . .	150
tressaillir . . .	<i>to start up, to leap for</i>	assaillir . .	125
trompeter . . .	<i>to summon with the sound of the trumpet</i> (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler . . .	38

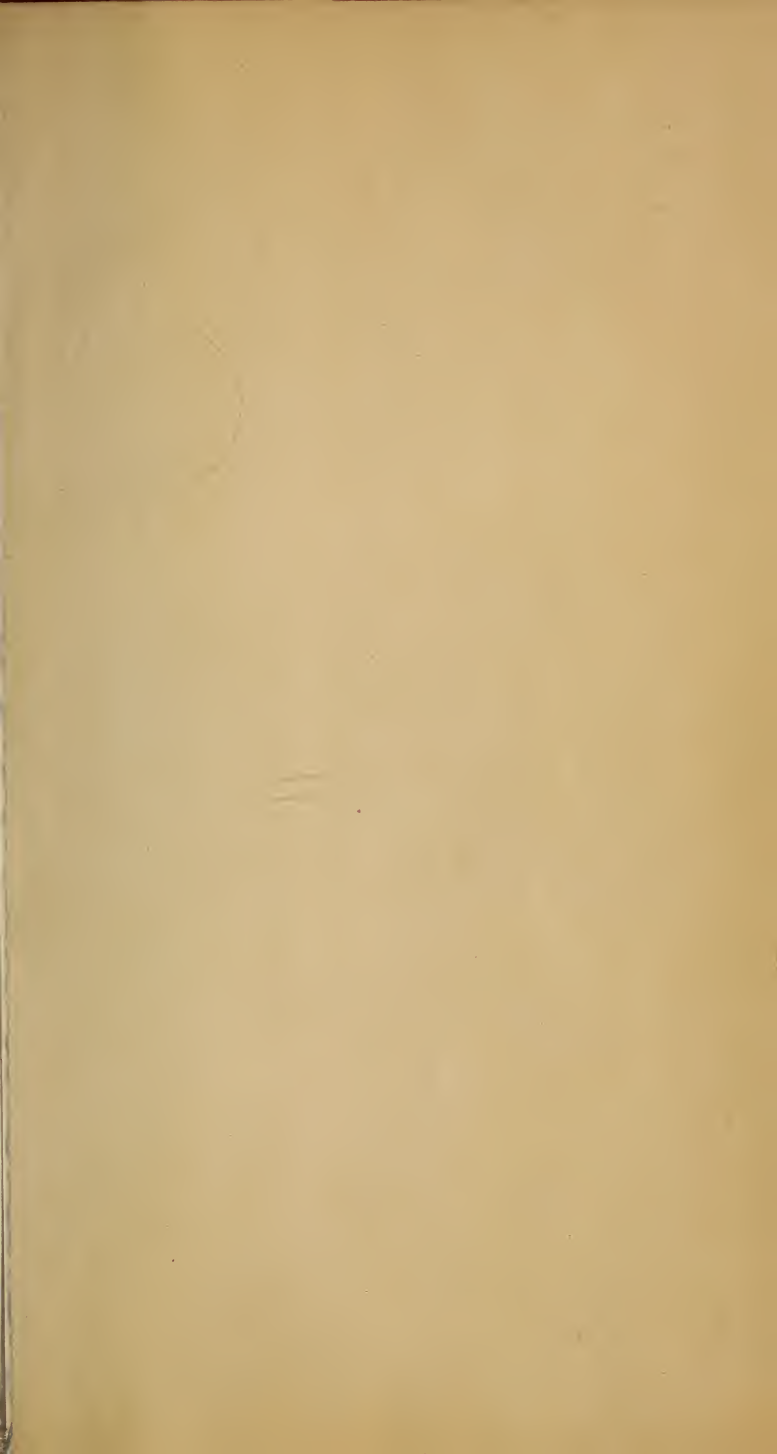
V


vaincre	<i>to vanquish, to conquer, to surpass</i> . .	vaincre . . .	159
valoir	<i>to be worth</i>	valoir . . .	139
valoir mieux . . .	<i>to be better</i>	valoir . . .	139
venir, ê	<i>to come</i> (see page 160)	tenir . . .	132
vêtir	<i>to clothe, to dress</i>	vêtir . . .	133
se vêtir, ê	<i>to dress, to clothe one's self</i> —	vêtir . . .	133
vieillir, a, ê . . .	<i>to become old</i> (see page 160)	finir . . .	54
vivre	<i>to live</i>	vivre . . .	159
voir	<i>to see</i>	voir . . .	140
se voir, ê	<i>to see one's self, to visit one another</i>	voir . . .	140
vouloir	<i>to be willing, to will, to wish, to wish for</i>	vouloir . .	141











Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date: Sept. 2006

Preservation Technologies
A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION

111 Thomson Park Drive
Cranberry Township, PA 16066
(724) 779-2111



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 003 117 931 2